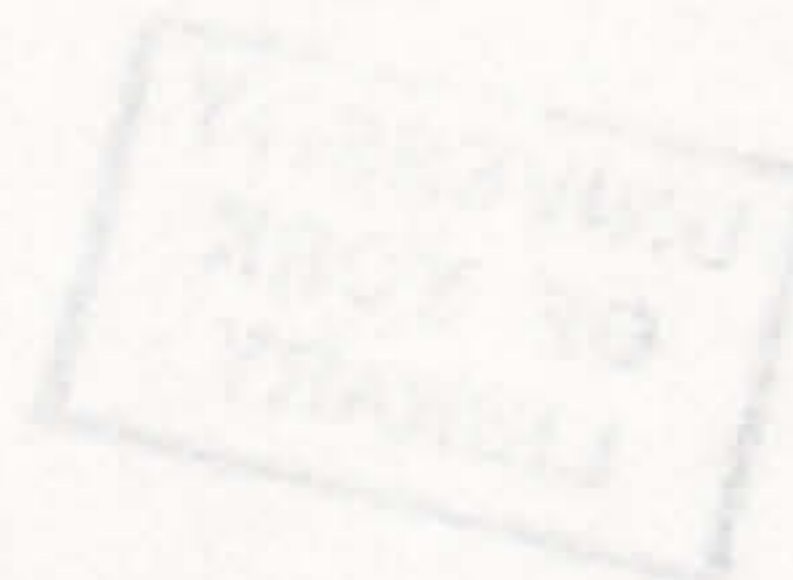


THE ROYALIST ARMY IN NORTHERN ENGLAND
1642 - 45

(Two Volumes) VOLUME 2, Appendices

Peter Robert Newman



Submitted for the Degree of D. Phil at the University of
York, Department of History, February 1978

CONTENTS

<u>Appendix</u>		<u>Page</u>
	Introduction	3
	Notes	6
I	The Horse	7
	Notes	242
II	The Foot	277
	Notes	466
III	The Dragoons	495
	Notes	523
IV	Unclassified Officers	526
V	British Library Add. Ms. 33590	537
	Bibliography	538

INDEX OF COLONELS

HORSE.

<u>name</u>	<u>page</u>
ANDERSON, Sir Francis	7
BELASYSE, John (Lord)	12
BLAKISTON, Sir William	18
BRADSHAW, (Sir) William	22
BRANDLING, Robert	24
BYRON, Sir Robert	27
CARNABY, Francis	30
CAVENDISH, Lord Henry	33
CHOLMELEY, Sir Hugh	37
CLAVERING, Sir Robert	41
FORCER, John (Clavering's successor)	42
COBBE, Sir Francis	50
CROSSLAND, Sir Jordan	52
DACRE, (Sir) Richard	55
DACRE, Sir Thomas	58
DALSTON, Sir William	59
DALTON, (Sir) Thomas	61
DERBY, earl of	62
DUDLEY, (Sir) Gamaliel	64
DUNCOMBE, (Sir) Edmund	67
ERRINGTON, John	71
EURE, William	74
FENWICK, John	77
GERLINGTON, Sir John	80
GLEMHAM, Sir Thomas	82
GRAHAM, Sir Richard	88
GREY, Edward	90
HERON, George	97
HOWARD, Thomas	99
HOWARD, Sir Francis (successor)	99
KAY, Sir John	102
KING, James	104
LANGDALE, Sir Marmaduke	111
LEIGH, Sir Ferdinando	121
MALHAM, Francis	126
MALLORY, Sir John	127
MANSFIELD, Charles Viscount	129

<u>name</u>	<u>page</u>
MASON, (Sir) William	133
MAYNEY, Sir John	135
MIDDLETON, (Sir) George	140
MOLYNEUX, Richard Viscount	144
MORLEY, Henry Parker Lord	149
MUSGRAVE, Sir Philip	152
MUSGRAVE, William	157
NEWCASTLE, earl (later Marquess) of	158
OSBORNE, Sir Edward	162
PRESTON, (Sir) John	166
(QUEEN'S REGIMENT)	
JERMYN, Henry (Lord)	171
CANSFIELD, (Sir) John (Jermyn's successor)	171
SAVILLE, Sir William	181
MONCKTON, (Sir) Philip (successor)	182
SLINGSBY, Thomas	193
SMITH, John	195
STRICKLAND, (Sir) Thomas	196
TEMPEST, Richard	198
TEMPEST, Sir Richard	200
TRAFFORD, Francis	204
TYLDESLEY, (Sir) Thomas	207
VAVASOUR, Sir Walter	215
HUNGATE, Francis (Vavasour's successor)	215
VERE, Edward	220
WIDDRINGTON, Sir Edward	222
WIDDRINGTON, Sir William (later Lord)	226
WORTLEY, Sir Francis	234
WRAY, George	236
(DUKE OF YORK'S REGIMENT)	
CAVENDISH, Sir Charles	239
TUKE, (Sir) Samuel (Cavendish's successor)	239

FOOT

(BELASYSE'S REGIMENT)	
GILBY, (Sir) Theophilus	278
BELLINGHAM, Sir Henry	285
BRANDLING, Charles	287
BYERLEY, Anthony	289

<u>name</u>	<u>page</u>
CHAYTOR, Henry	291
CHISENALL, Edward	292
(CLAVERING'S FOOT)	
SWINHOE, James	298
CLIFTON, Cuthbert	301
CONYERS, Cuthbert	302
CUMBERLAND, earl of	304
CURWEN, Sir Patricius	305
(LORD DARCY'S REGIMENT)	
DARCY, (Sir) Conyers	310
DARCY, Marmaduke (successor)	311
EDEN, John	319
FANE, Sir Francis	323
FEATHERSTONE, John	326
FEATHERSTONEHAUGH, Sir Timothy	328
FLETCHER, Sir Henry	330
FLOYD, Godfrey	333
FORSTER, Thomas	335
GERARD, Sir Gilbert	337
GERARD, Ratcliffe (successor)	337
GRIFFITHS, Sir Henry	348
HAGGERSTON, (Sir) Thomas	350
HEBBURN, Ralph	352
HILTON, John	354
HUDDLESTONE, (Sir) William	357
HUTTON, Sir Richard	360
KIRKBRIDE, Richard	364
LAMBTON, Sir William	365
LAMPLUGH, John	367
LOWTHER, Sir Christopher	371
LOWTHER, Sir John	372
MARLEY, Sir John	375
METHAM, Sir Thomas	381
MIDDLETON, William	384
MUSCHAMP, Sir George	387
MUSGRAVE, Sir Edward	388
(NEWCASTLE'S REGIMENT)	
BASSETT, Sir Arthur	391
PENNINGTON, William	396

<u>Name</u>	<u>page</u>
PENNYMAN, Sir William	397
PENNYMAN, Sir James (successor)	398
PAGE, (Sir) Richard (successor to James)	398
PERCY, Henry (Lord)	404
PINCHBECK, Thomas	406
BARD, (Sir) Henry (successor)	407
RAMSDEN, Sir John	413
REDMAN, Sir John	415
RIDDELL, Sir Thomas	417
ROBINSON, Sir William	419
ROSTERN, Edward	420
SANDFORD, Sir Thomas	422
SCROPE, John	426
SLINGSBY, Sir Guilford	427
SLINGSBY, Charles	428
SLINGSBY, Sir Henry	429
STRICKLAND, Sir Robert	433
SWINHOE, Gilbert	437
TALBOT, John	438
TEMPEST, John	439
TOWNELEY, Charles	444
WAITE, Henry	449
WENTWORTH, Sir George	451
WHEATLEY, Thomas	458

DRAGOONS

> GOWER, Sir Thomas	501
HOUGHTON, Sir Gilbert	507
HOWARD, Thomas	508
(NEWCASTLE'S REGIMENT)	
STUART, William	515

The Regiments

In the regimental analysis which now follows, will be found those evidences which have been drawn together in the statistical tables already set out in Vol. 1. "Where the facts are missing", wrote Asa Briggs in his introduction to W.G. Hoskins' The Age of Plunder, "or the thoughts impossible to recover, it is the duty of the historian to say so". It would have given a false impression of the problems involved in trying to write a regimental history for this period, had I omitted from the analyses those officers about whom we know virtually nothing beyond their names, sometimes, only their surnames, and ranks. In some instances it may prove possible, in the future, to learn something, but for the vast majority of these unidentified officers, they will remain but anonymous figures in the history of the civil war. Most particularly should it be remembered, that whilst the positive identification of Catholics, for example, declines with the rank being dealt with, it is more than probable that a sizeable number of the unidentified officers would have had either a recusant or 'church Papist' background.

To write even a brief campaign history for any single regiment, is often impracticable. Few regiments were ever mentioned by name in contemporary records, either Royalist or Parliamentarian, and so often we are reliant upon references to regimental officers either as casualties or as prisoners of war taken in any particular engagement, to gather some idea of the whereabouts of a regiment. Even this is not foolproof, since the presence of one or two officers from a known regiment at a single engagement, need not mean that the regiment was present in full strength: perhaps only a company, or a troop, or two, was in the field on that occasion. With the exception of garrison regiments, however, it can be safely assumed that at important major actions such as that at Adwalton Moor in 1643, or Marston Moor in 1644, virtually all of the fighting army under Newcastle's command was involved. It will be noticed that for most of the northern regiments which served with the Oxford army, the campaign details are fuller. This is an accident of history, in that whether the Oxford army had more chroniclers than had Newcastle's, or not, it is the Oxford army's writers whose works have survived the exigencies of time and the loss of documents. For the northern Royalist army as a whole, we have no Symonds or Walker, but thanks to them, we at least know a good deal about Tyldesley's regiments, or the Queen's Lifeguard for example.

The regimental analysis has been divided into three parts, dealing respectively with Horse, Foot and Dragoons. A fourth section lists those officers, almost certainly northern in origin, for whom no regimental link can be found. This is necessarily less detailed, since these officers have not

been taken into account in compiling statistical tables. Certain officers included in this fourth section, may seem out of place there. I have, for example, included in it Colonel Richard Lowther, the second governor of Pontefract, and Colonel Gervase Cutler. Both of these men have been discussed in Vol. 1, but suffice it here to say, that for Lowther we have no evidence of a regimental command at any time, whilst for Cutler even the rank of Colonel is in doubt. These, and other problematical people, have been noted. On the other hand, certain colonels have been included in the regimental analysis proper, even though there is very slender evidence for their regimental rank. Such a case is that of Colonel Sir Richard Graham, and in his case, as will be explained, I have taken his name in the List as very strong evidence of at least a commission, but in his case, as in that of Charles Towneley, the difficulties have been fully discussed and my conclusions explained.

It is now necessary to outline the specified composition of each regimental type. By doing this, it will be possible to arrive at an idea of field strength by comparing the actuality presented in the analysis, with the ideal. I have not sought to do this systematically in what follows, since the imponderables are significant. Officers may be missing for several reasons, not least the majority of those killed in action, so that any comparative assessment would be extremely tentative.

The Horse regiment consisted of 500 volunteers formed into 6 troops, two in each regimental division. Each of the six troops was commanded by a captain, three of them by First Captains (whom it is virtually impossible to positively distinguish from ordinary Captains), and the other three by captains responsible to the colonel, lt. colonel and major for their troops. There is some evidence that the major, for example, may have combined the rank of major and captain in himself, but whether this was a general rule, or exceptional, we do not know. It is highly unlikely that the colonel would have acted as his own troop commander, together with his other responsibilities. The command structure of each troop was as follows:

	(1	Captain
Commission	(1	Lieutenant (also termed Captain-Lieutenant)
	(1	Cornet
	(1	Quartermaster
	(3	Corporals
Non-Commission	(2	Trumpeters
	(1	Sadler
	(1	Farrier
	60	Troopers

Let it be noted that the Quartermaster was present in each cavalry troop, not, as in the case of the Foot, attached only to regimental strength.

The Foot regiment consisted of 1300 men, volunteers and conscripts divided into 10 companies, and further distinguished by size. The colonel's company was prescribed at 200 men, the lt. colonel's at 150, the major's at 140 and

seven Captain's companies of 100 men in each. Here again, whilst the major and possibly the lt. colonel acted as their own captains, it is unlikely that the colonel did so. The command structure of each company was as follows:

	(1	Captain
Commission	(1	Lieutenant
	(1	Ensign (or, in archaic terminology, Ancient)
	(1	Gentleman at Arms
Non-Commission	(2	Sergeants
	(3	Corporals
	(2	Drummers

The regimental staff consisted, apart from the three field commanders, of a chaplain, a surgeon and a surgeon's mate, a quartermaster, a carriage or waggon master, a provost marshal and a drum major. The chaplain, surgeon and surgeon's mate with, as has been pointed out, the quartermaster, had their counterparts in cavalry and dragoon formations. Of these regimental staff, only the quartermaster was a commissioned officer. The rank and file generally numbered one pikeman to every two musketeers, but there was a good deal of shifting about according to requirements. The musketeers were invariably armed with matchlock weapons, and the small number of men armed with snaphaunces or early flintlocks tended to act in separate units. This has been discussed in Vol. 1, in connection with the siege of Pontefract.

Little is known of the dragoon regiment. As will be seen, there were very few of these in the northern army, and probably a lack of them in the Oxford army too. In November 1642, the King had complained of a want of dragoons, which the Parliamentary army seemed to have in good supply.¹ The dragoon was, in reality, a mounted infantryman, neither, to coin a phrase, fish nor fowl. The cavalry would have considered the dragoon as an inferior being, as an infantryman aspiring to cavalry status, whilst it is unlikely that the foot particularly enjoyed the prospect of combining the two functions. If the Parliamentary army was strong in dragoons, in 1642, it can only have been because the quality of their cavalry was such, as to make them more readily dragoon in nature, less well horsed than the Royalist cavalry, and perhaps less well armed. Cromwell thought this was so at Edgehill, it will be remembered.

Of precise figure and structure we know very little. The New Model set a prescribed strength of 1000 men in 10 companies, which accentuates the infantry basis of a dragoon regiment. The Scots called their dragoon colour-bearers 'ensigns'.² However, from a meeting held at Preston in December 1642, and convened by the earl of Derby (see Vol. 1) we have a list of dragoon officers which indicates that for the Royalists at least, the dragoon was on a par of some kind with the cavalry. The troop command structure consisted of captain, lieutenant, cornet, sergeant, corporal, kettle drummer, commissary and dragoons.

There are, however, certain anomalies here which require explanation.

Clearly, the dragoon troop was somewhat smaller than the cavalry troop, in that only one of each rank was specified. The colour-bearer adopted the rank of his cavalry equivalent, but the drummer of the foot was transposed to the mounted infantry and given a kettle drum as opposed to a cavalry trumpet. It is also to be noted that the sergeant was a distinctively infantry rank, but was here given dragoon status as well. Each dragoon regiment, of course, possessed a colonel, lt. colonel and major. The commissary, equivalent to the quartermaster, seems to have been a troop rather than a single regimental rank, which again exemplifies the cavalry nature of Royalist dragoon forces.

NOTES

1. Warburton, II, p. 79 f.n. 1
2. Terry, C.S., ed: Papers...of the Army of the Solemn League and Covenant, Vol. 1, p. lxxxv.

Colonel Sir Francis ANDERSON'S Regiment of Horse.

In his study of the battle of Marston Moor, Young suggested that this regiment may have been that of Colonel George Heron under a new commander.¹ His opinion was based upon the List, and the citing of George Tong as a troop commander under Heron and latterly as lt. colonel to Anderson. Heron's regiment was probably given to Colonel Robert Brandling (q.v.) after Heron's death, since there is evidence that Anderson held a colonel's rank as early as March 1643, whereas Heron was not killed until June 30th. In a tiny scrap of paper in the Hutton of Marske Mss.,² which can be dated approximately to the early summer of 1643, is a record of £2.14.9d. paid by one Roland Cliburn to "Colinell Anderson's owne troop". A document in the Musgrave Mss., at Carlisle Castle, clearly dated March 29th 1643, refers directly to Anderson as a colonel. Of the regiment's active service, we know that it was at Wooler in Northumberland on January 20th 1644, keeping watch on the advance of the Scots.³ From then on, it almost certainly fought alongside the main army of the Marquess of Newcastle in the retreat across Durham, and, after the decision to hold York and to send away the bulk of the cavalry, probably served with George Goring and Sir Charles Lucas until joining with Rupert in Lancashire prior to the relief of York and Marston Moor. What remained of it was included in the Northern Horse, and there seems to be an allusion to the regiment at Uphaven in Wiltshire on January 4th 1645. According to Mercurius Aulicus⁴ it was attacked there by forces sent by Edmund Ludlow, but succeeded in beating these off and in taking some prisoners in the course of a pursuit.

From the activities of some of its officers, it appears that part at least of the regiment retreated through Lancashire with Rupert in July 1644, but remained behind there with Tyldesley and Molyneux. Thereafter it was involved in the battle of Ormskirk in August.

The Officers:

Colonel Sir Francis Anderson: Anderson was born in 1614, the son and heir, by his first marriage, of Roger Anderson of Jesmond a prominent Newcastle merchant.

Anderson matriculated at Corpus Christi, Oxford, on January 24th 1634, was granted his B.A. on the 28th, and entered Gray's Inn. He rose to some prominence in the Newcastle Hostmen, a group of coal-shippers who virtually dominated the Tyne and the county of Northumberland as a whole. In 1641 he became Sheriff of Newcastle, where he was by now permanently resident at Anderson Place. We find him on June 30th, 1642, involved in a dispute with his opposite number in Durham concerning the escort of civil prisoners from Berwick to London. In action in 1644, he was captured at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645, and sent to York where he was temporarily imprisoned. Allowed bail, he journeyed to London, in poor health, to seek to compound, where he was put

into the custody of the Serjeant at Arms, treatment usually reserved for die-hard Royalists. His fine was set at £1200, and a draft ordinance passed on July 4th 1648 to clear his delinquency. Nonetheless, the fine was still not fully paid by 1650, and for all of this time, Anderson was kept in London. Finally set at liberty, he returned to Newcastle and became at once involved in Royalist conspiracy, taking command of the Gateshead area in the 1654/5 risings, and listed by Sir Marmaduke Langdale in 1656 as a reliable man in the north. At the restoration, he was freely admitted to the freedom and privileges of the Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle enjoyed by his grandfather before him, and became MP for the town in 1661. Mayor in 1662 and 1675, he was elected MP again in 1679, and died in the city towards the end of that year⁵

Lt.Colonel George Tong: George Tong, Esquire, of Denton, was the eldest son of Sir George Tong of the same, who was born in 1584. Father and son were involved in coal-mining at Auckland in Co. Durham, and George II was aged 25 when the civil war broke out. Commissioned probably as a captain in George Heron's Horse (q.v.) he was promoted to lt. colonel and moved to Anderson's regiment when Heron was killed at Adwalton Moor, where we can suppose Tong also fought. He seems by this time to have eclipsed his father in local affairs, serving also as a Commissioner of Array and of Oyer and Terminer from 1642. He rode with the Northern Horse, and signed their petition to the King in February 1645. During his attempts to compound, it was found that he was heavily in debt to one Rebecca Salvin for the sum of £500 plus £40 interest per annum, and the interest was, in 1646, already 10 years in arrears. His fine was set at £320 and in 1652 he was gaoled for debt. Somehow, probably by heavily mortgaging his property, he was able to raise the money to lay out on his composition, and was set at liberty. Of his subsequent career, little is known.⁶

Major Samuel Davison: Cited in the List by Lieutenant Machell, Samuel was born in 1616 the third of the four sons of Sir Alexander Davison of Newcastle, the head of a markedly Royalist family. His father appears to have had some Catholic leanings. Samuel entered Gray's Inn in 1634, and precisely when he took up arms is unknown. Lands which he held at Blakeston were sequestered from him, and his fine fixed in 1646 at £320. The Blakeston property seems to have been sold. In 1654 one of Thurloe's agents described Samuel as "much engaged" in the Royalist conspiracies of that time. At the Restoration he was listed for the intended honour of knighthood in the Order of the Royal Oak, when was styled Esquire and his yearly income set at £600, but the order was never established. In 1663 a JP, he died in 1671 and was buried at Bishop Auckland.⁷

Captain Richard Cole: A mysterious and ubiquitous figure, appearing also under Colonels James King and Sir Richard Tempest

(q.v.), although in these cases, as in this, he is merely cited by a claimant in the List. The name is fairly common in Durham and Northumberland, although such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation and was, apparently, buried in Gateshead in 1648. He may well have been the Captain Cole who was reported to have fled from Newark before the surrender in 1646, and who took up arms with the Scottish army soon after.⁸

Captain John Haggerston: Haggerston does not appear in the List, but according to genealogical evidence, served in this regiment and was killed in action at Ormskirk in 1644.

The eldest of the three known sons of Colonel Thomas Haggerston, he came from a markedly Recusant family, and was claimed as a Catholic casualty of the war in a subsequent list. This same list also refers to an unidentified Lt. Colonel Haggerston killed in Lancashire, and there may be some confusion here.⁹

Captain Thomas Jackson: He claimed in the List as of Durham, but the name is too common to permit of positive identification although a Thomas Jackson of Newcastle, merchant, compounded for delinquency in the first war. The link with Anderson may be established in this. Alternatively, a Thomas Jackson of Harraton, Co. Durham, compounded upon conviction for Recusancy in 1630 and was thereafter conformable it was said.¹⁰

Captain [] Kirkbride: Cited in the List by a Westmorland claimant, Edmund Sandford, this is probably Bernard Kirkbride born in 1624, eldest son of Colonel Richard Kirkbride (q.v.). The pedigrees, however, do not agree, and an alternative date of birth is given as 1629 which, if correct, would mean that Bernard could not have been militarily active until the 1648 war, when Anderson was not in arms, or in the 1651 and 1654/5 enterprises. However, in 1651 Bernard was acting as lt. colonel to Colonel Sir Henry Featherston, so the earlier date of birth looks right. Styled of Ellerton, Esquire, after his father's death, Bernard died in 1677. It must be noted, however, that Colonel Richard Kirkbride's youngest brother was also called Bernard, or as some have it, 'Cliburne' and was a Newcastle merchant, although we have no dates.¹¹

Lieutenant Robert Leighton: Claimed in the List as from Yorkshire, in Lt. Colonel Tong's troop. He was probably the second of the three sons of Robert Layton of West Layton in that county who died in 1655. Robert II was 18 years old in 1642.¹²

Lieutenant Marmaduke Machell: Claimed in the List as from Durham, under Major Davison. Positive identification is difficult but a John Machell, merchant of Newcastle, was a delinquent during the first war, and was himself the son and heir of another

John Machell of Pitchfield, Co. Durham. His younger brother may have been the Marmaduke Machell who signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Bishopton in that county, although we have a Marmaduke Machell listed as a Recusant in Northumberland in 1629. We must dismiss Marmaduke Machell of Wellham Nottinghamshire, who apparently died in 1645.¹³

Lieutenant Edmund Sandford: Claimed in the List as of Westmorland under Captain Kirkbride. Probably the 'Cadet of the House of Askham' who wrote, in 1675, 'A Cursory Relation of All the Antiquities and Families in Cumberland'.¹⁴

Cornet Leon Hodgeson: Claimed in the List as of Newcastle. The vagaries of the List permit speculation as to whether this is Leon or Lance Hodgeson, since there is evidence for both such, and we may be dealing with contemporary misspelling as well. A Leon Hodgeson of Newcastle, merchant, was convicted as a Recusant in 1655, whilst there is evidence that such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Lumley in Chester le Street ward, Co. Durham. The one does not prohibit the other. Alternatively, Lance Hodgeson, son in law of Colonel Sir Thomas Haggerston, and a convicted Recusant in 1625 and 1631, was a brother of the Merchant Adventurers Company of Newcastle. Lance was constantly involved in litigation with fellow members, in 1647, in 1650 when he seized some cotton goods from another brother, and some tobacco from someone else, and in 1651.¹⁵

Cornet John Preston: Claimed in the List as of Durham, in Captain John Taylor's troop (q.v., below). Such a man was listed in 1638/9 as a Freeholder of Cowpen in Northumberland, but of 275 so listed, only 49 can be shown to have borne arms, and some of those are uncertain.¹⁶

Cornet William Trollop: Claimed in the List as of Durham, but there are problems. Such a man was first of the three sons of Thomas Trollop of Crossgates, Co. Durham, but his will was dated 1644. A Mr. John Trollop of Thornley, convicted Recusant, had his goods inventoried in 1645. He too had three sons, the eldest merely styled "Young Mr. Trollop", but the youngest bore the name John.¹⁷

Quartermaster Robert Teasdel: Claimed in the List as of Durham, in Major Davison's troop. This seems to be a fairly common Bishopric name, and two such, of Norton with Stockton and Middleton in Teesdale respectively, signed the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁸

Quartermaster John Unthank: Claimed in the List as of Durham. Such a man, of Witton Gilbert, was a Recusant and refused the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Francis Read, cited in the List.

Captain John Taylor, claimed as from Durham.

Lieutenant Ralph Tayler, claimed as from Durham under Captain Taylor.

Cornet George Haggerston, claimed as from Essex.

Cornet Thomas Johnson, claimed from Durham, Captain Cole's troop.

Quartermaster Robert Dobson, claimed from Durham, Lt. Colonel Tong's troop.

Quartermaster Anthony Spoore, claimed from Northumberland, Captain Read's troop.

Colonel John (Lord) BELASYSE'S Regiment of Horse

Although in many respects a thoroughly well documented regiment, there are some problems. Not least, that of distinguishing Belasyse's Horse from his Foot in records concerning the activities of the Oxford army, with which this force was long associated, although recruited primarily in Yorkshire. According to Joshua Moone, Belasyse's secretary,²⁰ his master had returned from Oxford to Yorkshire in late 1642 to recruit the regiment, and took it back with him to the main army. It was involved in fighting in Gloucestershire in the summer of 1643, and at the first battle of Newbury that year. On November 27th, Richard Sawken, a servant of Belasyse's, signed for 40 cases of pistols issued to the regiment at Oxford,²¹ although Sawken does not appear to have held a commission. Belasyse himself was posted back to York in January 1644 where he assumed the governorship after the death of Colonel Sir William Saville (q.v.) but whether the regiment accompanied him is hard to say, and Moone gave no clue. We know that the regiment of foot had already passed into other hands, and remained behind. Nonetheless, either all or a part of this regiment must have been present when Belasyse was defeated at Selby on April 11th 1644, and that sections fought, perhaps at Marston Moor, certainly at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645, is known.

For its campaigns around Oxford there is, as has been said, some likelihood of confusion in contemporary sources. We have, for example, the allusion by Hopton in his Bellum Civile²² to the regiment being commanded by a Major Bovill at the battle of Alresford, but Bovill defies identification unless we take this as a reference to Major John Beverley (q.v.) of Belasyse's Foot. The regiment was certainly attached to Jacob Astley's force some time before November 1643, for on the 14th of November the King ordered Astley to let the regiment return to Oxford "as soone as you shall have no more employment for them", but whether Belasyse was himself present with his men we cannot know.²³ It took part in the relief of Basing conducted by Astley, and assisted in the defence of Arundel Castle.²⁴ Whether any part of the regiment survived into 1645 is conjectural upon officer evidence, as for the battle of Sherburn, but there is insufficient evidence to say that it ever formed part of the Northern Horse during that year.

Colonel John (Lord) Belasyse: Belasyse is one of the few Royalist field commanders for whose career we can refer to a contemporary biography. His activities as Governor of York and as a general have been discussed fully elsewhere.²⁵ The second son of Thomas Lord Fauconberg, his father was a convert to Catholicism and John was the only son of the family to remain a Catholic. Despite his religion, he sat as MP for Thirsk in 1640 after matriculating at Peterhouse two years previously, a rather late step as he had been born in 1614. Keeler,

however, does not think that the John Belasyse of Peterhouse, and this John Belasyse, were one and the same. In 1636, John had contracted a clandestine marriage, and was fined £150 by the Court of High Commission for so doing. By the time of the outbreak of civil war, he was already ordinarily resident at Worlaby in Lincolnshire, and had some military experience as a volunteer in France and then, according to Moone, as a Cuirassier during the Scots War. He acted as an emissary on the King's behalf to the Scots prior to the Treaty of Ripon, and during his time in the House of Commons was closely identified with the emergent Royalist party, acting as a teller on their behalf on several occasions.

John Belasyse received something of an eulogy from his secretary, but other, independent evidence tends to support the view of him as a forward and courageous man. Moone tells us that at the outbreak of war, he served as a volunteer in a cavalry troop commanded by the earl of Cumberland, and then as atrop commander, or captain, in a cavalry regiment, perhaps Cumberland's own (q.v.). After fighting at the head of his infantry at Edgehill, pike in hand, he marched to Oxford and then returned to Yorkshire to raise the cavalry regiment which bore his own name. In the spring of 1643, he stood out against the surrender of Reading, and commanded a Tertia of Foot at the storm of Bristol where he was shot in the head by a musket ball which remained there for some years, being impossible to remove. Temporarily in command of Bristol after its surrender, he was then returned to field duties and fought at Newbury in September, where his horse was killed under him by a cannon ball. Sent back into the north upon the death of the Governor of York, he was eventually overpowered and taken prisoner at the battle of Selby where he sustained sword wounds to the face and arm. He was detained for a full ten months, in Hull and in London, although Sir Hugh Cholmeley made an attempt to have him exchanged as part of spurious proposals for the surrender of Scarborough. Finally exchanged in February 1645, he went to Oxford where it was believed that he would become General of the Horse to Lord Goring, but the King retained his services until later in the year. He continued to sit occasionally on the Council of War, as he had done in 1643, but he fought only as volunteer at the storm of Leicester and at the battle of Naseby. Apparently a close friend of the Marquess of Montrose, he acted as intermediary between the latter and the King. In October 1645, Belasyse replaced the earl of Lichfield, who had been killed, as Captain General of the Royal Horse Guards, and was instrumental in arguing for a march north to link up with Montrose and his hitherto successful army. Appointed Governor of Newark in place of Willys, for which the latter bore him a serious grudge for many years, he remodelled the garrison to endure the last months of siege. With the fall of Newark, Belasyse returned to his house at Worlaby where he seems to have entertained a large number of former Royalist officers. Summoned to London, he did not pursue the business

of his composition (difficult in view of his known religion), and secured a pass to take him to France. There he served as a volunteer under Condé, and then journeyed into Italy, where he served a term against the Turks. Parliament permitted him to return briefly to England to raise 4000 men for the same service, but in 1648 he was appointed General of the Horse to the Marquess of Newcastle, although he does not seem to have set foot in England during the rising. He returned to duty with Condé after its failure, but in 1650 was back in England with liberty to go to Worlaby. Instead, he was arrested on suspicion of being a Royalist agent, which he was, and taken to the Tower, where he remained until after the battle of Worcester had been fought.

His confinement in the Tower was not hard, and he seems to have been given a pass to return to Europe in September 1650, but it was either withdrawn or he chose not to use it. Given the liberty of the Tower on April 24th 1651, he was eventually released on bail (Moone gave the figure as £10,000, the official records say £12,000) and permitted to return home. He thereupon became a member of the Sealed Knot, a remarkably inefficient underground organisation aimed at the restoration of the monarchy, where his personal clash with Willys former Governor of Newark, hindered proceedings. Moone accused Willys of betraying the Knot, and David Underdown has shown that this was probably true. Inactive during the 1655 rising, Belasyse was temporarily arrested in London and thereafter does not appear to have been active, although he was arrested on suspicion in 1659 of being connected with the Booth enterprise in Cheshire. He was apprehended on August 16th, and on the following day given his liberty on his parole to appear within fourteen days. On September 1st, however, the Governor of Hull was ordered to send Belasyse to London under close guard, and on the 12th he was committed to the Tower on a charge of High Treason. Upon his release on bail from what he called a "severe prison", he accepted a commission from Charles II to treat with George Monck, and Underdown believes that Belasyse had by now, although still a Catholic, shown favour to ideas of a Royalist-Presbyterian alliance. Despite Booth's accusation that Belasyse was the chief ringleader in the 1659 rising, the government, already tottering, was extremely lenient towards him.

Restored to eminence after the restoration, and financially secure (he had purchased forfeited estates during the Interregnum), he was not yet out of trouble. His Catholicism marked him, and during the Oates episode of the Popish Plot he was again arrested and confined. Under Charles II he was Lord Lieutenant of the East Riding, Governor of Hull and General of the African Forces. In 1673 he raised a Foot regiment, which was disbanded in the next year. James II put the same reliance upon, and trust in, Belasyse as his father and brother had done, but the revolution of 1688 which broke King James, probably hastened Belasyse's own death, which occurred in 1689. Apart from

being a committed Royalist, and a steady Catholic, Belasyse was also an efficient, brave and resolute soldier, wanting caution. The breach between him and Willys must seriously have hampered the plans of the Sealed Knot, and he was constantly watched by the Cromwellian authorities. In 1658 he had been run through the hand in a duel to which he was challenged by one Philip Howard, who accused him of seducing his (Howard's) sister. His military career between 1642 and 1646 was, however, remarkable in that it indicates how far and how high the younger son of a Catholic peer (he was not himself ennobled until 1644) could rise in the Royalist armed forces, Catholicism notwithstanding.²⁶

Neither a lt. colonel nor a major, have been identified for this regiment.

Captain Richard Cholmeley: Claimed in the List as of Durham. He was of Tunstall near Catterick, and had been presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1625 and twice in 1641 as a Recusant, on the earlier occasion, specifically for harbouring Recusants. We appear to have a picture of his activities in 1651, when a Richard Cholmeley who used the alias of Richard Tempest, visited one Peter Vavasour claiming to be a representative of Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour (q.v.) on clandestine business. He, however, over-stayed his welcome, "protracting tyme untill [Vavasour] was very weary both of his discourse and company". After Cholmeley had gone, a local posse led by the Constable came to search for him, and it further transpired that he had also used the alises of Richard Chambers, claiming to have been a quartermaster in the Royal army, and of Richard Mountaine. Underdown does not notice him in his study of Royalist conspiracy. He is not to be confused with Richard Cholmeley of Grosmont in Yorkshire, killed in the west country for the King.²⁷

Captain John Crossland: Cited in the List, this may be an early reference, erring as to forename, for Jordan Crossland, later Colonel and Governor of Helmsley (q.v.). If it is not, a John Crossland was born in 1622, the sixth and youngest son of John Crossland of Helmsley who died in 1636. No further details are known.²⁸

Captain George Dawson: Cited in the List, but see the same name and rank in Sir John Mallory's Dragoons (Skipton Garrison). We are probably dealing with the transfer of Dawson from Belasyse's to Mallory's. He was of Azerley, Gentleman, fined £203 in 1646 as a delinquent, but erroneously described as a 'major'.²⁹

Captain Griffith Standen: Claimed in the List as of London and Westminster, but defies identification. He may be the Captain Standeven listed in the defence of Pontefract Castle in 1644.³⁰

Captain Thomas Strickland: Claimed in the List as of London and Westminster. Probably the Thomas Strickland of Sizer, younger brother of Colonel Sir Robert Strickland (q.v.), who died in 1670 and was taxed in January 1656 for £16, as a former delinquent. In his petition to compound he referred to his rank, and stated that he had laid down his arms in 1643.³¹

Lieutenant William Thornton: Claimed in the List as of Yorkshire, in Captain Strickland's troop. He was probably William Thornton of Olstead and Ellingthorpe, Gentleman, who petitioned in 1649. The composition records imply that there were two such William Thorntons, but this seems unlikely. William of Olstead, at his composition, admitted to "assisting" the Royal cause, and stated that he was then in debt to Trinity House Hull for the sum of £410. The fine of £136.19.6d imposed upon him was probably for activities in 1648. William Thornton of Ellingthorpe, petitioning 1649 for activities between 1642 and 1646, was fined £43. In his composition, this William alluded to his father Richard, deceased, and according to the pedigree, William was his father's second son and was born in 1603, his father dying in 1612. At the time of the visitation, William of Ellingthorpe was described as a merchant of York, which seems to forge a link between him and William of Olstead, who also appears to have had commercial interests. In March 1661 William of Olstead was petitioning to be restored to the Comptrollership of the Customs at Hull from which he had been removed in 1642. Olstead or Oldstead is in the North Riding near Easingwold, and Ellingthorpe lies close to Boroughbridge. Territorially and commercially, there appears to be a sound link here, particularly since two compositions by one man are not unusual.³²

Cornet Anthony Dawson: Claimed in the List as of Yorkshire, in Captain Dawson's troop, and this suggests a familial link. Anthony Dawson of Hilton in the North Riding was indicted as a Recusant at the Assizes in 1664, and both Hilton and Azerley are in the North of Yorkshire.³³

Cornet Thomas Ily: Claimed in the List as of Durham, but there is no allusion to him in the composition proceedings of other members of this Bishopric family. This suggests, as does his rank, that he was a younger son or brother, if connected with the main branch. Two of this name signed the 1641/2 Protestation, as of Crooke and Billyrow in Brancepeth, and of Auckland St. Andrew respectively.³⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Coot, cited in the List.

Captain William Tayler, claimed in the List, from Yorkshire.

Captain Michael Thompson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain Metcalfe Wise, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant John Pearson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant Robert Syley, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wise's troop.

Cornet Toby Rockly, claimed in the List from London/Westminster in Captain Crossland's troop.

Cornet Richard Thornly, claimed in the List from London/Westminster. (A Cornet Thurley was mentioned by Drake in the defence of Pontefract).

Quartermaster John Cade, claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Captain Thompson's troop.

Quartermaster Richard Hughes, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Coot's troop.

Quartermaster Peter Scafe, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir William BLAKISTON'S Regiment of Horse.

Precisely when this regiment was first raised is uncertain, but it probably belongs to the period of the Queen's presence at York in 1643. Before that time, Blakiston may have been a troop commander under Colonel Sir William Widdrington (q.v.). By the time that we begin to have information concerning his activities, in 1644/5, the regiment was far from at full strength and was then attached, as were the remnants of so many northern cavalry regiments, to the Oxford army. Indeed, according to a contemporary source, by mid-October 1645 Blakiston's regiment, the remainder of Rupert's own, and that of Charles Lucas could muster barely 120 men all told.³⁵ The regiment was almost certainly present during the Marquess of Newcastle's campaigns in late 1643, and fought at Marston Moor. That it was present at Naseby seems likely. Part of the Northern Horse, the regiment took part in the brilliant relief march to Pontefract, and was particularly noted by Samuel Luke on February 26th as having wintered in Salisbury and now on its way to Newark.³⁶ What was left of the regiment fought at Rowton Heath, in the attempted relief of Chester, late in 1645.

Colonel Sir William Blakiston:

Blakiston was the third and youngest of the sons of Henry Blakiston of Archdeacon Newton in South Durham, situated in that area of the Tees valley which produced so many Royalist field commanders and regiments. The only son to survive infancy, he was head of the family in 1642 and was knighted, probably before he raised his regiment, at Oxford in the following year. Blakiston was a brigade commander at Marston Moor, and again at Naseby, where he appears to have been senior to Sir Marmaduke Langdale (q.v.). In September 1644 he was wounded in action near Monmouth, and early the following year appended his signature to the petition of the Northern Horse which led to the relief of Pontefract. In September 1645 the hard pressed commander in Chester, John Lord Byron, was told by George Digby on the King's behalf, that Blakiston with "a good proportion of horse" was on his way to assist him, and Byron observed ruefully that the King would have to be extremely active in dislocating the enemy lines, implying that Blakiston alone was insufficient help. By January 17th 1646, Blakiston was Governor of Tutbury Castle, according to a report from Sir John Gell writing to Speaker Lenthall. He had certainly not compounded for his sequestered lands by 1652, and even after the cessation of hostilities in 1646 was said to have been plotting to seize Pontefract Castle. He was in the field again in 1648, and was captured in the fiasco at Appleby on October 9th. He apparently escaped, or was released, for he was in arms again in 1651, and was captured either at Worcester or at Wigan Lane. For a time he was lodged as a prisoner in Maxstoke Castle, Warwickshire, and then removed to Warwick Castle. He did not long remain confined, for

Thurloe was told in 1654 that Blakiston was active in the plots and risings of that period, but whether he was caught, or any further action taken against him, we do not know. After the restoration, he was appointed a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles II, but of his date of death, like that of his birth, we are ignorant.

There is one curious allusion to him in a contemporary Parliamentary newspaper, Mercurius Politicus, dated June 18th, 1651, prior to the Worcester campaign. According to this report, Blakiston was a lieutenant in the duke of Buckingham's cavalry troop, but a repetition of the report in the same paper alluded to Sir Richard Blakiston, who defies identification. Colonel Blakiston must have been one of a number of prominent gentry who made up the ducal force.³⁷

Lt.Colonel John Thornton: Cited in the List, by name and rank, John was the second of the five sons of Sir Nicholas Thornton of Netherwitton, Northumberland. From a markedly Recusant background (see Captain Nicholas Thornton, William Widdrington's Dragoons), he may have been the Captain Thornton described as a "Protestant of the last edition" in a contemporary tract. According to the charges against him, he assumed command of his brother's troop of horse and "continued in the King's service so long as any field forces remained on foot, the said John being for a long time Lt.Colonel to Sir William Blakiston of Newton". He signed the petition of the Northern Horse in 1645, and was taken prisoner at Naseby. He was in arms in 1648, and was captured in the same disaster at Appleby where his former Colonel was taken, but from this coincidence we cannot suppose the survival of the regiment in any recognisable form after 1645. Moreover, alternative evidence suggests that he was taken at Coquet Water on July 1st, rather than at Appleby. Listed for knighthood at the restoration, in the proposed Order of the Royal Oak, his yearly income was estimated at £800. He seems never to have compounded, but it may be that his personal estate was too small in 1646 and his Catholicism too strong. He came to reside at Horbury, where he died in 1674.³⁸

Captain [] Douglas: Cited in the List, such a man also appears under Colonel Jordan Crossland in Helmsley garrison. The surname (we lack a forename) suggests a Scottish professional, and the evidence as to identity is strong but mutually exclusive. On the one hand, in the pedigree of the Douglas family of Gym, Alexander Douglas, an expatriate Scot residing in Yorkshire and connected with the Langdales, raised a troop of horse in Arkendale, was early taken prisoner, and escaped. No other details can be traced. As an alternative, we have Simon Douglas of Fremington who brought a case at Quarter Sessions in Richmond in 1663 against one James Arundell. The latter was charged with having said to Douglas "Thou and thy father are rogues and traitors, and all is traitors that

doth fight for the King". What became of the case is unknown, and we know insufficient of the social standing of the Douglas's, to even tentatively suggest that Simon or his father may have been our Captain Douglas. Nonetheless, it is sufficient to cast doubt on the identity of Alexander Douglas, as the officer, unless Alexander was Simon's father. A third Captain Douglas, was named in 1642 with a Lieutenant Douglas, as Scottish professionals then stationed, respectively, at Rotterdam and Middleburgh and likely to return to England for the King's service. This may represent a link with the Fremington case, but is far from conclusive. I have taken Douglas of Crossland's as being the same as this Douglas of Blakiston's on the grounds of inherent probability, as evidence the case of Gascoigne Eden, below.³⁹

Captain Gascoigne Eden: Cited twice in the List, he was previously captain under Colonel Sir Thomas Riddell (q.v.) in Tynemouth garrison. A younger son of John Eden of West Auckland, and brother to Colonel John Eden (q.v.) of the same, Gascoigne was styled as of Billingham, Gentleman. At the time of his sequestration, in August and September 1644, he was referred to as being at a garrison. An inveterate Royalist, he compounded in 1646 with his local committee for the sum of £66.13.4d., but was fined again in 1649 a sum of £66 for being in arms in 1648. That he was again in arms in 1651 is suggested by his being undischarged in 1652. He died in 1656.⁴⁰

Captain William Lambton: Cited in the List, and not to be confused with an officer of the same name in Lord Widdrington's Horse. William was styled of Tribley, the first son by the second marriage of Colonel Sir William Lambton (q.v.), and was a convicted Recusant in 1629. Lambton was killed in action at Wakefield in May 1643, which suggests that Blakiston's regiment was by then partially or wholly recruited and ready for action.⁴¹ We know that his father's regiment was also at Wakefield, and sustained losses, but it was not unusual for the eldest son or for any son, of an infantry colonel, to take service in the elite arm, if chance offered.

Lieutenant Michael Kirk: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Douglas's troop. He may be the Lieutenant Kirk taken prisoner on February 10th 1644, but beyond that there is no possible identification.⁴²

Cornet John Eden: Claimed in the List from Durham in Captain Eden's troop. The frequency with which the name is met with in Co. Durham renders identification difficult, but this may be John, son of Ralph Eden, a copyholder in West Auckland in 1646.⁴³

Quartermaster Christopher Garbutt: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Douglas's troop. Such a man, a husbandman according to the contemporary references, was styled of Brome flatt in Bilsdaile when his will was granted probate in 1663.⁴⁴

Quartermaster George Shadford: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Lambton's troop. Several of this family fell foul of the sequestrators, but none answering to this name. Two of the name signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Easington and of Croxdale respectively. Thomas Shadford, a Royalist Commissioner of Array who had rejected a commission from the earl of Essex, and who advanced £200 for Tynemouth garrison, had three sons, the eldest of whom was named George. The link with Tynemouth established through Captain Eden (see above) seems good, but the rank of Quartermaster too lowly for the eldest son of a Commissioner of Array and, incidentally, a JP.⁴⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

*Quartermaster William Atkinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire (a man of similar name claimed under Colonel Walter Vavasour, q.v.).

Quartermaster Francis Deighton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, in Lt. Colonel Thornton's troop.

*Quartermaster Thomas Reed, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster John Sweat, claimed in the List from Cambridgeshire.

Quartermaster George Walton, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Eden's troop.

*Atkinson and Reed both stipulated that they were Brigade quartermasters to Blakiston as distinct from regimental, and in Atkinson's case we may have a man who initially served under Vavasour but, in the general breakdown of 1644 in the north, found himself attached to the Northern Horse and so to Blakiston's brigade. Probably a double claim, although the name is too common to permit conclusive identification. Such a claim would have been technically invalid, although it was not unusual.

Colonel (Sir) William BRADSHAW'S Regiment of Horse.

Basically a Lancashire regiment, it may not have been raised until late in 1643, perhaps even in early 1644 out of broken Royalist units. Of its campaigns we know practically nothing, except that it was almost certainly engaged in Yorkshire in February and March 1644. There is a slender indication that the regiment may have been stationed at York in October 1643,⁴⁶ and that it fought at Marston Moor, after which it was swallowed up in the Northern Horse. No Lt. Colonel has been identified.

Colonel (Sir) William Bradshaw: William was the second son, but heir, of Roger Bradshaw of the Haigh in Lancashire whom he succeeded in 1640. Styled Esquire, he was a Foreign Burgess of the Preston Guild, and a strong Catholic, like all the family. Two of his brothers became seminary priests. He himself was convicted as a Recusant in 1630 and again in 1632. On January 25th 1644 he was recruiting men for the Marquess of Newcastle on the Yorkshire/Lancashire border, and was apparently captured at Bradford in March. During the period of his sequestration, his younger brother Roger endeavoured to secure possession of William's Yorkshire and Kent properties, but whether as a device for safeguarding them or not, we do not know. He was knighted during the course of the civil war, probably by Newcastle himself, and died in 1650.⁴⁷

Major Thomas Vavasour: Cited in the List, he was also a Catholic, if not a Recusant, being the third of the six sons of Sir Thomas Vavasour of Hazlewood, Yorkshire, and a younger brother of Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour (q.v.). He was killed in action on Marston Moor.⁴⁸

Captain Edward Tyldesley: Claimed in the List as of Lancashire, he was of Whittingham and Ashley, styled Gentleman. A Catholic, his lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652, and he was still undischarged in 1655. In 1660 he petitioned for the office of Steward and Forester of Myerscough (the seat of his near relation Colonel Sir Thomas Tyldesley (q.v.)), Wyersdale and Quarnmoor Forests. He petitioned a second time in February 1661. He is unlikely to have been Colonel Tyldesley's son, also named Edward, who was clearly the person intended for the knighthood of the Royal Oak and whose estate was estimated at £1000 yearly in 1660, but this man's exact position in the Tyldesley pedigree is hard to establish.⁴⁹

Lieutenant John Dewhurst: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Tyldesley's troop. He was the eldest of the three sons of Robert Dewhurst of Alston and was born in 1603, dying in 1670 or thereabouts. No further details.⁵⁰

Quartermaster John Walmsley: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, in Major Vavasour's troop. Probably John Walmsley of Showley, Foreign Burgess of Preston Guild in 1642. On October 20th 1643 he signed at York for two trumpets for the regiment (supposing it was at full strength) to the value of £3.⁵¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Brockhills, claimed in the List, from Lancashire. (For this man, see the same in the Queen's Lifeguard of Horse).

Captain [] Dunhill, cited in the List.

Lieutenant John Neale, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dunhills troop.

Cornet John Foster, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Vavasour's troop.

Quartermaster William Mitchell, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster William Thomlinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Robert BRANDLING'S Regiment of Horse.

The life-span of this regiment must have been something less than twelve months. As has already been said (see above, Anderson's Horse), Brandling probably assumed command of what was left of George Heron's regiment, in July 1643, and lost command of it in July of the following year. Brandling's decision to serve the Parliament after the fall of York threw a shadow on his career in Royalist eyes, and it may be that few of his officers cared to associate themselves with his name in the List, for we find that his major preferred to claim under another regiment, to which he transferred, and the identification of his lt. colonel is conjectural. It is just possible that one or two of those officers who did claim under him, claimed spuriously, in that they may well have gone with him into the enemy's service to form the nucleus around which he built a new cavalry regiment in the summer and autumn of 1644. If this was the case, such claimants were barred from making a claim by the terms of reference set out in the preamble to the List. However, we cannot be sure of this, and so it is a safe assumption to suppose that the claimants named were genuine Royalists of uninterrupted standing.

Of the regiment's active service we know very little, except for a specific reference to it in action at Eorbridge in February 1644.⁵² Evidently it formed part of the Marquess of Newcastle's main army against the Scots, and served with the cavalry that met Rupert on his way through Lancashire to the relief of York. From the identified officers, it appears that the regiment fought on Marston Moor, its last action, but what became of the remnant deserted by Brandling, we cannot know, unless it was swallowed up in the Northern Horse.

Colonel Robert Brandling: Robert was the eldest son, by his father's second marriage, of Robert Brandling of Felling Co. Durham, who had been Sheriff in 1617 and who was, in 1643, disgraced for adultery. Robert II, born in 1617, was styled as of Leathley in Yorkshire, Esquire, an estate he acquired by marriage. At the outbreak of civil war, he was commissioned as a captain in Edward Grey's Dragoons (q.v.), and then, after the destruction of that regiment at the end of 1642, was transferred to Charles Brandling's regiment of Foot (q.v.) as its lt. colonel. It must have been in July 1643 that he took over the remnant of Heron's regiment, although in April there is some inconclusive evidence that he was already recruiting a troop of horse around Berwick on Tweed. At the fall of York, Brandling gave himself up to Lord Fairfax, and after pleading that he had been 'heretofore misguided' was commissioned to raise a cavalry regiment for the Parliament. Sir Thomas Fairfax wrote a certificate for Brandling to show to the Committee for Compounding and other official bodies, stating that Brandling had "in Person faithfully served the Parliament during the War, for

which service there is a great Arrear of Pay due to him". Brandling himself complained that as a younger brother of the head of the family, he was himself reliant upon his wife's money. His composition was waived and the sequestration lifted in 1647, although it must be said that for most individuals who changed sides, this was far from normal and must be taken as proof of Brandling having undergone a thorough change of heart. By 1654, however, he was finding something to do in the way of conspiracy, and was arrested and gaoled in Hull for three years. Colonel Robert Lilburn told Thurloe in January 1656 that "we have got soe much from his owne mouth to day as (I think) will serve his turne without any further proof". He was thus doubly damned in Royalist eyes, as a turncoat and as an informer, causing Sir Marmaduke Langdale to describe him as "a very knave". In August 1657, Brandling petitioned Cromwell that he was unjustly imprisoned, having raised forces for the Parliament in 1644 and again in 1651, and that his wife and family were in need of him. Cromwell permitted him to return home on unspecified guarantees of good behaviour. He did not benefit from the restoration and died in 1669. Although from a markedly Recusant background, he himself seems never to have been suspected for any Catholicism.⁵³

(Lt.Colonel) Sir George Bowes:

UNIVERSITY
OF YORK
LIBRARY

Cited in the List, it is upon his earlier rank with Heron's regiment that the link with Brandling is based. His rank is conjectured, however, since it is not given in the List, but in view of his social standing would seem right, particularly if he had been promoted after Heron's death. It is not unusual to find a knight, for example, serving under an Esquire in the northern army. Sir George was the eldest son of Sir William Bowes of Bradley Hall, and had been born in 1596. He was taken prisoner during the 1648 rising, and imprisoned in Newcastle, where he died from wounds. His widow petitioned to compound in July 1650, but the estate was undischarged in 1651. His eldest son, Ralph, was also a Royalist in arms. Sir George is not to be confused with Sir George Bowles, killed in 1643 at Winceby.⁵⁴

Major Ralph Brandling:

Cited in the List, Ralph may well have transferred to Langdale's Horse (q.v.) in 1644. Such a man signed the petition of the Northern Horse in 1645. However, the only certainly identified Ralph Brandling was the second son of Sir Francis Brandling of Alwick Abbey who, according to the pedigrees, was killed on Marston Moor. Colonel Robert Brandling had a half brother, named Ralph, by their father's first marriage, but apparently this Ralph was dead by 1633. Whilst it is by no means definite that this Brandling and Langdale's were one and the same, the Brandlings as a whole are easily identifiable and the assumption demands consideration. It is arguable that the Ralph Brandling killed on Marston Moor was the man in question, particularly if the claimant who cited him under Langdale did so in the context of Langdale being a brigade commander on the

Moor. There is some degree of uncertainty in specific cases in the List, although not enough to make any appreciable problem, as to whether a rank is regimental or brigade.⁵⁵

Captain Thomas Lewins: Claimed in the List as of Northumberland. Such a man was the son of James Levins or Lewins of Swinefleet, and a Thomas Lewins appears as a Freeholder in Warkworth, Gentleman, and as a tenant of the earl of Northumberland at Alnham, in 1638/9 and 1636/7 respectively.⁵⁶ This is a double claim in the List.

Captain William Tunstal: Cited in the List. William was the eldest son of Marmaduke Tunstal of Scargill and Wycliffe in Yorkshire. His own military career was overshadowed by that of his father, who died in 1657. Marmaduke was a convicted Recusant, and had compounded for himself and his wife in 1632. Lord Fairfax regarded him as a Papist in 1642, and he was taken prisoner at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645. William, born in 1613, and who died in 1686, was also a convicted Recusant in 1665, when he was styled as of Hutton, Esquire.⁵⁷

Quartermaster Richard Charlton: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was named as a Gentleman Volunteer in January 1661 under Lord Widdrington, and styled as of Alnwick.⁵⁸

Quartermaster Stephen Harrison: Claimed in the List from Durham under Major Brandling. Such a man of St. Oswald signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁵⁹

Quartermaster James Pallester: Claimed in the List from Durham, Sir George Bowes' troop. Such a man of Harverton in Chester Ward signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁶⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet John Parving, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Sir George Bowes's troop.

Cornet Henry Pinckney, claimed as from Yorkshire in the List, Captain Tunstal's troop.

Quartermaster Gerrard Farrow, claimed in the List from Durham.

Quartermaster John Forster, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Brandling's troop.

Colonel Sir Robert BYRON'S Regiment of Horse.

From the claimants in the List this was clearly a Lancashire regiment, which fits in with the available evidence as to its recruitment. Byron was brought over from Ireland in late 1643 to serve the King, a man of wide military experience who does not appear to have been employed to the full. He had also a regiment of foot of some sort, but this was very probably a unit drawn from Ireland and does not belong in this analysis. It was to the Foot that Thomas Price, B.D., probably referred when he petitioned that he had come over 'as chaplain to Sir Robert Byron's regiment, and was imprisoned on the surrender of Liverpool'.⁶¹ Byron's Horse were recruited in Lancashire in November and December 1643, and fought at Nantwich in January 1644 where they were the only regiment to save their colours. At the earlier battle of Middlewich, Byron told the earl of Ormond in a letter, he, three of his captains, one lieutenant and 41 men had been wounded, with 15 killed or dead from wounds.⁶² The regiment went into garrison in Liverpool with that of Cuthbert Clifton (q.v., Foot) when Rupert seized that town in June 1644, and was there at the surrender when, according to the terms of capitulation, "Sr Robert Byron himselfe and the officers of his regiment wth 15 horses...every of them with armes and pistoles" were permitted to go to any garrison of their choice.⁶³ The remnant of the regiment, about 100 strong, was taken into Colonel Sir William Vaughan's Horse brigade of the main Royalist army, and five of the regiment were taken prisoner at Beeston Castle on January 18th 1645.⁶⁴

Colonel Sir Robert Byron: Robert was third of the five sons of Sir John Byron K.B., of Newstead in Nottinghamshire, and brother to John Lord Byron. He saw active service in Ireland as lt. colonel in Sir Henry Tichborne's regiment, for which he was commissioned on May 11th 1642. On November 18th 1643 the King granted to him the town, castle and lands of Ballygarth, with Inghlandstown and Mooreschurch, Co. Meath, for his services in the defence of Drogheda. Before his commission as lt. colonel, Byron had been serving as a captain of infantry and a payment of £24.1.3d. for his regimental company was recorded on December 17th 1641. By the time of his grant of lands in Ireland, Byron was on his way to England. Ormond told the Mayor of Chester on November 15th that Byron was on his way, and on December 1st he took ship at Dublin for Chester. Samuel Luke noted his arrival in England on December 11th. He went straight into action at Middlewich, where he was "shot into the leg, but without danger". He paid a brief visit to Oxford in May, where he was knighted, and after the surrender of Liverpool at the end of the year, joined the Oxford army. He fought at Naseby at the head of the regiment, or what was left of it, and was in arms again in the 1648 rising, and was taken prisoner in Ireland. At liberty, he was apparently in arms in Ireland again in 1650, according to Mercurius Politicus,

but nonetheless, was given leave to compound for his English property after he had been informed against. Clearly implicated in the conspiracies of the 1650's, Thurloe expressed surprise in May 1655 that Byron was not under arrest, whereupon Major General Goffe took the hint and confined Byron in Southampton Castle. On January 23rd 1656, Goffe told Thurloe that Byron's wife had petitioned him to release her husband on the usual security, but Goffe directed the petition to Thurloe since the latter had ordered Byron's confinement by "speciall direction". Goffe told Thurloe that Byron was "very poore", and implied that attention should be paid to his wife who was going to London to solicit her husband's release. The only evidence against Byron, which can be traced, dated to March 1655 when a Captain Alexander, a known Cavalier according to Thurloe's men, was arrested in Byron's house in Nottinghamshire whither Byron had gone ostensibly on legal business. It looks as if his family connection and his repeated military commitment to the monarchy had marked Byron down so far as Thurloe was concerned. After the restoration, he served as Master of the Ordnance in Ireland and seems to have settled there.⁶⁵

Lt. Colonel William Walton: Cited in the List twice, on the second occasion under Lord Byron, from whose regiment he must have transferred to Robert's. Walton was also cited as a field commander in his own right in the List. Of Walton, Lancashire, he was probably a Catholic since his son Thomas appears in the sequestration papers as a Recusant. Walton signed the appeal to Rupert in March 1644 for the relief of Lathom, when he was in Chester, and went with Byron to Ireland in 1648, to be killed at Drogheda. He was probably born in 1597, the son and heir of John Walton of Houghwick, Gentleman, and was himself styled as of Walton and of Preston in the administration of his will.⁶⁶

Major John Lowyck: Cited in the List, and possibly the son of Thomas Lowyck of Osmotherley, whose daughter was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in October 1632.⁶⁷

Captain [] Ferrell: According to Byron, this man died from wounds received at Nantwich in January 1644. Nothing more is known of him.⁶⁸

Captain Thomas Houghton: Claimed in the List as of Lancashire. He was the third of the sons of Thomas Houghton of Houghton, and petitioned to compound for his delinquency in 1649 when a fine of £2.10.0d. was imposed. He himself was then styled as of Cawsey in Houghton. Probably the Thomas Houghton taken prisoner in 1643 at Preston.⁶⁹

Captain George Talbot: Cited in the List, styled of Carr in Lancashire, Esquire, second of the four sons of Sir John Talbot.

His lands in Carr were lost to him in 1649 during composition due to a judgement in favour of his bondholders.⁷⁰

Lieutenant William Barker: Claimed in the List and given as of Lancashire, which he may have been at the time of his petition. However, in 1646 when he petitioned to compound, he was styled as of Uffington in Lincolnshire and admitted that he had been taken prisoner at Nantwich in 1644, which suggests strongly that he is our man. The Lancashire designation at time of petition for relief may be a printer's error.⁷¹

Lieutenant William Gradell: Claimed in the List as of Lancashire, Major Lowyck's troop. Styled of Ulneswalton, Gentleman, his lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652 for his own and his mother's Recusancy.⁷²

Lieutenant Thomas Halsall: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Walton's troop. He was probably the fifth of the eight sons of Thomas Halsall of Melling.⁷³

Lieutenant John Parker: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Talbot's troop. Probably John, son of Robert Parker of Cuerden Hall. The father died in 1636, and the grandfather, also named John, was Sheriff of Lancashire in 1653. The younger John married the widow of Colonel Francis Malham (q.v.).⁷⁴

Cornet John Heighington: Claimed in the List from Durham, under Lt. Colonel Walton. There are two possible identifications. He may have been the third of the three sons of Robert Heighington of Greystones, Co. Durham. Alternatively, a son of John Heighington Mayor of Durham in 1625, 1629 and 1636/7, who signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Durham St. Nicholas.⁷⁵

Cornet Hamlet Massey: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. He was the son and heir of Richard Massey of Rixton, who was dead by 1647. Hamlet's mother and father were Recusants, as he was himself.⁷⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Quartermaster James Cutler, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Walton's troop.

Quartermaster Robert Tickle, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Colonel Francis CARNABY'S Regiment of Horse.

This regiment was one of the earliest cavalry forces in the Marquess of Newcastle's field army with which he marched into Yorkshire in December 1642. It saw action at Adwalton Moor in June 1643,⁷⁷ and fought on Marston Moor with the northern cavalry on the left wing, which gave a good account of itself. On February 26th 1645, Samuel Luke noted that the regiment had been quartered at Salisbury, and was now marching north for Newark. By now part of the Northern Horse, the regiment took part in the relief of Pontefract.⁷⁸ It was badly beaten up at Longhoughton as it lay in quarters there after the relief,⁷⁹ and what was left was destroyed at Sherburn in Elmet in October 1645.⁸⁰

Colonel Francis Carnaby: Francis was the second son of William Carnaby of Langley and Thurnham in Northumberland who died in 1622. He entered Gray's Inn in 1640, and at the outbreak of war was seated at Togston, property given to him by his elder brother Sir William Carnaby, who was Treasurer at War to the earl of Newcastle. The family had strong Recusant connections, but no evidence of Catholicism attaches to Francis. He was present at Alwick Castle on January 22nd 1644 during the discussions chaired by Sir Thomas Glemham (q.v.) as to what steps should be taken against the Scots. After Marston Moor, he went temporarily into exile with Newcastle, but returned to fight at Naseby (where he was said, erroneously, to have been mortally wounded). With the Northern Horse, he rode north in September 1645 and was killed in action at Sherburn in Elmet in October, when his dying words were recorded: "Lord, have mercy upon me, help and prosper his majesty". His lands at Togston were inserted in the Second Treason Act of 1652. An uncertain reference suggests that he was in Skipton garrison at some stage in 1645.⁸¹

Lt. Colonel Reginald Carnaby: Cited in the List, he was the eldest son of Ralph Carnaby of Halton by Ralph's first wife, and was 22 when war broke out. Father and son were listed as Recusants in 1649, and Reginald inherited the Halton land from his father in 1651. He signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, fought presumably at Pontefract, and was captured at Sherburn in Elmet, the action in which his colonel was killed. His composition papers are missing, but he petitioned to compound in 1646. Perhaps his Catholicism stood in his way. Langdale listed Reginald as a trustworthy Royalist in northern England in 1656, but he was dead later that same year.⁸²

Major Thomas Carnaby: Cited in the List, he was second of the four sons of Lancelot Carnaby of Halton who died in 1624, and according to the pedigree, Thomas fought at Naseby and, in 1661, became a lieutenant in Lord Frescheville's Horse Guards. He was

actively plotting in 1654, but Underdown did not identify him. He may have been the Thomas Carnaby killed in a duel in a house off Blake Street, York, in 1665 by another former Royalist officer, Richard Harland (q.v., Saville's Horse). In 1655, he was still enjoying the rank of major. Edward Trumbel informed Thurloe that in March of that year, Major Carnaby had invited him to Duddo Castle for a wedding, but Trumbel found, on his arrival, some 70 armed men quartered in the place and talking of surprising Newcastle upon Tyne. By 1658 Carnaby may have been promoted to the rank of colonel in the army at Dixmeude, if he was the Colonel Carnaby alluded to in that year by Sir Edward Walker.⁸³

Major Tristram Fenwick: Cited in the List, but whether he preceded or came later into the rank held by Thomas Carnaby, is hard to say. He was the son and heir of Ralph Fenwick of Kenton Northumberland who had died in 1610, and was styled as of Kenton in the will of John Heron dated June 11th 1619. In 1619 Tristram was party to a division of Sir Ralph Delaval's Cowpen estates and the enclosure thereof, and was probably the Tristram Fenwick who signed the 1641/2 Protestation. In the Freeholder lists of 1628 and 1638/9 he was styled as of Kyneton, Gentleman.⁸⁴

Captain Thomas Carleton: Cited in the List, and probably of Wolsingham Park Co. Durham who died sometime before 1650. Such a man, however, also claimed in the List as from Cumberland in Lord Byron's regiment of horse.⁸⁵

Captain Richard Carnaby: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he is mentioned briefly in the sequestration records concerning his colonel. He was apparently concerned in a tripartite indenture at Togston in 1640, but he does not appear in the main pedigrees of the family. Such a man of Newbucke, Gentleman, was convicted as a Recusant between 1677 and 1682.⁸⁶

Captain Ralph Carnaby: Claimed in the List as of Northumberland, and may have been the second son of Ralph Carnaby of Halton by his second marriage. He was born in 1622 and died in 1694, styled of Chollerton. He was listed as a Recusant in 1674, 1680, and 1682/3.⁸⁷

Captain Henry Ewbank: Cited in the List, perhaps a relation of Toby Ewbank of Egglestone, Co. Durham, Esquire, an undischarged delinquent in 1652. A Henry Ewbank of Middleton in Teesdale signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁸⁸

Captain Thomas Fenwick: Claimed in the List as from Northumberland, and probably the Thomas Fenwick of Prestwick, Esquire, listed as a Freeholder in 1638/9 and his lands

inserted in the Treason Act of November 18th 1652.⁸⁹

Captain John Sampson: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but he may have been the John Sansom of Twizel, Northumberland, who petitioned for an allowance of £8 on the estate of Sir Nicholas Thornton, a Catholic and delinquent.⁹⁰

Lieutenant William Newton: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. The name is common, but two possibilities are William Newton of Broomley who was rated for lands there in 1663 and in the Hearth Tax Roll of 1665. He was buried at Bywell in 1676. A Recusant, William Newton, was holding lands in Bradley in the parish of Medomsley, Co. Durham, at the time of the civil war.⁹¹

Cornet Edward Bell: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Carnaby's troop. This may well be Edward Bell of Stannington, son of Edward Bell of Duddo. Father and son were both implicated in the 1654/5 conspiracies. Bell of Duddo told Thurloe's agent that he had received a commission to act in the rising, and one Edmund Turner reported that he had heard Bell of Duddo speak of a nationwide conspiracy. Bell of Stannington was drawn into the business on later information and was questioned. He made the startling and perhaps fictitious revelation that Sir Thomas Fairfax was expected to rise with them.⁹²

Cornet Tobias Ewbank: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Ewbank's troop. The only identifiable Tobias Ewbank was, according to contemporary records, styled Esquire of Egglestone and Middleton in Teesdale. It is unlikely that he is this cornet, who may have been a son. Tobias of Eggleston was a Royalist delinquent in 1642/6 and 1648, and was discharged from sequestration in 1652. Notorious as a turbulent fellow in his locality, Toby signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁹³

Quartermaster Richard Addison: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in Lt. Colonel Carnaby's troop. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Bishop Wearmouth if it is the same man. The name is not unduly common.⁹⁴

Quartermaster Cuthbert Gantly: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Carleton's troop. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Stanhope (in Weardale).⁹⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet Jeremy Wilson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Carleton's troop.

Quartermaster John Dawson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Fenwick's troop.

Quartermaster Mathew Hodgson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Ewbank's troop.

Colonel the Lord Henry CAVENDISH'S Regiment of Horse.

There are several superficial similarities between this regiment and that of Viscount Mansfield (q.v.), but not sufficient to make it a safe assumption that they were one and the same. Most of the regiment's activities are hidden in the general movements of the northern cavalry, but Sir Henry Slingsby (q.v.) noted that in August 1644 part of this regiment formed a section of Colonel Sir John Mayney's (q.v.) brigade.⁹⁶ In March 1644, the regiment, then part of Colonel Gamaliel Dudley's (q.v.) brigade, was serving against the Scots under its lt. colonel.⁹⁷ Beyond this, we can go no further.

Colonel the Lord Henry Cavendish: This was a titular rank, Henry being the youngest of the two sons of the earl of Newcastle, eventually succeeding to the dukedom created for his father by letters patent in 1664 and dying himself in 1691. The exact date of his birth is hedged with uncertainty (see his brother Viscount Mansfield) but it is almost certain that he cannot have been more than 16 in 1642. The real regimental authority lay with the lt. colonel. Henry seems either to have remained in England when his father went into exile, or to have returned subsequently, if he is indeed the Henry Cavendish whom we find in 1651 bailed on sureties of £500 a piece.⁹⁸

Lt. Colonel [] Scrimgeour: Cited in the List, the lack of a forename hinders identification. Scrimgeour may have been a Scottish professional, or, alternatively, Charles or John Skrimshire of Norbury in Staffordshire. John, the eldest son of James Skrimshire was 42 when the civil war broke out, and died in 1665. The second son, Charles, compounded as a delinquent in arms and in 1660 became a Gentleman Pensioner. A third John Skrimshire, or Skrimshire, is also noted as a delinquent, the son of John of Norbury, and is probably the same John Skrimshire who signed the Newark petition of confidence in Rupert, Willys and Gerard. A Colonel Skrimshire was taken prisoner in Lincolnshire in July 1648 during the rising. Failing better evidence, the problem is insoluble, but the strongest possibility is that this was Charles Skrimshire of Norbury.⁹⁹

Major Anthony Skinner: Cited in the List, this man has defied identification however tentative. He petitioned in June 1660 for a place as Gentleman Usher to the future Queen, his military service testified to by Newcastle, Langdale and Belasyse, he "having endured much in the wars". In 1661 he was seeking a baronetcy for the son of Colonel John Smith (q.v.) a kinsman of his.¹⁰⁰

Captain John Banks: Claimed in the List as of Yorkshire, not to be confused with the Captain John Banks of Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Foot

(Scarborough Garrison). This man was of Busby in the North Riding, indicted in 1664 at the Assizes as a Recusant.¹⁰¹

Captain [] Bilby: of Bealby, see the same man (supposedly) in Viscount Mansfield's Horse and Sir Francis Wortley's Horse.

As for this regiment, so for the other two, he is merely cited by a claimant in the List. Lacking a forename, the pedigree of the Beilby family of Micklethwaite Grange does not assist us. The name was common around Leeds and Tadcaster at this period, and a York master butcher, Edward Bilby, died in 1674. Interestingly, there is a Captain Edward Beale who, having taken the Covenant in the north, resorted to arms again in Newark garrison and then made his way to the Scots with whom he enlisted. This man may account for any one of our three Bilbys, but not for them all, and the spelling on each occasion is quite distinct.¹⁰²

Captain Robert Lakin: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, in July 1642 he had been a Trainband captain in Henry Belasyse's Foot, a regiment which did not survive into the civil war.

Styled of Fowbridge Hall, Gentleman, he compounded for £22.10.0d., and in February 1660 was reported to be active in raising arms for the King around Scarborough.¹⁰³

Captain Thomas Naylor: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. He may have been the Thomas Naylor of the Bail in Lincolnshire, Gentleman, whose lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652. Interestingly, a Thomas Naylor of Wakefield, during the siege of Sandal in 1645, fought a duel with a captain in Sir John Saville's troop of (Parliamentary) horse.¹⁰⁴

Lieutenant John Latham: Claimed in the List from Warwickshire, Latham seems to link the regiment with Skrimshire of Norbury, but he claimed as of Bilby's troop. However, no delinquent of this name in Warwickshire can be traced, and this may be a subsequent place of residence, or a temporary one at the time of petitioning. John Latham of Congleton, Cheshire, was aged 33 in 1642, but there is no record of delinquency. John Latham of Hugton, Lancashire, had his lands inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652. He was alternatively known as John Latham of Ashurst Hall, Walton, and his estate was sold in 1654 which might account for a move to Warwickshire. However, the Lancashire link with this regiment is extremely tenuous and not to be emphasised.¹⁰⁵

Lieutenant John Pullen: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Markenfield's troop. He was the eldest son of James Pullen of Killinghall, Esquire, the head of a markedly Recusant family. John, styled of Ripon, Farnham and Bishop-Monkton, was

related to the Vavasours of Weston by marriage, and his lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652.¹⁰⁶

Cornet Robert Chambers: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, in Captain Markenfield's troop. He was probably the second of the four sons of Walter Chambers of Hawes, Westmorland, who died in 1665. However, the name Chambers is common in that area, or was in the 17th century. A Mr. Chambers of Raby Coat donated £1 to Carlisle defences in 1644, and two men named Robert Chambers died in 1675 and 1679, of Fetherston and East Keswick respectively.¹⁰⁷

Cornet Samuel Greenwell: Claimed in the List from Durham in Lt. Colonel Scrimgeour's troop. Such a man, Constable of Hamsterley, signed the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁰⁸

Cornet Edward Hardcastle: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Markenfield's troop. Such a man of Kirby Moorside failed to compound, and lost his lands. He may have been the same as Edward Hardcastle of Biggin, Yorkshire, whose lands were in the Third Treason Act of 1652. Biggin, however, is in the West Riding of the county.¹⁰⁹

The following officers are unidentified.

Captain Thomas Markenfield, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain George Stanhope, claimed in the List from Yorkshire (but see Mansfield's Horse).

Cornet Anthony Cawdron, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire. (He claimed under a Captain Poyntz, for whom see the duke of York's Horse. There may be a printer's error here in the List.)

Cornet Peter Sturdy, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Skinner's troop.

Cornet Richard Wilson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Stanhope's troop.

Quartermaster Christopher Sympson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Markenfield's troop.

Colonel Edward CHISENALL'S Horse.

This cannot have existed as a regiment, nor is it likely that it was ever intended to be more than a supplementary troop to support Chisenall's infantry regiment (q.v.). Two claimants named Chisenall as a field commander of horse in the List, and a third was cited.

Colonel Chisenall is dealt with as colonel of his Foot. The three named officers of this troop were:

Captain [] Dixon: Cited in the List, the lack of a forename makes identification impossible. A Major Dixon was said to have accompanied Sir Thomas Glemham to Carlisle after the fall of York, and since Chisenall's cavalry, such as they were, fought at Marston Moor in Rupert's horse, the link is not too tenuous. A Captain Robert Dixon was captured at Appleby in 1648.¹¹⁰

Captain George Mort: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, he was clearly George Mort of Blackrod, Gentleman, who took the Covenant and Negative Oath in 1645 and compounded as a delinquent for £46.10.0d. Perhaps a connection of the former Mayor of Preston, Adam Mort, killed in the defence of his town in 1643.¹¹¹

Lieutenant John Bannister, claimed in the List from Herefordshire in Captain Dixon's troop, cannot be identified.

Colonel Sir Hugh CHOLMELEY'S Horse (Scarborough Garrison).

As in the case of nearly all garrison forces, it is difficult to say with certainty that anything approaching a regimental structure for the Scarborough Horse, was achieved. Cholmeley referred to his cavalry regiment in his memoir, however, but it is unlikely that there was any real continuity between the cavalry at his disposal prior to his return to his allegiance in March 1643, and the cavalry which he commanded afterwards. Mercurius Aulicus noted that only a troop of horse existed when Cholmeley came over to the Queen, about 80 strong.¹¹² Cholmeley noted that the force was 100 strong in March and, by July 1644, had reached what must have been its maximum strength of 200.¹¹³ Clearly, it had none of the makings of a regiment and doubtless, as at Skipton in the case of Sir John Mallory's Horse (q.v.), the cavalrymen doubled as foot or dragoons in case of necessity.

Curiously, however, the Scarborough Horse do seem to have been 300 strong in November 1643, when that number of swords was issued to them from the York arsenal.¹¹⁴ If this was the case, there is room to argue that some at least must have been lost during the campaigns in Yorkshire in early 1644, as the evidence of, for example, the battle of Selby tends to suggest.¹¹⁵ Even so, Cholmeley was not at fault when he spoke of his men as "verie good men and perpetually in action, and grew soe formidable the enemie durst not stand to looke them in the face".¹¹⁶ They were, up to and including the period of the siege of York, a constant threat to the Parliamentarians at Hull and to their sympathisers, and Cholmeley had already shown, during his service with the Parliament, that he was no mean commander. The exploits of the horse have been dealt with fully in Volume 1, but specific mention must here be made of the brilliant attack on Buttercrambe when 50 of the garrison cavalry rode through the night to kidnap Henry Darley, the Parliamentary Commissioner then resident there, and came away with their prize unscathed.¹¹⁷

Colonel Sir Hugh Cholmeley: Sir Hugh was born in 1600, the eldest of the two sons of Sir Richard Cholmeley of Whitby whom he succeeded in 1625. Sir Richard had been a prominent figure in the East Riding, as MP for Scarborough in 1620 and as High Sheriff in 1624. Hugh, educated at Beverley Free School and Jesus College, Cambridge, entered Gray's Inn in 1618 and sat as MP for Scarborough from 1623 to 1627. Knighted at Whitehall in 1626, he was made a baronet in 1641. An Anglican with some sympathy towards the Puritan theologians, Cliffe has shown him to have been an improving landlord who built up the family finances by his own efforts. From 1627 onwards, he resided chiefly in the north, opening alum mines at Whitby and becoming a Trainband colonel in 1636. A JP and Deputy Lieutenant in the East Riding, Sir Hugh's opposition to Ship Money and his unbending Protestantism probably contributed to his decision to fight for the

Parliament in 1642, a decision in which he may have been influenced by his close friend Sir John Hotham, the Governor of Hull. He had also been the MP for Scarborough in the Short and Long Parliaments, which had brought him into touch with activities there on the eve of civil war. As Parliamentary governor in Scarborough, he created havoc in the North Riding, and in two sharp successive engagements at Malton and Guisborough in January 1643 made his mark as a cavalry commander. Nonetheless, he cannot have been happy with his position, and the arrival of the Queen in Yorkshire gave him the opportunity to revert to his allegiance, turning Scarborough over to the earl of Newcastle and receiving the latter's authority to remain there as governor. For the rest of the war, Cholmeley proved himself as diligent a Royalist as any, and his defence of the castle entrusted to him was long and devoted. When the castle finally surrendered, Sir Hugh went into France, returning in 1649 to compound for his estates for the sum of £850. His mineral interests probably enabled him to survive this burden without too much difficulty, and he appears to have opted for a quiet life, although his name was mentioned in conspiratorial circles in 1650. Four years later he secured a pass to travel over seas with a servant to export a horse. He died in 1657.¹¹⁸

Lt.Colonel Toby Jenkin: Cited in the List as both captain and major, Jenkin assumed command of the Scarborough Horse at the fall of the garrison and took them into Newark, by which date he had become a colonel in his own right. His rank of lt. colonel in Scarborough sometimes toward the end of the siege, or perhaps from its commencement, seems valid. Toby was born in 1614, the second of the three sons, but eventual heir, of Sir Henry Jenkin of Great Busby who died in 1646. Toby himself was styled as of Grimston near York, Esquire. In his composition proceedings, it was stated that Toby "was Lieut. Colonel under S^r Hugh Cholmeley at Scarborough Castle and thence went to Newark on Trent and served there as Colonel and Governor of the King's forces under the Governor there". He was, in fact, one of the four foot colonels in Belasyse's reorganisation of the garrison. He compounded on a fine of £320 and took the Covenant in 1646. He appears, during the ensuing years, to have adopted a low profile, and next appears in 1661 when he was appointed to survey Scarborough Castle and to submit a recommendation as to the size of garrison required there. In 1664 he was appointed to a Commission to Regulate Corporations in Yorkshire, and in 1667 was named as one of three Commissioners to disburse monies in the building of the Grand Jury House at York Castle, when he was referred to as 'colonel' which seems to suggest either an honorary rank left from the civil war, or a Train-band position. He died in 1697 and was buried in York Minster.¹¹⁹

- Major [] Crompton: The only reference to him is in Cholmeley's memoir, as commanding the raid on Buttercrambe (see above, and Vol. 1). See possibly the same man, Sir Thomas Glemham's Foot.
- Captain Edmund Conyers: This is a tentative designation based upon the information in the family pedigrees that Edmund was killed in Scarborough. He was the sixth son of Nicholas Conyers of Bowlby, Yorkshire, born in 1621.¹²⁰
- Captain George Elrington: Cited in the List. Although not immediately identifiable, he was clearly connected with the prominent Recusant family of Elrington of Whitby, which settled in Pickering in the 1630's. An Edward Elrington of the family was a seminary priest and died in 1652 as Archdeacon of Warwick.¹²¹
- Captain Robert Lakin: Claimed in the List as of Yorkshire, this appears to be a second claim. See Henry Cavendish's Horse.
- Captain Michael Wharton: Cited in the List, Michael was the son and heir of Sir Michael Wharton of Beverley Park who died in 1655. Born in 1593, Michael matriculated at St. John's, Cambridge, in 1610 and was admitted to Gray's Inn the following year. His father was a vigorous anti-Catholic, and Michael sat as MP for Beverley in 1640 having defeated Sir Thomas Metham (q.v.). Nonetheless, in Michael's case there seems to have been some Catholic leaning, and after attending the King in Oxford in 1643, he came back to Yorkshire and was killed defending Scarborough Castle in 1645. His son, Michael III, compounded for his father's property in Yorkshire, London and Middlesex for the sum of £1600. Clay, in his study of Yorkshire Royalists, confused Michael II with Michael III.¹²²
- Lieutenant Ralph Brabant: Claimed in the List as from Durham, in Captain Thomas's troop. He was the third of the three sons of John Brabant or Braban of Pedgebanke, Co. Durham, and may have been the Cornet Brabaner taken prisoner at Selby in April 1644.¹²³
- Lieutenant Abraham Gero: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but not clearly identified. Probably a member or connection of the Gere family of Great Broughton. At Selby in April 1644, a Stephen Geere, also a lieutenant of horse, was taken prisoner.¹²⁴
- Lieutenant Robert Welborne: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Wharton's troop. A Robert Welburne of Muston, yeoman, was buried at Hunmanby in August 1681 and may well be the same, Hunmanby lying near Scarborough!¹²⁵

Quartermaster William Huntrayde:

Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was of Fylingdales, yeoman, and died in 1675.¹²⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Robert Thomas, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Francis Bambridge, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Jenkin's troop.

Cornet Robert Michael, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Elrington's troop.

Cornet Nicholas Skipton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Jenkin's troop.

Cornet Johnathan White, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet William Young, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Robert Reed, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wharton's troop.

Colonel Sir Robert CLAVERING'S Regiment of Horse.

Clavering's cavalry regiment, more so than his foot, was officered almost exclusively by Catholics. It is also one of the few which served almost entirely in the north, for which we have anything approaching an idea of its life-span, since after Clavering's death in 1644 it passed to his former lt. colonel and virtually all promotions came from within the officer cadre of the regiment. The regiment was probably formed sometime in 1643, and was operating in Durham for part of that year.¹²⁷ In 1644, the regiment was at Gateshead where it was recorded that Clavering paid over 14 shillings "for wine that his solgers received at the Communion" which indicates a substantial force, and allowance for Protestant troopers.¹²⁸ Attached to Montrose, the regiment did not see service in the retreat into Yorkshire in April 1644, nor did it fight on Marston Moor, although it was expected to arrive in time for the battle.¹²⁹ It in fact met Rupert at Richmond on July 3rd or 4th. Thereafter it suffered the same series of disasters as befell the northern cavalry which accompanied Rupert south, being engaged at Malpas on August 26th 1644.¹³⁰ By this time the regiment was commanded by John Forcer, and it was he whom Samuel Luke noted as colonel 'Farrer', marching towards Newark in February 1645 after wintering at Salisbury en route for the relief of Pontefract.¹³¹ The regiment fought its last action at Sherburn in Elmet in October of that year, where its colours were lost,¹³² but must also have been at Naseby in the body of the Northern Horse.

Colonel Sir Robert Clavering: Robert was born in 1618, second of the seven sons of Sir John Clavering of Callaly in Northumberland, who died in gaol in London in 1647 as a Catholic delinquent. Robert matriculated at Queen's, Oxford, in 1635 and was admitted to Lincoln's Inn in 1638. He was by then married, for in 1637 his estranged wife brought a claim for alimony against him which his father used his influence to have dismissed. The family was closely connected with the Newcastle Hostmen, and had a long Recusant tradition. Sir John compounded in 1632 for his Recusant wife, although he was himself conformable at that date. Robert, knighted by Newcastle at the time that he raised his regiment, was highly praised by Langdale who, in 1660, wrote: "in the beginning of the said troubles, at his own charge, he raised a regiment of horse and another of foot, with some Troops of Dragoons; with these he often eminently served his late majesty, as appeared by their many engagements, more particularly at Anderton Moor fight when he (commanding the forlorn hope) was very instrumental in gaining that great victory which then made us masters of the north". The reference is to Adwalton, fought on June 30th 1643, and is the only hint we have that Clavering's regiment was engaged there. Such praise from so exacting a man as Langdale must be given due respect, and argues for

Clavering's abilities. Although never himself a convicted Recusant, his family background and choice of officers argues strongly that Clavering was a Catholic. He died in August 1644 at Kendal in Westmorland, whereupon the regimental command devolved upon his immediate subordinate.¹³³

Colonel John Forcer: Cited as a field commander in the List, and previously lt. colonel to Clavering. John was the eldest son of Peter Forcer of Harbour House and Kelloe, Co. Durham, Esquire, who had died in 1626. The Forcers were a thorough-going Recusant family, who acted as protectors for travelling seminary priests. John's mother was convicted of Recusancy in October 1629, and he himself was proceeded against in 1637 on the same grounds. Rushworth noted him in 1642 as a Catholic in arms. Debarred from composition, his lands were sequestered in September 1644 and inserted in the Treason Act in 1652. In 1650 his wife had petitioned to be allowed one fifth of her husband's estate for the maintenance of herself and the children, and part of the property was bought by John Rushworth. In 1656 Langdale noted Forcer as a dependable man in the north, and in 1659 he was arrested on suspicion of involvement in the Booth rising. Released on his parole to appear when required, Forcer was eventually discharged for want of evidence against him. He died in 1665 at Harbour House to which he had returned. The brother in law of Colonel Sir Thomas Riddell (q.v.).¹³⁴

Lt. Colonel John Sayer: Cited in the List twice, as a captain under Colonel Clavering, and as lt. colonel under Forcer. He was of Great Worsall in the North Riding, Gentleman, and had refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I, for which he was fined £75. Probably the son of a John Sayer of Worsall living at the close of the 16th century, this John revived the Catholicism of the family. First presented as a Recusant in 1612, he compounded for Recusancy in 1629 on an annual income from his lands of £260 which suggests a substantial landowner. He was presented again at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1637. Lt. Colonel Sayer signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, and was killed in action at Naseby, although his will was not granted administration until 1658. Sequestration ruined the Sayers, and his widow was compounding as a Recusant in 1664.¹³⁵

Major Ralph Carnaby: Carnaby's insertion in this regiment is based upon an interpretation of the List. Such a man was cited as a field commander of cavalry in his own right. One of the claimants also cited a Captain Francis Ord, who was likewise cited by an officer claiming under Clavering. Carnaby was probably replaced as major by Thomas Craithorne (q.v.) when Forcer assumed command. He was Ralph Carnaby of Halton, the son of Lancelot Carnaby of the same, and was listed in 1638/9 as a Freeholder, Esquire, for Halton and Aydon in Northumberland. His annual income of £1,020 marked him as a substantial landowner, but in 1651 he sold his

property to his son Reynold to raise £1,400 with which to settle outstanding debts. Born in 1597, he fought at Wakefield and Leeds in 1643, was captured in Mulgrave Castle in November 1645 whither he had gone probably after the battle of Sherburn in Elmet. His signature appears on the petition of the Northern Horse for that year. He died in 1662.¹³⁶

Major Thomas Craithorne: Cited in the List under Forcer, and probably cited as captain under Clavering. The problem of identification cannot be overcome satisfactorily.

A "Mr. Thomas Craithorne the elder" was killed, as a Gentleman Volunteer, at Uphaven in Wiltshire. He was probably the Thomas Craithorne of Craithorne, eldest son by the second marriage of Ralph Craithorne of the same, who was said to have died in 1637 "or thereabouts". This is sufficiently vague to make the casualty at Uphaven and him, one and the same. He would have been in his sixties in 1642, since his son and heir, Ralph II, was born in 1604. Ralph II's son and heir was also called Thomas, whom we must distinguish from his grandfather as Thomas II, and was born in 1622/3, which would not make him inordinately young for military service as a major in 1644. The family was thoroughly Recusant. Ralph II was sequestered as a Recusant in 1653/4, when his son, Thomas II, styled of Nesse, Craithorn and Welwick, Gentleman, was also sequestered. Thomas II was clearly the Thomas Craithorne dismissed as an Ensign in December 1640 because he was a Catholic, and he appears again in 1648 as a standing officer in the Royalist garrison of Pontefract, on one occasion dissenting from a decision to ransom a captured Parliamentarian sympathiser for the sum of £100. The Recusancy of the family was most marked in Thomas I, who, with his wife, was convicted in 1630, although he had conformed between 1606 and then. His wife was an unrepentant Catholic, however, and through her harbouring of co-religionists, Thomas I was convicted of the same in 1624. It is remotely possible that Thomas I may have been the major under Forcer, and Thomas II the captain, but the grounds of inherent probability suggest that Thomas II was promoted by Forcer to fill the space left vacant by Ralph Carnaby. Perhaps Forcer deliberately ousted Carnaby, who was not a Catholic. The uncertainty attaching to the date of death of Thomas I argues strongly for his having been a gentleman volunteer killed in Wiltshire and the identification of his grandson as Forcer's major seems assured. Major Craithorne was taken at Malpas in 1644 and at Sherburn in 1645, and became, under James II, a JP in the East Riding.¹³⁷

Captain Francis Bartram: Cited in the List under Forcer, he may have been a son of Major George Bartram of Elswick in Northumberland. A Captain Bartram was listed in the garrison of Pontefract in 1645, after the relief by the Northern Horse.¹³⁸

Captain Thomas Clavering: Cited in the List under Clavering, but claimed under Forcer. Fourth of the six sons of Sir John Clavering of Callaly, and brother to his colonel. Styled of Learchild, his property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652. Born in 1624/5, he was converted to Catholicism in 1647, probably in exile, and became a seminary priest, entering the English College in Rome and dying in 1694, at Pontoise. He was captured at Malpas in 1644 and at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645. Some doubt must attach to the word 'converted', since he came of such a notable Catholic family, and this may merely refer to his decision to enter orders.¹³⁹

Captain John Danby: Cited in the List, under Clavering, he was most probably transferred to George Wray's Horse (q.v.) where he served as major, and is dealt with as such.¹⁴⁰

Captain William Fenwick: Cited in the List, he was William Fenwick of Shortflatt, Esquire, sequestered in 1648 as a Catholic delinquent. Also styled as of Blagden. The son of Roger Fenwick of Shortflatt, William recovered his sequestered lands in 1657 from Sir John Fenwick, and according to the pedigree of the family of Fenwick of Bywell, Northumberland, his father had died in 1636. William himself was listed as a Recusant in 1677 and died in 1679/80.¹⁴¹

Captain Robert Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Carnaby's troop. There are two possible identifications here, and should be seen in conjunction with the Captain Robert Fenwick of Wray's Horse. Robert Fenwick of West Matfin or Matfen, Northumberland, succeeded his father Luke or Lancelot Fenwick in 1637/8, and in 1641 settled his lands on his sons. A Catholic delinquent, Robert's estates were inserted in the Treason Act in 1652, and in 1655 he was listed as a Recusant. Alternatively, Major Tristram Fenwick (q.v., Carnaby's Horse) of Kenton's eldest son was born in 1611 and died in 1667/8, although there is no evidence of civil war activism attached to him.¹⁴²

Captain Peter Forcer: Cited in the List, he was also cited by claimants in Lord Widdrington's regiment of Horse (q.v.) but must be one and the same. Widdrington's may represent brigade status. The fourth son of Peter Forcer of Harbour House, and brother of Colonel John Forcer, he was styled as of Plawsworth Co. Durham, Gentleman, at which place he refused to take the 1641/2 Protestation. He was killed in action, probably at Ormskirk, in 1644.¹⁴³

Captain Henry Messenger: Claimed in the List as from Yorkshire, he was also cited under Forcer, as well as by an undesignated claimant. He may be the Captain Messenger cited

in Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour's Horse (q.v.), perhaps a transfer from that regiment to Clavering's after Marston Moor. He was of Kirby Ravensworth in the North Riding, presented as a Recusant at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1623, and with his wife at Thirsk in 1641.¹⁴⁴

Captain John Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Durham, under Forcer. The many Metcalfes all bearing similar forenames, and most of them presented for Recusancy at one time or another, make identification a problem. Since he was alive to claim at the restoration, we must dismiss John Metcalfe of Tanton, Recusant, who died in 1654. Our man may be John Metcalfe of Rudby in Langbargh who, with his wife Alice, was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in October 1639, and probably fifth of the five sons of Anthony Metcalfe of Hood Grange, and uncle of the John of Tanton who died in 1654.¹⁴⁵

Captain Anthony Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, the son of Anthony Metcalfe of Aldborough, sequestered as a Catholic delinquent. He was presented in a list of Recusants in 1665/6, and in 1684/5 was lodged in York gaol for refusing the oath of allegiance, although he had been "a soldier sequestered for loyalty and service to his late Majestie". In 1648 he had refused the oath of abjuration at Northallerton Quarter Sessions, and his father had a long history of Recusancy.¹⁴⁶

Captain Francis Ord: Cited twice in the List, under Clavering and Major Carnaby. Fourth of the seven sons of William Ord of Felkington, Northumberland, who had been Sheriff of the county in 1638/9 and who had died in 1652. Francis was born in 1619, and in the pedigree is described as lt. colonel, probably in the post-restoration Trainband. He died in 1678. In 1661 it was probably he, styled as of Felkington, Gentleman, listed as a volunteer under Lord Widdrington.¹⁴⁷

Captain [] Wilkinson: Cited in the List, probably the same man as the Captain Wilkinson cited in Clavering's Dragoons (q.v.). Probably Henry Wilkinson of Forcett, captain and Catholic delinquent, whose will, dated March 12th 1648, was proved in February 1651.¹⁴⁸

Lieutenant Bartholomew Aislaby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Captain Bartram. Such a man of Ingleby cum Barwick in Stainton, Gentleman, was presented as a Recusant with his daughter at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in October 1637. The son of Thomas Aislaby of Barwick upon Tees, who was also presented as a Recusant in 1624 and 1629, the family had originally been seated at Fyling Hall and had been tenants of the Cholmeley's of Whitby, moving permanently to

Barwick in 1634. The family's commitment to the Catholic faith had failed by 1670.¹⁴⁹ (Probably the Lieutenant Aslaby captured at Rowton Heath near Chester in 1645).

Lieutenant Thomas Beckwith: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain William Fenwick's troop. There is an abundance of evidence, but no conclusive identification can be arrived at. Thomas Beckwith of Cold Ingleby was sequestered as a delinquent, and died in December 1663, so clearly could have petitioned for relief in the List had he desired. The composition proceedings alluded to land of his near Beverley, at Woodhall, which suggests that he was one and the same as Thomas Beckwith of Beverley, son and heir of Roger Beckwith of the same, who was presented as a Recusant in 1632 and who was sent for by the House of Commons as a delinquent on May 27th 1642. The King's attention was drawn to this matter, and he gave orders that Beckwith was not to be taken either as a delinquent or as a Catholic, and the Parliamentary messenger was "thrown down a Pair of Stairs by one Captain Myn; at the bottom he was kicked by many others". Cold Ingleby was sold by the Treason Act of 1652, and Thomas had been in debt in 1650. His half brother by his father Roger's second marriage, was a Parliamentary captain and had been killed in the war. We can dismiss Thomas Beckwith of Ackton, Aykton or Ayton since although a Recusant, he died in 1652.¹⁵⁰

Lieutenant John Bell: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Musgrave's troop. Two such, both styled Gentleman, were listed as Freeholders in Northumberland in 1638/9, of Ovington and of Bellas's respectively.¹⁵¹

Lieutenant Thomas Bishop: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sayer's troop. He was of Pocklington, Gentleman, and was fined £116 in 1648. In 1632 he had compounded on behalf of a Recusant wife.¹⁵²

Lieutenant Francis Blakiston: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain John Metcalfe's troop. Perhaps the son of George Blakeston of Gainford, who died in 1626. Francis Blakeston was presented as a Recusant in 1664.¹⁵³

Lieutenant Clement Forster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Thomas Clavering's troop. Listed in 1661 as a gentleman volunteer under the Lord Widdrington, but no place of domicile given.¹⁵⁴

Lieutenant Peter Hawkins: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was of Carperby, Yeoman, and his lands inserted in the Third Treason Act, whereupon he compounded for

£37 in July of the following year.¹⁵⁵

Lieutenant George Hunter: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Danby's troop. Such a man was convicted as a Recusant in 1632, presented as such in 1637, and signed the 1641/2 Protestation. Many known Recusants in fact signed this petition and his doing so cannot be taken as evidence of conformity.¹⁵⁶

Lieutenant Michael Merryman: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Ord's troop. Highly improbable as it may seem, Michael Merryman, son of Robert Merryman of Wadley, Witton le Wear Co. Durham, was ordained at Douai in 1631 and was in England between 1641 and 1661 as Prefect-General, dying in 1673. The father Robert was a Royalist officer (see Howard's Dragoons). However, this designation is hardly likely to be valid, although no other Michael Merryman can be traced. One might suggest, tentatively, that if the Merryman of this regiment and the Merryman of Douai were one and the same, the rank provided a cover at which Clavering might have connived. Of course, Merryman would have required a dispensation to assume military rank.¹⁵⁷

Lieutenant Christopher Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Sayer's troop. Christopher Metcalfe of Little Otterington and of Ainderby Steeple, both within a few miles of Northallerton, was fined £1.3.0d. for "adhering" to the King. He had been presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1641 as a Recusant, and so seems to have concealed his military rank when compounding. In January 1650 a warrant was issued against him at Richmond Quarter Sessions for the murder of Ralph Bell of Northallerton, and he was to appear at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in April 1652 charged with that crime. Apparently he escaped conviction, supposing that he was guilty. He was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk in April 1674.¹⁵⁸

Lieutenant Simon Rymer: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Major Craithorne's troop. Also spelt 'Ryther'. Of Pikcton in Langbargh, he compounded as a Recusant in 1632, having been presented as such at Malton Quarter Sessions in 1625. Described as a "dangerous, seducing recusant" he was presented again in 1641. In 1663 he was presented for what appears to have been a clandestine marriage.¹⁵⁹

Cornet William Ap(p)leby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Messenger's troop. Part of the widespread Recusant family of Appleby of Lartington with lands in Durham, William was presented with others in 1637 for clandestine marriage, but could not appear since he had to keep withindoors with a swelling of the face.¹⁶⁰

- Cornet John Collingwood: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in Major Craithorne's troop. Such a man of Dalton le Dale Co. Durham refused the 1641/2 Protestation and was described as a 'popish recusant'. Another such was listed in 1638/9 as a Freeholder in 'Ingrā', Gentleman.¹⁶¹ (See also Charles Brandling's Foot).
- Cornet Francis Hodgson: Claimed in the List from Durham, possibly a connection of the Recusant Hodgsons., and the sixth of the eight sons of Robert Hodgson of Hebburn by the father's second marriage. Francis was presented in 1636 for clandestine marriage, and such a man refused the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁶²
- Cornet Andrew Hunter: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in Captain Wilkinson's troop. Possibly Andrew Huntley of Friarside, yeoman, delinquent, although an Andrew Hunter of High House, Northumberland, also a yeoman, was listed as a Recusant in 1681/2.¹⁶³ (Note a possible connection with Lieutenant George Hunter of Danby's troop).
- Cornet Thomas Rose: Claimed in the List from Durham in Captain John Metcalfe's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Berwick on Tweed, which if not too improbable, may be supported by the facts concerning Francis Ord.¹⁶⁴
- Cornet William Surtees: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Ord's troop. First of the three sons of Edward Surtees of Broadoak who died in 1655, William was born in 1621 and died in 1704.¹⁶⁵
- Cornet Anthony Westgarth: Claimed in the List of Newcastle, Captain Thomas Clavering's troop. Such a man was listed in 1665 in the Newcastle Hearth Tax returns as of White Friar Ward in the city.¹⁶⁶
- Quartermaster Thomas Bell: Claimed in the List as of Northumberland, under Major Carnaby. Such a man (although admittedly the name is extremely common), of Harraton in Co. Durham, was sequestered in September 1644 of lands in Rickleden.¹⁶⁷
- Quartermaster Thomas Forcer: Claimed in the List from Durham, perhaps the third son of Peter Forcer of Harbour House and a brother of Colonel Forcer, which seems to be unlikely (in view of the rank), or some connection of the main family.¹⁶⁸
- Quartermaster John Hall: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was a Freeholder at Otterburn in 1638/9, styled Gentleman.¹⁶⁹

Quartermaster Thomas Lotherington: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Craithorne's troop. Probably the son of John Lotherington of Nunnington, yeoman, who was a juror at Helmsley Quarter Sessions in January 1632. Thomas, styled of Little Habton near Kirby Misperton, died in 1682.¹⁷⁰

Quartermaster Thomas Wood: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain John Metcalfe's troop. Such a man, a 'popish seducer' forfeited a £50 bond in 1638 for failing to appear before the Durham Court of High Commission.¹⁷¹ (Note a Quartermaster Wood killed defending Carlisle in 1645, see Vol. 1).

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Nicholas Kere, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain [] Musgrave, cited in the List

Lieutenant John Pearson, claimed in the List, Captain Messenger's troop.

Cornet Thomas Colston, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wilkinson's troop.

Quartermaster John Ambler, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Craithorne's troop.

Quartermaster James Morton, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Clavering's troop.

Quartermaster Alexander Shaw, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wilkinson's troop.

Quartermaster Richard Stones, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Messenger's troop.

Quartermaster Arthur Strother, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Thomas Clavering's troop.

Colonel Sir Francis COBBE'S Horse.

Although Peter Young¹⁷² believed that such a regiment existed and fought on Marston Moor, the evidence is tenuous in the extreme. In the List, Cobbe is cited as a field commander by only one claimant, whilst a second claimant noted Cobbe within Rupert's own cavalry. The rank of colonel was probably connected with Cobbe's command in Clifford's Tower during the defence of York, but we cannot dismiss the possibility that as commander he had at least a troop of horse responsible to him. Hence his inclusion in the analysis, although the distinction between troop and regiment has to be made.

Colonel Sir Francis Cobbe: Sir Francis was the eldest of the two sons of Sir Francis Cobbe of Burnham, Co. Norfolk, and of Ottringham in Yorkshire. His father died in 1648. Aged 36 at the outbreak of the civil war, he had already seen some service as an ensign in 1640, and had been knighted by the King at York (or at Beverley) on July 28th 1642. He had earlier refused knighthood at the king's coronation. He was a Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire. Commander of Clifford's Tower during the defence of York, he probably fought on Marston Moor, but seems to have remained in Yorkshire during 1644 and 1645, for in October of the latter year he was named by Lord Digby as one of the Commissioners in whose power the government of Skipton garrison was vested during the governor's illness. In Skipton at the surrender, Cobbe did not take much, if any, part in subsequent Royalist enterprises. David Underdown described him as a "prudentialist" during the Interregnum, although he was closely confined to his house and in 1658 had to secure permission to go to York on legal business. He purchased the forfeited estates of some fellow Royalists during the Interregnum, but in 1660 petitioned the King for a 21 year lease on royal mines to repair his financial losses. In 1661 he was appointed Captain of Hull, and was High Sheriff in 1664. He died on April 22nd 1675 in Yorkshire.¹⁷³

Captain William Plaxton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, the only one of the three officers not to cite Cobbe as merely a troop commander under Rupert. Such a man of Everingham died in 1674, and another, styled of South Cliffe in North Cave in the East Riding (near Ottringham), in 1679.¹⁷⁴

Lieutenant George Blakiston: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, under Cobbe as troop commander in Rupert's Horse. Probably the George Blakiston of York, Gentleman, who died in 1679 and perhaps the same as of Stapleton in Gilling East who did not appear at Dugdale's visitation.¹⁷⁵

Cornet Thomas Waller: Claimed in the List as of Yorkshire. He was of Beverley, Gentleman, third of the five sons of Nicholas Waller, Mayor of that town in 1624. He compounded

in 1647 for £122. Dugdale in his visitation noted that Waller had been a cornet in Rupert's cavalry, which fits the designation in the List. His father dying in 1634, Thomas's mother took as her second husband Colonel Cobbe. After 1660, Thomas was a captain of the Trainband and died in 1678.¹⁷⁶

Colonel Sir Jordan CROSSLAND'S Horse (Helmsley Garrison).

Apart from Crossland himself, this is a very poorly documented cavalry force indeed, and whether it ever had a regimental basis is doubtful. No lt. colonel has been identified for the period of Helmsley's defence, and the identity of the major has presented problems. Helmsley came under no pressure until after the fall of York, when it endured siege until the end of 1644. The horse must have doubled as infantry under these circumstances. It ought to be noted, further, that Crossland may have continued as a cavalry officer in his subsequent career at Scarborough and Newark, and some of the claimants below have had nothing to do with his Helmsley responsibility.

Colonel Sir Jordan Crossland: Cited in the List as a field commander of horse and of foot, he was the eldest of the six sons of John Crossland of Helmsley who died in 1636, and was himself normally styled as of Newby near Ripon, or of Furness in Lancashire. Born in 1618, he was knighted at Lincoln in July 1642, and two of his sons were to become seminary priests. Crossland's own religious feelings are hedged around with equivocation. For his estates at Furness in Lancashire, which were inserted in the Treason Act of November 1652, he petitioned in 1649 that although sequestered as a Recusant, he was none. He claimed that he had been raised as a Protestant, and had been admitted to compound for his Yorkshire holdings. His Lancashire estates had come to him from his wife's father or brother, the delinquent Catholic William Flemming of Rydal, but their insertion in the 1652 Act shows that his plea was not accepted. After the fall of Helmsley castle, he went into Scarborough garrison, and upon its fall in July 1645 marched to Newark to continue the war. According to his composition, he was in arms again in 1648, and was fined £30. Much of his finance came from his wife, and he does not seem to have suffered heavily from sequestration. In 1654/5 Thurloe was told that Crossland was actively conspiring, and in 1658 he was arrested and put in Hull, but was released in time to enter on the fringe of the 1659 rising in Cheshire. In October 1660 he was granted the office of Constable of Scarborough Castle, with the Keepership, worth £16 a year, and appealed for a lease of the royal mines in the six northern counties for a 21 year period to help to repair his fortunes, which sounds like a standard idea. He sat as MP for Scarborough in 1661, and in 1664 was named to the Commission for Regulating Corporations. During his tenure of the Keepership of Scarborough he was noted for favouring Quakers. He died in 1670 and was buried in Ripon Minster, where his epitaph still reads: "Saepe Rebellantis media inter Proelia Gentius/Intrepidum exposuit Regis Amore Latus"¹⁷⁷

Major [] Potts: Cited in the List, he defies identification. A Spencer Potts of Chalgrove came in with the surrender of Oxford¹⁷⁸

Captain [] Douglas: Cited in the List, see Blakiston's Horse.

Lieutenant John Ragget: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Potts's troop. On November 6th 1661 the postmaster of Boroughbridge was ordered by the duke of Buckingham to permit John Ragget, Provost Marshal, to search all letters delivered to suspected persons in the area. Ragget had a list of 13 names, virtually all of Parliamentary officers.¹⁷⁹

Quartermaster Thomas Law: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Douglas's troop. Such a man was second of the three sons of Miles Lawe of Preston, Lancashire, but for a strict Westmorland definition two such signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Askham and Barton respectively.¹⁸⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant [] Spright. He does not claim in the List, but in a letter from Crossland to Sir Thomas Fairfax, the former alluded to "Lieutenant Spright and five soldiers belonging to me" held prisoner in York. (181)

Quartermaster Robert Catherick, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Quartermaster William Kirk, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Patricius CURWEN'S Horse.

Like many of the Cumberland and Westmorland regiments, this force of cavalry seems to have existed primarily on paper. There is no doubt that Curwen was a commissioned colonel, but his horse may have been merely a troop or two intended to supplement his infantry regiment (q.v.). It has no campaign history whatsoever. Colonel Curwen is dealt with under his regiment of foot, for which there is firm evidence.

Captain Joseph Patrickson: Cited in the List, he was the first of the two sons of Thomas Patrickson of Caswell How, Esq., the father dying in 1645 and Joseph born in 1609.

In 1637 he was collecting the Ship Money levy in Allerdale Ward under the direction of Sir Thomas Dacre (q.v.). The sequestration of his lands seems to have occurred late, perhaps on discovery by an informer, and in 1656 he was caught up in the decimation tax and rated at £10.¹⁸²

Lieutenant Thomas Patrickson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Patrickson's troop. He was the eldest of the four sons of William Patrickson of Stockhow, and had been born in 1618. He was fined £30.10.0d. in 1647 for "adhering", and was taxed at £10 in January 1656. In 1665 he was a major of the Train-band.¹⁸³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Erasmus Towerson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant William Semple, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Cornet Thomas Skelton, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel (Sir) Richard DACRE'S Regiment of Horse.

The greatest problem where this regiment is concerned, is that which besets the identity of its colonel, which must be discussed shortly. Primarily a Yorkshire regiment, it fought at Marston Moor in a brigade commanded by Colonel Dacre, and thereafter was probably swallowed up in the Northern Horse. From a study of the officers, the regiment appears to have fought at Wakefield in 1643, and was certainly encamped in northern Nottinghamshire late in that year during the attempts to induce the governor of Nottingham to surrender.¹⁸⁴

Colonel (Sir) Richard Dacre: Of Dacre's existence there can be no doubt. He was cited in the List as a field officer, and his name crops up in various contemporary sources. In May 1644, for example, he was resident in York and paying his weekly assessment of eight shillings, which shows that he at least did not leave the city with the main part of the northern cavalry once the siege had begun.¹⁸⁵ The details of his talks with the brother of Governor Nutchinson of Nottingham have been given elsewhere. He was knighted, probably by the earl of Newcastle, at some point during the war, and was killed on Marston Moor on July 2nd 1644. The evidence indicates conclusively that he was a Protestant. Although he does not appear in a brief pedigree of the Dacres of Lanercost, an illegitimate line of the Dacre family, the editor of Tullie's History of the Siege of Carlisle states that he was a younger brother of Colonel Sir Thomas Dacre (q.v.). Beyond this it has not been possible to go.¹⁸⁶

Lt. Colonel Francis Carr: Cited in the List by this rank, he is probably the Major Carr captured at Wakefield in 1643. Like his colonel, he defies identification, but may have been Francis Carr of Cocken, Gentleman, mentioned in the composition proceedings of his elder brother Ralph. He was at Alwick with Glemham on January 22nd 1644, and was named as a commissioner for the government of Skipton during Mallory's illness in October 1645. After Newark fell, such a man fled to the Scottish lines and enlisted. In 1660 the same man petitioned for the place of Provost Marshal of the Barbadoes.¹⁸⁷

Major Henry Featherstonehaugh: Cited in the List, once for activities in the 1648 war, in his composition he admitted to having been a scholar at Oxford, aged 17 in 1642, and that he went to his home at Kirkoswald to enlist. He was a son of Colonel Sir Timothy Featherstonehaugh (q.v.). His career was somewhat mixed. He claimed in 1646 that he had "deserted on the first opportunity", but was out in 1648 when he was described as Sir Henry Featherstonehaugh, having been knighted by Newcastle during the first civil war. On January 15th 1649, he had turned informer and produced an affidavit to support the petition of Joseph

Nicholson, late the minister of Plumland in Cumberland, who had been dismissed his living because of the delinquency of his patron, Richard Skelton. Sir Henry informed that Nicholson's replacement, Gawen Eaglesfield, had borne arms in Lord Byron's forces. Nonetheless, Sir Henry was in arms again in 1651 and was killed in action at Worcester.¹⁸⁸

Captain Ralph Errington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but the surname is so common at this period as to hamper all attempts at identification without a definite clue.

Ralph, second of the nine sons of Mark Errington of Wolsingham, born in 1604, was a Catholic delinquent and died in 1664. Alternatively we have Ralph, youngest of the two sons of Robert Errington of Bingfield who died in 1616, Ralph II styled as of Newcastle in 1637.¹⁸⁹

Captain Gabriel Freeman: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of South Kilvington, and imprisoned for debt from 1648 to 1652. His debts amounted to £1400, but although he was discharged from sequestration as not being worth £200 a year, his estate worth £30 a year which he enjoyed during the life of his wife was sequestered. The case seems to have lingered on.¹⁹⁰

Captain Roger Nevinson: Claimed in the List from Wiltshire. The county of claim is puzzling, but he may have been a younger brother of Richard Nevinson of Newby-Stones in Westmorland, a designation which, in view of the regiment, seems not unreasonable.¹⁹¹

Captain Thomas Selby: Claimed in the List from Durham. A difficult man to identify, and attention should be given to a man of similar name in Edward Grey's Horse (q.v.). Thomas Selby, fourth of the four sons of Sir William Selby of Shortflatt and Bowlam in Northumberland, a younger line of the Selby family of Winlaton, was listed as a Recusant in 1637, refused the 1641/2 Protestation and seems to have shared his Recusancy with his father. A Thomas Selby was still being listed as a Recusant in Northumberland in 1674.¹⁹²

Captain James Shaftoe: Cited in the List, he was the eldest of the seven sons of James Shaftoe of Tanfield Leigh in Co. Durham, the father dying in 1637, James II being born in 1607 and dying in 1683. In 1629 he compounded for Recusancy, and in 1641/2 refused to take the Protestation. He was in arms again in 1648 and taken prisoner at Coquet Water.¹⁹³

Captain Francis Steele: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Of Plumpton, he was presented at Wetherby Quarter Sessions in January 1633 as "late cheife constable within the weapontake of Claro" accused of fraudulently collecting £80. He was found guilty and

ordered to repay the money with a £20 fine. He was also accused, and styled 'Gentleman', of forcibly entering and hunting in Ribston Park in August 1637. He was a witness at Quarter Sessions again in 1640.¹⁹⁴

Captain Thomas Wood: Cited in the List, such a man, styled Esquire, was sequestered for being in arms and fined £120. He admitted that he had "accepted a commission" as a captain, but claimed he was only "one month in that service". Be that as it may, he was in arms again in 1648 and killed at Preston. He was the second of the three sons of Basil Wood of Knaresborough, a solidly Royalist family. The eldest son, Basil II, was in Oxford.¹⁹⁵

Lieutenant Stephen Mills: Claimed in the List from Durham, in Captain Shaftoe's troop. Such a man refused the 1641/2 Protestation at Wickham, Co. Durham.¹⁹⁶

Lieutenant Robert Rowel: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Steele's troop. The surname is common in Northumberland at this time, but no Robert can be traced.¹⁹⁷

Lieutenant John Turner: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Major Featherstonehaugh's troop. Such a man, a Reformado, was taken at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645. This may be John, first of the seven sons of John Turner of Kirkleatham who died in 1644. John II was born in 1613, became a JP and Bencher of the Middle Temple in the reign of Charles II.¹⁹⁸

Cornet John Rooksby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man, styled yeoman, died at Fitlings in Holderness in 1673.¹⁹⁹

Cornet John Sanderson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Freeman's troop. Such a cornet was listed in the defence of Pontefract in 1644. Perhaps John Sanderson of Healey Northumberland, who compounded in 1649 for £126.14.0d., although this may seem high for a cornet.²⁰⁰

Quartermaster Christopher Bell: Claimed in the List from Westmorland. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Sowlebie Town in Kirby Stephen.²⁰¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet Nicholas Dixon, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Carr's troop.

Quartermaster George Braithwait, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Major Featherstonehaugh's troop.

Quartermaster William Suttle, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wood's troop.

Colonel Sir Thomas DACRE'S Regiment of Horse.

Although intended to be a regiment, since we have conclusive proof of Dacre's commission, apart from the officers named in the List, we know almost nothing of it. Like most of the Cumbrian regiments, it seems never to have got beyond a troop or two. (However, let it be noted that if the identification of Colonel Richard Dacre, see above, is accurate, Richard may have commanded his brother's regiment). There appears to be a reference to recruitment in July 1643.²⁰²

Colonel Sir Thomas Dacre: Of Lanercost and Gilsland, eldest son of Henry Dacre of Castlestead, Cumberland, Sir Thomas was Sheriff of Cumberland in 1637. Named to the Commission of Array in 1642, he was commissioned shortly after. He appears to have been arrayed amongst those who resisted the authority of Sir Philip Musgrave (q.v.). In the Musgrave Mss. is a deposition indicting Dacre of several misdemeanours: of raising troops to resist the levying of assessments; of using force to raise money for himself; of denying Musgrave's authority from the earl of Newcastle, "neither he, nor any Musgrave in England, had power to give...authority"; and generally vilifying Musgrave's agents. He served in the defence of Carlisle in 1644/5, to which he contributed money, and rode south to join the King when it fell. He fought on Rowton Heath and was taken prisoner, finally petitioning to compound in 1647. In arms and taken captive again in 1648, Sir Thomas was seeking his discharge from sequestration in 1652 and does not appear to have been engaged in the Worcester campaign. In July 1660 he petitioned for the lease of certain manors in Somerset, and stated that he had raised men in 1639, 1642, 1643 to "suppress tumults". He claimed also to have fled the country, probably during the Interregnum, and to have sought refuge in Holland, but in 1656 he was in Cumberland where he was taxed at £10 as a delinquent. He had been knighted at Berwick in 1633.²⁰³

Captain George Skelton: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, of Wetheral Abbey, he petitioned to compound in July 1653 and was fined £46.9.2d. after his lands had been inserted in the Treason Act of 1652.²⁰⁴

Cornet Peter Winder: Claimed in the List of Cumberland, a Peter Winden of Larton gave £1 towards the defence of Carlisle in 1644.²⁰⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet John Milburne, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Cornet John Nicholson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir William DALSTON'S Regiment of Horse.

Were it not for the citing of a Lt. colonel for Dalston's Horse, this unit would have had to be considered as perhaps a troop auxiliary to Dalston's Foot, for which regiment there is better evidence. Whilst we may therefore suppose that Sir William aimed at a full regiment, we should also allow that Lt. Colonel Warwick may have doubled for Foot and Horse. As with most of the Cumbrian regiments, however, Dalston's Horse may not have seen much active service save for the defence of Carlisle.

Colonel Sir William Dalston: Sir William was the son and heir of Sir George Dalston of Dalston Hall, Cumberland, but he himself became ordinarily resident at Heath Hall in Yorkshire, although Keeler identified him as of Smardale in Westmorland. Born some time between 1604 and 1614, probably in 1610, he was admitted to St. John's College in 1631, became MP for Carlisle in 1640 and was knighted the next year, becoming a baronet. Appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642, he was commissioned to raise a regiment of foot on June 15th 1643, and on November 11th of that year was to provide 60 men for garrison duty in Carlisle. He resided in the city throughout the siege, being noticed there particularly on October 8th 1644, and in his petition to compound claimed that he had never been out of Cumberland or in actual arms (!), which is a telling admission as to his Royalism. His fine of £3,700 was extremely high, however, and certainly the largest in the two north-western counties. He was listed as a Catholic in 1648, but Keeler feels that the evidence is inconclusive and prefers to regard him and his father, who died in 1657, as Laudians. Sir William died in 1683.²⁰⁶

Lt. Colonel Thomas Warwick: Cited in the List, of Warwick, Cumberland. He sat on the Council of War in Carlisle in October 1644, and contributed £2 to the defence fund. He yielded in 1645, probably when the city fell, and was admitted to compound in 1647 for the sum of £25, being one tenth. He was dead by November 1647, however, for in that month Lancelot Wharton of Bowness in Cumberland, minister, petitioned that in 1643 the living had been sequestered from Warwick but that Warwick, being deceased, the patronage of the living was now claimed by the earl of Arundel and Lord Dacre.²⁰⁷

Captain Philip Ellis: Cited in the List, of Rose Castle, Cumberland. The following is quoted in a later work for which no source is given: "At our own charge raised a company of Foot and troop of Horse as Captain Lieutenant. Continued without pay or free quarter for four years until the Siege of Carlisle (!) - supplied garrisons with provisions to value of £300 or more. Family subjected to much oppression. In 1648 commanded by Sir Marmaduke Langdale to seize Rose Castle and did so, keeping it until stormed and burnt. Losses in all, £3,000". Musgrave

confirmed this.²⁰⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Routledge, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Cornet Guy Warwick, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Lt. Colonel Warwick's troop.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas DALTON'S Regiment of Horse.

The nucleus of this regiment was forming late in 1642 in Lancashire, in Lonsdale Hundred. It left Lancashire with the forces that went south with the Queen in the summer of 1643, having served with the earl of Derby during the campaigns of the winter and spring of 1642/3. The regiment, if it ever came anywhere near full strength, was decimated at the second battle of Newbury on October 22nd 1644.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas Dalton: Thomas was the son and heir of Roger Dalton of Thurnham, Lancashire, and was also styled as of Bulke in that county. His father died in 1626 (one pedigree has it 1615). Thomas compounded for Recusancy in 1632, when he was styled Esquire. In November and December 1642 he was busy raising horse in Lonsdale Hundred, described by a Parliamentarian observer as "Mr. Dalton". Present when Lancaster was besieged by the earl of Derby prior to the storm of Preston, he served for the rest of his career in the Oxford army, and was killed at the second battle of Newbury in 1644. He seems to have been buried at Marlborough in Wiltshire. His lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act.²⁰⁹

Lt. Colonel William Haughton: Cited in the List, eldest son by his father's second marriage, of Richard Haughton of Park Hall, Lancashire. The father died in 1625, and William appears to have been a Catholic although not a convicted Recusant. He was killed with his colonel at Newbury in 1644, and his son and heir John petitioned for the lifting of the sequestration on his father's lands, John being a Recusant but not a delinquent.²¹⁰

Quartermaster Hugh Dickenson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Haughton's troop, but has not been identified. (See, however, the same name in Thomas Tyldesley's Horse).

James Stanley earl of DERBY'S Regiment of Horse.

For the regiment of so eminent a personage, the evidence is unhappily slight. Only three or four officers are definitely known, but these do include the lt. colonel and major, evidence enough that a regiment did, at one time, exist. Derby's military career was so brief, in reality from July 1642 to June 1643, that many of his officers went away elsewhere and disappeared into other regiments. It is by no means a remote possibility that the regiments of Thomas Tyldesley and of Viscount Molyneux had their roots in Derby's Horse. A troop of the earl's horse was at Chester on September 24th 1642 escorting 80 horse-loads of bandoliers and of muskets, Derby himself (or Strange as he then was) having entered the town on the 23rd with two troops.²¹¹ A troop of his horse was at Manchester on the 25th of the same month.²¹² After the storm of Preston, a troop of this regiment inflicted a defeat on some Parliamentary forces nearby, and in Mercurius Aulicus for March 28th we have a definite reference to Derby's regiment.²¹³ There is a vague reference in the papers of William and Thomas Holland inferring that one John Holland rode in a troop of the regiment.²¹⁴

Colonel the earl of Derby: Derby's military career has been examined at length elsewhere (see Vol. 1). Apart from the earl of Newcastle, he was the most powerful Royalist figure in the north, but suffered from demands made upon him by the King which led, irrevocably, to the loss of Lancashire. Created a Knight of the Bath at the coronation of Charles I, he succeeded his father in the autumn of 1642 in the earldom, although already actively head of the family and a Commissioner of Array. Born in 1605, he was Member for Lancashire in 1625 and succeeded in ousting his future comrades in arms, the Molyneuxs, from their political influence in Liverpool. Courted in 1642 by both sides, his loyalty was never in doubt, and he became, in Parliamentary eyes, "the greatest malignant of the Popish faction and Malignant partie". This echoes the rumour that he was converted to Rome before his execution, after a court martial, in 1651. There may be some significance in the fact that he was refused permission, on his way to his execution, to visit the grave of Sir Thomas Tyldesley. So far as we can judge, however, he died an Anglican as he had lived.²¹⁵

Lt. Colonel Alexander Standish: Cited in the List, he was the second son of the sometime High Sheriff of Lancashire, Ralph Standish of Standish. He was present in the attempt on Manchester on September 24th 1642, and after the collapse of Derby's regiment became lt. colonel to the earl of Caernarvon. Although he signed the anti-Catholic letter of August 1644 to the earl of Essex, he was almost certainly a covert Catholic and was listed as such in 1680. He was in arms in 1651, on the Council of War at Warrington, and at the restoration

became lieutenant in the earl of Peterborough's troop of horse.²¹⁶

Major [] Brewer: Name and rank and regiment are given by Mercurius Aulicus for March 28th 1643, Brewer commanding a troop of the regiment which routed two enemy troops of dragoons in the wake of the fall of Preston. Probably Thomas Brewer of Light-workhouse and Broughton, Lancashire, Catholic delinquent, dead by 1653.²¹⁷

Captain [] Coney: Not clearly identified, but the evidence is fairly strong. In the composition papers of Lt. Colonel Hugh Anderton of Euxton (q.v., Tyldesley's Horse) is a reference to Captain Coney quartered in Preston after its capture in March 1643, and apparently foiled in an attempt to loot some shops there, by the promptness of Thomas Tyldesley. In October 1642 he was noticed as "Captaine Cunney his troope of horse and some oth^{rs} are returned towards Lathum". On January 6th 1643, Coney received a petition from the inhabitants of Southworth complaining that a Captain Holcroft, had favoured Culceth village against Southworth in raising an assessment. Holcroft is unidentified. At the battle of Whalley in April 1643, "an eminent Captaine of much respect....his name was Coney, was shot in the one of his eyes whereof he died afterwards and was carried away". The Editor of 'A Discourse of the Warr in Lancashire suggested that he was a Coney of Cunney Hall, Farnworth, but we can get no nearer to him.²¹⁸

Captain Owen Davis: Claimed in the List as of Lt. Colonel Standish's troop, the claim coming from Anglesey, but he has not been identified. It would seem more likely that Davis would have served under Standish in Caernarvon's regiment, but that is an assumption for which there is no evidence.

Colonel (Sir) Gamaliel DUDLEY'S Regiment of Horse.

If, in following the references to Colonel Dudley himself, we are also pursuing the activities of his regiment of horse (and of dragoons, q.v.), this regiment is fairly well documented. According to Young,²¹⁹ this regiment was raised in Yorkshire, but apart from its major, seems to have had very few northern officers. Nonetheless, Dudley was so long with the earl of Newcastle that, even though he may have brought some officers with him into the north, the regiment must have been manned by north-country men, and Major Sherborne represents a very definite north country presence. As will be gathered from Vol. 1, the regiment fought during the whole of 1643 with the main Royalist army of the earl of Newcastle and was involved in the offensive into Derbyshire and Staffordshire at the end of that year, where Dudley distinguished himself. In February 1644 from its base at Prudhoe, it was raiding Scottish quarters as part of the half-hearted attempt by Newcastle to hold the line of the Tyne. Probably present on Marston Moor, by which time Dudley appears to have lost the brigade commander status he had enjoyed at Prudhoe, it certainly disappeared into the Northern Horse. Young²²⁰ surmised that the regiment, or what was left of it, was in Newark in 1646. Dudley's own chaplain, and by this may be meant his regimental chaplain, was rescued from Parliamentary hands during the war by a Lt. Colonel Thompson, but whoever Thompson was, is not known, and he cannot reasonably be ascribed to this regiment.²²¹

Colonel (Sir) Gamaliel Dudley: Gamaliel was the fifth son of Edward Dudley of Clopton, Northamptonshire, and has been confused with Major Dudley Dudley of Wortley's Horse (q.v.). In action at Ashford in late 1643, he was certainly present with the Marquess in the fighting against the Scots early in 1644, and held Walmgate Bar during the defence of York. From this it is surmised that he fought on Marston Moor. He signed the petition of the Northern Horse in February 1645, and took part in the relief of Pontefract, writing a letter to Prince Rupert in which he recounted events (for this, see Vol. 1). He was a Royalist commissioner in the talks for the surrender of Newark, and had shortly before been knighted there, perhaps by the King. He was in arms at Maidstone in 1648, after which he compounded.²²²

Major Richard Sherborne: Cited in the List, there are two possible identifications, Richard Sherborne Esquire of Stonyhurst, Lancashire, or his son, Richard II. Richard I was born in 1586 and died in 1667, which might tend to make him too old to be the major here mentioned. Richard II, born in 1626, would have been 18 in 1644, and may have become major in that year, since the age is not an obstacle. Richard I, however, was sequestered as a delinquent on two occasions, whilst no such sequestration can be traced for his son, so that the evidence tends to

support Richard I as the major we are concerned with. Richard I was not openly a Catholic, although during his composition it was stated that his children had been brought up in that faith, and he had compounded on behalf of his wife as a Recusant in 1632. Richard II, the eldest of his children, was however, a sequestered Recusant during the Interregnum. In 1657 occurred an illuminating incident, when the Commissioners at Preston noted in a letter, "Wee make bould to certifie that Richard Sherburne of Stoniehurst, Esq., and Richard Sherburne, Gentleman, his son and heir apparent...being suspected of Poperie, wee...gave order for the Summoneinge of them to appeare before us to take the oath of abjuration of Poperie". Richard I sent word that he was too infirm to come, "but Mr. Sherburne the Sonn beinge Summoned by Agent for Blackburne Hundred, hee tould him hee might have saved that labour for he would not take it". Richard II's Catholicism was unbending, and after succeeding his father in the estate, he was presented in 1677 at the Archdeacon of York's visitation for bringing Catholic priests to burial at Mitton, of which living he held the gift. Richard II died in 1689, gaoled as an adherent of James II. His daughter in law was a grand-daughter of Colonel Sir John Clansfield (q.v., The Queen's Horse).

Richard I seems to have been a shrewd man. He avoided the complications of sequestration for Recusancy whilst at the same time allowing his wife and children to be maintained in the faith. In this way, also, he would avoid the grave consequences of being a Royalist Recusant delinquent. The son seems to have avoided sequestration until the Interregnum by moving about between Stoniehurst, Bank Top at Whalley and Wigglesworth in Yorkshire, a practice of peregrination common amongst Recusant families anxious to avoid presentment. Both father and son may have been the Sherbornes, father and son, and Catholics, implicated in the Army Plot on the eve of the civil war. (It has, however, been suggested to me that the Sherbornes of the Army Plot were Edward Sherborne and his son Edward II, from a minor Lancashire family. See Aylmer, G.E., The King's Servants, pp. 79/80 and passim). In identifying Richard I as the mysterious major of Dudley's regiment, however, I am only too conscious of the Major Sherborn listed as a Catholic killed in arms in a post-restoration broad-sheet.²²³

Cornet John Stanton: Claimed in the List under Major Sherborne, as from London/Westminster. A John Staunton or Stanton of Everton, Nottinghamshire, Gentleman, gave evidence in 1662 against a man he had struck for seditious words against the King.²²⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Robinson, cited in the List.

Captain John Strong, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant Michael Frothingham, claimed in the List from London/Westminster
Captain Robinson's troop.

Quartermaster William Dobbins presents a problem. An innkeeper of Stamford Baron, Northamptonshire, who came in at the surrender of Newark, he claimed to the rank and regiment in his composition proceedings. At fuller length, he petitioned in 1648 that he was a prisoner as a result of the rising and was unable to proceed with his composition. He does not, however, seem to have been sequestered, for he was discharged in 1652 on the Act of Pardon on the proviso that he had not been sequestered before 1651. His case seems full of uncertainties, and his rank may well date to 1648.²²⁵

Colonel (Sir) Edmund DUNCOMBE'S Regiment of Horse.

The regiment was raised in Yorkshire during early 1643, Duncombe's original dragoon force having been severely beaten in the south at the end of the previous year (see Duncombe's Dragoons). This horse regiment appears to have fought at Wakefield in 1643 and at Selby in April 1644, according to details concerning specific officers, but cannot have been particularly prominent. Little, indeed, is known of Duncombe, and there is even some uncertainty as to his forename, whether Edmund or Edward.

Colonel (Sir) Edmund Duncombe: Duncombe, of Ruston near Pickering, and of Norton with Stockton in Co. Durham, began his military career as captain and then as major in the Trainband regiment of Colonel Robert Strickland (q.v.). Knighted at York on June 27th 1642, he was promoted to lt. colonel under Strickland and then secured a commission of his own to raise a regiment of dragoons. Actively engaged with Colonel Sir Francis Wortley (q.v.) in raising men for the King in May 1642, he had been sent for by Parliament in April as a delinquent. He was also named as a Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire. His rapid rise in military service aroused the animosity of men of both sides: "Our ancient Esquires doe take it in great indignation that persons of so base a condition as Duncombe and some others are of should be honoured with Knighthood, yea and a Barronetship too". He fought at Edgehill and at Cirencester in 1642. Prince Rupert, in a letter dated December 8th, alluded to "Dunkum" at Dorchester that year. Leaving the wreck of his dragoon regiment behind him, he returned to Yorkshire, but no record of his further career has been traced. He may be the Edmund Duncombe of Ruston, Esquire, administration of whose will was granted in 1658.²²⁶

Lt. Colonel Richard MacMoyler: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, his rise is one of the most remarkable in the history of the northern army. He may have held a lower rank in the dragoon regiment and have transferred to the horse when they were raised. In 1641 he was in some trouble, for which we have a fairly extensive record. On November 2nd 1641 a Captain James Thrust or Trist deposed that "Richard Mackmiller" and a man called Moore had spoken contemptuous words concerning the Lord General (probably the earl of Holland, whose appointment instead of the earl of Essex aroused controversy) and Sir John Conyers. They were sent for as delinquents and committed to the Tower and to Newgate on November 6th. On the 15th they were ordered to be kept closely confined. Trist seems to have had a grudge against them, for in his own deposition he stated that Macmoyler, then a trooper under him, whilst at York, being ordered to find £6 for the upkeep of his own horse, demanded by whose authority and who was making money out of the order. After disbanding, Trist, MacMoyler and

Moore met up again in London, and MacMoyler sent a challenge to Trist, using Moore as the intermediary. Trist deposed that he received a warning that if he had taken up the challenge, a gang of six Irishmen were planning to waylay him and then to kill him. Having rejected the challenge, Trist was assaulted in the street by MacMoyler who beat him with a stick. It was this which led Trist to make his complaint to Parliament, and MacMoyler, admitting the offence and also the scandalous words, was committed to Newgate with Moore during Parliament's pleasure. On February 16th 1642, MacMoyler and Moore petitioned that they had made submission for their offences, and after three months in gaol they were so poor that they were only spared from starving by the charity of their Keeper. They stated that they were Irishmen, and had been abroad when the Bishops' war broke out, returning to England specifically to serve the King. Being soldiers of fortune, idleness implied ruin for them. On the 28th, Parliament ordered an allowance of four shillings weekly for them, but Moore was released on April 21st. MacMoyler was still incarcerated in July. He next seems to appear as a prisoner at Wakefield in 1643, by which time he was in arms for the King.

This is an extremely intriguing case in several respects. Clearly, there was some ill-feeling between Trist and MacMoyler, although the Parliament leaned toward Trist and looked upon MacMoyler as the guilty party entirely. The reason for his long imprisonment, even though he had made a formal submission, must lie in the fact that he was an Irishman. He may even have been suspected as a Catholic, and in admitting that he had come from service abroad to fight for the King in 1639/40, he cannot have been looked upon kindly in London in the winter of 1641/2, hence his continued confinement. Nonetheless, he was apparently released (unless he escaped) at a time of acute war expectancy, which seems remarkable. As a professional soldier who had already shown favour towards the King's service, he was just the type of man the Royalist army needed, as witnessed by his rapid rise in rank. It may be arguable that only under Duncombe ("of so base a condition") could he have risen so high, but that is contentious. What became of this Irish soldier of fortune we do not know.²²⁷

Captain James Ranson: Cited in the List, possibly Jacobus Ranson of Hull, will granted probate November 18th 1678.²²⁸

Captain Richard Vincent: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was the eldest of the three sons of Francis Vincent of Braywell. Francis had been standard-bearer to Sir John Norris in the European wars, and Richard was, in 1627, standard-bearer to Colonel Thomas Muschamp serving under the King of Sweden. This appears to be a sound link with MacMoyler, but a Robert Vincent of Great Smeaton compounded in 1646 and was described as a "great plunderer". His estate was sold to cover

his fine and his debts, and he was in straitened circumstances, which might have led him to petition in the List. Robert can only be considered, however, if the forename given in the List is at fault. The matter is open to question.²²⁹

Lieutenant William Rackett: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Vincent's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Durham St. Nicholas.²³⁰

Cornet Thomas Thurnham: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, the will of such a man, of Shipton in Overton, Yorkshire, was granted probate in 1663.²³¹

Quartermaster Thomas Man: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Conyers's troop. Such a man of Stokesley in the North Riding died in 1662 or thereabouts.

There may be a link here with Duncombe's property at Norton and Stockton. The name is, however, a fairly common one. Such a man, of Doncaster, was Serjeant at Mace and died in 1681.²³²

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Conyers, cited in the List.

Captain [] Duncombe, cited in the List (see Duncombe's Dragoons).

Quartermaster Henry Smith, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ranson's troop.

Colonel John EDEN'S Horse.

This was never at any time a regiment, but perhaps barely a troop attached to the infantry regiment, under which Colonel Eden's career is dealt with. We know of this troop only from the List, from the two officers who claimed under it.

Cornet William Craddock: Claimed in the List from Durham, he was the second of the two sons of Anthony Craddock of Woodhouse, Co. Durham, by Anthony's second marriage. His father died in 1624, and sometime afterwards William married Anne Williamson of St. Helen Auckland. Hence, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Auckland St. Andrew. Such a man was cited in the will of Joseph Craddock of Bishop Auckland on August 1st 1633 as a half brother of Joseph.²³³

Quartermaster Percivall Martingdall: Claimed in the List from Durham, the name is lyrically memorable, and he must be the Percivall Mackendall of Durham city. He was listed as a delinquent on May 31st 1650, but there are no details. He was possibly a relation of John Markindale of Old Park, Co. Durham, a delinquent in 1644.²³⁴

Colonel John ERRINGTON'S Regiment of Horse.

There is other evidence for the existence of this force quite apart from that provided by the List. However, with the vagaries of contemporary spelling it is always difficult to distinguish between 'Errington' and 'Widdrington', where variants include 'Eddrington'. However, that said, there is no reason why a minor formation, such as this, and a figure of minor social status, such as John Errington, should have been confused with Colonel Sir Edward Widdrington (q.v.), one of the leading cavalry commanders in the northern army. There is a clear reference to a troop of Errington's horse in the composition papers of Christopher Hall of Hartburn, whose papers are anyway invaluable for aspects of regimental history. It was deposed by one Robert Aiscough on June 23rd 1649 that in 1642 "Hall sent a horse into Col. Errington's troop..."²³⁵ Samuel Luke noted on February 26th that this regiment, having wintered at Salisbury 1644/5, was riding towards Newark. It was part of the Northern Horse by this time, and consequently took part in the relief of Pontefract.²³⁶ A troop of this regiment was in service in 1642 in Yorkshire before the arrival of the earl of Newcastle (see Vol. 1).

Colonel John Errington: Colonel of horse and of dragoons (q.v.), he may have been the Major Errington cited under John Atkins in the List,²³⁷ save that Atkins was a foot officer.

However, it cannot be argued that with Errington we are dealing with a promotion since there is sufficient evidence that he was a colonel in October 1642.

John Errington, son of Thomas Errington who died in 1595, was styled Esquire variously of Elton, Yarm, Hutton Rudby and of Friaridge juxta Yarm, an indication of his peregrination as a Recusant. In his composition papers, his wife petitioned in 1651 and alluded to him as of Rudby. They were married in 1630, and she was petitioning for herself and her seven children, since his lands, as a Catholic delinquent, were inserted in the 1652 Treason Act. John Errington was indicted as a Recusant consistently from his marriage to the civil war, and his property was sequestered in 1644 and was yielding an income of £84.0.0d. in 1651. Errington was closely associated with two other future Royalist Recusants, Laurence Sayer of Yarm and Worsall (q.v., Eure's Horse) and Ralph Allenson (q.v., John Tempest's Foot), in land deals at Aislaby in 1632. He died in 1666 and was buried at Elton.²³⁸

No lt. colonel or major have been identified for this regiment.

Captain John Errington: Claimed in the List from Durham, the colonel's eldest son by his first marriage, John II died in 1684 when he was described as of Durham, Esquire. He appears as John Errington junior of Elton, Norton and Eggescliffe in proceedings against him, and he too was inserted in the 1652 Treason Act as a Recusant delinquent. He refused the 1641/2 Protestation.²³⁹

Captain Thomas Middleton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, attention must also be paid to such a man in William Middleton's Foot (q.v.). I think, however, they are two distinct men. This is Thomas Middleton of Middleton cum Hilton, Gentleman, who compounded as a Recusant in 1629, having refused the oath of allegiance in 1626 and been convicted in 1627. He was presented for Recusancy at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in May 1641.²⁴⁰

Captain Thomas Turner: Cited in the List, such a man was captured at Selby in 1644 (see Vol. 1). Possibly sixth of the seven sons of John Turner of Kirkleatham who died in 1644, but no details forthcoming concerning Thomas, and the link is tenuous.²⁴¹

Lieutenant Samuel Leadham: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Turner's troop. Signed the 1641/2 Protestation as from Darlington.²⁴²

Lieutenant John Middleton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ashley's troop. Such a man was presented at Malton Quarter Sessions in July 1650 for "high treason against the commons of England in Parliament assembled", and he was committed to York gaol. Styled of Kirby Moorside.²⁴³

Cornet Richard Wardell: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Middleton's troop, possibly he of Hull, probate granted 1682.²⁴⁴

Quartermaster Robert Emerson: Claimed in the List from Durham, but the name common in the county. Such a man of Ludwell, Gentleman, was an undischarged Catholic delinquent in 1651. He was the son of Richard Emerson of Stanhope, and died in 1667 (he was "drowned but not buried here because he dyed excommunicate"). His father dead by 1652, and his mother a convicted Recusant, he petitioned in 1653 that being 200 miles from his estate (suggesting he was in London), the State should undertake to pay the expenses of witnesses in the proceedings concerning his property in Co. Durham. He had been presented in 1633 for clandestine marriage and baptism. He may be our man, his military rank the reflection of shortage of money.²⁴⁵

Quartermaster Michael Taylor: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was presented at Kirby Moorside Quarter Sessions in January 1654 (note the link with Lieut. Middleton, above) in response to a warrant issued against him as "a dangerous person, and of evill fame". Probably a Royalist. Of Limber-hill.²⁴⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Francis Ashley, cited in the List. (A Captain 'Lashley' was captured at Wakefield in May 1643, see Vol. 1).

Quartermaster John Ingledew, claimed in the List from Durham.

Colonel William EURE'S Regiment of Horse.

Colonel Eure raised a regiment of foot as well as of horse, and both formations served, for some of the time at least, in the south with the Oxford army. Neither regiment is so well documented as some, but it does appear to have left Yorkshire, probably with the Queen, or after the battle of Adwalton Moor on June 30 1643, and returned to Yorkshire in the train of Prince Rupert the following year. Part of the horse regiment was engaged at Leeds on January 21st 1643 (see Vol. 1), and seems to be referred to by de Gomme as taking part in the storm of Bristol in July of that year.²⁴⁷ The regiment fought at Marston Moor where it sustained heavy casualties, although whether in Rupert's horse on the right wing, or in the northern cavalry on the left, we do not know. The remnant of the regiment formed part of Sir John Mayney's brigade in Lancashire in August 1644,²⁴⁸ but what became of it thereafter is not known.

Colonel William Eure: William was the second son but, in 1642, heir by the death of his elder brother until his brother's son was born posthumously, of William 4th Lord Eure, K.B. Lord Eure was a convicted Recusant, and Colonel William Eure was likewise convicted in 1636 and 1638. He was listed as a Catholic field commander in December of that year (see Vol. 1). He also commanded the advance on Leeds in January 1643. Returning to the north with Rupert in 1644, he fought and was killed at the battle of Marston Moor, and was buried in York Minster on July 7th. The extant composition proceedings concern his nephew, Ralph, and in 1660 two of his three daughters petitioned the King for confirmation of the leases of two collieries seized during the Interregnum for their father's Catholicism and Royalism.²⁴⁹

Lt. Colonel Henry Topham: The second son of Edward Topham of Aglethorp in Yorkshire, who died in 1628, Henry succeeded his elder brother Francis who died, possibly in arms for the King, in 1643. Both the father and elder brother were convicted Recusants, and Henry may be supposed to have shared their beliefs in view of the nature of this regiment. He was killed, dying unmarried, on Marston Moor.²⁵⁰

Major Robert Busbridge: Busbridge probably succeeded Eure in command of the regiment when it joined Mayney's brigade. He was not a north-country man, but came from Hormor or Harmer in Sussex, and was styled of that place when he compounded on a fine of £8. Styled Gentleman, he was in arms in 1648 as well, and may have joined Eure's regiment during its service in the south. In 1662 his name was appended to a certificate in favour of James Temple, who had been condemned for his part in the murder of Charles I. Busbridge supported Temple's plea that he had protested at the trial to Cromwell himself, and that he had afterwards served the interests of various Royalist families. According to the List, Busbridge

became lt. colonel of the regiment, no doubt on the death of Eure and Topham, but whether the rank was official we do not know.²⁵¹

Major Thomas Eure: Cited in the List, Eure was Busbridge's predecessor as major. Eldest of the three sons of Sir William Eure of ^fSolesley, Yorkshire, who died in 1629, Thomas was born in 1606 and was cousin to his colonel. A Catholic, he was commissioned in October 1642, and in September 1643 was signing as major of the regiment for supplies at Oxford. He was killed in action at the first battle of Newbury, the only clue we have to the regiment's presence there.²⁵²

Captain William Doleman: Cited in the List, he may be the same man cited in the regiment of Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour. He was the eldest son, and heir, of Marmaduke Doleman of Millington and Duncoats, Yorkshire, and was himself styled of Wellingbrigg and Holme on Spalding Moor, Gentleman. It was stated in the compositions that he was a Recusant, and he appears to have been killed some time before 1646, perhaps on Marston Moor, for his son Thomas (who was himself to be killed in 1648) was making the composition. Thomas was a conformable Protestant. The property at Duncoats was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652 after the death of the grandfather, Marmaduke.²⁵³

Captain Lawrence Sayer: Cited in the List on two occasions, he was styled of Great Worsall and Yarm, Esquire. The family was thoroughly Catholic, Lawrence compounding for himself and his wife in 1630 and presented again in 1636. He was attached for contempt in 1638, but the case dismissed, and appeared again at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1641 as a Recusant. His property in Nesham, Yarm and Stockton was sequestered in 1644, and although his wife petitioned, the sequestration was not discharged by 1651 when the land was inserted in the Treason Act. According to tradition, he remained an armed fugitive during the Interregnum, which must be understood to mean that he was one of that small group of Royalist agents who perambulated around England in the service of various conspiracies, although David Underdown does not notice him. His property was largely sold in 1654, although his son leased it back from the purchaser, Gilbert Crouch, but in 1671 Great Worsall and Yarm were sold to settle debts. Lawrence was dead by the restoration.²⁵⁴

Captain William Stevenson: Claimed in the List from Middlesex, but most probably the same of Bishop Thornton, Yorkshire, Gentleman, a Recusant in 1632 and sequestered by 1645.²⁵⁵

Lieutenant John Anne: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, in Philip Doleman's troop (see below). John was the younger brother of Philip Anne of Frickley, the head of a markedly Recusant

and Royalist family nearly all members of which served in arms in the defence of Pontefract 1644/5. In the composition proceedings concerning Philip Anne and his son and heir Michael (Philip died in 1647) is a clear reference to Michael's uncle John, although it has to be said that one of Philip's several younger sons was called John as well.²⁵⁶

Cornet John Swinburn: Claimed in the List from Durham in 'lt. colonel' Busbridge's troop. Possibly the son and heir of William Swinburn of Capheaton, Co. Durham, Esquire.²⁵⁷

Cornet Thomas Swinburn: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Eure's troop. Perhaps the second son of William of Capheaton.²⁵⁸

Quartermaster Thomas Steele: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sayer's troop. Such a man was presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions for Recusancy in 1674.²⁵⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Nicholas Flemming, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain [] Wellfoot, cited in the List (See Richardson, John, Eure's Foot).

Lieutenant William Smith, claimed in the List from London/Westminster in Major Busbridge's troop.

Cornet Mathew Chambers, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Wellfoot's troop.

Cornet Christopher Hardcastle, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet Thomas Sayer, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sayer's troop.

Quartermaster William Brown, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain William Doleman's troop.

Quartermaster Ralph Leyborn, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Quartermaster James Smith, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sayer's troop.

Quartermaster Stephen Sympson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Sayer's troop.

Cited in the List as a troop commander, but without rank specified, is Philip Doleman. He was the fourth of the six sons of Sir Robert Doleman of Gunby, Gentleman. Catholic like the Dolemans of Duncoats, Sir Robert died in 1627 and Philip's eldest son, also called Robert, became a priest. Philip compounded in 1629 as a Recusant, and was styled as of Leade, Yorkshire. He was mentioned in the Treason Act of November 1652, and there is a fragmentary allusion to him in composition proceedings.²⁶⁰

Colonel John FENWICK'S Regiment of Horse.

Fenwick raised a regiment of horse and a troop or two of dragoons. Of this regiment's activities, we know with certainty that it fought at Corbridge on February 19th 1644 against the Scots²⁶¹ and at Marston Moor in July.²⁶² No further information has survived.

Colonel John Fenwick: John was born in 1612, son and heir of Sir John Fenwick of Wallington, Northumberland, Baronet. Sir John was himself in arms for the King, but after his capture in 1644, turned his coat and in the ensuing year was High Sheriff of Northumberland. John, the son, entered Trinity College Cambridge and matriculated in 1628, entering Gray's Inn in 1630. He saw service as a cavalry captain in 1639/40, and in the latter year entered Parliament for Morpeth, where he associated himself with the developing Royalist group, and voted against Strafford's attainder. He was eventually disabled as a member in 1644. Styled normally of Hexham Abbey, Esquire, he was listed as a Freeholder there in 1638/9, he was the nephew of Colonel Sir Henry Slingsby (q.v.). After the fight at Corbridge, he was temporarily in his house at Hexham where his kindness toward certain Scottish prisoners was remarked upon by them (see Vol. 1). His helmet was, in the 19th century, in the possession of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle. He fought, and was killed, on Marston Moor, and his body was not recovered from the field.²⁶³

Lt. Colonel George Bellasis: Cited in the List, he was the sixth and youngest son of Sir William Bellasis of Morton House, Houghton le Spring. Styled himself as of Durham, Gentleman, in his composition proceedings, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Houghton. Cousin to Lord Belasyse (q.v.), he was born in either 1617 or 1622 and died in 1679. He was in arms in 1648, when a fine of £80 was levied on him, and his estate was undischarged in 1651.²⁶⁴

Major Anthony Loreyne: Loreyne, of Horbury, Yorkshire, admitted to his rank and regiment when compounding in 1645, then resident in Covent Garden and styled Gentleman. He had surrendered in 1644. A fine of £33.6.8d. was imposed.²⁶⁵ (Loreyne had some estate at Howgill near Skipton which could not be sequestered until 1646, due to its proximity to the Royalist garrison).

Captain Nathaniel Crossland: Cited in the List, fifth son but heir of Thomas Crossland of Crossland Hill who died in 1634. Nathaniel was born sometime after 1594, and his own son and heir born in 1637. Styled Esquire, he was killed in action during 1644.²⁶⁶

Captain George Fenwick: Cited in the List, the identification of Fenwicks

below field commander rank is almost impossible. The very proliferation of the surname in the north-east, and the limited possibilities of forenames, renders accurate identification, lacking corroborative evidence, impractical. Ideally, this George Fenwick should be a close relation or connexion of his colonel, but even that is difficult to be sure of. Possibly one of the five sons of Major Tristram Fenwick of Kenton by his second marriage, but there is also George, fifth of the five sons of George Fenwick of Heddon on the Wall who died in 1624, and who was clearly the George Fenwick of Wallsend cited as a Freeholder in 1638/9. A George Fenwick of Langshawes, Gentleman, compounded as a Recusant for himself and his wife in 1632, but apparently his case stretched back to 1601 which would tend to make him a little old.²⁶⁷

Lieutenant Francis Shield: Claimed of Northumberland in the List, Captain George Fenwick's troop. The son of Thomas Shield of Burnfoot near Hexham, in 1664 he was involved in a milling dispute. His will was made in 1709.²⁶⁸

Lieutenant James Tayler: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Crossland's troop. Of Metham, Almonbury Yorkshire, he was connected with the Crosslands of Kirk Burton by marriage.²⁶⁹

Cornet William Greenwell: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, eldest of the five sons of Ralph Greenwell of Corbridge, he succeeded his father c. 1647, had been an active Royalist, and died in 1688.²⁷⁰

Cornet John Oliver: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain George Fenwick's troop. Such a man, of Clifton, yeoman, was a juror at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in April 1631. There was also such a man, perhaps less likely for the regiment, of Harpham and Pocklington in the East Riding, son and heir of William Oliver of the latter place, who died in 1662.²⁷¹

Quartermaster Peter Forster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was listed in 1665 as of Bywell in the Hearth Tax Roll.²⁷²

Quartermaster Christopher Soulby: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Darlington.²⁷³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Ralph Fenwick, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Lieutenant Ephraim Carre, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Cornet Edward Haynes, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Bellasis' troop.

Quartermaster Ralph Shield, claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Fenwick's troop.

Colonel Sir Henry FLETCHER'S Horse.

Certainly never a regiment, perhaps not a troop in the full sense of the word. Fletcher was a colonel of foot, and is dealt with as such. A Thomas Garth of Salkeld, Westmorland, admitted in his composition to having been such a cavalry captain under Fletcher, and having acted as Fletcher's agent at Oxford (in 1645). In 1650, the same man sought admission as a tenant, in Rydal, Westmorland, on land sequestered from Major Flemming (q.v., Fletcher's Foot, below).²⁷⁴

Colonel Sir John GERLINGTON'S Regiment of Horse.

A predominantly Lancashire regiment recruited, like Gerlington's Foot, in the autumn of 1642. Of Gerlington's activities in Lancashire in 1642/3, details have been given elsewhere (see Vol. 1). The regiment was active on the Lancashire/Yorkshire border in January 1644, and was probably part of the northern cavalry regiments which joined Rupert prior to Marston Moor.²⁷⁵ That it fought at Marston is evidenced by its presence in York when the city fell on July 16th.²⁷⁶ Thereafter part of the Northern Horse, there is an undated reference to two scouts from the regiment at some time late in 1644. The horse were severely handled near Muskhams Bridge not far from Newark in November of that year, and Samuel Luke was told in a letter of December 5th that of 100 prisoners and 140 horses taken by the Parliamentarians, "most of them" were "Sir John Gerlington's regiment".²⁷⁷ The regiment fought in 1645 at Melton Mowbray and in the relief of Pontefract. A trooper of the regiment, Robert Townson of Cansfield in Lancashire, petitioned to compound in 1649.²⁷⁸

Colonel Sir John Gerlington: There can be small room for doubt that Sir John was, next to the earl of Derby and Thomas Tyldesley, one of the most feared or hated Royalists in Lancashire. The eldest of three sons of Nicholas Gerlington of Thurland Castle, he was born in 1613 and succeeded his father in 1628. They were a thoroughly Royalist family, John's uncle Anthony being killed in the civil war as a captain in an unspecified regiment (perhaps his nephew's). Foreign Burgess of Preston, and High Sheriff of Lancashire in 1642, he was appointed to the Commission of Array where his activities are dealt with in Vol. 1. He was knighted by the King at York on June 6th. Collector of Assessments for Lonsdale Hundred in the earl of Derby's administrative machine, Gerlington was first and foremost a field commander. Present at the sieges of Manchester and in most of the battles in Lancashire during 1642/3, he was campaigning in Furness in the latter year. Towards the autumn of 1643, he occupied his castle at Thurland and sustained a seven week siege, managing to escape capture when the castle surrendered. He was erroneously reported to have been killed near Bradford during the fighting in Yorkshire in early 1644, which is a clue to his whereabouts at least. Another report gave him killed or drowned in fighting near Newark later that year. Riding with the Northern Horse to the relief of Pontefract, he was finally killed at Melton Mowbray in February 1645. Mercurius Aulicus for March 1st of that year said of him "that most Valiant Loyall Knight Sir John Gerlington of Lancashire, whom from His Majesties first coming to Yorke devoted his life and fortunes to His Majesties service against this odious Rebellion".²⁷⁹

Lt. Colonel [] Middleton: Cited in the List, probably William, 4th of the six sons of John Middleton of Middleton

Hall, Westmorland, Esquire. William was born in 1605, and living in 1664. His two younger brothers, Richard and Christopher, were killed in arms during the war. He is not to be confused with Colonel William Middleton (q.v.).²⁸⁰

Major John Watson: Cited in the List, he defies identification. Perhaps the same man as "late Governor of Ayre's Mouth" in Yorkshire (see Vol. 1), who escaped from Newark prior to surrender and joined the Scots.²⁸¹

Captain Hugh Floyd: Claimed in the List from Merioneth, one of several North Welsh officers who found their way into northern regiments. A Captain Flood was on the strength of Pontefract garrison, and a Captain Floyd "late an officer in Newark, now under Major General Vandruske" had joined the Scots by April 1646.²⁸²

Lieutenant Alexander Sherborne: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, perhaps an error for Lancashire (see the case of Major Sherborne, Dudley's Horse). A Lieutenant Sherborne left Newark to serve with the Scots in 1646.²⁸³

Quartermaster Miles Atkinson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was of Torisholme, Gentleman, listed as a 'poor delinquent' in 1649, his lands worth £1 yearly, he was fined £2 and, as he said, having believed his poverty would exclude him from composition, but he raised his fine nonetheless.²⁸⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Laurence Harwood, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant John Read, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Floyd's troop.

Cornet Ralph Burton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Watson's troop.

Quartermaster Symon Driffield, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Watson's troop. (Possibly a connection of Matthias Driffield of Easingwold, Gentleman, who was fined £3.6.8.d. in 1650 for "adhering").(285)

Colonel Sir Thomas GLEMHAM'S Regiment of Horse.

It must firstly be stated that here we cannot be dealing with a regimental formation alone. Glemham, as Colonel-General under Newcastle, and as Governor of York, briefly of Newcastle, then of Carlisle and of Oxford, would have been cited by claimants whose attachment to him was purely as a result of the exigencies of the war from 1644 onwards. Indeed, hidden in this cavalry regiment and in Glemham's Foot (q.v.) may be several officers missing from other northern regiments, but that is a problem which, easy to identify in general, is insurmountable in the particular. Raised in Yorkshire by Glemham in 1642, the regiment fought throughout the campaigns of 1642/3, and then served with the Marquess in the struggle against the Scots. After Marston Moor, where it doubtless fought, whilst some of the cavalry merged with the Northern Horse and some disbanded, a proportion of the regiment at least must have accompanied its colonel to Carlisle. Hence we find what was left of the regiment, now commanded by Colonel Henry Stradling (not a north country man, see Vol. 1) in August and September 1645, especially at the battle of Rowton Heath where it was 200 strong.²⁸⁶ This was but a fraction of the nine troops which had ridden from York in July of the previous year.²⁸⁷

Colonel Sir Thomas Glemham: A professional soldier first and foremost, and surely one of the most competent rearguard fighters in the Royalist armies. He was born in Suffolk towards the end of the reign of Elizabeth I, and after a time as a Gentleman Commoner in Trinity, Cambridge, went overseas to fight in Germany. Knighted in October 1617, he sat as MP for Reigate in 1621/2 and for Aldborough, Suffolk, in 1625/6. Clarendon described him as "a gentleman of noble extraction, and a fair fortune, though he had much impaired it; he had spent many years, in armies, beyond the seas; and he had been an officer of very good esteem in the king's armies, and of courage and integrity unquestionable; but he was not of so stirring and active a nature, as to be able to infuse fire enough into the phlegmatic constitutions of that people, who did rather wish to be spectators of the war, than parties in it". Colonel of a regiment in 1639/40 which was disbanded in 1641, he unhesitatingly offered his services at York in 1642 and was appointed governor of the city by the earl of Cumberland. In January 1643 his full title, now under the earl of Newcastle, was Governor of the City and Garrison of York, Colonel-General of the Foot, and Commander in Chief of the Four Northern Counties. To serve the King, he had turned down a command in Ireland against the rebels there to which he had been appointed in 1641. On January 20th 1643 he represented the earl of Newcastle in trying to force York corporation to accept their then mayor for a further indefinite term. Of his career between 1642 and 1645, details will be found in Vol. 1. To him fell the duty of preparing against a Scottish invasion that might or might not

take place, and he passed the Governorship of York over to Colonel Sir William Saville (q.v.). After fighting in Durham in April and having relinquished authority in Newcastle upon Tyne to Colonel Sir John Marley (q.v.), he returned to take over in York where the governorship was left vacant by the capture of Lord Belasyse, Saville's successor. Glemham surrendered the city on July 16th, and went to Carlisle. After the fall of the last named, he opted to go south to Oxford and Sir Edward Walker remembered of his arrival with 200 men, "'tis observable that within three days [that he] came hither, General [Charles] Gerard was made Lord Gerrard of Brandon in Suffolk, a Town wherein Sir Thomas Glemham hath both Interest, and is an Heir of the family of Brandon, by which name the other affected to be called". Glemham ignored the slight, although, as Walker concluded, it "would have troubled another Man..." Commissioned as Governor of Oxford in 1645, and probably favoured for the post because he was a Protestant, unlike his rival (Colonel Sir John Clansfield, q.v.) he held the city until ordered to surrender by the King. He was taken to London, made to appear before the bar of the Commons, and then released on the Oxford articles, whereupon he joined the Queen in exile. On November 28th 1646 the King wrote to the Queen from Newcastle upon Tyne urging her to send Glemham to King's Lynn to await orders to lead a rising in the Eastern counties, but nothing came of this. Glemham was in arms in England in 1648 during the rising, and after its collapse made his way to Delft from Berwick on Tweed on October 1st with 40 other gentlemen and officers. He was in Rotterdam on the 5th. Although still a comparatively young man, the trials and rigours of his lengthy and exhausting service contributed to his sudden death in Holland before the end of 1649.²⁸⁸

No lt. colonel has been identified for this regiment.

Major [] Portington: Cited in the List, he was Robert II, second of the two sons of Robert Portington of Barnby Super Dun in Yorkshire. Clay gave Portington as major of horse to Sir William Saville, but this seems unlikely though there may have been a temporary attachment. However, the various Portingtons who were active during the war make the whole picture very confused indeed, and there seems to be some discrepancy between Robert II's rank and that of his elder brother Roger, who was certainly in Saville's Horse (q.v.). Robert II and his father were involved in the feuds that accompanied the draining by Dutch immigrants of Hatfield Levels prior to the war, and more than once took part in fighting over the matter. Robert II was out in 1648, having opted in 1646 for joining the Scots when Newark fell, but was captured at Willoughby fight and immured in Hull from 1648 to 1660. Upon his release, he died from gangrene, due to a monkey bite, at Arksey before the year was ended. His rank as major may have preceded a promotion to lt. colonel, and he may be the missing officer of that rank in this regiment, since the registers of St. Michael le Belfry, York, on

June 8th 1644 there is an entry recording the baptism of his daughter, Grace, and alluding to him as lt. colonel.²⁸⁹

Captain George Clapham: This designation rests upon claims in the family pedigree. George was third of the six sons of George Clapham of Beamsley and Heworth, Yorkshire.

Two of his brothers were killed in the wars, one under Richard Byron, the other near Preston in 1648. George may have been the Captain Chapman who held South Shields scone against the Scots on March 15th 1644, and who was killed in the subsequent defence of Newcastle.²⁹⁰

Captain [] Crompton: Cited in the List, he should be carefully related to the Major Crompton of Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Horse (q.v.). The problem of identity revolves around two men, and it is not inconceivable that we have to deal with two distinctive officers. At the same time, from captain's rank in Glemham's to major's in Cholmeley's seems not unusual. A strong contender is Thomas Crompton of Driffield, born in 1619, the son of Sir John of Skerne. He compounded in 1646 and was fined £887, an indication of some substance, and died in 1649, being buried in York Minster. Against this, we have Thomas Crompton of Cresswell, Staffordshire, eldest son by the father's second marriage of Thomas Crompton of the same, who died in 1640. This Thomas of Cresswell was killed in the Royal army. The matter seems insoluble.²⁹¹

Captain John Gomersal: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, in January 1638 such a man, dwelling in Little Gomersal, witnessed an agreement by that parish to repair a highway.²⁹²

Captain George Middleton: Cited in the List, possibly the same of Silksworth Co. Durham who compounded in 1645 on a fine of £120, Gentleman.²⁹³

Captain George Reresby: Again, pedigree information provides the link with Glemham. He was the second of the eight sons of Sir George Reresby who died in 1628. His uncle William was killed in the war on the King's part. George, born in 1612, died in 1646 in Pontefract, perhaps from wounds.²⁹⁴

Captain John Scisson: Claimed in the List from Kent. Scisson, Silson or Sisson is a name common in Co. Durham at this time. A John Scisson signed a statement in May 1646 in Oxford deploring any idea of negotiations with Sir Thomas Fairfax concerning surrender. Young made the not unreasonable identification with Silson of this regiment in view of Glemham's presence at Oxford, and the identification of others previously linked with Sir Thomas. A John Sisson was taken prisoner at Coquet Water in July 1648.²⁹⁵

Captain William Tayler: Claimed in the List from Kent, such a man, of the City of London, surrendered in July 1646 and was fined £180. The link with Scisson is valid.²⁹⁶

Captain Luke Whittington: Cited in the List, a Hull merchant and sea-captain. In 1660 he petitioned for the post of Searcher in the Port of Hull. He said he had been turned out of the town in 1642 for refusing to go against the King, and had raised troops in the King's service, fighting at Gainsborough in 1643. From 1649 to 1653 he had fought at sea until overcome by the enemy. That was not the end of the career, however, and we are fortunate in having very specific allusions to him from the Interregnum period. In September 1649 he was Charles II's agent at Dunkirk, and in that capacity wrote a letter to the Mayor of Dover a copy of which was passed to the Council of State. Whittington reported that he held several ships' masters, and would release them in exchange for Royalists held in Dover. On September 27th 1655 Whittington wrote to Secretary Nicholas from Cologne telling him that he had managed to create discontent in Hull and that he could have taken the port during the 1654 rising had he been given the seamen for the task. He also reported a rumour that Cromwell was dead. Ten days later he wrote again to Nicholas, this time from Rotterdam, to the effect that Cromwell was alive and well, but "I think with you that he will die a violent death, to which all honest and loyal subjects are bound to contribute their utmost endeavours, for his removal is the only way to settle his Majesty in his three kingdoms without much bloodshed. There is an honest, sober, and resolute man, who will undertake it if he may have his Majesty's authority". Whittington also asked for 10 or 12 commissions and the arrangement of port facilities in Spain, with which he undertook to fit out ships. He also asked for £1300 which he had laid out in various loans during the preceding years to the earl of Newcastle, Sir Thomas Glemham (!), Sir John Marley, Sir Thomas Riddell and Sir Hugh Cholmeley. Clearly a man of substance and of ideas. In 1660 he petitioned that the act of Indemnity should be waived in his favour, for he wished to proceed against certain persons who, contrary to the articles for the surrender of York, had seized upon his stores of lead and sold them for a sum of £10,580. Whittington was quite a remarkable man.²⁹⁷

Lieutenant Abraham Sunderland: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Portington's troop. The claim means that this cannot be Abraham, son and heir by his first marriage of Richard Sunderland of Coley. This Abraham was father of Captain Langdale Sunderland (q.v., Langdale's Horse), and died in 1644 in the garrison of Pontefract. Such a man, a JP in 1642 and a speculator in coal mines, cannot have been a lieutenant even had his death not anyway debarred him from consideration. The Sunderland pedigree is unsatisfactory. Lieutenant

Sunderland may have been a son of one of the four brothers of Abraham I, or an unknown son of the latter. Two Abraham Sunderlands were listed during the reign of Charles I, one of Hipperholme cum Brighthouse who seems to be Abraham I, the other of Heptonstall cum Erringden.²⁹⁸

Cornet Robert Appleton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Newbold, yeoman, he petitioned that he had been coerced into service by Newcastle. He gave himself up at Hull in 1645 and was fined £85. Probably the same man of Shipton indicted as a Recusant at the 1664 Assizes, Shipton and Newbold being both in Harthill Wapentake.²⁹⁹

Cornet Ralph Wilkinson: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Middleton's troop. Born in 1621, third of the five sons of Anthony Wilkinson who died in 1635.³⁰⁰

Quartermaster Robert Calverley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Whittington's troop. Of Oulton, yeoman, claimed coercion by Sir William Saville, but fined £46. He died in 1674.³⁰¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Cas(e)y, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain William Richardson, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain Mark Whittington, claimed in the List from Yorkshire (perhaps an error in forename here, and a double claim for Luke).

Lieutenant William Adamson claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mark Whittington's troop.

Lieutenant Patrick Cassada, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Middleton's troop.

Lieutenant Thomas Lawrence, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Crompton's troop.

Lieutenant William Napier, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Tayler's troop.

Lieutenant Andrew Paty, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Luke Whittington's troop.

Cornet Ralph Bilton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Luke Whittington's troop.

Cornet George Constable, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Thomas GOWER'S Horse.

Gower was primarily a colonel of dragoons, and is dealt with as such. This troop of horse, for it was not much more, is evidenced only by three claimants in the List. Of these, Captain Christopher Brown who claimed from Yorkshire, has not been identified.

Captain James Swale: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire. He does not appear in the pedigree of the main Swale family of South Stainley, although there is every reason for him to do so in view of Quartermaster Kendal of this troop (see below). The Swales were whole-heartedly Royalist. Francis Swale had 13 sons, the third of whom, John, was killed in action as a foot captain, the fourth of whom, Charles, rose to be a major of horse in Oxford, and the thirteenth, Robert, who served Charles I also, continued his military service in Charles II's Trainband.³⁰²

Quartermaster Philip Kendal: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man, of South Stainley (see Swale, above) yeoman, compounded as a Recusant in October 1632.

This seems a more likely identification than Philip Kendal of Henderskelfe, yeoman, whose wife was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk in 1624 and whom we find in 1632 laying information at Helmsley Quarter Sessions against a stock dealer contravening restrictions on the re-sale of livestock. Kendal seems to have made a habit of turning 'relator', for it brought him in fifty per cent of any fine imposed.³⁰³

(Colonel) Sir Richard GRAHAM'S Horse.

One of the most enigmatic figures of the 1642-46 period in the north, not only as to what he actually did, but which side he genuinely supported. I have indicated doubt as to his colonelcy, since he barely raised a troop of horse and does not appear to have used his commission, which he undoubtedly received, to raise any infantry at all. Nonetheless, an unidentified claimant called Stephen Grimston, of Cumberland, claimed in the List as captain under him. There is a vague allusion to recruitment by Graham in Mercurius Aulicus for July 29th 1643, but that is all. Styled of Norton Conyers and Netherby in Yorkshire and Cumberland respectively, he was the son of Fergus Graham, was created a Baronet and died in 1654. Sometime Master of the Horse to the duke of Buckingham, Graham was closely connected with the court, and it was whilst serving as equerry to Prince Charles at Edgehill that he sustained several wounds. The pedigree of the family claims that he was also wounded 26 times on Marston Moor, but if this is based upon factual evidence, that evidence is not to be found. The one clue to support the story is that he was in York on July 16th 1644 when it fell, and went from there to Oxford, so he may have been at Marston Moor, as a volunteer. A Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire in 1642, he did not fulfil the obligation of his regimental commission, and when, in 1643, he appears to have been made second in command in Cumberland and Westmorland to Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave (q.v.) he told the earl of Newcastle he had no desire to hold any such command. He had been MP for Carlisle in 1626 and 1628/9, and the favour shown him by Buckingham was also shown to him by Charles I. In October 1643 he was appointed Master of the King's Hare Hounds. John Buchan, in his life of Montrose, described Graham as a "trimmer", but other contemporaries were less circumspect. The earl of Antrim received a bitter letter from Lord Nithsdale: "Good Sir Richard Graham and a number of roundheads in these parts...have spread word that you and I were upon a plot to bring forces from Ireland to take in the countrie". In April 1644, during the Montrose march into Scotland, "a mutiny broke out amongst the English soldiers, occasioned by the servants of Richard Graham, and almost all deserted and fled in haste to England". Montrose subsequently bumped into a servant of Graham's, and the servant mistook the party for Covenanters. He "assured them with frank confidence that his master was on excellent terms with the Covenanters, and had undertaken, as though he were their spy, to inform them of all who came that way, if suspected of favouring the King; an unworthy act of a shameful villain, and a man whom Montrose used to hold in the highest esteem, one who had been raised from the dunghill, of the lowest class, to say no worse of him (!), to the dignity of knighthood and an estate which was the envy of his neighbours, by the favour and misplaced bounty of the King".

Harsh words, but in all objectivity, it would appear that Graham was seeking to

curry favour in the enemy camp. In his favour, it must be said that he was in a difficult position, if he genuinely desired a quiet life, but the obligation of his rank and the position he held at court required him to be more resolute in the King's cause. Nonetheless, the Parliament regarded him as an enemy (although friendliness towards the Covenanters did not imply friendliness towards the Parliament) and, after his capture attempting to travel from Oxford to Newark, he was fined £2,384.17.4d., a fine second only to that of Colonel Sir William Dalston in savagery. He had contributed large sums to the defence of Carlisle in 1644/5, and whilst his behaviour defies a conclusive interpretation, it really does seem that Graham's loyalty to his King was tempered by dislike of Montrose and fear of having the Scottish armies around his ears. His will was dated March 26th 1653, and he was buried at Wath.³⁰⁴

Colonel Edward GREY'S Regiment of Horse.

Grey's, like the regiments of Tyldesley, Sir Richard Tempest and Sir Marmaduke Langdale, is one where those officers serving in 1642-46 and 1648 run inextricably together, although certainly many served in both wars. Originally a colonel of dragoons (q.v.), Grey was commissioned to raise his cavalry on December 4th 1642.³⁰⁵ The regiment appears to have served almost entirely in the north until it became merged with other regiments in the Northern Horse after Marston Moor, and although it does not surface above the general anonymity of the sources as an identifiable unit, from its officers and their details a comprehensive picture of a prominent cavalry force is arrived at. We know the name of one of the troopers, Thomas Gallon whose brother John replaced a horse which Thomas presumably had killed under him: "Information by Geo. Stanton of Alnwick that....John Gallon freely gave his brother Tho. a nag to serve the late King on under Col. Edwd. Grey, the said Thomas having had a horse killed in the service."³⁰⁶

Colonel Edward Grey: For a man of such energy and prominence as Grey, the rewards were surprisingly slight. Sir Arthur Hesilrige wrote of him, "there is not a man in the north of England that hath done [us] more mischief than Col. Grey". A Catholic Recusant, Grey was born in 1611, the youngest of the five sons (but second son of the second marriage) of Ralph Grey of Chillingham, Northumberland. Ralph the father was knighted in 1603 and died in 1623. Edward matriculated at University College Oxford in 1625, achieved his B.A. at Christ's Cambridge in 1627/8, and entered Gray's Inn in 1629. His elder brother Robert, D.D., Prebend of Durham, was charged with assisting Edward in the recruiting of his regiment, and seems to have ridden with it either as a chaplain or as chaplain cum soldier without a commission. With his regiment of dragoons, Grey went to Oxford after Edgehill, was present at the capture of Marlborough on December 6th 1642, but lost his regiment in a severe fight at Winchester on the 12th. He sat in the Council of War at Oxford two days later, and then returned north to recruit his cavalry. Temporarily attached to Carlisle and Skipton garrisons in 1644, after fighting with Newcastle against the Scots earlier in the year and then on Marston Moor, he went to Pontefract where he commanded a good quality division in the defence of the castle, leaving with Langdale after the relief on March 1st 1645. His previous military experience, as a cornet under Newcastle in 1638/9, was little enough to speak of, and like many of his fellow officers, he seems to have found a capacity for military command that he probably did not know that he had. He petitioned to compound in 1646 when he was styled as of Cowpen, and it was noted that he had taken the National Covenant and the Oath of Abjuration. Grey was, however, biding his time. He was out in 1648 as Colonel in Chief of the northern army, as a result of which he was named in

that select group of Royalists exempted from pardon. Taken prisoner at Coquet Water in the 1648 rising, Heselrige wrote "It is not fitt to my understanding that Colonell Gray and some of the most active and dangerous amongst them should be prisoners in theire owne countrie". Gray escaped. In 1650 there was some doubt in London as to whether he was alive or dead, but he was clearly in England, for it was stated that in 1651 he had violently dispossessed a purchaser of some of his property, and in 1652 he was described as a "Papist delinquent". David Underdown followed Grey's Interregnum career closely. Apparently having made his peace by 1653, he soon became involved in the leadership of the Action Party, a pro-Louvre pro-Presbyterian alliance Royalist group (curiously, many Catholic Royalists favoured the Presbyterian alliance). He conducted talks in London with the leaders of Leveller opinion, was arrested in 1655 and sentenced to transportation. In 1656, Langdale listed him as a reliable man in northern England, so clearly he avoided being sent away. Bankrupt by now, and having to be supported on government largesse whilst in gaol, he appeared again in Hampshire, probably involved in the 1659 revolt. After the restoration, he became a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles II and Captain of the Grenadier Guards. He was still alive in 1675, and died, one hopes contentedly after so turbulent a career, soon after.³⁰⁷

Lt. Colonel Francis Carre: Cited in the List, clearly the same as he of Richard Dacre's Horse (q.v.), perhaps a 1648 rank.³⁰⁸

Major [] Jackson: Cited in the List, hard to identify. Sir Philip Monckton (q.v., Saville's Horse) referred to a Major Jackson in command of 400 horse at Bowden Hill in March 1644 (see Vol. 1), and so possibly our man, since Grey was with the main army against the Scots. Such a man also received 50 carbines, 200 pistols and 20 barrels of powder from the York magazine on November 14th 1643. There may be a reference to him again in August 1644 raising money with somewhat hard-handed methods, in Cumberland, by which time Colonel Grey was with the Carlisle garrison prior to the move to Skipton. A George Jackson of Hunslett, at the taking of Howley Hall in June 1643, "used the prisoners that were taken very cruelly, with his drawn sword". George Jackson of York, having taken neither the Covenant nor the Oath (which implies Catholicism) was fined £64.10.0d. in 1649. With a name such as Jackson, however, and lacking a forename, identification is always qualified.³⁰⁹

Major Peter Palmer: Cited in the List, and very probably an error for Peregrine Palmer of Chichester, Sussex, who signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse and who compounded in 1649 for the sum of £3.6.8d., having compounded in 1646 for £19.0.0d. In 1655 information was laid that his yearly estate was worth no less than £600 and he

was taxed for the sum of £60. Probably the same man, in 1673, wrote to his sister-in-law, Lady Harley, to announce his daughter's marriage to Sir John Wroth. It would seem that between 1649 and 1655, Palmer came into his estate. A Major Palmer is cited elsewhere in the List, under Sir Mathew Appleyard, and this may be a transfer from Appleyard to Grey's.³¹⁰

Captain Francis Brandling: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he was fifth of the six sons of Sir Francis Brandling of Alnwick and died in 1667. He was probably the Captain Brandling who escaped from Newark in 1646 and went over to the Scots and the Captain Brandling taken at Coquet Water in 1648.³¹¹

Captain William Carre: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he was styled of Crayhall near Haltwhistle and was fined £40 in 1650. Perhaps fourth of the five sons of Roger Carre of New Moorhouse. We can dismiss William Carre of Ford, who seems to have died in 1644, perhaps in the war. This William's father was Thomas, former Gentleman of the Bedchamber to James I.³¹²

Captain James Fawcett: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Of Goswick, he petitioned 1645, having taken the Covenant by September 1644, and he claimed he had deserted his colours after five months service, which if true, sounds like a commission in the recruiting to meet the Scots. He was fined £360, and in 1648 re-sequestered for failure to pay the fine. In 1649 he was a prisoner in King's Bench for debt, and he petitioned that his estate, lying four miles from Berwick, was laid waste by armies and sequestrators. In 1652 he was discharged, "In debt more than he is worth". Fawcett was a friend of Lt. Colonel Anthony Wharton (q.v., Percy's Foot).³¹³

Captain Ralph Grey: Cited in the List, there is also a Cornet Ralph Grey who claimed in the regiment as of Northumberland. Whilst the likelihood that they were two distinct persons cannot be ruled out, the possibility of 'cornet' being substituted for 'captain' by the printer of the List is not far-fetched. What follows might, therefore, apply to two separate men, or to one. Three possible Ralph Greys can be traced. The third of the four sons of Philip, dead heir to Sir Edward Grey of Morpeth who himself died in 1627. Sir Edward's own third son. Or Ralph Grey of Trumblehill, yeoman, whose lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652. In 1661 such a man of Bradford in Northumberland, Esquire, was listed as a gentleman volunteer under Lord Widdrington.³¹⁴

Captain John Salkeld: Cited in the List as lt. colonel, clearly a 1648 rank. I have supposed that in 1643/4, when he was certainly a captain (as witness his monument in Rock Chapel,

where he was buried in 1705), he served under Grey as well, although that is a view subject to evidence to the contrary. He was the son and heir of John Salkeld of the Rock, a freeholder and a tenant of the earl of Northumberland at Hulne Park. In 1643 occurred a terrible incident in which Salkeld and other Royalist officers were directly involved. His fellows on this occasion included Colonel George Heron (q.v.), Captain Nicholas Thorton and a 'baron Venable'. The victim of what turned out to be a murderous attack was John Swinburn of Capheaton, son and heir of a captain in Colonel Sir William Widdrington's Horse (q.v.). Salkeld and Swinburn clashed at a party on February 15th, and Swinburn was run through with a sword. It is not apparent that Salkeld was punished for what may have been taken as an affair between gentlemen. John Salkeld was a cautious activist in Interregnum conspiracies, became a JP in 1664 and died in 1705.³¹⁵

Captain Thomas Selby: Cited in the List. In view of the presence of Lt. Colonel Carre, like Selby from Dacre's Horse, we must be dealing with one and the same man. If not a 1648 rank, then a transfer after Marston Moor where Dacre was killed, is likely.

Lieutenant Musgrave Ridley: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in Captain Carre's troop. He was of Whitshield in Williemoteswick, and, incidentally, a tenant of the Royalist Nevilles of Chevet in Yorkshire. Sequestered in 1645, his lands were inserted in the 1652 Treason Act. Eldest of the two sons of William Ridley of Williemoteswick who was still living in 1660, and who had been charged with adultery by Musgrave's mother (a daughter of Sir Richard Musgrave of Norton), Musgrave and the Ridleys seem to have been ruined by the war. In 1661 Musgrave and his brother were accused of the murder of one Francis Robinson, a case which seems to have been connected with the war. By 1681 Musgrave had sold all his property, and he died in 1681 virtually penniless.³¹⁶

Lieutenant Henry Salkeld: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but under Lt. Colonel John Salkeld which suggests a 1648 rank. Such a man, yeoman of Winton in Westmorland, was seeking to compound in 1653 after his lands were inserted in the 1652 Treason Act.³¹⁷

Lieutenant Malcolm Smith: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, perhaps the same in Grey's division in 1644 at Pontefract. Such a man petitioned the King in 1660 that, having been in arms in 1648, he turned his coat and served the intelligence service of Thurloe on missions in Europe. He was seeking to avert royal displeasure.³¹⁸

Lieutenant Robert Thorpe: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Carre's troop. He was of Long Newton, Gentleman,

and a leaseholder in Darlington. A legatee in the 1643 will of John Pemberton, head of a Royalist family, Thorpe was to supervise the execution of the will's provisions and, with Toby Ewbank (q.v., Carnaby's Horse) to enjoy the manor of Aislaby should Pemberton's heir, Michael, fail to perform the conditions imposed on him. In 1629 Thorpe had compounded on behalf of Christopher Pinckney (of this regiment, see below) for Pinckney's Recusancy.³¹⁹

Cornet Mathew Foster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but on a second occasion (this time spelt Forster) under Robert Carre, a lt. colonel in 1650/1 and perhaps in 1648.

The claim under Carre, if this is indeed the same man, as we may reasonably suppose, does not concern us, but it might have rendered Fo(r)ster liable to proceedings for claiming twice. Identification is too difficult, because of the widespread surname of Fo(r)ster.³²⁰

Cornet Ralph Grey: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, see above, Captain Ralph Grey, this regiment.

Cornet Robert Grey: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, probably third of the four sons of Henry Grey of Newminster Esquire. Styled of Little Langton, Gentleman. The problem is, however, insurmountable in that Greys, like Fo(r)sters, Fenwicks and Erringtons, proliferate in the north-east.³²¹

Cornet Christopher Pinckney: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Foster's troop. See also Lieutenant Thorpe, above. Pinckney, styled of Nether Silton, was indicted as a Recusant in 1629. Nether Silton is in the Wapentake of Birdforth in North Yorkshire, and sufficiently near to Durham to make the identification good. He and his wife were presented as Recusants at Richmond in 1674.³²²

Cornet Oswald Wilkinson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Ralph Grey's troop. He may be the same man who signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Darlington, although the name cannot have been uncommon.³²³

Quartermaster Thomas Dawson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in Captain Ralph Grey's troop. Such a man, although the name is not infrequently met with, was of Middleton St. George and Sedbergh, was presented in 1635 for a clandestine marriage, and in 1637 as a Recusant. He had been convicted at Sedbergh in 1633. It may be as well to point out here that the county from which a claim comes need not represent the actual county of domicile, either at the time of the claim, or in 1642.³²⁴

Quartermaster Robert Ramsey: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, in the composition papers of John Ramsey of Berwick a reference to a Robert Ramsey occurs, perhaps John's son, buried in August 1686.³²⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Foster, cited in the List.

Captain George Sargison, claimed in the List of Westmorland.

Lieutenant William Richardson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Palmer's troop.

Lieutenant Henry Wright, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Jackson's troop.

Cornet Walter Buchanan, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Cornet Edward Murrin, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Fawcett's troop.

Cornet Alexander Wright, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sargison's troop.

Quartermaster Thomas Brinch, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Ralph Carre, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Ralph Grey's troop.

Quartermaster John Gibson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Cuthbert Nicholson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Lt. Colonel Salkeld's troop, a 1648 designation.

Quartermaster Thomas Richardson, claimed in the List from Northumberland,

Quartermaster Arthur Whitfield, claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Carre's troop.

Colonel Sir Henry GRIFFITHS'S Horse.

Griffiths's Horse, if it existed in any strength, disappeared by the time that Newcastle assumed command in Yorkshire. Probably a troop attached to Griffiths's Foot regiment of the Trainband (q.v.), the only claimant in the List, Quartermaster Stephen Robinson (London/Westminster) cited as a troop commander a Captain Gaughegan, who in his turn claimed in the List under Charles Lord Gerard. Evidently a transfer. Nothing is known of either man, and Griffiths himself is dealt with as a colonel of foot.³²⁶

Colonel George HERON'S Regiment of Horse.

Attention has already been paid to this regiment's history after the battle of Adwalton Moor on June 30th 1643 (see Anderson's Horse and Brandling's Horse). It was one of the forces raised by the earl of Newcastle in Northumberland and Durham probably before he marched south to Yorkshire, and appears to have remained in Northumberland at least until February (see Captain John Salkeld, Grey's Horse). Heron was, apparently, commissioned by the King with specific instructions to recruit in Cumberland,³²⁷ on 26th November 1642. It was certainly with the main army under Newcastle at the start of the summer offensive, and distinguished itself at Adwalton Moor.

Colonel George Heron: The second son of Cuthbert Heron of Chipchase, he was born in 1628 and was himself styled of Bywell. He matriculated at Christ Church College in 1632 and entered Gray's Inn two years later. On August 8th 1642, it was reported in a letter that Heron had been commissioned to raise 600 "dragoneirs", but whether this commission was actually fulfilled or not we cannot say. It seems unlikely that such a regiment would have escaped notice. At some time, perhaps on his way south to join Newcastle, George Heron was quartered at Raby Castle in Co. Durham, for on November 6th 1644 Sir George Vane wrote to his father to say there was great difficulty in determining what had been plundered by Heron during his stay there. Heron was killed at the head of his regiment on Adwalton Moor, June 30th 1643.³²⁸

No lt. colonel or major have been identified for this regiment.

(Captain) Sir George Bowes: Cited in the List, see Brandling's Horse.

Captain John Garnett: He does not appear in the List, but is given this rank and regiment in the pedigrees. After Heron's death, he seems to have transferred to Colonel Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Foot (Scarborough garrison, q.v.). Styled of Eggescliff, in his composition proceedings he admitted to having been in arms for the King in Scarborough and that he returned into Durham when the castle fell in 1645. Born in 1610, he was the eldest son of Anthony Garnett of Eggescliff and, in 1642, head of the family. His property was sequestered in 1644, and he completed his composition in 1650. He married the widow of Major Michael Pemberton (q.v., Cuthbert Conyers's Foot).³²⁹

Captain [] Haselwood: Cited in the List, and elsewhere a Major Haselwood listed under John Blunt's Horse, with which we are not concerned. Since Heron's officers seem to have split up at his death, such a transfer and promotion is credible if not susceptible of proof. Also in the List, but not included in the analysis for want of certainty as to Haselwood's forename, Quartermasters John Codling and

Richard Dutton (of Lincolnshire and Staffordshire respectively) claimed under Captain Haselwood and Captain John Haselwood. Evidently they may be attached to Blunt's Horse, but whether this is Heron's captain remains a mystery. The Haselwood family of Kirklington, Nottinghamshire, and of Lincolnshire, a Recusant family, produced a son James, born in 1602, and ordained in 1625, who fled England during the Popish Plot. From this family may well have come Blunt's major, and perhaps the elusive Captain Haselwood of Heron's.³³⁰

Captain George Tong: Cited in the List, see Anderson's Horse.

Lieutenant Henry Delaval: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Sir George Bowes's troop. He was the eighth of the eight sons of Sir Ralph Delaval, High Sheriff of Northumberland, who died in 1628. Henry, styled of Cowpen and Bedlington, was born between 1615 and 1627 and died in 1668. He may have been the 'Delaval' implicated in the rising of 1654/5.³³¹

Cornet William Berisford: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Haselwood's troop. Strengthens the link between Haselwood of this and Haselwood of Blunt's (see above), and with the Kirklington family. A William Berisford or Beresford, of Hull, died in York in 1685.³³²

Cornet Robert Place: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Tonge's troop. He was second of the three sons of Christopher Place of Dinsdale, Co. Durham, the father dying in 1624. In 1629 Robert compounded as a Recusant and was styled of Whasten near Kirby Ravensworth. Later styled of Picton, and a copyholder in Darlington, he petitioned in 1651 that he was possessed only of a horse and wearing apparel worth £10. He was fined £1.13.4d., and compounded. In 1674 he and his wife were presented as Recusants at Thirsk, Quarter Sessions.³³³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Gardiner, cited in the List.

Cornet John Coniers, claimed in the List from Durham.

Quartermaster John Salkeld, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Gardiner's troop.

Colonel Thomas HOWARD'S Regiment of Horse.

The problems surrounding this regiment are accentuated by the failure on the part of the compilers of the List, to make any distinction between the two colonels called Thomas Howard, both cavalry commanders in the Royalist army. To overcome this difficulty, and bearing in mind that the other Colonel Howard commanded a southern regiment, it has been necessary to adopt the apparently arbitrary method of ascribing all officers claiming from southern counties to the southern regiment. This method has its drawbacks, in that, for example, claims from London and Westminster may, as in several other cases, indicate in fact a northern origin, but it is better to be cautious. There are less difficulties in distinguishing between this Thomas Howard and his uncle, the third Colonel Thomas Howard, who raised a dragoon regiment (q.v.).

There is a secondary difficulty. In the pedigree of the family, it is stated clearly that this Thomas Howard with whom we are immediately concerned, commanded his father's regiment of horse, so that properly this regiment should be designated Colonel Sir Francis Howard's. However, the statement is open to another interpretation, which is, that Sir Francis provided the money but that his son was actually commissioned. Nonetheless, I have included Sir Francis in the officer analysis since he seems to have been a colonel and may, after his son's death, have assumed command of the regiment in person. This is conjecture, however, and open to subsequent change. There is a clear allusion to this regiment engaged at Bradford on December 17th 1642, and at Adwalton Moor on June 30th 1643 (see Vol. 1).

Colonel Thomas Howard: Born in 1618, the eldest son by his father, Sir Francis Howard's, first marriage, and styled of Corby Castle, Cumberland. Thomas came from a markedly Recusant family, and was listed as a Catholic officer on December 12th 1642. Called 'Colonel of his father's regiment' in the pedigrees, Thomas was killed outright on Adwalton Moor in the charge immediately following upon that in which Colonel George Heron (q.v.) was killed.³³⁴

Colonel Sir Francis Howard: Also commanded a dragoon unit (q.v.), he was second of the six sons of Lord William Howard of Naworth Castle, and was born in 1588. We have no direct allusion to his Catholicism, but the family history and the fact that his property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652 strongly suggest that it was at least suspected. Rushworth listed him as a Catholic in 1642. Deputy Lieutenant of Cumberland in 1640, and a Commissioner of Array in 1642, his lands in Neesham were sequestered in 1644 and let out in the following year. Sir Francis may then have been in Carlisle, to the defence of which he gave £10, and travelling south with the remainder of that garrison after its fall,

ended the war in the defence of Hereford where he was captured. Exempted from pardon, he made no attempt to compound and probably would not have been allowed to do so, anyway. His sequestered lands were bringing in rents of £605 per annum by 1651, and in 1653 his wife and children petitioned for one fifth of their father's income for their maintenance. In the decimation levy, he was taxed for £10, 'upon his own offer, and with his own consent, no visible estate appearing'. He died in 1659.³³⁵

Major William Revely: Cited in the List, he was born in 1621 the son and heir of Bertram Revely who died in 1622 at the age of 22. In some sources, William's name is given as Witten. He was captured, wounded, at Naseby where he had fought in the Northern Horse (he signed the 1645 petition), and died in London. A Catholic, of Ingram in Northumberland.³³⁶

Lieutenant Thomas Reed: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Major Reveley's troop. Thomas Read of Heddon on the Wall, bailiff to William Lord Howard, was aged 21 in 1628 when he gave evidence in a case of baptism where the sign of the cross had been used. He was the fourth of the five sons of Ralph Reed or Read of Chirton, who died in 1636.³³⁷

Quartermaster Phineas Wood: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Although unidentified, his case points the problem of the Howards explained above. In the errata to the List the reader is instructed to transfer Wood to Colonel Thomas Howard (having been listed under Francis Howard). This is ambiguous in that it may mean Colonel Thomas Howard of this regiment, Colonel Thomas Howard of Dragoons (q.v.) or the southern Colonel Howard. Dismissing the latter on the grounds of the claim, and in view of the specific allusion to Horse rather than dragoons, I favour this regiment.³³⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet Henry West, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Quartermaster James Lockey, claimed in the List from Northumberland in Major Revely's troop.

Colonel Sir William HUDDLESTONE'S Horse.

Never a full regiment, certainly no more than a troop or two, Colonel Huddlestone being primarily an infantry commander (see Huddlestone's Foot). We know very little of this unit.

Captain Ralph Featherstone: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, he was of Tofts and Stanhope, Co. Durham, the second son but eventual heir of Ralph Featherstone who died in 1636. The brother of Colonel John Featherstone (q.v.). His lands remained sequestered in 1650, when they were producing a yearly rental income of £11.4.0d., although his fine had been assessed at £310.16s. In 1660 he petitioned that he had been gaoled on four occasions and had been sold to the Barbadoes for his obstinate Royalism. He desired that he be made Bailiff of Gateshead. He had signed the 1641/2 Protestation, and had been in arms again in 1648.³³⁹

Captain Joseph Huddlestone: Cited in the List, he seems also to have served as an infantry captain in his father's Foot. He was the youngest of Colonel Huddlestone's eight sons, and may be the captain in Grey's Division in Pontefract, 1644.³⁴⁰

Cornet Joseph Carter: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, he was Joseph Carter of Furness, Gentleman, Catholic delinquent, whose lands were inserted in the Third Treason Act and who remained undischarged in 1655.³⁴¹

Cornet Christopher Irton: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, he is not positively identified. See Irton, R., in Huddlestone's Foot. In July 1664 a Christopher Irton of Threlkeld, Gentleman, gave a deposition against William Dalston of Thwaites who was charged with seditious words.³⁴²

Quartermaster William Morton: Claimed of Durham in the List, and such of Scarndale House, Appleton in Cleveland, had his will granted probate in 1685.³⁴³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Bedborrow, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Cornet John Kirkbank, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir John KAY'S Regiment of Horse.

The regiment was almost certainly in being on October 24th 1642, when it fought at Bradford (see Vol. 1), although probably not up to strength. On November 14th it received 30 new pistols from the arsenal at York,³⁴⁴ and seems to have been in action in the East Riding in February 1644. It was noted on February 10th of that year that "a. clarke to Sir...Key" had been captured in a skirmish.³⁴⁵ It was engaged at Hunslett on March 5th.³⁴⁶ Probably at Marston Moor, it disbanded immediately afterwards when the colonel took the first opportunity to lay down his arms.

Colonel Sir John Kay: Kay's Royalism was somewhat ambivalent. Son and heir of Sir John Kay of Woodsome, Yorkshire, who died in 1641, Sir John II was born in 1616 and was created a baronet in 1642. The family originally came from Huntingdonshire. Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles I, a JP for the West Riding and a Commissioner of Array, Kay was nominally a leading figure amongst the Royalist gentry of the otherwise pro-Parliamentarian cloth town areas. By marriage he was related to the Parliamentarian colonel, Ralph Assheton, and was indeed, the son in law of Colonel Sir Ferdinando Leigh (q.v.). Nonetheless, after active service which included recruiting for the earl of Newcastle in the autumn and winter of 1643/4 and assisting in the defence of Sheffield Castle, at the fall of which he was a hostage for the fulfilment of terms, Kay petitioned to compound by the end of 1644. In his petition he virtually boasted that he had been one of the first to desert the King, and claimed that he "was not in arms for a long time". His fine was fixed at £500, but this was at a twentieth, which was relatively lenient, and after paying a half and giving sureties for the rest, his sequestration was lifted in March 1645. It really does look as if Kay put his own property and comfort before the King's interests, which was unusual in the upper echelons of the Royalist officer class. Even so, in 1655 he was apparently conspiring. A tinker laid information at Batley, which was sent on to Lambert, that he had seen Kay and three masked men, with others carrying arms, at Woodsome, and that Kay had given him three shillings to keep silent. The strangers "keepe noe high way...and ride in the dead of night". If Kay experienced no real financial troubles during the Interregnum, he found himself, in 1660, the subject of an attempt by one William Lowther to have the Act of Indemnity waived so that Lowther could proceed against him for recovery of bonds paid over in 1643 to assist the war effort. Lowther claimed these were private accounts, but what became of the matter is not known. Sir John died in 1662.³⁴⁷

No lt. colonel has been identified for this regiment.

Major Godfrey Copley: Not mentioned in the List, but rank and regiment given in the pedigrees. Clay identified him as Godfrey,

later Sir Godfrey, Copley, Bart., of Sprotborough who died in 1677. This seems to be right. Born in 1623, the son of William Copley of Sprotborough who died in 1644, Godfrey served in the defence of Pontefract (according to his composition) and when it fell retired to his own house, where he took the Covenant and the Oath of Abjuration in 1646; was he suspected as a Catholic? A fine of £1366 was imposed upon him, but his father had left the estate heavy with debts, and Godfrey implied that it was due to this that he had accepted a commission as major, which is a little hard to understand (since it would surely involve him in expense). Clay confused this Godfrey with another Godfrey Copley, the Recorder of Doncaster and of Pontefract, eldest son of John Copley of Skelbrooke, who died in 1649 and may also have been a Royalist. Major Copley was created a baronet in 1661 and died in 1677.³⁴⁸

Captain Edward Hanson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Edward Hanson was the son and heir of Edward Hanson of Woodhouse who died in 1652, and grandson of Thomas Hanson of Toot-hill who died in 1623. Edward II, born in 1620, died in 1669. The family was a younger line of the main Hanson family of Woodhouse. Captain Hanson's father, Edward I, was suspected during the Interregnum of conspiring with Captain Langdale Sunderland (q.v., Langdale's Horse), to purchase Catholic property to be held in trust for its owners. The father was probably the Edward Hanson of Almonbury who refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I, and who paid a fine of £10 in consequence.³⁴⁹

Lieutenant Thomas Fullwood: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man, of Pontefract, failed to appear at Dugdale's visitation.³⁵⁰

Cornet William Beaumont: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Hanson's troop. A William Beaumont, living in 1668, was the youngest of the three sons of Thomas Beaumont of Colne Bridge, who, having been an officer in the Dutch service, died in 1649. Another William Beaumont, of Kirkheaton, who died in 1683, was presented for assault at Wakefield Quarter Sessions in 1649. Geographically speaking, either is possible.³⁵¹

Quartermaster Richard Hare: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Woodsome, yeoman, probate granted 1675.³⁵²

The following officer has not been identified.

Cornet Thomas Wood, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel James KING (Lord Eythin's) Regiment of Horse.

Raised predominantly in north Yorkshire, the regiment, like King's Foot, presumably went wherever he was himself in action. Certainly engaged at Yarm Bridge in February 1643, at Winceby in October and at Marston Moor in 1644, what became of it after King's departure into exile in July of that year we cannot know. It probably fragmented and activist officers went into other units. On July 19th 1643 "William, a Dutchman, General King's Trumpeter and a gentleman of his horse" was buried in Leeds, probably from wounds sustained at Adwalton Moor at the start of the month.³⁵³

Two officers have been omitted from this regiment even though they claimed in the List³⁵⁴ under King. They are easily identifiable as officers from 1650/1, perhaps 1648, in that they cite as their troop commander Lt. Colonel Robert Carre, omitted from the analysis because during the 1642/6 war he was in arms against the King. He was (Sir) Robert Carre of Etal. For the same reason, none of the officers claiming under him elsewhere in the List are here included.³⁵⁵

Colonel James King: King's military career has been discussed fully in Vol. 1. He was born in 1589, a Scot with wide field experience in European wars as a Major General in the Swedish army and, latterly, under the Elector Palatine. He came back to England in 1640, and in 1642 replaced the earl of Newport as Newcastle's second in command. "Notwithstanding the unavoidable prejudice of his being a Scotsman", Clarendon observed of him, he "ordered the Foot with great wisdom and dexterity". The Queen favoured him, and in December 1642 wrote to King Charles to say that she found him "so disposed and ready to serve you...I hope that you will not employ him under anyone whom he might command; for he has testified to me that whoever submits to serve under my lord Newcastle has simply to obey, and also that he has a particular esteem for my lord Newcastle". There is something faintly ironic in this observation, but it does not reflect upon the Queen, who could at times be a shrewd judge of character and who certainly looked after the interests of those to whom she showed favour. It has been argued elsewhere (see Vol. 1) that King exerted his influence unduly over Newcastle, not always for the good, often to the detriment, of the Royal cause. Since his English career has been analysed elsewhere, it is worth now pausing to consider the dark shadow that still hangs over it. On April 5th 1644 (the date is highly important) the Queen told Newcastle that she had heard King (now Lord Eythin) "desires to go into Germany". Newcastle told her in reply that "I hope he will not leave us in the present state of our affairs, and that if anybody has said any foolish thing, he is too gallant a man to mind it". Clearly, King was somewhat touchy, and Newcastle altogether too reliant upon him, but such

remarks cause one to wonder what effect rumours of that type may have had upon Royalist morale. After King and Newcastle had gone into exile, a consequence of King's indifference as to whether the battle of Marston Moor were won or not, criticism of him became more rife. In January 1645, he wrote to Prince Rupert, a man for whom he had little love and less respect, "I have heard it, to witt, that y^r Hg. after I was gon to Skearsbrough, should heave sent to steay me and to recall me bak and that by reson of som tratourous act y^r Highness had to leay to my charge...". King's behaviour was suspect, certainly, as Sir Hugh Cholmeley noted. It had been suggested, for example, in October 1644, that he was contemplating joining the Covenanters, a rumour which Mercurius Aulicus uneasily dismissed. One cannot escape the conclusion that if King was not really a traitor, for the evidence is purely hearsay, he was certainly growing indifferent to the cause which he had served. A consequence, perhaps, of too long as a mercenary in other peoples' wars. He continued his Royalist activism however, as Charles II's agent in Sweden and then as Lt. General to the Marquess of Montrose, a subservient role he probably cared little for, and he never set foot in Britain again. James King, son of Sir James King of Barracht in Aberdeenshire, Major General to the King of Sweden and Ofverbefälhafvre to the Elector Palatine, died in Stockholm in 1652 claiming in his will, that Charles I owed him £40,000. Unlike Glemham and other professionals, he does not excite sympathy, and did not do so in his life.³⁵⁶

No lt. colonel has been identified for this regiment. King possibly followed European practice, and Parliamentarian practice, in not appointing such a rank to his cavalry regiment, although it was the norm in Royalist cavalry forces.

Major Edward Gower: Cited in the List, eldest of the two sons of Colonel Sir Thomas Gower (q.v.), styled of Hutton, Gentleman or Esquire. He admitted to his rank in his composition, which was made in 1647 after he had yielded with Newark. He was fined £100, in respect of the first war, and a further £100 in respect of his part in 1648. Undeterred, he was in arms in 1651 as well and taken prisoner at Wigan Lane in August of that year. JP in the North Riding in 1666, he died in 1680.³⁵⁷

Major Claudius Hamilton: Cited in the List, of Gateshead, son of Sir George Hamilton, Bart. In 1634 the King had written to the Lord Deputy in Ireland on behalf of Claudius and his father to have him look into the possibility of grants of land for them. In 1641/2 Claudius signed the Protestation from Gateshead. He petitioned in 1649 when he was described as Esquire, and was fined £80.18.0d., although the fine was never paid, for he died in London in 1650 and his property was up for sale in 1651.³⁵⁸

Captain (Sir) Arthur Cayley: Cited in the List, he was not knighted until 1660. He was second of the three sons of

Edward Cayley of Brompton who died in 1642, and brother of Sir William Cayley of the same. He was taken prisoner at Wakefield in 1643 (see Vol. 1) and at his composition stated that "being young and inexperienced he was persuaded and drawne in to be a Captaine of y^e king's partie....his laying down of Armes.... caused 300 men to lay down armes with him". That sounds excessive. He said that he had raised his troop at the time of the Queen's arrival in Yorkshire. A fine of £150 was levied upon him. Clay wrongly identified him as the third son of Sir William Cayley of Brompton, barrister of Gray's Inn. At the time of his knighthood he had settled at Newland in Warwickshire.³⁵⁹

Captain Richard Cole: Cited in the List, see the same man (?), Anderson's Horse.

Captain George Cooke: Cited in the List by a Northumbrian claimant, he is more properly George Cocke of Newcastle, corn merchant. In 1643 he had been a prisoner in Dover Castle (no doubt taken at sea) and was exchanged in 1644. Serving in the defence of his native city, he was arrested at its fall and sent to London where he was gaoled in Lambeth House and the Southwark Compter. He petitioned in 1646 and was fined £208. In 1660 he asked for the post of Customer of Newcastle, and stated that he had acted on behalf of the Queen in negotiations with the earl of Newcastle in 1642 for raising of an army, and had raised a troop of horse in that army.³⁶⁰

Captain Sackville Glemham: Cited in the List, son and heir of Sir Thomas Glemham (q.v.), he matriculated at Trinity College Oxford in 1640. He was knighted on the field in September 1644 when serving with the Northern Horse. In 1655 he was arrested by Lambert, when he was styled as of Glemham Hall in Suffolk, and sent to Kings Lynn under guard. In January of the next year he was taxed for £40, and was styled Esquire, his knighthood not being acknowledged. He died in 1660.³⁶¹

Captain James Mountain: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was the second of the three sons of Isaac Mountain of Westow who died in 1648. His father and elder brother compounded as Royalists (see Appendix IV, Undesignated Officers)† James entered the Scottish army in 1646 and died in 1697.³⁶²

Captain James Richardson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man, of Ford, was listed as a gentleman volunteer under Lord Widdrington in 1661.³⁶³

Lieutenant Thomas Vasey: Claimed in the List from Durham, in Major Gower's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation of Stanhope, and another in Coniscliffe.³⁶⁴

Lieutenant Thomas Wade: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mountains troop. A Lieutenant Thomas Waade of Whitby, after the restoration, was making money from investigating the disposal of goods sequestered during the Interregnum. He petitioned that he had served at sea "all the late war", but he may well have served a term with this regiment. In 1661 he was granted a monopoly in carrying letters from New Malton to Whitby, an order confirmed in writing by Sir Edward Nicholas.³⁶⁵

Lieutenant Christopher Wake: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Ord's troop. Such a man was, in July 1635, a juror at Malton Quarter Sessions.

Styled yeoman.³⁶⁶

Cornet Ralph Royston: Claimed in the List from Derbyshire, Captain Glemham's troop. Ralph Royston of Cloworth in Nottinghamshire compounded in 1649 upon discovery, for actions in the 1642/6 war, and was fined £10.³⁶⁷

Cornet Edward Stafford: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Gower's troop. Such a man, of Flaxton, died c. 1685, Flaxton being in the North Riding.³⁶⁸

Cornet Robert Urwin: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Hamiltons troop. Such a man, "heretofore a Prisoner taken at the Storming of Newcastle, and now Deputy Quartermaster General to the Scotts Army", had escaped from Newark in 1646 and had enlisted with the Scots.³⁶⁹

Quartermaster George Harland: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, in Captain Glemham's troop. Two such have been located in Yorkshire, of Calvis (an unidentified place) and of Storthwate, probate granted in 1686 and 1672 respectively.³⁷⁰

Quartermaster Christopher Medd: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mountain's troop. Such a man, yeoman, of Spawnton near Kirby Moorside, and of Lastingham, was a juror at various Quarter Sessions in the 1620's and early '30's. In 1656 he was presented at Thirsk for deluding the Commissioners for ejecting scandalous and ignorant ministers and schoolmasters, and "for refusing to prove what he had formerly offered to prove", whatever that was. He was found not guilty.³⁷¹

Quartermaster Thomas Ramsden: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Glemham's troop. Such a man of Hunsworth in the West Riding failed to appear at Dugdales visitation.³⁷²

Quartermaster Thomas Wake: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ord's troop. Such a man witnessed the will in December 1641 of Robert Hilton of Hilton in Co. Durham, Esquire.³⁷³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain James Hume, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain [] Lyndsey, cited in the List.

Captain [] Ord, cited in the List.

Cornet Thomas Packington, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Lyndsey's troop.

Cornet Stephen Pease, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Cole's troop

Quartermaster Peter Holland, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Gower's troop.

Quartermaster Thomas Murton, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Cooke's troop.

Quartermaster Marmaduke West, claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Cayley's troop.

Colonel Sir William LAMBTON'S Horse.

No officers are known for this troop, if such it was, and the entire evidence for its existence rests upon a passing reference in the composition proceedings of a Durham Royalist. Thomas Shadforth of Eppleton was charged in 1647 with a lengthy list of misdemeanours, the fifth of which was as follows: "that he sent a man named Robt. Robinson and a bay mare worth 6l., into Col. Tempest's regiment (Sir Richard Tempest, q.v.), and sent Litster, his tenant, with another horse, into Sir Wm. Lambton's regiment, who was at the battle of Longmarston Moor, which said Litster is tenant to him still". Lambton's was a Foot regiment, and Litster cannot have ridden in it. Whilst it is possible that the horse was intended to go one way and Litster another - that is to say, the horse was intended as a contribution to the war effort generally - that is not the impression gained from the reference and this does appear to be evidence for some troop or few horse raised by Lambton.³⁷⁴

(Colonel) John LAMPLUGH'S Horse.

For the doubts attending Lamplugh himself, see him under his probable Foot regiment. The only evidence for the existence of Horse comes in the List, and the claims of three Cumbrian officers.

Captain George Briscoe: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, such a man of Croston gave £2 towards the defences of Carlisle in 1644.³⁷⁵

Captain Edward Lamplugh: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, he was the fourth of the six sons of John Lamplugh who died in 1622, and so brother of his colonel.³⁷⁶

Cornet Thomas Wyber: Claimed in the List from Cumberland. Thomas Wybergh, Junior, the son of Thomas Wybergh of St. Bees, Cumberland who died in 1652, and had also been a Royalist delinquent. Their property was inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652, and in January 1656 Thomas II, styled Esquire, was taxed at £10.³⁷⁷

Colonel Sir Marmaduke LANGDALE'S Regiment of Horse.

The only difficulty where Langdale's cavalry is concerned, is in distinguishing between his actual regimental officers, and those who, because of service under him in the Northern Horse in 1644/5, chose to claim under him in the List. The best that can be said is that whilst it is virtually impossible to distinguish between the two groups, there must be certain officers named under Langdale who belong in some other northern regiments so that we do not suffer from an imbalance in terms of overall study. Incidental to this is the problem of distinguishing between service in 1642/6 and 1648, but that is virtually insurmountable except in a few well documented cases.

Although a troop of this regiment fought at Bradford on December 17th 1642, (see Vol. 1), Slingsby implies that it was not properly formed and equipped until the Queen arrived in Yorkshire in 1643.³⁷⁸ The regiment fought alongside the main northern army throughout 1643/4, was present at the siege of Hull where Langdale himself "shewing much personall valour" was present, and in action at Corbridge against the Scots in February 1644.³⁷⁹ Engaged at Marston Moor, it must have become merged in the Northern Horse, perhaps the regiment around which the brigade grew, and is thenceforth lost in the general history of the brigade (see Vol. 1).

Colonel Sir Marmaduke Langdale: The more that Langdale's career is studied, the more does it become apparent that one is dealing with a quite remarkable cavalry commander, not only personally courageous, but capable of conceiving and of executing complex strategies with their tactical details. To his enemies, it was said, he was "the ghost", being "a lean, mortified man" who so ruled his family that "his eldest son, being then a father of many children, did observe him...with a childish awe. And though this son was a man of high spirit, yet finding it to be, as he thought, ungrateful to his father, he durst not give him nor procure anyone to give him notice in his last sickness of the apparent signs of his death, so that my Lord...died without the help of a priest". A tragic end for a man who had been openly received into the Catholic Church in 1653 whilst in exile, and who had ruined his health and finances in the service of the Stuarts.

Langdale is one of the merest handful of northern commanders on the Royal party who have attracted a biographer. F.H. Sunderland, however, whilst he had access to valuable documents, produced rather an incomplete study wanting in weight and judgement. What follows is necessarily but a brief outline of Langdale's life. A full scale and detailed study would be worthwhile.

Marmaduke, styled of North Dalton and of Holme on Spalding Moor in Yorkshire, was born in 1598, the son of Peter Langdale of Pighill near Beverley,

who himself died in 1617. Not long after this date, Langdale and the future Sir John Hotham soldiered together in Europe in the armies of the Elector Palatine, erstwhile King of Bohemia. It was during this shared experience that Hotham learned to treat Langdale with no little respect, so that when, in 1642, it was suggested to Hotham that Marmaduke be allowed to enter Hull to discuss the problem of the port with him, Hotham refused: "I [do not] care to treat with him; I know him too well". Langdale became a confidant of the Queen of Bohemia, Charles I's sister Elizabeth. In 1626 he returned to England to marry, purchased Holme on Spalding Moor from his future protagonist Sir William Constable of Flamborough, and was knighted at Whitehall in 1628. He returned to the European theatre, probably finding himself as a comrade in arms of Prince Rupert. By dexterous management of his estates, Cliffe observed, he markedly increased his rent rolls between 1628 and 1638, and this financial security put him in good stead for his commitments during the civil war. He was viewed with mistrust by Wentworth, however, who wrote to Sir Edward Osborne (q.v.) in 1637/8 "As for Sr. Marmaduke Langdale I allwayes tooke him to be that which seemes at last you finde him a Person of ill Affections I am sure, to the Provincial Power, if not to the Regal Power". Strafford was alluding to Marmaduke's strong opposition to the Ship Money levy, and it would appear that for the early part of his career, at least, he was associated with the opposition faction in Yorkshire: his friendship with Hotham, for example, and his transactions with William Constable. Nonetheless, he was influential in the East Riding and not to be ignored, and in December 1638 Osborne recommended him as Deputy Lieutenant in the Riding. In the following year he became High Sheriff of Yorkshire, charged with the task of collecting the very Ship Money he had so opposed. He was initially dilatory in his collection, so that in 1640 the King was obliged to present him with a reprimand: "you have...neglected to perform that service in manifest contempt of our crown and dignity". The earl of Strafford commented that "that gentleman I fear carries an itch about with him that will never let him take rest, till at one time or other he happen to be thoroughly clawed indeed". Perhaps the thorough clawing was a threat of Star Chamber proceedings for Marmaduke suddenly relented and got on with the tasks of his shrievalty. Cliffe was perplexed by the sudden change in Langdale's attitude, from a notable opponent of the government, into a lukewarm supporter, who slowly turned into a leading Royalist in 1642. It is indeed perplexing, in that we cannot know precisely what Langdale believed or came to believe. If his Catholic sympathy was even then in evidence, he may have seen the worsening situation as a threat to the crown, and accepted the dictum of obedience to the prince which was part of Catholic doctrine. Yet that would hardly be a full or acceptable explanation in itself, and it may be that Langdale, like many erstwhile friends of the more extreme Parliamentary party, reverted to his allegiance as events turned towards civil war. A simple question of loyalties which he resolved according

to conscience, and to which he stuck for the rest of his life.

In 1642 Langdale was appointed a Commissioner of Array in Yorkshire, and was in July acting commander in chief of Colonel Sir Henry Griffiths's Trainband Foot (q.v.). He signed the petition of the loyal gentry of Yorkshire to the King protesting at Hotham's behaviour in Hull, and was prominent in the talks to bring the earl of Newcastle south to replace the earl of Cumberland as Lord General, (see Vol. 1). He had not, however, lost anything of his old contrariness, and on January 20th 1643 came to York to oppose Glemham and Newcastle who, acting on royal orders, were endeavouring to prevent a mayoral election. On May 10th, the Queen wrote to the earl of Newcastle that "I have...conversed with Sir Marmaduke Langdale and am so satisfied with him, that I have not been able to refuse him some pistoles, notwithstanding the prohibitions...". On September 11th of the same year, a curious commission was issued to him to become "Colonel of the Irish Brigade of Horse", with power to summon a council of war when needed, by Newcastle. The expected help from Ireland did not come in sufficient numbers to make the commission worth having, but it is interesting to note that Langdale was given authority not dissimilar to that enjoyed by Colonel Sir William Widdrington (q.v.), formal President of the earl's council of war, (q.v.). After fighting at Marston Moor, where early reports gave him as captured, he rode with the Northern Horse regiments into Lancashire with Rupert, and fought in the actions at Ormskirk and at Malpas (see Vol. 1) where he was wounded. At this point, his attempt to turn the Northern Horse into an independent command was successful. Langdale eventually joined the King in November 1644, having been too late for the second battle of Newbury, but in time for the relief of Donnington Castle. On November 23rd "Prince Rupert and a party commanded by Sir Marmaduke Langdale gave a strong alarme to Abingdon then under government of Browne the fflaggot-monger". According to Slingsby, the Northern Horse were 1600 strong when they came to Oxford, but their numbers were steadily depleted during 1645. After the brilliant relief of Pontefract and the victory at Melton Mowbray on the way, Slingsby tells us that Langdale's "more useful cervice was, after this, to joyne wth prince Morrice & my L^d Ashley [Astley], w^{ch} after y^e taking Shrewsbury were in some streights". Slingsby also gives us a picture of Langdale at this time, and of his men: "such an army had Caesar, of whom they write, y^t he would be so severe & precise in exacting of discipline, as he would not give y^m warning of y^e time either of Journey or of battle, but kept y^m ready, intentive, & prest to be led forth upon a sudden every minute of an hour whither soever he would...he would teach y^m to endure hardships, by his own example, lighting from his horse & leading y^m on foot many times wth his head bare, whether y^e sun did shine, or y^e clouds pour down rain". On April 15th Langdale was in action at the relief of a fortified house at Lydney in Gloucestershire, where he was again wounded, this time in the arm. On May 9th he had command of a force of some 2,500 cavalry riding

by the 20th to Wem in Shropshire, where he came too late to be of value. His forces were depleted again prior to the storm of Leicester, he and Colonel Sir William Blakiston (q.v.) having 1500 men, and at Naseby the Northern Horse was severely mauled. He escorted the King to Ludlow from Cardiff on August 7th, with a brigade estimated at 700 strong on the 19th. In September he was sent to parley with a force of neutrals in Glamorgan, was at Biford on the 16th, and on the 28th advancing towards Holt Castle in Denbighshire on the eve of the battle of Rowton Heath where, after initial successes on his part, the Royalists were overcome in their attempted relief of Chester. After the defeats at Sherburn in Elmet and at Carlisle Sands (see Vol. 1) in October, Langdale fled to the Isle of Man where he waited on events. In England, he was listed as exempt from pardon, and his wife and children petitioned for an allowance from his sequestered lands. In arms in 1648, he was captured and then escaped, and on March 14th 1649, an order passed through Parliament banishing him as an enemy and traitor, to die without mercy, wherever found within the limits of the nation. His lands were inserted in the 1651 Treason Act. In exile, converted to Catholicism, "a most notable convert", he was rumoured to be in line for the Privy Council, and likely to be spokesman for the Presbyterian alliance party. His political alignment, however, and his Catholicism, aroused the animosity of Edward Hyde and Langdale was not included in the planning of the risings of 1654/5. After their failure, his absence was considered by many to have been a prime cause. The story was put about, however, that he had in fact been intended to go for England but had not done so from mercenary motives: "Sir Marmaduke Langdale had 500 guilders from the King to fit himself for England the last rising, but some men are not to be satisfied". The story was nothing but the product of Anglican Royalist resentment. Raised to the peerage at the restoration, Langdale died at Holme on Spalding Moor in August 1661. "[He] carried that gravity in his converse, that integrity and generosity in his dealings, that strictness in his devotion, that experience, moderation and wariness in his counsel...as much endeared strangers to his royal master's cause, and to his own person, in all the countries he travelled..."³⁸⁰

Lt. Colonel (Sir) Robert Hildyard: Cited in the List, second of the three sons of Sir Christopher Hildyard of Winestead who died in 1634. Robert, born in 1611, founded the second line of the family, and was styled of Beverley. Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles I and Charles II, he was created a baronet in 1661. Colonel of Foot in the pre-war Trainband, and Commissioner of Array in Yorkshire in 1642, he signed the loyal petition against Hotham in August. When he became Langdale's lt. colonel is hard to say, since he appears to have been a prisoner held in Manchester on May 4th 1643, which suggests he had been captured in the West Riding and moved there for safety. With two

other prisoners, Captain Sir John Goodricke and Thomas Danby, he wrote a letter from prison to Lord Fairfax asking him for permission to write to Newcastle to set in motion exchange talks which would lead to their release. However, since he was in the Peterhouse prison in London in August, this clearly fell through, although by early 1644 he had been exchanged. According to family tradition, during the fighting against the Scots in Co. Durham, Hildyard accepted a challenge from a Scots officer and, in almost medieval style, killed him, for which act he was knighted in the field. With the Northern Horse in 1645, he signed the petition of February, and came in at Oxford in 1646. A fine of £610 was levied on this "Principal Agent" for the Royalist cause in Yorkshire. He compounded, and was discharged in 1648. His attempts to avoid further involvement came to nothing in 1658 when, as he petitioned in 1660, he was arrested by Thomas Harrison, High Sheriff of Yorkshire, and put into prison at Hull and then at York without charges being laid against him. He demanded that Harrison be exempted from the blanket indemnity, so that he might proceed against him at law, but the request was denied. The baronetcy perhaps served to mollify his feelings. In 1664 he was listed as a commissioner for the regulation of corporations in Yorkshire, and died in 1684/5 at Winestead.³⁸¹

Major [] Bale: Cited in the List, but probably identical with the major cited under Lord Loughborough, a regiment commissioned by Newcastle, and perhaps the lt. colonel named William Bale given as a field commander. Here we clearly have a man of brigade status, rather than a regimental major. William Bale was second of the seven sons of Sir John Bale, former High Sheriff of Leicestershire, and brother of John Bale Esquire, of Carleton Curlieu, Commissioner of Array and a baronet in 1643. The family was thoroughly Royalist, William's brother Thomas being killed at Ashby de la Zouch.³⁸²

Major [] Brandling: Cited in the List. For this man, see Brandling's Horse.

Major Ralph Constable: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was born in 1618, youngest of the two sons of Philip Constable of Wassand Esquire, who was killed in a duel in the same year. Later styled of Selby and Barlby, and apparently a Recusant. Ralph's surviving composition papers allude to the 1648 war only, but that does not rule out an earlier involvement. He was fined £70.13.4d. In June and July 1660 he petitioned that one Luke Robinson be excluded from the Act of Indemnity, describing him as "an inveterate rebel now lruking for mischief". Constable stated that in 1657 or thereabouts, as others bore witness, Robinson seized him as a Recusant and interned him in the gaol at York from which he was "only lately liberated". Constable does not seem to have let the civil war drop from his mind. In August 1661 he was charged with manslaughter. The deed

occurred at New Malton, in a private house, where Constable and some others chanced to meet with a 'Captain' Smith who was also there with some friends, most of whom gave evidence against Ralph. After an exchange of heated words, the exact nature of which we do not know, Smith struck Constable on the face, whereupon he, and those with him, turned on Smith with their swords and mortally wounded him. That this was an affray between former enemies can be gathered from the deposition of one of Constable's friends, who reported that one John Nary, formerly a major for the Parliament, said "Sett your King asyde, wee will doe anie thing whatever with you...." and when Nary reminded Constable about the Act of Indemnity the latter told him "he vallued not a fart the Act of Indemnity".

Major Constable is not to be confused with Ralph Constable of Catfoss in the East Riding, youngest of the four sons of John Constable of that place, for he was not born until 1634.³⁸³

Captain Edward Constable: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, also styling himself as Advocate General, no doubt a Northern Horse rank. Probably the second of the three sons of Marmaduke Constable of Wassand who died in 1607, Edward born in 1603, which would make him Major Constable's uncle.³⁸⁴

Captain [] Cooke: Cited in the List, unlikely to be the same man of James King's Horse (q.v., above). Possibly Bryan Cooke the younger of Doncaster, son of the Royalist Alderman, a delinquent in the 1642/6 war. He was born in 1620 and died in 1660.³⁸⁵

Captain Thomas Dale: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but probably third of the three sons of Robert Dale of Flagg in Derbyshire. Thomas, styled of Parwick in the same county, was born in 1603.³⁸⁶

Captain William Dannel: Cited in the List, perhaps the same as Dunhill cited in Bradshaw's Horse (q.v., above). Most clearly the "man of obscure origin but a gentleman in all he did" who, according to Payne Fisher, was the Donnelle or Donnel who slew Major Ballantyne of the Scottish army in single combat during the siege of York.³⁸⁷

Captain (Sir) Richard Gledhill: This regimental designation is given in the various pedigrees, although it has to be said that in November 1643 Gledhill received a commission as lt. colonel in William St. George's Foot, with which this study is not concerned. It would not be impossible for Gledhill to retain his cavalry rank at one and the same time, although he may have come into it subsequent to his foot commission. However, a troop of horse of his certainly

existed on May 7th 1642. He was third of the three sons of Thomas Gledhill of Barkisland, Esquire, and singled out for especial attention in his mother's will made in 1636. Knighted by Newcastle early in the war, probably at the end of 1642, he was given a special pardon by the King for his part in the murder of a Robert Mynne during the war. His brother, who was not a Royalist, compounded for the estates on a fine of £127, Richard having been killed in action on Marston Moor.³⁸⁸

Captain [] Killinghall: Cited in the List, and unlikely to be the Captain John Killinghall of Cuthbert Conyers's Foot (q.v., below). William Killinghall of Middleton St. George, Co. Durham, eldest of the two sons of Henry of that place who died in 1620, died himself in 1644, perhaps killed in the war, although in his will dated July 8th 1642 he referred to himself as 'old'. If not a mere form, connected with ill health at that time, this would tend to suggest that we may be concerned with one of William's several sons, more particularly with Thomas, born in 1607, George in 1609 and William II in 1617. The family had Catholic connections through William I's wife, a Recusant.³⁸⁹

Captain Richard Langley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, the name is frustratingly common. Richard Langley of Millington, Esquire, was fined £743.19.0d., in 1653, which he paid and his sequestration was discharged. No clue survives as to the nature of his delinquency. He was not the same man as Richard Langley of Rathorp Hall, eldest of the two sons of Arthur Langley of the same who died in 1659, Richard living 1605/73.³⁹⁰

Captain William Porter: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, second of the seven sons of Joseph Porter, convicted Recusant, of Wery-Hall in that county who died in 1649. William was styled of Low Holm.³⁹¹

Captain Langdale Sunderland: Cited in the List, and the rank mentioned in all the pedigrees. Styled of Aykton, he was son and heir of Abraham Sunderland of Sunderland and Coley Esquire who died in 1644. Langdale was aged 21 in 1642 and was a nephew of his colonel, hence the forename. He matriculated at Brasenose College in 1639, and at the time of his composition was styled of High Sunderland, Esquire, which property he sold, later, to buy Aykton. His land speculation during the Interregnum aroused suspicions as to his religion, for upon the sale of lands at Coley and Northowram, he invested the profits in two properties of a convicted Recusant, Thomas Beckwith, in a deal that looked very much as if the two were conspiring to preserve Beckwith's interest. Captain Sunderland laid down his arms in 1644, and in his composition stated that he had been ill for about a year, which suggests that he had been wounded.

A fine of £878 was levied against him, which doubtless accounted for his dead father who had been in arms as a volunteer. The draft ordinance of 1648 to clear his delinquency alluded to certain "concealments" by him. He died and was buried in the church at Featherstone in 1698.³⁹²

Captain John Thomlinson: Cited in the List, evidently the same man as of Mansfield's Horse (q.v.). In Clay's edition of Dugdale's visitation of Yorkshire is a footnote referring to this man, taken from a ms. note in Joseph Hunter's papers. Of Brayton, near Selby, Thomlinson was left for dead on Marston Moor after fighting under Langdale, but was found by a lady travelling across the battlefield in a coach and taken to safety in York.³⁹³

Captain William Wharton: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, where it is a very common name at this period. See also, such a name and rank in Henry Chaytor's Foot. No less than six men of this name signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Cleborne, Mallerstang, Orton, Ravenstonedale, Shap and Wastbie, whilst a seventh of Skelsmergh compounded as a Recusant in 1629.³⁹⁴

Captain [] Yeord: Cited in the List, probably Ralph Yoward, in 1640 a major in Sir William Pennyman's Trainband Foot (q.v.), when it was said of him that he had levied money at gunpoint to pay his men.³⁹⁵

Lieutenant William Bradley: Claimed in the List from Westmorland in Captain Thompson's troop, such a man of Bampton in West Ward signed the 1641/2 Protestation.³⁹⁶

Cornet Thomas Gibson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sunderlands troop. Such a man, of Almonbury, yeoman, deposed in November 1660 that a William Poole had spoken seditious words against the King. The magistrate was (Colonel) Sir John Kay.³⁹⁷

Cornet James Harwood: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thompson's troop. James Harwood of Nun Monkton Gentleman, and James Harwood his son and heir, were both fined as delinquents and compounded for £60.10.0d.³⁹⁸

Cornet Ralph Hodgson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Constable's troop. It is remotely possible that he was the second son of Lancelot Hodgson of Hebburn, Co. Durham, a Royalist family.³⁹⁹

Cornet Thomas Thomlin: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Hildyard's troop. Such a man of Hutton Hang in Bedale, yeoman, was presented with his wife as a

Recusant at Thirsk in May 1641.⁴⁰⁰

Quartermaster John Parker: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dunnell's troop. Possibly John Parker of Little Norton, yeoman, born in 1607, died in 1678, eldest son of John Parker of the same.⁴⁰¹

Quartermaster John Peele: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Thomlinson's troop. Such a man of Elsington in Slaidburne, yeoman, died in 1677.⁴⁰²

Quartermaster Francis Smith: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man from Spilsby in Lincolnshire was fined £2.10s. in 1650 for delinquency 1642/6.⁴⁰³

Quartermaster William Smith: Such a man of Burnby, Yorkshire, admitted this rank in 1650 laying evidence against a Royalist agent, but for a curious twist to the case, see Captain Richard Cholmeley, Belasyse's Horse.⁴⁰⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Anderson, cited in the List.

Captain Francis Harriman, claimed in the List from Oxfordshire.

Captain [] Haxby, cited in the List.

Captain Richard Hyde, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire.

Captain [] Keightley, cited in the List.

Captain [] Thompson, cited in the List, possibly an error for Captain Thomlinson, see above.

Lieutenant Peter Constable, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Langley's troop.

Lieutenant John Hope, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant John Jackson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Constable's troop.

Lieutenant Archibald MacVicar, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Keightley's troop.

Lieutenant Edward Wilkinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Brandling's troop.

Cornet Anthony Durham, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dunnell's troop.

Cornet George Flesher, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Killinghall's troop.

Cornet Mathew Halford, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Major Bale's troop.

Cornet Steven Smith, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Langley's troop.

Quartermaster Thomas Allen, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Yeord's troop.

Quartermaster Edmund Edlington, claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Captain Cooke's troop.

Quartermaster John Escrick, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Constable's troop.

Quartermaster Barnaby Forcer, claimed in the List from Durham.

Quartermaster Thomas Forster, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Langley's troop.

Quartermaster Basil Hall, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Andersons troop.

Quartermaster Martin Hyde, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Haxby's troop.

Quartermaster Cuthbert Pallister, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Haxby's troop.

Quartermaster Richard Pattison, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Quartermaster Robert Renthall, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster John Richardson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sunderland's troop.

Quartermaster Thorp Salvin, claimed in the List from Yorkshire. (He does not appear in any Salvin pedigree, though possibly an illegitimate scion of the family. Alternatively, it may be an error, and the name of a claimant's place of residence inserted, Thorp Salvin lying in the Hatfield Level area of South Yorkshire).

Quartermaster William Sclater, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster James Walker, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster William Worker, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Ferdinando LEIGH'S Regiment of Horse.

A predominantly Yorkshire regiment, for the whereabouts of which during the war we have practically no evidence, except such as appears in various officer biographies. There is a curious document extant, recording the delivery of 80 muskets and 40 pistols to this regiment on November 14th 1643, but what a cavalry regiment can have wanted with muskets is a mystery.⁴⁰⁵ It may be that Leigh had a few dragoons, or that he was transporting the muskets on behalf of another unit. There is no evidence to suggest that Leigh was also a dragoon commander.

Colonel Sir Ferdinando Leigh: Son of Thomas Leigh of Middleton, Rothwell near Leeds, and knighted in 1617, he was a leading colliery owner in Yorkshire. Related to the Stanleys, he had served for a time as Governor of the Isle of Man, and as a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles I. On February 13th 1644 he was lying ill in York, "with such pains in the head that he knew not what he did". Perhaps he was subjected to migraine attacks. He probably fought on Marston Moor, and was in Skipton garrison until that castle fell in December 1645, which indicates a degree of resolute Royalism. He died in 1654 and was buried in the church at Pontefract, ruined during the siege.⁴⁰⁶

No Lt. colonel has been identified for this regiment.

Major Robert Watson: Cited in the List, but impossible to identify.⁴⁰⁷

Captain John Consett: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was of Bossall in the North Riding, Gentleman, perhaps a relation of William Consett of Hovingham, yeoman, juror at Helmsley Quarter Sessions in January 1633. John Consett yielded in 1645, and in his composition proceedings in 1649 was described as a "Practitioner in Physic". He paid £4.6.8d., to clear his delinquency.⁴⁰⁸

Captain John Leigh: Cited in the List, and not, apparently, of the main Rothwell family, although described in one source as Colonel Leigh's son. John, fifth of the five sons of Thomas Legh of Adlington, Cheshire, was killed in the civil wars.⁴⁰⁹

Captain Francis Lessells: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but hard to be sure of. The Lascelles family of Northallerton from which came the Parliamentarian commander Colonel Francis Lascelles, produced another Francis, born in 1593, fourth of the five sons of Francis Lascelles Esquire who died in 1628. Alternatively, the Lascelles family of Kirby upon Wiske produced four seminary priests at this period. A Francis Lascelles, born in 1612, was heir of William Lascelles of Stanke.⁴¹⁰

Captain William Leyburn: A commission, signed by Newcastle and dated October 7th 1643, makes this specific regimental designation for us. However, we are here concerned with one of the most insoluble mysteries of the northern regiments, and what follows must be held to apply to William Leyburn of Colonel George Middleton's Horse (q.v.), and to William Leyburn of the Queen's Lifeguard of Horse (q.v.). The commission cited above is definite, but the only allusion to this regiment for Leyburn which we have. Cited under George Middleton is a Captain [] Leyburn, apparently taken prisoner at Hunslett in March 1644 (see Vol. 1), and in the defence of Pontefract. This is perfectly straightforward, in the sense that we may have to do with two separate Leyburns, but the confusion arises in the various genealogies. According to one source, almost contemporary, a Captain William Leyburn was killed in action in 1643 at Sheriff Hutton, the only engagement fought there being in January or February of that year. If this is accurate, it rules out William Leyburn of Leigh's. Thus we are confronted with the problem of finding two William Leyburns, and possibly a third Leyburn for Middleton's. It is at this point that the matter becomes even more complicated as will be seen. The pedigree of the Leyburn family of Cunswick near Kendal in Westmorland, alludes to William Leyburn, son of John Leyburn, killed in battle at Sheriff Hutton as a Cornet in the Queen's Horse. Incidentally, this Leyburn killed at Sheriff Hutton is listed as a Catholic. Yet another source, alluding to the Sheriff Hutton engagement, returns to the rank of captain but insists upon the Queen's regiment designation and adds the date 1644. The obstacles are several. Firstly, the battle at Sheriff Hutton was fought almost certainly on or around January 12th 1643, for Captain John Hotham on the 15th wrote to Newcastle concerning it. That said, it must also be said that the Queen's regiment did not exist in January 1643, nor was it in the north at any time in 1644 (even allowing for the later date as referring to a minor action during the retreat to York in April of that year). One positive factor, however, is that a troop of Lancashire cavalry, later to form the nucleus of the Queen's Horse, was beaten up at Malton in January 1643, although this was a distinctive engagement from that at Sheriff Hutton. It does serve, however, to show that there were forces in Yorkshire at that date destined to become part of the Queen's Lifeguard (see Vol. 1).

Turning to the question of identification, allusion has been made to John Leyburn of Cunswick and his son William. Both were Recusants, with presentations as such in 1632 and listed as such in the sequestration proceedings of the Interregnum, their estate undischarged in 1655. There are, however, two other Leyburns, William of Torisholm and George of Nateby, the latter apparently a younger son of John of Cunswick. Beyond this it has not been possible to

go.⁴¹¹

It would be feasible to say that Leyburn in Leigh's Horse may represent a transfer from Middleton's, indeed, vice versa. This does not, however, solve the mystery of Cornet/Captain Leyburn of the Queen's 'regiment' killed in 1643 or 1644.

Lieutenant John Lister: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Lessell's troop. For this man, see a man of the same name, acting captain of dragoons, Skipton garrison (Sir John Mallory's Dragoons). The link is based upon Leigh's presence in the garrison in 1645, and seems acceptable.⁴¹²

Lieutenant Anthony Swillovant: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. One or more of this name served in the defence of Pontefract, and a Captain Swillovant was listed in Ramsden's division.⁴¹³

Cornet Joseph Naylor: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and served in Pontefract garrison. Of Flanshawe, Gentleman, fined £48 in 1649.⁴¹⁴

Quartermaster Nathaniel Lister: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Leigh's troop. Such a man of Cudworth, Royston, died c. 1680.⁴¹⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Robert Dixon, cited in the List (but see Chisenall's Horse).

Lieutenant John Cooper, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dixon's troop.

Lieutenant Robert Hutchinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Watson's troop.

Cornet George Dixon, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dixon's troop.

Quartermaster Joseph Dixon, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dixon's troop.

Quartermaster Nicholas Durnell, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Consett's troop.

Colonel Sir Christopher LOWTHER'S Horse.

One of the Cumbrian colonels who promised much and performed little, Lowther was commissioned as a colonel of foot and is dealt with as such in Appendix II. The only evidence for the existence of a troop, or part-troop of cavalry, rests upon a claimant in the List, Captain George Briscoe. Briscoe, claiming from Cumberland, cannot be other than the man of the same rank claiming in the regiment (or troop) of John Lamplugh (q.v.). Apart from this being a double claim, and therefore quite improper even if factually accurate, it also raises the problem of whether Briscoe was under Curwen before Lamplugh, or vice versa. It is possible that Lamplugh was at one time lt. colonel to Curwen, were it not for the fact that no regiment of Curwen's cavalry ever seems to have existed, but it would be a more valid idea if Briscoe had, for example, been cited under Lamplugh instead of actually claiming under him.⁴¹⁶

Colonel Sir John LOWTHER'S Horse.

Sir John, like Sir Christopher Lowther (q.v., above), was commissioned as an infantry colonel and is dealt with as such. The evidence for a troop of horse rests solely upon the List, where a Cornet John Richardson claimed from Westmorland. He was of Crosby Ravensworth, seeking to compound in 1653 on a fine of £30 after his lands had been inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652. Styled yeoman.⁴¹⁷

(Colonel) Francis MALHAM'S Horse.

Little is known of this regiment, supposing that it existed as such in 1642/6, and was not then merely a troop when Malham may have been lt. colonel in another regiment. The details concerning Malham and his officers are extremely slender, but of Malham's activism and ultimate rank there is no doubt.

(Colonel) Francis Malham: Of Elslack, Esquire, first of the four sons of Francis Malham of the same. Francis II was brought up as a ward of the earl of Cumberland, which may have influenced his Royalism. The family had a tradition of Recusancy, but nothing stronger than that, and no suspicion seems to have attached to Francis II. In his composition he admitted to having fought on Marston Moor and in Pontefract garrison (this in 1648?), and there is a reference to his capture at Rowton Heath in September 1645. He was certainly by then riding with the Northern Horse, having signed the petition of February 1645. Fined £300, in respect of property at Stanforth, Coniston and Elslack, he died in May 1660 and was buried at Grantham. The family terminated with his son and heir.⁴¹⁸

Captain Edmund Tatham: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Burton in Lonsdale, Gentleman. His lands were inserted in the 1652 Treason Act and he petitioned to compound in 1653, his fine assessed at £115.9.0d.⁴¹⁹

Cornet John Bannister: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, but unidentified at present.⁴²⁰

Quartermaster Henry Gudgeon: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, perhaps a connection of William Gudgeon of Skipton, who compounded for dwelling in that garrison, on a fine of £30 in 1647.⁴²¹

Colonel Sir John MALLORY'S Horse (Skipton Garrison).

Unlike the garrison forces under Colonel Sir Hugh Cholmeley (q.v.), we do not seem here to be dealing with clearly defined regimental structure. Indeed, a good deal of inter-change between mounted and infantry personnel was apparently the rule rather than the exception, but this is virtually always the case with garrison as opposed to field forces. For the sake of clarity, Mallory's Horse, Foot and Dragoon units have been dealt with precisely as they appear in the List, with the field commanders noted according to their actual unit citation by claimants, and not according to other evidences. Thus, Lt. Colonel Norton appears under Mallory's Dragoons (see Appendix III) even though we have evidence that places him in the Horse as well. He is not, however, cited under Horse in the List. There is an interesting allusion to the Skipton Horse in a document dated January 29th 1644, giving the strength of the garrison. At this date there were 88 cavalry in the castle, divided roughly on regimental lines, as lt. colonel's troop (20), three captain's troops at 12, 12 and 13 respectively, and a colonel's troop of 40. It is interesting to note here that no major is mentioned, and that the three captains involved, Dawson, Hardcastle and Lister respectively, do not appear in the List under the Horse designation. The same document noted that most of the horses had been sent to the Marquess of Newcastle in his campaign against the Scots.⁴²²

Colonel Sir John Mallory: Born in 1611, second son but eventual heir through the elder son William's death in 1636, of William Mallory of Studley Park near Ripon, who died in 1646. John matriculated at Caius College, Cambridge, in 1625 and entered the Middle Temple in 1627. Upon his elder brother's death, he returned to Yorkshire and remained there until elected to Parliament as MP for Ripon in 1640. He voted against Strafford's attainder, and against the revolutionary Militia Ordinance. Knighted by the King in December 1641, he betrayed Catholic sympathies by refusing to sign the 1641/2 Protestation. Appointed a Commissioner of Array in Yorkshire in 1642, he launched himself upon a course that, working from a financially insecure base, led to the ruin of the family by his death in 1655. He wasted no time in raising men for the King. On August 18th it was noted that "Sir John Mallory, in his Regiment, hath already caused Money to be furnished to his Soldiers by the Constables, and Arms to be taken from the Soldiers" which must mean, removed from the Trainband. On September 24th, so one Francis Bunney deposed years later at his own composition, Mallory was at Ripon preparing to march to join the King, and Bunney had sent him men and arms. Mallory, when compounding, admitted recruiting in 1642/3. Although prominent in the move to have the earl of Newcastle brought into Yorkshire, he was, in December, selected by the earl of Cumberland to act as governor of the earl's fortress-house of Skipton, and there Sir John remained throughout

the war. In January 1644, he was reviewing the garrison in the light of the Scottish invasion, and raising reinforcements for Newcastle. He held Skipton resolutely throughout 1644/5, finally succumbing to ill-health in October of the latter year. Lord Digby, commanding in the north, reaching Skipton after his defeat at Sherburn in Elmet, confirmed Mallory's command with a new commission, putting the command into several hands until he should recover. Sir John surrendered on December 21st. An extremely savage fine was levied on him, amounting to £3,323 in all. Implicated in the 1654/5 rising, he was too ill to take an active role, and died soon after. His monument at Ripon, sombre and unostentatious, merely hints at his service to the King. It may more clearly reflect the want of money which resulted from that service.⁴²³

Major John Hughes: such a man was also cited in the Queen's Horse (q.v.) but cannot be the same. The name is not unusual. Vicars alluded to Hughes as commander of a Skipton raid against Keighley on February 10th 1645, where he was wounded, for Major Hughes "a most valiant souldier" was buried at Skipton on the 19th. He may have been the John Hughes of Rilston, Yorkshire, whose will was granted administration in 1653/4, and perhaps the son of Robert Hughes of York who matriculated in 1622 from University College, Oxford, at the age of 14.⁴²⁴

Captain Edward Catterall: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, probate granted in 1681 in the case of such a man, of York, styled Gentleman.⁴²⁵

Captain Jordan Prideaux: An assumption, based upon the evidence of Skipton Parish Registers, that three of his men were buried there who had been slain at Carlton on March 9th 1643. Prideaux, son of the bishop of Worcester, was killed at Marston Moor. He is cited in the List but lacks regimental designation.⁴²⁶

Lieutenant Arthur Catterall: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Catterall's troop. Of Rathmell in Giggleswick Gentleman, he drew up a list of his losses in the war. Taken into custody in 1648, captured in 1650 when in arms for the King by raiders from Raby, perhaps brother to his captain.⁴²⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Richard Dixon, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet Hugh Broome, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet John Tomms, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Prideaux's.

Quartermaster John Finch, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Stephen Walsh, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Charles Cavendish Viscount MANSFIELD'S Regiment of Horse.

Here again, as in the case of the earl of Newcastle's younger son, Henry, whose regiment has been examined, we are dealing with a purely titular command. What we lack for this regiment is even a tentative identification of its Lt. colonel, although the major is known. Attention must also be drawn to the strong similarities which will be discovered upon comparing the officer list of this regiment with that of Henry Cavendish. One is tempted to argue that the similarities are sufficient to show some field connection between these two regiments, but the evidence is not strong enough to support that contention, and they must be continued to be viewed as separate units.

Colonel Charles Viscount Mansfield: The son and heir of the earl of Newcastle but his exact date of birth is not known. According to Alfred Wood, he was born in 1626, which would make him about 16 in 1642. This is clearly an error, as Keeler noted, since he sat as MP for East Retford in Nottinghamshire in 1640 when he must have been at least 18. The date of birth problem has never been satisfactorily settled., but Keeler, settling for extreme youth for want of other evidence, argued that he could not have held military command. On the contrary, had he been barely 18 in 1640, he would have been quite old enough in 1642/3 to command a regiment in the field, even if he was reliant upon the guidance of a professional soldier, whose name we do not know. Wood made the remarkable claim that Mansfield was abroad in 1643, but there is no evidence for this. Certainly, he went into exile after Marston Moor, and we can suppose that he fought alongside his father on that field. Exempted from pardon in 1649 (surely further indication of his military involvement), he returned to England in 1652 to pursue his composition, which suggests a breach with his father or a want of fervour in the cause. His case was to be recommended to the Lord Protector on July 1st 1653 under the terms of the Act of Oblivion, and was recommended to Parliament on the 30th. By February 3rd 1654 the act was held to extend to him, and his case was referred back to Cromwell. Some suspicion must have attached to him, not unreasonably, for there are references to his having been apprehended in England in 1651, in April, which puts back to before the Worcester campaign his actual return home. He died in 1659 and was buried at Bolsover. Secretary Nicholas wrote to the marquess of Newcastle, "I must console with you on the loss of your noble son, Viscount Mansfield. He was a matchless son, a truly noble and virtuous person. It has pleased God to take him to himself as too good for this wicked world; it must be a great comfort that he is translated to a better place...."⁴²⁸

Major Jude Leigh: The single reference to this man's rank and regiment is contained in the family pedigrees. He was the younger of twin sons of William Leigh of Eckington by his second

marriage. He served under Buckingham at the Isle of Rhe, and was killed during the storm of Bolton in May 1644, clearly having now joined Rupert with the northern cavalry.⁴²⁹

Captain [] Bealby: Cited in the List, see also Henry Cavendish's Horse and Francis Wortley's Horse.

Captain W. Harebread: Cited in the List, probably William Harebread, first of the two or more sons of Richard Harebread of Wistow. One Harebread, as a gentleman volunteer, served in Pontefract during the siege. William's brother John was, apparently, executed by order of Prince Rupert at Liverpool in 1644, for an unspecified crime, but probably desertion.⁴³⁰

Captain Anthony Nevil: Cited in the List, second of the two sons of Gilbert Nevil(le) of Grove, Anthony was born in 1619. According to the pedigree, he was a major, and might have achieved that rank after Leigh's death (see above). He died in 1688 and was buried at Everton.⁴³¹

Captain George Stanhope: Cited in the List, he claimed under Henry Cavendish (q.v.). Tentatively, he may have been the third of the three sons of Sir Edward Stanhope of Grymston sometime High Sheriff of Yorkshire. George was born in 1615 and died in 1678. Probate granted in the following year. Styled of Kirby Wharfe, Gentleman. An unidentified Captain Stanhope was, however, buried in York Minster on February 3rd 1644.⁴³²

Captain John Thomlinson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but see a man of the same name and rank in Langdale's Horse. However, the name is common enough to permit of two such, and in the pedigree of the Thomlinsons of Burne, Yorkshire, this man's rank and regiment is clearly given, supporting the List. He was first of the three sons of William Thomlinson of Burne who died in 1652. John, born in 1623, died in 1680 having been captain of horse to the Lord Mansfield.⁴³³

Lieutenant Lucian Lewins: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Harebread's troop. He was the second son of Thomas Lewins of Rusholme, and yielded in 1643 claiming that friends had coerced him into taking up arms. He was fined £133.13.4d., and discharged in 1647. The brother of Major Lewis Lewins (see Glemham's Foot).⁴³⁴

Lieutenant Henry Mit(t)ford: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bealby's troop. Such a man, of Gateside, Gentleman, compounded in 1629 as a Recusant for lands held in right of his wife.⁴³⁵

Cornet William Tong: Claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Captain Cooke's troop. Of Epworth, Lincolnshire, he admitted to having served under a 'Major Kaye' as he had no servant to send in his place. 'Kaye' defies identification in the northern regiments, but at a stretch of the imagination could be construed as a misreading of 'Leigh'.⁴³⁶

Quartermaster William Jefferson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Stanhope's troop. Possibly the same as of Righton, yeoman, probate granted 1676.⁴³⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Cooke, cited in the List.

Captain Richard Justice, claimed in the List from Kent.

Captain [] White, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Thomas Perkins, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Harebread's troop.

Cornet John Holland, claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain White's troop.

Cornet Gowan Pollard, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Harebread's troop.

Cornet Robert Watson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet Edward Webb, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Nevil's troop.

Quartermaster Gilbert Campanet, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bealby's troop.

Quartermaster Thorp Underwood, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bealby's troop.

Colonel Sir John MARLEY'S Horse (Newcastle Garrison).

This did not exist as a regiment, but as a troop or two auxiliary to the main regiment of foot, under which Marley's career is dealt with. Like the infantry, the Newcastle cavalry had their roots in the Trainband forces, but must have been increased in size and strength by neighbouring Royalist families. No individual actions of this troop have been recorded, but at the storm of Newcastle they must have doubled as horse and foot, (see Vol. 1).

Captain Ralph Bowes: Claimed in the List from Newcastle. Two such can be identified. Ralph, younger brother of Sir George Bowes (q.v., Brandling's Horse), styled of Hexham, Gentleman, was fined £20.12s. for "adhering" to the royal cause during the first war. Probably the same as Ralph Bowes, merchant, who was not, so it seems, a member of the Merchant Adventurer's Company. He was listed in 1665 for five chimneys in Denton or Neville Tower Ward of the city Hearth Tax roll.⁴³⁸

Captain Thomas Jackson: Cited in the List, the evidence strongly favouring Thomas Jackson of Newcastle, a son of Thomas Jackson of Harraton and brother of Lt. Colonel John Jackson (q.v., Floyd's Foot). In 1629 apprenticed to a mercer, he compounded in 1649 for actions in 1648 and was fined £33.6.8d. He died in 1682.⁴³⁹

Captain Charles Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, appearing on November 17th 1658 as a brother of the Adventurers Company experiencing apprentice troubles.⁴⁴⁰

Cornet Henry Bowes: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Jackson's troop. Such a man was fourth of the four sons of Henry Bowes of Newcastle, Esquire, who died in 1624 at the age of 50. Cornet Henry would not have been too old for this rank, although there is a curious reference in 1657 to a Henry Bowes Junior trading to Holland.⁴⁴¹

Colonel (Sir) William MASON'S Regiment of Horse.

It is hard to say when this regiment came into existence. It may have grown from a troop of Sir William Widdrington's Horse (q.v.), perhaps emerging after Marston Moor. It is bedevilled with problems, not least the actual identity of its colonel, as will shortly become apparent. Samuel Luke made a clear reference to the regiment on February 26th 1645 as part of the Northern Horse brigade moving towards Newark, en route to Pontefract.⁴⁴²

Colonel (Sir) William Mason: The evidence for Mason as a colonel, as for the existence of Richard Dacre (q.v.), is quite sound. Unlike Dacre, however, there does not seem to be the least clue to enable identification to be even tentatively put forward. The earliest apparent reference to Mason comes in October 1643 when he was operating with the earl of Newcastle's army. Mason, at Tutbury, wrote to Gell in Derby requesting release of a prisoner, "upon my word the next prisoner I have I will send you for him". The next positive reference to Mason comes on March 6th 1645, when, as part of the Northern Horse, he had participated in the relief of Pontefract. On that date Langdale wrote to Rupert: "Colonel Mason was importunate to wait on your Highness with such letters as were to be sent from the officers of the Northern Horse, but finding him very slow in a case of that importance, I sent this gentleman...". This observation suggests Mason was elderly, and that he had some prior attachment to Rupert. His signature appeared on the petition of the Northern Horse in February. If he were an old man, attention perhaps should be paid to the composition of Sir William Mason, Counsellor at Law, of Sloley in Norfolk. The County Committee there reported that this Mason had made mis-statements about his property, had falsified dates in a petition and certificate to gain leave to compound, amongst other misdemeanours. They said that he was not worth £200, and he was discharged in 1649, his only property being an estate for life in right of his wife who was then 80 years old. The age of the wife is no bar to this being our colonel, since it may have been a marriage of opportunity by Mason who, clearly, was a man without landed property. Colonel Mason was knighted at Oxford on March 28th 1645. He seems to have gone into exile, and if the Counsellor at Law, subsequent to the killing of Charles I, for in 1656 we find the name Mason concealed beneath a cypher, "Mrs. Hooker", of whose safety Secretary Nicholas's correspondent was glad to learn. We have a direct reference to Mason in Brussels with Charles II in May of the same year. In 1661 he appended his signature to a petition in favour of Thomas Edwards, who had fought at Marston Moor. Beyond this it has not proved possible to go.⁴⁴³

Lt. Colonel John Galliard: Cited in the List, but if his colonel raises problems, Galliard is no better. Who this man was, or from whence he came, does not seem to

have survived. His signature appeared on the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, and we next hear of him in 1651 at Wigan Lane, captured wounded, and dead soon afterwards.⁴⁴⁴

Captain Thomas Mason: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, logically a relation of his colonel, with whom he signed the 1661 petition of Thomas Edwards already mentioned (see above). Possibly of Southwell in Nottinghamshire, and of St. Sepulchres in London, came in at Oxford in 1646 and fined £250.⁴⁴⁵

Cornet John Clayton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Lt. Colonel Galliard's troop. Such a man, styled Junior, of Haworth, was listed as a Recusant in 1666.⁴⁴⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Thomas Mason, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Mason's troop (a son?).

Cornet James Paddison, claimed in the List from Surrey.

Cornet John Pindar, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Quartermaster William Bartram, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Quartermaster Clinton Roe, claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Lt. Colonel Galliard's troop.

Quartermaster Isaac Sharpe, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir John MAYNEY'S Regiment of Horse.

One of the consequences of the lack of research into the Royalist armies has been the continued obscurity, broken here and there by a fleeting allusion, of men like Sir John Mayney. Whilst definite references to his Horse occur only in 1644, so far as can be ascertained, we are fortunate in having a summary of his services to the King compiled probably in the early 1660's. This is dealt with in the survey of his career, below, but requires mention here in that, whilst it deals with Mayney as an individual, information incidental to the regiment can be gleaned from it by inference, but not specific enough for inclusion at this point. Mayney's 'regiment' of foot, if it ever existed as such, was a 1648 force, raised in Kent and its environs to defend Maidstone; whereas his cavalry, recruited in Yorkshire and the north probably late in 1643, is almost exclusively a 1642/6 formation. Stationed in the Isle of Axholm in January and February 1644, from which area it was finally driven in the latter month,⁴⁴⁷ it appears to have served for a time in Lincolnshire in March⁴⁴⁸ before joining Rupert's and Newcastle's cavalry. In action on Marston Moor, the regiment, or what was left of it, accompanied Rupert into Lancashire afterwards, where Mayney returned to a separate command (see Vol. 1). Forming a brigade of broken cavalry regiments, Sir John began a series of minor campaigns that presaged the greater achievements of the Northern Horse. In September 1644, he broke up the Parliamentary siege forces around Pontefract and spent some time at the castle. His regiment, however, fared less well. "His regiment of horse he had sent with y^e rest of y^e horse to Newark, and at his coming he found most of y^m unhorsed by lying in Quarters abroad, taken and beaten up by y^e enemy. Therefore he desir'd y^e Commissioners of Newark to repair y^e loss he had, and to furnish him again with horse; wch they consented unto, and allotted upon several towns a proportion of horse, and y^e Country men to be allowed for it in their sesments; his Quarter to be at Kelham".⁴⁴⁹ Eventually reaching Oxford after several incidents (see Vol. 1), the regiment merged with the Northern Horse. Samuel Luke told the earl of Essex on February 26th 1645 that "Wayne's" regiment, meaning Mayney's, was riding towards Newark, and this was prior to the relief of Pontefract.⁴⁵⁰ It doubtless shared the gradual destruction of the brigade at Naseby, Rowton and Sherburn in Elmet, disappearing by the end of 1645.

Colonel Sir John Mayney: Much of what follows is based upon the account of his services to Charles I and Charles II, supplemented where possible by other sources. Sir John was the son of Walter Mayney of Linton in Kent, Esquire, and grandson of Sir Anthony Mayney of the same. A JP in Kent, he was created a baronet in June 1641. When the King moved to York in 1642, Mayney carried to him the petition of the loyal gentry of Kent, and was made a Commissioner of Array for that

county. Returning to exercise his authority, he was apprehended but escaped, and succeeded in organising the distribution of some 3000 proclamations condemning the earl of Essex, in London, Sussex and Kent. Arrested for a second time at Hyde, he again escaped and made his way to Nottingham, where he enlisted as a gentleman volunteer under Prince Rupert, then under the earl of Northampton and finally under Charles Gerard. He commanded a squadron of Horse at Cirencester late in 1642. Authorised to treat for loans in Kent to help to finance the northern and western armies, he claimed that he had succeeded in raising a large sum including £5,600 on his own estate, and other money from pawning his wife's jewels and the family plate to the sum of £1,200. He was next commissioned to go to Holland to buy arms and ammunition, but was taken at Colchester before he could embark. His captors, however, apparently let him slip away, for an anonymous Royalist in Rotterdam noted on March 3th 1643 "Sr John Mainee sent...for carbines and 200 []" had secured them. The weapons eventually reached Chester, the ship carrying them sailing around the Scottish coast. Mayney himself reached Newcastle upon Tyne with additional equipment which included 14 cannon. Commissioned by the earl of Newcastle to raise a regiment of Horse and some dragoons, he fought at Beverley in 1643 and was active at the siege of Hull. Going into the Isle of Axholm whilst the main army set off northward against the Scots, Mayney was initially successful. Supported by the Horse and Foot regiments of Colonel Sir William Saville (q.v.) and the Horse of Sir William Widdrington (q.v.), he gave Meldrum a rough time, and succeeded in despoiling the entire regiment of Colonel Francis Lascelles. At this point, the memoir contradicts Mercurius Aulicus, the latter claiming (see above) that this regiment of Horse fought in Lincolnshire in March, whereas Mayney himself stated that it returned into Co. Durham in time to fight at Bowden Hill (see Vol. 1). During the retreat to York, Newcastle sent Mayney to Oxford to solicit help, having already been sent to Rupert as Newcastle's personal envoy. He commanded a brigade at Marston Moor (this has not been previously noticed), and after acting as escort to Newcastle and James King on their journey to Scarborough and exile, rejoined Rupert at Bolton Castle in Swaledale, separating from him again in northern Lancashire. (For Mayney's campaigns in Furness and Cartmel, see Vol. 1 where they are dealt with at length). Quite severely wounded in this fighting, "his mouth cut up to his ear", he led his brigade to the relief of Pontefract where he was again wounded and forced to stay for some eight weeks in the castle, during which time his regiment was badly mauled near Newark. On October 12th from Pontefract, he was busy trying to achieve the exchange of Lt. Colonel Sir Simon Fanshawe. Rejoining his regiment at Newark, he decided to ride for Oxford, by night-time marches, but was surprised near Daventry, wounded yet again, and captured. Slingsby stated that Mayney sought the battle which might have been avoided: "SR Jn Mainy...would by no means we should decline y^m, but march directly by ye

Town. Wⁿ we were gone a little beyond y^e Town, upon an ascending Hill, by a Wood side, we espi'd their Scouts coming forth. Upon y^e top of y^e Hill, under y^e wood side, we made a stand", and after initial success, were broken and scattered. The earl of Northampton succeeded in rescuing Mayney, who went on to Oxford, although in the meantime his brigade had been handed over to Lord Byron and destroyed near Belvoir. Commissioned to recruit again, such plans were thrown to the wind by the defeat at Naseby, and Mayney next served under Goring at Taunton, and then under Charles Gerard in Wales. The King sent him to the Queen with appeals for European help, and to the English merchant interest in Holland and Flanders for money. He succeeded in raising at least some finance, but with the end of the war in 1646, went to Venice. Taking a commission from the King of Spain, he served in the army of the Viceroy of Naples and was given a Spanish regiment to command. The 1648 rising led him back to England, where he was apprehended on the Isle of Wight but released on bail. He threw himself into conspiracy, and commanded in the defence of Maidstone where he resisted Sir Thomas Fairfax for a full five hours. Left among the dead after the storm, he slipped away intending to join the Colchester garrison but the town was too tightly invested. He was arrested in 1650 when trying to convey a large sum of money into France for the exiled King, and was committed to the Peterhouse prison on May 13th. On June 6th he was released on bail of £1000 "to observe the Act for confinement of delinquents, appear when required, and be of good behaviour". In May 1652 he was summoned before the Committee for Examinations, and was later discharged on a bond of £2000 to appear when summoned and not to set foot in Kent for six months without leave. Implicated in the 1659 rising, he specifically mentioned his involvement with Booth in Cheshire, he was informed against by Bulstrode Whitelock and arrested. Released when the emergency was over, he joined Browne's rising. After the war, Mayney seems to have benefited little, if at all, from this devotion. He died, in circumstances bordering on poverty, in 1676, and was succeeded by his son and heir, the second baronet, who died in 1706. The second son had committed suicide in 1694. The direct Mayney line was at an end.⁴⁵¹

Lt. Colonel Sir Nicholas Fortescue: Cited in the List, a Catholic, known as the Knight of Malta. In 1641 he was criticised as one of those who "have collected or taken any summes of money, by colour or pretence of subsidies, imposts or aydes, upon any merchandize whatsoever not graunted by consent in parliment" and "are delinquents". He was the foremost of the farmers thus condemned, and a sum of £24,318 listed against him. Fortescue died in arms in Lancashire during the war.⁴⁵²

Major William Beckwith: Cited in the List, the name is fairly common in armigerous circles at this time. A William Beckwith of Thurcroft in Laughton was born in 1624, third of

the three sons by the father's second marriage, of Roger Beckwith of Aldborough who died in 1634. William, also styled of Burton super Yore, was presented as a Recusant at Helmsley in 1669 and died in 1678. Roger, the father, was a younger brother of Marmaduke Beckwith of Acton and Clynt, and he sold Clynt to his own younger brother, called William, in order to purchase the Aldborough property. This William, distinguished as of Clynt, had a son also called William, born in 1607, about whom virtually nothing is known. To further complicate matters, a William Beckwith was the third of nine sons of Thomas Beckwith of the senior line and was born in 1604. A Major Beckwith was taken prisoner during the 1651 rising.⁴⁵³

Captain Thomas Davill: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, the second son but heir of Thomas Davile of Kirby Fletham who died in 1648. Thomas II was born c. 1624.⁴⁵⁴

Captain Andrew Rychaut: Claimed in the List from Kent, betokening a personal connection with Mayney perhaps. The Rychauts were of Dutch origin, and Andrew probably one of the eight sons of Sir Peter Rychaut of London, and grandson of Andrew Rychaut of Brabant. Sir Peter died in 1653. The Rychauts, of Aylesford Friary in Kent, were committed Royalists and Sir Peter, like Mayney, spent virtually all he had in that cause.⁴⁵⁵

Captain [] Sall: This reference occurs in Mercurius Aulicus for March 30th 1644, Captain Sall being credited with the capture of Crowland Abbey. Aulicus also gave the regiment, but, as has been said (see above) there is dispute about the regiment's whereabouts in this month. The name is curious, and one notes a Thomas Salle of Tarniker dead by 1668.⁴⁵⁶

Captain Erasmus Smith: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, probably the Captain Smith sent by Mayney to Prince Rupert in October 1644, "desires that he be recommended to the King". He may well be the London merchant of the same name, with landed interests in Slane and Meath in Ireland, who on March 22nd 1650 was contracted to ship 100,000 lbs. of oatmeal to the army there, and on May 10th 400 quarters of wheat.⁴⁵⁷

Cornet John Worsly: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Davill's troop. Probably second of the three sons of Thomas Worsly of the Booths, Lancashire, Esquire. The third son was connected with Yorkshire, having land at Hovingham. John was a convicted Recusant in 1639.⁴⁵⁸

Quartermaster George Cooling: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Cooling's troop. Perhaps the same

man in June 1660 petitioning to be Postmaster at Doncaster.⁴⁵⁹

Quartermaster Thomas Dol(e)man: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Beckwith's troop. Thomas was fourth of the four sons of Marmaduke Doleman of Duncoats, and from a noticeably Royalist and Recusant family (see Eure's Horse). Born in 1624, Thomas lived until 1668 when he died at Bulmore, Holme on Spalding Moor, having been indicted as a Recusant in 1664.⁴⁶⁰

Quartermaster Thomas Hichmough: Claimed in the List from Norfolk, Major Beckwith's troop. Here is a classic case of a certificate coming from a place other than that of ordinary domicile. Thomas Hitchmough of Hall Bank in Lancashire was convicted as a Recusant in 1629, together with his wife and son. The name is virtually unknown in Norfolk, and the link is strong.⁴⁶¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain William Bright, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain Bartholomew Cooling, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain Thomas Hewitt, claimed in the List from Kent.

Captain Miles Stanhope, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Godfrey Cooling, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant John FitzJames, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Lt. Colonel Fortecue's troop.

Lieutenant Martin Hedly, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet Henry Garnet, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Stanhope's troop.

Cornet George Surdeville, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Beckwith's troop (wrongly designated as ensign).

Quartermaster Mathew Aspenwell, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel (Sir) George MIDDLETON'S Regiment of Horse.

Contrary to the views of Peter Young, I have identified this regiment and the supposed regiment of Francis Middleton as one and the same. They were brothers, from a not particularly rich family, and Francis Middleton's claim to a colonelcy rests, so far as can be ascertained, upon his citation in the List. No lt. colonel or major can be identified for his 'regiment', and unlike other such cases, there is nothing to corroborate the view of him as a colonel in his own right. Consequently, I have made the not, I think, unreasonable assumption that he may have served his elder brother George. George Middleton's regiment is, anyway, beset with problems, and in what follows I have endeavoured to iron some of them out. From details concerning the officers, it seems that the regiment served in Yorkshire in February and March 1644, and probably fought at Marston Moor before losing itself in the homogeneity of the Northern Horse.

Colonel (Sir) George Middleton: George was the eldest of the three sons of Thomas Middleton Esquire of Leighton Hall, Lancashire, his father being a convicted Recusant. A Foreign Burgess of Preston, George was made a baronet in June 1642 (one source says, at Durham) and appointed to be a Commissioner of Array in Lancashire. Dismissed by the Parliament as a JP in November, he was almost certainly recruiting in Lancashire towards the end of the year. He fought at Lancaster in 1643, and in Furness towards the end of the earl of Derby's campaigns in the county, after which he moved across the Pennines to Yorkshire where we next notice him serving under Lord Belasyse (see Vol. 1). Probably at Marston Moor, his regiment merged with the Northern Horse. George himself went over to Ireland before the end of the war, and command of the regiment may then have devolved upon his brother, Francis. George petitioned in 1647 on the Dublin articles, and a fine of £855.8s. levied which was increased to £1015.1.4d. in 1650 when it was found that he had concealed certain assets. Throughout the proceedings against him, the Parliamentary committee refused to acknowledge his baronetcy and referred to him simply as Esquire. He was conspiring in 1654/5, and in 1656 Major General Worsley told Thurloe that he had received "some articles against George Middleton esq; sometime Sir G. Middleton" and had ordered his arrest. On March 10th, Thurloe was further told "I know not what hee can say to the witnesses; but to my apprehension they speake very pat to the businesse...I am much of opinion, that his defence will be of little use to hime...If he be found guilty, there's divers others alsoe will fall in the same guilt". High Sheriff of Lancashire at the restoration, he died in 1676 when the baronetcy expired.⁴⁶²

Lt. Colonel [] Carvis: So cited in the List, and an enormous problem, particularly in relation to the Captain Carnes and the Captain Thomas Carts similarly cited.

Young, confusing the fight at Hunslet with another in the East Riding in March 1644 (see Vol. 1), suggested that the Captain 'Cardhouse' taken prisoner there in the company of a Captain Laybourne (see below, and also Ferdinando Leigh's Horse for this man) was the same as Lt. Colonel Carvis of this regiment. It is distinctly possible that Carvis of this regiment rose from a captaincy to be Lt. Colonel under Francis Middleton, but here again it is necessary to stress that whilst feasible, it is not susceptible of proof. The question is whether on the strength of the similarity of 'Cardhouse' with 'Carvis', if we accept the similarity, and further, of the connection between 'Carnes' and 'Carts' and 'Carvis', we can assume the connection between Laybourne and Leyburn of this regiment as opposed to Leyburn of Leigh's Horse and thus come to the conclusion to which Young came. It seems still to be a moot point as to whether such a sweeping conclusion can be sustained.

I tend to accept that 'Carnes' and 'Carts' are one and the same, and also that they might be renderings of 'Carvis', although for so many variants of one name in a single regiment in the List we are at a loss as to explanation. The question is further extended when the name 'Carus' is put forward, a name connected with Royalist delinquency in Lancashire and which seems not unconnected with 'Carvis'. The 'Cardhouse' problem is, however, not so easily reconciled, since it seems a somewhat lengthy misspelling when most such in the List were generally contractions or abbreviations. Here, then, we must attempt to identify Carvis, alias Carnes, alias Carts, alias Carus, and dispense with Cardhouse.

On May 11th 1639 we have a reference to Captain Thomas Carn, the first such. Thomas Carus of Halton, Lancashire, himself the son of another Thomas Carus of the same, was listed in 1647 as having lived in royal quarters during the war. He was born in 1612 and was living in 1664, and may be our man. However, Thomas I his father was also accused of being in arms, which seems a significant distinction between father and son, Thomas I dying in 1656, having compounded on a fine of £516.10.0d. The Carus family had a history of Recusancy. Whilst tentatively identifying Thomas I of Halton as our Lt. Colonel, the question receives a further twist by a man of the same name - Carus - in Tyldesley's Horse.⁴⁶³

Lt. Colonel Francis Middleton: We know little of him, except that he was very probably a younger brother of his colonel and appears in the List as a field officer. He is buried in Saxton church, Yorkshire, where his monument reads: "Pray for the soul of Mr. Francis Middleton of the House of Leighton in Lancashire, Collonel under King Charles the First, uncle to Sir Francis Hungate (q.v., Vavasour's Horse) who deceased the 29th April ano domini 1680". He signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse when he probably commanded the regiment.⁴⁶⁴

Captain Matthew Anderton: This man is tentatively inserted here. He was killed at Sheriff Hutton in 1643, alongside Captain William Leyburn, presumably of this regiment, but for a full discussion see Leyburn in Leigh's Horse.⁴⁶⁵

Captain Thomas Asmall: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Francis Middleton as field commander. Probably Thomas Asmall of Amerston Co. Durham, son and heir of Thomas Asmall of Aughton in Lancashire. Thomas II born in 1621, was living in 1666.⁴⁶⁶

Captain (Thomas) Carnes (Carts): Cited in the List, see Lt. Colonel Carvis.

Captain William Foxcroft: Cited in the List, also claimed without giving regiment, and cited by another claimant again without regimental designation. Such a man, of Claughton, Lancashire, died c. 1675.⁴⁶⁷

Captain Thomas Kidson: Cited in the List, also spelled 'Kitson', he was of Wharton, Lancashire, Gentleman, fined £390 in 1649 for lands there and at Killington in Westmorland.

Present when Lancaster was attacked in March 1643, and presumably at the storm of Preston. His widow married Captain Robert Westby (q.v., Tyldesley's Foot).⁴⁶⁸

Captain [] Leyburn: Cited in the List, see Leigh's Horse for the problem of identity.

Captain Abraham Nelson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such of Tranmire, Otley, yeoman, died in 1684.⁴⁶⁹

Lieutenant Charles Duckett: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Leyburn's troop. Perhaps another son of Anthony Duckett of Grayrigg, Westmorland, a Royalist delinquent who died c. 1648. An Ensign Duckett was captured at Wakefield in 1643, but the infantry rank would argue against this being the same man. Probably his father in Skipton in September 1645 as agent for Colonel the Lord Morley (q.v.).⁴⁷⁰

Lieutenant Christopher Harris: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Carvis's troop. Perhaps the Catholic delinquent of Farnock House in Bolland, Gentleman, sequestered in 1643. Also styled as of Torisholme. An additional source for the fight at Hunslet in 1644 alludes to Harris as a lieutenant taken there (and upon whose presence, Young made the link between Cardhouse and Carvis, see above) as in Captain Plimpton or Plumpton's troop. The only Plumpton it has been possible to identify, served in Eure's Foot (q.v.), but the problem is such as to throw wide open the link between Hunslet and this

regiment. Lieutenant Harris was apparently wounded at Malpas in August 1644, and may appear as a captain in Pontefract garrison at the end of that year.⁴⁷¹

Lieutenant Thomas Leyburn: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Kidson's troop (this may suggest Kidson replaced Captain Leyburn, and supports an argument for Leyburn's transfer to Leigh's Horse). Thomas was second son, but heir, of John Leyburn of Cunswick, and was born in 1614.⁴⁷²

Cornet Christopher Danby: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Carnes' troop. Possibly third of the three sons of Thomas Danby of Braworth who died in 1612. Christopher's elder brother was killed at Naseby.⁴⁷³

Cornet Jeffrey Middleton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, one of the sons of Colonel Middleton, and referred to as of Westmorland in his father's composition.⁴⁷⁴

Cornet John Thornborough: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, there is a reference to such a man in the composition papers of Rowland Thornborough of Lyndal, a Recusant, as John appears to have been.⁴⁷⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain James Stamford, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant Thomas Turver, claimed in the List from Lancashire in Captain Foxcroft's troop.

Cornet Henry Bateson, claimed in the List from Middlesex, Captain Foxcroft's troop.

Cornet Ralph Pilkington, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Stamford's troop.

Quartermaster Walter Charley, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Carts's troop.

Colonel Richard Viscount MOLYNEUX'S Regiment of Horse.

One of the regiments raised in Lancashire under the aegis of the earl of Derby, and which was removed from him for service with the Oxford army. A troop or two served at Manchester on September 25th 1642,⁴⁷⁶ and the regiment as such, whether up to strength or not, fought at Edgehill where it was badly mauled. Molyneux left the Oxford army to recruit again in his home shire, and for his activities there in early 1643 see Vol. 1. Joining the Queen at York, the regiment marched south with her, and then branched off for Shropshire. Falkland told Rupert on July 10th that the regiment should remain with the Queen.⁴⁷⁷ Sometime toward the autumn of the year, "Colonel Bridges Governour of Warwick, with a party from thence defeated a Regiment of Horse, under the Lord Mollineux for the King, killed divers, took 100 horse, and many prisoners", a severe defeat.⁴⁷⁸ On November 9th, the King sent Molyneux an order: "To our trusty and wellbeloved Lord Molineux and to the officers of the Regiments.... Whereas wee have given you directions to march with yo^r Regimt of Horse, Colonell Tildesley's Regimt of Horse and ffoot (q.v.), and Colonell [Thomas] Dalton's (q.v.), from yo^r quarters in Hampshire and speedily to repair hither, and so from hence to the Northern parts for Our special service Our will and pleasure therefore is, and wee do hereby authorise you to take free Quarters for your selves and horses in your march hither and so forward, the Troopers and Souldiers of the respective regiments behaving themselves Civilly and as they ought".⁴⁷⁹ Molyneux was moving towards Cheshire, probably in expectation of Irish reinforcements and to meet the threat from Thomas Fairfax in that area. With Rupert's army, the regiment rode to the relief of York and fought on Marston Moor, returning south with Rupert, although apparently engaged at Ormskirk in August (see Vol. 1). The regiment did not operate with the Northern Horse, and the last definite reference to it as a separate unit dates to January 27th 1646 when the regiment's quarters near Stafford were beaten up by a Captain Stones, the men routed (they were 300 strong), three captains taken, as well as other officers, 100 horses and many prisoners, with slain and wounded.⁴⁸⁰

Colonel Richard Viscount Molyneux: Born in 1623, eldest of the sons of Richard 1st Viscount Molyneux of Maryborough in the peerage of Ireland, styled ordinarily as of Sefton in Lancashire, he succeeded his father in 1632. The family was strongly Recusant for the most part, although the father, as a Church Papist, was appointed deputy lieutenant for Lancashire in 1628, when critics said of him that "he was vehemently suspected to be ill-affected in religion". A Foreign Burgess of Preston, Richard II was made a Commissioner of Array in Lancashire in 1642, and was at the Preston Moor array in June (see Vol. 1). He fought at Edgehill, and returned to Lancashire where, in 1643,

he fought at Lancaster, Preston and Whalley, as well as campaigning in Furness at the same time as he recruited his regiment for the Oxford army (see Vol. 1). He was certainly in Furness in May, but on July 3rd a Parliamentary officer at Gloucester wrote to Captain Harley at Brampton Bryan, "Upon Sunday last in the morning your mother had intelligence that my Lord Mullenax was beaten out of Lankissere and come to Leominster with about two hundred horse which hee putt into Weggnall into the standing grass. Sir, hee hath noe arms or very few". The regiment fought at Newbury later in the year. In November, as we have seen, Molyneux was heading northwards, and from Chester on March 23rd 1644 he addressed an appeal to Rupert to hasten for the relief of Lathom House and of Lancashire in general. Joining with Rupert in May, it was Molyneux who summoned Liverpool to yield on June 7th. He fought at Marston Moor and was involved in the subsequent hazardous retreat back through Lancashire, being unhorsed at Ormskirk. In 1645 he commanded Prince Maurice's troop of Reformadoes, called his Lifeguard, at Naseby, which suggests that his regiment had virtually ceased to exist by then (although see also, Molyneux's Foot). This troop was savaged at Bewdley on August 13th. What was left of "Lord Mulinax his troope" was ruined on January 23rd 1646 during a raid on Cannock. Viscount Molyneux laid down his arms with the fall of Ludlow, and after taking the Covenant and the Negative Oath, petitioned to compound in 1646. His fine was fixed at £9,037, but his attempt to pay at London was hampered by the seizure en route to the capital of his horses. He was also hindered by litigation with the Corporation of Liverpool over ownership of a ferryboat and a windmill there. In 1648 his case was recommended by the House of Lords to the Committee for Compounding, in hopes of securing an abatement of an "insupportable fine". By 1651, when he was barely 27 years old, he was a sick man. There is a pass issued to him on August 17th of that year to journey from Islington where he was lodging, into London, on business concerning his composition. Despite his precarious financial position, agents of Thurloe informed that Molyneux had sent £2,500 to Charles II. This was in 1653/4, and Molyneux died in the latter year, childless, to be succeeded by his younger brother.⁴⁸¹

Lt. Colonel Caryll Molyneux: Caryll was born in 1624, like his brother a Catholic but, unlike his brother, he was exempted from pardon in 1646. Also like his brother, a Foreign Burgess of Preston, he must have served with the regiment in most of the campaigns and actions already alluded to. He attracted, however, great bitterness and opprobrium in his native Lancashire, amongst the Parliamentarian and Puritan sections of the populace at least. The Parliamentarian Edward Moore wrote of him, sometime after the restoration, "Carill yt is now Lord Mullinex kiled 7 or 8 pore men wth his owne hands: good Lord deliver us from ye cruelty of blud-thirsty Papest". Moore had some grudge against Caryll for on another occasion he jotted down an attack on him under the heading, "The

Lord Mullinex Qualifications as to the King and the English Church", in which paper he accused Caryll of being a Papist and therefore an enemy to the King, which coming from such a pen, sounds a little ironical. The third Viscount was, however, loyal to the Stuarts at least, and under James II became Lord Lieutenant of Lancashire, dying after the rebellion of 1688, probably at Sefton.⁴⁸²

Captain Daniel Bavand: Claimed in the List from Chester, he was also cited (apparently, since this may in fact be Thomas Bavand of Cheshire, dead in arms for the King) under Lord Byron. Daniel was fourth of the four sons of Richard Bavand of Chester, Alderman, who died in 1603. He surrendered in 1646, and compounded in the same year. He is possibly the Daniel Bavand of Brasenose College, born in 1585.⁴⁸³

Captain Francis Clifton: Cited in the List, he was second of the four sons by the father's second marriage, of Sir Cuthbert Clifton of Lytham. This was a thoroughly Royalist and Recusant family, and Francis was killed in arms at Newbury in September of 1643.⁴⁸⁴

Captain William Fazakerly: Cited in the List. The family of Fazakerly of Fazakerly was, like that of the Cliftons, a traditionally Catholic one. The pedigree is somewhat complicated, but two Williams seem to proffer themselves. One was the eldest son of Nicholas Fazakerly of Fazakerly, who died in 1654, Nicholas being killed in arms at Liverpool in June 1644. The other William, not to be confused with the first, was the second son of Robert Fazakerly of Walton, and consequently a brother of Nicholas who was killed in 1644. This William of Walton gave evidence in the composition proceedings involving his brother, when his nephew, also called Nicholas, and a minor, was endeavouring to settle the fine. During this evidence, William of Walton was styled as of Spellowhouse, and aged 38 in 1653. It was stated that Robert, the patriarch of the family, had been sequestered as a Royalist delinquent.⁴⁸⁵

Captain Thomas Gerard: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. Gerard was also a Catholic delinquent, having compounded as a Recusant in 1630 and 1632 and still sequestered as a Recusant in 1655. He was the son and heir of Miles Gerard of Ince, Esquire, and was born in 1591. Captured at Naseby field, he was gaoled, and then released to pursue his composition having agreed to take the Covenant and the Negative Oath. A man with some colliery interests he was fined £209, but clearly the question of his Recusancy must have cropped up again for him still to be sequestered in 1655.⁴⁸⁶

Captain Roger Houghton: Rank and regiment are according to family tradition. He was the third son of Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton (q.v.) of Houghton Tower in Lancashire, and was possibly a Recusant. A Foreign Burgess of Preston. He was killed on Marston Moor by a cannonball, perhaps the first Royalist loss of the day, and was buried in York Minster.⁴⁸⁷

Captain Robert Middleton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he seems to have been the youngest son, by his father's second marriage, of George Middleton of Leighton and, consequently, uncle to Colonel (Sir) George Middleton (q.v.) and father in law to Colonel Thomas Dalton (q.v.). He compounded as a Recusant in 1629.⁴⁸⁸

Captain Thomas Sherborn: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he may be the second son by the father's first marriage, of Thomas Sherborne of Little Mitton in Lancashire, or the eldest son of Richard Sherborne of Twistleton, Esquire. A "Captain Sherburne, a Lancashire man and a Papist" was captured near Carlisle in 1648.⁴⁸⁹

Captain Edward Standish: Cited in the List, and probably of Woolston, Esquire who petitioned from Newark in 1646 and was fined £539.10s., but this fine was later reduced on account of debts, to £41.13.4d. Burke believed that he was the eldest son of Ralph Standish of Standish, and a nephew of the first Viscount Molyneux. This Edward was born in 1617 and succeeded his father in 1656, however, which argues against his being in possession of sufficient property to merit such a fine as that first imposed which was, note, lowered for his own indebtedness. We also have an Edward Standish compounding as a Recusant in 1632.⁴⁹⁰

Cornet Gervase Clifton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Clifton's troop. Not to be confused with an officer of the same name in Tyldesley's Horse (q.v.). This Francis was fourth of the four sons by the father's second marriage, of Sir Cuthbert Clifton.⁴⁹¹

Cornet Edward Latham: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Sherburn's troop. Such a man of Allerton, Gentleman, had his lands inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652.⁴⁹²

Cornet Edmund Molyneux: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Fazerly's troop. Such a man of Ince Blundell, Gentleman, Recusant and delinquent, was undischarged in 1655. His lands were in the Third Treason Act of 1652. He may be third of the four sons of Robert Molyneux of Melling and, with his father, a Foreign Burgess of Preston or, alternatively, the son and heir of John Molyneux of

Thorpe in the pedigree of Molyneux of Haughton.⁴⁹³

Cornet Ralph Rishton: Claimed in the List from Hampshire, Captain Standish's troop. He was Ralph Rishton, Senior, of White Ash Lancashire, and was clearly living elsewhere when he filed his claim in 1661/2. Styled yeoman, and not to be confused with his son also called Ralph, who was sequestered as a Recusant but not as a delinquent, unlike the father. Ralph Senior had compounded as a Recusant in 1632.⁴⁹⁴

Quartermaster Thomas Clifton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire in Captain Clifton's troop, and probably a connection of the main family in view of the troop structure but he is unidentifiable. He is not Thomas of Lytham, Esquire, son and heir to Sir Cuthbert, although such a Thomas was a Catholic delinquent.⁴⁹⁵

Quartermaster Edward Gore: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, of Alker and Lydiatt, Gentleman, his lands inserted in the Third Treason Act of 1652.⁴⁹⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Salisbury, claimed in the List from Flintshire.

Cornet Abel Field, claimed in the List from Bedfordshire, Captain Fazakerly's troop.

Colonel Henry Parker Lord MORLEY'S Regiment of Horse.

The only evidence for the existence of this regiment, whether it reached full strength or not, or barely proceeded from an original troop or two, comes in the composition proceedings of its commander. Such evidence is, of course, likely to be accurate, and is supported by a single claim in the List.

Colonel the Lord Morley: The editor of the Fairfax civil war correspondence frequently indulging his taste for villifying Royalist commanders, delivered a particularly vindictive and characteristically inaccurate criticism of Morley. "It has not transpired" he wrote, "whether he ever did anything of greater importance than drink Spa water, solicit passes for safe deliverances, and nestle himself up in quiet corners of old castles". The existence of something approaching a regiment is in itself partial refutation of this charge. Morley was the eldest son of William Parker Lord Morley and Mouteagle, the Mouteagle of the Gunpowder Plot. Henry Parker was the 15th Lord Morley and sixth Lord Mouteagle, KB. A JP from 1636 and a Foreign Burgess of Preston, in April 1642 he was put up for trial charged with participation in the murder of a Captain Peter Clarke. The trial was fixed for May 21st in the House of Lords (with impeachment in the Commons) when Clarke's widow petitioned that the various postponements had caused her considerable expense in going to and from London. Evidently, the proceedings had been dragging on. The case, however, appears to have lapsed, for in June Morley was concerned with the sale of lands, "no one will purchase in such distracted times", and civil war was, anyway, creeping nearer. With the outbreak of war, he no doubt recruited in Lancashire, and what men he had managed to raise may have been broken when his seat at Hornby Castle in that county was stormed in June 1643. On August 21st, Morley stated that the rents of his manors of Hornsey, Tatham and others in Lancashire, to the value of £1200, all that he had to live on, had been withheld due to sequestration. He next appears in York in August 1644, or apparently so, when a servant of his was buried in the town. If he was there, then by this time he had laid down his arms and was moving freely about Yorkshire. On November 14th was written the letter to Lord Fairfax which Bell seized upon as a basis for his attack on Morley. Morley was then at Knaresborough Spa, suffering from "the inveterate malady of the spleen". The approach of Parliamentary forces had obliged him to take refuge in Knaresborough Castle, and he now sought a safe conduct for himself and his servants to travel to Hornby. Even so, on or around March 1645 he was in Skipton garrison, where he procured a troop of horse to ride into Lancashire to seize upon rents due to him from his sequestered estates. He finally surrendered in November 1645, and in the following year petitioned to compound. He was issued with a pass to go to London to compound in February, and on March 17th had reached Hollingbury where he fell ill, and from where he

sent apologies to the London Committee. On April 4th his whole estate was under sequestration, he himself held in restraint and charged with residing in garrisons (which was true). Before he was to receive an allowance for his keep according to his status, he had to take the Negative Oath. The Goldsmith Hall committee's wariness in dealing with him was due to his suspected Catholicism. It certainly barred him from composition and in 1651 he was in Upper Bench Prison. His lands were in the 1652 Treason Act, and he was undischarged when he died in 1655 and was buried at Hollingbury.⁴⁹⁷

Lt. Colonel [] Baines: Despite the clearest clues as to who he was, the Baines pedigrees are inadequate. In Lord Morley's composition papers is the following very full reference: a Captain West noted that in 1644 or 1645 he had captured near Wharton Sands "the sons of John Baines of Sellet, Esquire, as enemies in arms to the Parliament, and brought them to Lancaster to be secured, where the elder of the two did at first, and several times subsequently, declare himself to be lieu.-col. of horse to Lord Morley, then in the enemies quarters, and that he had a troop or party of horse then under his command as lieu. col. to the said Lord Morley; and further, that while he remained prisoner at Lancaster afore-said he was by his party, and others to whom he was known, commonly called lieu. col. Baines, and in that notion he was transmitted from Lancaster...to Manchester to be prisoner here". But who is this Lt. Colonel Baines? Robert Baines of Sellet, Esquire, died in 1588 to be succeeded by his son, John, the Sellet property being held of the Parkers. This John Baines was born in 1587, making him 55 in 1642. Evidently it is the eldest of his sons with whom we are dealing, John himself being a Recusant compounding in 1629/30 and styled Gentleman. Here, the problem intensifies. We do not know that John lived until 1642, or that he was in arms, yet we have the statement that a John Baynes, prisoner in Newgate on June 14th 1652, was the son of "Colonel John Baines of Sellet Hall" and that his estate (i.e., the prisoner's) was sequestered. This contradicts Captain West who said that Lt. Colonel Baines was a son of John Baines of Sellet Hall. A John Baines of Sellet was an undischarged Catholic delinquent, 1655. A Thomas Baines of Sellet had his property in the 1652 Treason Act. References to a Colonel or a Lt. Colonel Baines elsewhere are few and inconclusive. Such a man is in the List with claimants from the south midlands. Such a man was captured at Malpas in 1644. A Lt. Colonel [Francis] Baines was taken at Wigan Lane in 1651.⁴⁹⁸

Cornet Marmaduke Miller: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Baines' troop. Unidentified.⁴⁹⁹

Colonel Sir Edward MUSGRAVE'S Horse.

Perhaps a 1648 formation (for this problem, see Edward Musgrave's Foot, where the colonel himself is dealt with). The only reference is in the List and none of the claimants have been identified. They are:

Captain Hugh James, claimed from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Thomas Cudworth, claimed from Chester.

Cornet John Fell, claimed from Cumberland.⁵⁰⁰

Colonel Sir Philip MUSGRAVE'S Regiment of Horse.

Unlike the Horse and Foot of Sir Edward Musgrave (q.v.), those of Sir Philip can be dated with certainty to an origin in the 1642/6 war, although here particularly we must have cases of officers cited or claiming in the List who were not commissioned until 1648 or 1650/1. It is not always easy to identify such men, but we can suppose, in view of Sir Philip's energy and loyalty, that the regiments which he did raise in 1642/3 were of high numerical strength relative to the general condition of preparedness in the Cumbrian area. The exclusion principle can, however, be applied with certainty to Sir Philip's younger sons, Christopher and Simon, neither of whom was 15 years of age in 1642, although certainly both of them were in arms with their father in 1650/1, perhaps Christopher in 1648. For his eldest son and heir, Richard, see the Foot.

The Musgrave papers contain passing allusions to Sir Philip's forces but none of immediate importance, merely corroborative of their existence, rather than telling us what they were doing at any given time. A definite recruitment drive was in hand in July 1643, according to Mercurius Aulicus of the 27th of that month. There is also a reference to a troop of cavalry in the same year, by Sir Henry Stradling, Governor of Carlisle Castle, but whether this is to a troop (of a larger regiment) or to the troop (as all that then existed) is not clear. It must be said that between 1642/4 the regiment never set foot outside Cumbria, and must have vanished by the time of the end of the siege of Carlisle although a few officers probably rode with Musgrave at Rowton Heath (see Vol. 1)

Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave: Sir Philip was born in 1607, son and heir of Sir Richard Musgrave, 1st Bart., of Hartley Castle, Westmorland, who died in 1615. Sir Philip is one of the select few amongst the Royalist officers in the north, concerning whom a biography was written by a contemporary, and which has survived. The writer was Gilbert Burton, Vicar of Edenhall from 1666 to 1683 Edenhall being, rather than Hartley Castle, Musgrave's ordinary place of residence. Much of what follows is drawn from that biography, complemented and supplemented here and there with other sources. After a brief spell at Cambridge, Sir Philip went to Trinity College Oxford, before marrying the sister of the future Royalist colonel, Sir Richard Hutton (q.v.). JP in Cumberland and Westmorland, Burton described Musgrave as of a "melancholly disposition and Weak body", a weakness which he seems to have overcome in later years. Deputy Lieutenant in both counties, Sir Philip's early years were spent largely, as Burton tells us, in repairing the fortunes of his estates which had been somewhat wasted during his period of wardship, an exigency which does not seem to have coloured his outlook when he made his decision in 1642. In the emergency of 1639/40, he was commissioned as a Trainband colonel with a regiment of foot

with responsibility for occupying Carlisle and then for holding Scaleby Castle to the north-east of the town. In 1640 he was returned, with Sir Henry Bellingham (q.v.) as Knight of the Shire for Westmorland, not without opposition from Sir John Lowther (q.v.). The rivalry within Cumberland and Westmorland, particularly between Musgrave and Lowther, and Musgrave and Fletcher, may have originated in Sir Philip's eminence during the Scots war period (but for a fuller discussion of the problems it occasioned, see Vol. 1). Made a Commissioner of Array in 1642 Musgrave was, with two or three others, the only really active Royalist in his area (the others were William Huddleston and Sir Timothy Featherstonehaugh, q.v.). With the departure of Huddleston and Featherstonehaugh for York and the main army there, Musgrave was left to contend almost alone with the obstructive behaviour of his fellow commanders, his powers ill defined and virtually inoperable (see Vol. 1). According to Burton, Musgrave was commissioned by Newcastle to raise a regiment of foot and a troop of cavalry in 1643, but this commission merely confirmed what Musgrave was doing anyway, and did not in itself resolve the problem of authority. Only as late as October 17th 1643 did Musgrave receive confirmation of his authority, subject to Newcastle and to Glemham, but too late to do any good. As Burton said, "some of his countrymen did not well digest" this expression of confidence from the Marquess. In 1644, Musgrave contributed infantry to Rupert's army (Burton mentioned 1000, and see Henry Chaytor's Foot), and had already (again, this is Burton's claim) sent 1800 men to assist the fight against the Scots in Durham. After the loss of York, Sir Philip was joined in Carlisle by his immediate superior, Sir Thomas Glemham, and throughout the siege was overshadowed by the Suffolk professional. He contributed £20 to the war fund for defence of the city, and sat on a Council of War on October 8th, 1644. Burton noted that during the investment, the Scottish and English soldiers outside the walls did damage at Edenhall to the value of £3000, quite apart from the overall sequestration of Musgrave lands that now went ahead. With the capitulation of the city, Sir Philip rode south to join the King, and those north-western colonels who had previously disdained his authority (notably Colonel Sir Henry Fletcher, q.v.) now chose to serve under him as a troop in the main Royal army, or what was left of it. This troop was badly savaged at Rowton Heath in September 1645, Musgrave being captured, wounded, and sent away, firstly to York and then to Pontefract. Released at the end of the year, he journeyed to join the King at Newcastle. After lingering for a time around the border, "douting his safety if he went immediately home", he finally came back to Edenhall before the close of the year 1646.

Towards the end of the following year, he received a visit from Scottish agents of the King who advised him of the plans for the 1648 rising, and Musgrave shortly after made his way to Dumfries to take part. Commissioned by Prince Charles as Colonel General for the six northern counties (he was probably

subordinate to Langdale and, perhaps, to Edward Grey of Chillingham, q.v.), his return was actively sought by Parliament's representatives in Scotland. After seizing Carlisle, and handing it over to Scottish troops, Musgrave went on to take Appleby, but in his absence at Edinburgh, the enterprise was ruined, and upon his return to Westmorland found himself, according to Burton, with 800 horse and 1200 foot, the last barrier between victory and Lambert. The want of resolution on the part of the Scots contributed to Sir Philip's decision to abandon the struggle and, obtaining a protection from the enemy, went down to London where the protection was confirmed by Cromwell himself. In 1649, he fled to France, and his sequestered estates inserted in the first Treason Act of 1651. His wife petitioned for her maintenance in 1650, her husband already exempted from pardon. Burton implies that Sir Philip showed himself favourable to the idea of a Scottish alliance yet again, and was certainly one of Charles II's representatives in Scotland prior to the Worcester campaign, although his removal as an advisor was part of the price imposed on the King by the Presbyterians. Not present at Wigan Lane or at Worcester, Musgrave made his way to the Isle of Man where the Countess of Derby offered him the governorship of the island, although Burton says this was an appointment made prior to the Worcester fight. A rising in the Isle obliged him to defend himself in Peel Castle, which he finally yielded to Colonel Duckenfield, who already had the Countess and her children in custody. Despite his exemption from pardon, Musgrave secured a pass to go to England, and Burton states that he actually went to London and there met Cromwell for what seems to have been a second time. The terms of his protection, which Cromwell again confirmed, gave Musgrave three months in which to make his peace with Parliament or, after the period had elapsed, to go overseas again. The terms of this protection, like the penalty that went with his exemption from pardon, seem to have been poorly observed if at all, and this had not a little to do with his influential friends in high places, notably Lord Wharton. This friendship revealed itself particularly in a not unusual way, when Sir Thomas Wharton raised the sum of £3300, apparently without security, to permit Musgrave's son and heir Richard, to purchase back the estates, or such of them "as by virtue of an intaille was to descend to him after y^e death of his father". By 1653, the purchase was completed, and Sir Philip returned to Edenhall where he was almost at once arrested and sent down to London, suspected of having a hand in the various conspiracies that marked the years 1653/4/5. Burton gives the impression, however, that Sir Philip was innocent, whereas his son Christopher was almost certainly involved in the projected attack on York which came to nothing on Marston Moor. Arrested again late in 1655 and immured at Carlisle, he was released on £2000 bail in time to pay over £10 in the decimation tax, "upon his own offer and consent, no visible estate appearing". On each occasion of Musgrave's confinements, as Burton went to trouble to stress, he was spoken for by Lord Wharton. After

leaving Edenhall on the 'advice' of the Protector's commanders in the area, he resided for a time at Oxford (perhaps to be near his youngest son, Thomas), returning home in mid 1657. Henceforth troubled now and again by the forays of government agents and informers, and probably uninvolved in the 1659 rising, at the restoration Sir Philip came into his own. He was reinstated as a JP, given the colonelcy of a Trainband regiment, and became Governor and Captain of Carlisle and its castle. He was returned as Knight of the Shire for Westmorland in the Cavalier Parliament, and became Mayor of Carlisle in 1666. "Not", as Burton insisted, "by his own seeking, but because he would refuse no opportunity of serving his King and Country when finely offered to him". He died at Edenhall in 1678.⁵⁰¹

Major [] Hutchenson: Cited in the List, the identity of this man should be related to that of the major and lt. colonel of Pennyman's Horse (q.v.). This may be a 1648 rank held by Edward Hutchinson of Wykham Abbey, Yorkshire, whose son, also called Edward, married Musgrave's daughter.⁵⁰²

Captain Robert Hilton: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, he was the eldest of the three sons of Thomas Hilton of Hilton Beacon who died in 1645. Born in 1619, Robert, styled in later life as of Murton near Appleby, Esquire, was taken prisoner at Appleby in 1648. After the restoration he became a JP, and sat on the commission enquiring into the disturbances in the north in 1663. Rated for £20 in the decimation tax of 1656.⁵⁰³

Captain William Musgrave: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, but it is hard to distinguish between this man and Colonel William Musgrave (q.v.). All the possible identifications are dealt with under the latter.

Captain [] Philipson: Cited in the List, promoted to major in the second war, when he served under Colonel Sir Thomas Strickland (q.v.). He was Robert Philipson of Calgarth and of Melsonby in Yorkshire, second of the five sons of Robert Philipson of Melsonby. He accompanied Glemham from York to Carlisle in July 1644, and served during the siege. In the 1648 rising he was probably the defender of Belle Isle, Windermere.⁵⁰⁴

Captain Thomas Sandford: Cited in the List, probably eldest of the three sons of Thomas Sandford of Askham, Esquire. In 1662 appointed ensign of the foot company raised by Musgrave for the garrison of Carlisle.⁵⁰⁵

Lieutenant Lancelot Hilton: Claimed in the List from Westmorland in Captain Hilton's troop, but not traceable in the Westmorland family. There is, however, record of a

Lancelot Hilton of Durham, son and heir of Lancelot Hilton who had died in 1636 Lancelot II being born in 1608. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation as from St. Mary le Bow, and died in 1685.⁵⁰⁶

Lieutenant George Wilkinson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland in Captain Sandford's troop. The only man of this name, possibly suitable, would be George Wilkinson of Broughton in Lancashire, a compounding Recusant in 1632 and sequestered as such in 1653/4. It seems a slim possibility.⁵⁰⁷

Cornet Anthony Garnet: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Hilton's troop. Probably Anthony Garret who compounded in 1653 as of Kendal, his lands having been inserted in the 1652 Treason Act (but see also, William Widdrington's Foot). Anthony Garret of Crosby Ravensworth signed the 1641/2 Protestation and may be the same.⁵⁰⁸

Quartermaster John Sleigh: Claimed in the List from Cumberland in Captain Sandford's troop. Such a man, John Slee of Askham in West Ward, signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁵⁰⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Robert Oglethorp, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Cornet Nicholas Dawson, claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Musgrave's troop.

Cornet George Jackson, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Sandford's troop.

Cornet Anthony Musgrave, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Cornet Thomas Ullathornes, claimed in the List from Durham.

Quartermaster Hugh Atkinson, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Hilton's troop.

Quartermaster John Middleton, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Philipson's troop.

Quartermaster John Reed, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Hutchenson's troop.

Colonel William MUSGRAVE'S Regiment of Horse.

The existence of this regiment is conjectural, and is based upon the very definite citing of a lt. colonel in the List under Musgrave as field commander. This implies an intended regimental structure. No major, is, however, known. Of the activities of the force we appear to know nothing at all, and the identification of the officers is, on the whole, difficult.

Colonel William Musgrave: Probably Sir William Musgrave, appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642, and styled of Croke-dale in Cumberland. In 1646 the local Parliamentary committee wanted to know why he had not been sequestered, pointing out that he had been a Commissioner and extremely active, which implies recruiting. However in 1651 Sir William stated that he was then 71 years of age, and he was dead by mid 1654. This would make him about 62 in 1642, which age, although not conclusively an argument against active service (see in this context Colonels Sir Thomas Metham and Sir William Lambton), might suggest either another identification for the colonel, or a titular rank. His son appears to have been William Musgrave of Fairbank and Penrith, who yielded in October 1644 and who probably recovered his father's lands, inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. William II was taxed at £11.8s. in 1656, and had compounded for £30 in 1648/9. (This evidence has to be related to Captain William Musgrave of Sir Philip Musgrave's Horse. It may be that Sir William is the colonel, and his son the captain, perhaps serving in the 1648 war under Philip, after serving in 1642/4 under Sir William. The key to the puzzle cannot be found).⁵¹⁰

Lt. Colonel Henry Musgrave: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, perhaps a younger son of Sir William. He might have been the Major Musgrave, a Reformado from York with Glemham in 1644, but a Captain Henry Musgrave was captured at Appleby in 1648.⁵¹¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Richard Musgrave, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Captain Michael Robinson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel William Cavendish earl of NEWCASTLE'S Regiment of Horse.

Raised in Durham and Northumberland, initially, in 1642, and in Yorkshire in 1643, and probably constantly added to up until the Scottish invasion in 1644. A troop of horse, which probably never formed a part of this regiment, was sent by Newcastle to Edgehill where it fought under the command of his brother, Charles Cavendish. This is probably the troop noted at Newcastle upon Tyne in August 1642.⁵¹² It seems likely that Newcastle retained personal control of the regiment, unlike his Foot (q.v.), but the lt. colonel who would ordinarily have commanded it in the field, is not known. There may have been one, since we have no way of knowing that in this instance, the earl followed the European and Parliamentary pattern of field command structure. For so important a regiment, in terms of its colonel's status, there are surprisingly few officers as compared, for example, with that of Marmaduke Langdale or William Saville. The answer may be that officers transferred from this regiment after the Marquess went abroad in July 1644, and merely registered a claim under their subsequent commander, or were cited under a subsequent commander by other claimants. The regiment undoubtedly accompanied Newcastle on his campaigns throughout 1642/4, but is indistinguishable (as are so many) from the general body of the northern cavalry even in single instances.

Colonel the earl (Marquess) of Newcastle: His career as commander in the north has been dealt with (see Vol. 1). "A Lord so much beloved in his country...no man was a greater prince than he in all that northerne quarter". Thus the mature judgement of Lucy Hutchinson, wife of the Parliamentarian governor of Nottingham. He was born in 1593, surviving son and heir of Sir Charles Cavendish of Welbeck Abbey in Nottinghamshire. In 1620 created Baron Ogle and Viscount Mansfield, and governor of Prince Charles, he was made in 1628 Baron Cavendish of Bolsover and earl of Newcastle. In 1639 he led a troop of horse in the Scots war, and on June 19th 1642 was appointed governor and captain for the town and county of Newcastle upon Tyne. At the outbreak of war, he was appointed General of the Ordnance to the earl of Cumberland, and it remains a mystery as to why Cumberland was favoured before Newcastle, for the latter very quickly replaced him (see Vol. 1). At the height of his powers in 1643, he was General of the six northern counties, and of Nottingham, Lincoln, Rutland, Derby, Stafford, Leicester, Warwickshire, Northampton, Huntingdon, Cambridge, Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex and Hertford, an ambitious title that had very little relation to the realities of the military situation in the autumn of that year. No mean general and certainly personally courageous, he well merited his elevation to Marquess in October 1643: "he who defends the Borders, should be created by Us Governour, or Marquis of the Borderers". He commanded in person at his greatest field victory, Adwalton Moor, on June 30th 1643,

fighting on foot with his infantry, (see Vol. 1). After a dogged resistance to the Scots in Durham in February and March 1644, he was obliged to fall back on York by the disaster in his rear at Selby in April. It seems unlikely that he tried to interfere with plans for the battle on Marston Moor (see Vol. 1), but after the defeat chose exile, going from Scarborough to Hamburg, and so remaining abroad until the restoration, although it was rumoured that he would return to the north in 1645. Privy Councillor to Charles II in exile, but not always apparently in the King's confidence, he was sent in June 1650 as ambassador to Denmark, causing one opponent to note "Newcastle upon a drinking voyage to Denmark". He had been exempted from pardon by the general consent of both houses of Parliament in 1648, but a subsequent attempt by the Lords to have his name removed from the list was prevented by the Commons. Created General of the north in the 1650 invasion plans, he did virtually nothing with his command, having lost the taste for military involvements. He may well have opposed the Presbyterian alliance anyway. His property was inserted in the first Treason Act, which concerned him greatly, and in 1654 he wrote to Secretary Nicholas to have him remind the King of his promise to renew all the offices held by Newcastle under Charles I; Lord Lieutenant of Nottinghamshire, Lord Lieutenant of Sherwood Forest, Custos rotulorum of Nottinghamshire and Custos rotulorum of Northumberland. In 1656 he was in Brussels, and in 1657 concerned about the publication of his book on horsemanship, "the printing will cost me £1300", the money to come from friends. Feelings were mixed towards him. Thomas Ross told Nicholas on one occasion, apropos some additional plans for action in England, "My friend wonders that anyone who knows Newcastle would trust him with so important a secret, for it might as well be proclaimed at the cross". Another said of him that "the King having real kindness for him, rathering pitying his weakness" treated him cordially. On the subject of the restoration, in February 1660 Newcastle wrote to Nicholas "That the King will be called in is probable, but on what conditions the Lord knows. I am not of the opinion to come in on any terms, and be trammelled and made a Duke of Venice, which is but Lord Mayor, during his life, and God knows how they may use him when they have him, for you know what this Parliament did heretofore". Something of a die-hard attitude, for Newcastle himself did well out of the restoration, and was full restored to his old honours. Created duke of Newcastle in 1664, and earl of Ogle, he died in 1676.⁵¹³

Major Francis Danby: This is a tentative designation, since he is not so cited in the List. He was, according to family tradition, perhaps originally to something more substantive, a major of horse under the earl of Newcastle, and this would as well mean in Newcastle's own regiment, as in another. He was the son of Thomas Danby of South Cave, who was killed on Marston Moor "that poore gentleman was shot to death with a cannon bullet, and cutt off by the midst of his body, he being

locked in his sadle that very day...". Francis was the son of a Recusant mother, but a conformable father. He came in at the fall of York, having also fought on Marston Moor, and was fined £320 in 1646. In his composition he stated that he had been major for a year only, and was "heartily sorrowful for his error", as he doubtless was in view of the fine. Who preceded him as major supposing this designation correct, is not known.⁵¹⁴

Captain []] Benson: Cited in the List, see the same man (?) in Saville's Horse.

Captain []] Brandling: Cited in the List, probably Roger, second son of the second marriage of Robert Brandling of Felling Co. Durham, and thus brother of Colonel Robert Brandling (q.v.). We know nothing of him save that he was killed as a captain of horse in the civil war on the King's party.⁵¹⁵

Captain John Claxton: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, the son and heir of Sir John Claxton of Nettlesworth Co. Durham born between 1596 and 1600. Listed as a Recusant in 1627 and in 1637, he nevertheless signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Chester le Street. His tenants at West Morton were to appear before the sequestration committee for the county in September 1644. An alternative designation, but a man about whom little is known, is John Claxton, second of the two sons of Lancelot Claxton, Sir John's younger brother.⁵¹⁶

Captain Edward Copley: As in the case of Danby, this is a rigid interpretation of statements made during Copley's composition. Styled Esquire, he petitioned in 1646 that "your peticon^r was a capt of a troupe of horse under the Earle of Newcastle from the first of January 1643 until the 27 of July" (1644?). He made his composition at London and was fined £320. In 1648 he was in arms again, re-sequestered and fined £600, at which he protested that his presence in Pontefract garrison, for which he was fined, had been pure chance. Edward was third of the five sons of Alvery Copley of Batley who died in 1623, but eventually heir to his father, since his brother John was killed in arms (see Saville's Horse) and his brother Saville was killed in Ireland. Edward was 19 in 1642 and died in 1676.⁵¹⁷

Captain []] Mozin: Cited in the List, also spelt Mazin, Mazine or Mustin. Not to be confused with Captain Anthony Mazine of Sir John Harpur's Horse (a regiment with which we are not concerned). This was John Mazine of Carburton, Nottinghamshire, who came back to England in 1645 after going into exile with the Marquess.⁵¹⁸

Captain William Unthanke: Cited in the List, almost certainly the same man claiming, same rank, under the earl of Crawford, evidently a transfer. However, two such men

signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Houghton le Spring and Durham St. Nicholas Co. Durham, Crawford's claimant coming from that county.⁵¹⁹

Lieutenant William Cooke: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was of Beeston, yeoman, yielding in 1644 and compounding on a fine of £20 in 1646.⁵²⁰

Lieutenant John West: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Turner's troop. Not an overly common name: such a man of Scarborough died c. 1673.⁵²¹

Cornet Henry Paston: This designation is based upon a reference in the composition papers of Henry Paston of Blackheddon. In his claim, made in 1647/8, he stated that he had held this rank under Newcastle, but had deserted prior to Marston Moor. Yet he was sequestered in May 1645. A fine of £84 was imposed, for in 1648 he had come into his father Christopher's property. The fine was not paid and the land re-sequestered. Henry claimed that his mother was trying to disinherit him, which accounted for his failure to pay his fine. Apprenticed to a boothman in Newcastle in 1627/8, he died in 1669.⁵²²

Quartermaster John Chilton: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Unthanks' troop. Chilton is a not uncommon name, and eight such signed the 1641/2 Protestation with the same forename. Such a man was legatee in the will of Anthony Robinson of Houghton le Spring who died in 1616, but this may be too early.⁵²³

Quartermaster Edward Hudson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Benson's troop. Such a man of Northowram had his will granted probate in 1679.⁵²⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Towne, cited in the List.

Captain [] Turner, cited in the List, perhaps the same as 'Towne'.

Lieutenant William Adderley, claimed in the List from Staffordshire.

Lieutenant Rowland Heaven, claimed in the List from Herefordshire, Captain Towne's troop.

Lieutenant Christopher Newton, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Brandling's troop.

Cornet Robert Atkins, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mozin's troop.

(Colonel) Sir Edward OSBORNE'S Horse.

Young accepted the existence of such a regiment, but the evidence is altogether too slender.⁵²⁵ For the most part, it consists of the list of officers given in Peacock,⁵²⁶ and has been, in consequence, subject to critical study. It may hold for August/September 1642, but can bear no relation to the realities of regimental structure after that time. In the List Osborne has only one officer claiming under him, an identified captain, which tends to make this look like a troop of horse at best, although in the interests of caution, and acknowledgement of our want of records, the officers given by Peacock have been allowed to stand. The activities of this 'troop' or 'regiment' will best be judged from the career of the one identified officer, Captain Sir John Gibson (see below). A point of caution, however. It is not clear from Peacock whether in the 1642 list we are dealing with horse or foot, whilst in the List and from additional evidence it appears to have been a cavalry force.

(Colonel) Sir Edward Osborne: The second son of Sir Hewett Osborne of Essex, who died in 1599, Sir Edward was knighted in 1620 and became a baronet in the same year.

Ordinarily resident at Kiveton near Leeds, he had large mineral interests, including Alum mines, but was primarily a politician with a career to follow, closely allied to Strafford. It is possible that he faded from prominence after 1642 because of his attitude towards Catholics, although he was one of the gentry responsible for bringing Newcastle into Yorkshire. He had very little in the way of scruples where Recusants or suspected Catholics were concerned, as is evidenced by a letter to Strafford, written in 1633: "Sir William Ellis is soe over legall and full of Scruples...in this & in all other Services thatt concerne y^e Kings profett as I wish we were rid of him". Vice President of the Council of the North under Strafford, he was in 1639 made the earl's lieutenant-general with absolute military power in his absence. An enemy of Sir John Hotham, and apparently at odds with the future colonel Sir William Saville, he was defeated in the elections of 1640 when he stood for the city of York. Commissioner of Array in 1642, thereafter we lose sight of him more or less, which calls in question his military standing during the war. When he petitioned to compound in 1646, he denied ever having been in arms, and said that he was heavily in debt. His fine was set at £1649 in March 1647, but in the same year he died from over-eating some cold melons during the summer. He was 50 when he died.⁵²⁷

Lt. Colonel [] Savage: Cited in Peacock, not traced.

Major [] O'Neill: Cited in Peacock, possibly identified as Sir Bryan O'Neill of Dublin, Bart., who fought at Edgehill, or as Daniel O'Neill, although the latter was Rupert's

lt. colonel at Edgehill, but apparently a captain at the storm of Marlborough in December 1642. The problem appears insoluble.⁵²⁸

Captain []] Butler: Cited in Peacock, perhaps alluded to as commanding a troop of horse on its way to Newcastle on August 3rd 1642.⁵²⁹

Captain []] Fidler: Cited in Peacock, such a man, an ensign, was a Scottish officer at Amsterdam expected to come to join the King in 1642.⁵³⁰

Captain []] Forster: Cited in Peacock. Possibly (Sir) Richard Forster of Stokesley, son of William Forster of the same. A Recusant in 1636, when styled Gentleman, he had been in correspondence with Osborne in 1632 on the same matter, and excused himself as having been abroad on Royal business. Knighted, probably in Oxford, he became Treasurer to the Queen and to Charles II, was created a Baronet in exile and died before the restoration. As an alternative, we have Stephen Forster of Escrick, Gentleman, deputy muster master, who came in at the fall of Oxford.⁵³¹

Captain Sir John Gibson: Claimed in the List. He was born in 1606, first of the (conjectured) three sons of Sir John Gibson of Welborne, High Sheriff of Yorkshire, who died in 1638. Sir John II took a lease of substantial alum mines from the King, for a 21 year period, which gave him something approaching a monopoly: or so the Parliament claimed when it called in the lease in 1648. The mines were at Mulgrave. A Commissioner of Array in 1642, on September 1st his troop of horse was to go into York garrison. Probably the 'Col' Gibson captured near Beverley on September 12th. Thereafter we lose sight of him, but he took the required oaths in 1646 and in 1648 was fined £843.16.7d. An extra £156.11s. was added in 1649 when estates in Durham, which he had concealed from the committee, were discovered. He died in 1665. His 'autobiography' was a four line stanza which is worth quoting:

A Captaine once I was of Horse
Under King Charles the Martyr
The honor is of much more force
Than Lordes of the New Charter.

Gibson spoke not only for himself, but for others, who felt their loyalty had been by-passed at the restoration.⁵³²

Captain []] Holyday: Cited by Peacock, and untraced.

Captain []] Hussey: Cited by Peacock, such a man was killed in arms at Gainsborough in July 1643.⁵³³

Captain []] Jones: Cited by Peacock, and untraced.

Captain [] Vaux: Cited by Peacock, and as in the case of Fidler (see above), such a man, an ensign and a Scot, was at Amsterdam in 1642.⁵³⁴

Lieutenant Matthew Wentworth: Cited neither in Peacock nor in the List, but according to the pedigrees, he was given this rank by the earl of Cumberland in Captain Gibson's troop, which places Wentworth under Osborne. He was fourth of the five sons of Michael Wentworth of Woolley, and a brother to Colonel George Wentworth (q.v.). Styled of Woolley, Gentleman, he made his will in 1646 and died in the following year.⁵³⁵ (Not to be confused with the Major of Saville's Horse, q.v.).

Quartermaster Edmund Simpson: Claimed in the List from Buckinghamshire, in Captain Gibson's troop, but citing Gibson as a field commander, which seems strange.

Although unidentified, the Buckinghamshire link with Vaux of this regiment may hold good (supposing that we reject the Scottish link for Vaux) since it is a not uncommon name in Buckinghamshire and Northamptonshire.⁵³⁶

Colonel Sir William PENNYMAN'S Regiment of Horse.

Pennyman is chiefly remembered in the history of the civil war for his Foot (q.v.), and is dealt with as colonel under that formation. This is due to the fact that he may well have died before his troop of horse had developed into a full regiment. The troop fought at Edgehill in Prince Rupert's regiment, which formation it was still in on December 25th 1642.⁵³⁷ The commission for a full regiment was issued at Oxford on January 2nd 1643, where Pennyman was stationed with his infantry.⁵³⁸

Lt. Colonel Thomas Frankland: Cited in the List, the eldest son by his second marriage, of Sir Henry Frankland of Aldwark. The regiment is cited in the pedigrees.

Thomas, styled of Haltongill, Arnecliff, died before 1657 when his will was proved.⁵³⁹

Lt. Colonel Edward Hutchinson: Cited in the List by this rank, and by the rank of major. He may have succeeded Frankland, but we do not know precisely when it was that Frankland died or left the regiment. Hutchinson has already been noted under Sir Philip Musgrave's Horse (q.v.), in which he may have served in 1648. Edward Hutchinson of Wykham Abbey, Yorkshire, was the son and heir of a Parliamentarian sympathiser and was disinherited by him. The father died in 1648, when Edward petitioned to compound and was fined £140. However, he did deny being in arms in 1648, although that may have been a deception. A Lt. Colonel Edward Hutchinson was certainly captured at Appleby in 1648, so unless we are dealing with another individual, Edward of Wykham was evidently out. He died in 1653.⁵⁴⁰

Lieutenant John Huthwayte: Claimed in the List from Northamptonshire in Major Hutchinson's troop. Possibly the John Huthwate of Sowerby, yeoman, a juror at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1624.⁵⁴¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Edward Warder, cited in the List.

Lieutenant James Dixon, claimed in the List from Kent, Lt. Colonel Hutchinson's troop.

Quartermaster William Hullock, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Warder's troop.

Quartermaster John Skurray, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Frankland's troop.

Colonel (Sir) John PRESTON'S Regiment of Horse.

A Lancashire and Yorkshire regiment officered, on the whole, by Catholics, and raised probably in Lancashire during the period when the earl of Derby had control in the western and northern parts of that county. From the officer details, it is evident that this force fought in the Derbyshire campaigns launched by the Marquess of Newcastle in the autumn of 1643, and was also in action in Yorkshire early in 1644 when attached to Lord Belasyse's command (see Vol. 1). It almost certainly fought on Marston Moor, and thereafter formed part of Colonel Sir John Mayney's brigade operating in Preston's home area of Furness, before going south to join the main Oxford army. If any of the regiment survived thus far, they were swallowed up in the main army. One John Huddleston of Hutton John in Cumberland served in the regiment until the summer of 1644, when Preston was wounded (see below, and Vol. 1), whereupon Huddleston went into Newark garrison and joined Anthony Eyre's Horse.⁵⁴²

Colonel (Sir) John Preston: The son and heir of Patrick Preston of The Manor, Dalton in Furness, Lancashire, John succeeded his father in 1642. A Recusant family, the Prestons had large iron interests in Furness, and John, who was born in 1617, had no difficulty in raising men and paying them. He was knighted, presumably by the Marquess of Newcastle, in January 1644 and a baronetcy bestowed on him at the same time. During the fighting in Furness in 1644 he was badly wounded. Sir Henry Slingsby (q.v.) who was with him, noted: "his horse kill'd, and it may seem yt being down some of ye foot...gave him a knock on ye head...He lay in a swoon...many days...his perfect sense and understanding he recovered not for half a year after". This last remark implies that Preston did recover, which is in dispute with another source which claimed that he was "wounded at Furnace of which he died a lingering death". Certainly, he was dead by the end of 1645, and had been wounded in August 1644. It is just possible that he recovered and was killed at Naseby or elsewhere in the Oxford theatre. He was sequestered as a Catholic delinquent, and his estates partially sold to settle the debts of John Pym, who had made his name in the 1620's as a fierce enemy of Catholics. Even after his death, his name was listed amongst those exempt from pardon.⁵⁴³

Lt. Colonel [] Eure: Cited in the List, possibly an early reference to Colonel William Eure (q.v.), but that is a slim possibility. Alternatively, William second of the three sons of Sir William Eure of Bradley, Co. Durham, born in 1608 and living in 1666.⁵⁴⁴

Lt. Colonel George Preston: Almost certainly the man cited in the List by rank and surname only. He probably replaced Eure. George was son and heir, by his father's

first marriage, of George Preston of Holker, Lancashire, who died in 1640. George II, styled of Nateby and of Brafferton in Yorkshire, was a Recusant like his father, and was categorised as a Papist in his sequestration records. He and his son Thomas were Commissioners of Array in Lancashire. George was killed in action at Bradford in early March 1644, and was buried at Brafferton on March 6th.⁵⁴⁵

Major Peter Pudsey: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was of Sand Hutton Gentleman, styled at his death as of York, Esquire (in 1676). He does not appear in the main pedigree of the Pudseys of Castle Bolton, but is almost certainly the Catholic cited in 1642. In 1644 he fought on Marston Moor, his troop bearing a colour showing "a hand and sword smiting off a Hydra's head (by which he metaphor'd the Sectaries of these times)", with the motto 'Tradentur In Manus Gladii'. He may well have been the Captain Pudsey at Darlington in November 1642 who fell foul of John Hotham's raiders (see Vol. 1). He escaped from Newark in 1646 and went over to the Scots, again described as a Papist. In 1663 he and Marmaduke Lord Langdale were charged with assault on one John Millington.⁵⁴⁶

Captain John Knight: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, probably the Captain Knight captured at Wakefield on May 21st 1643 (but if so, then this regiment was not with the main Lancashire army at that time. There is no reason why it should have been, particularly in view of its Yorkshire officers).⁵⁴⁷

Captain John Salvin: Cited in the List twice, one in the errata. Two possibles present themselves. Least likely may be the fifth of the five sons of William Salvin of Newbiggen who died in 1672, John dying in 1700. More feasible may be John Salvin of Hurworth, Co. Durham, son and heir of Thomas Salvin of the same, John listed as a Recusant in 1637, having been born c. 1597. He refused the oath of abjuration in 1652 and his lands were sequestered.⁵⁴⁸

Lieutenant Gerard Merryman: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Preston's troop. In August 1663 he, Major Pudsey and Lord Langdale were indicted for an assault on John Millington (see Pudsey, above).⁵⁴⁹

Quartermaster Laurence Copeland: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but certainly a Lancashire man. He was probably youngest of the three sons of John Copeland, Skinner, listed with his father in the Foreign Burgesses of Preston in 1642. However, alternatively, Laurence Copeland of Dolphin Leigh, yeoman and Recusant, dead by 1651, had a son Laurence who survived into the restoration. Two other Laurence Copelands appear. One, of Walton near Sandal in Yorkshire, had his

will granted probate in 1678. Another, of Bolland, was listed as a Recusant in 1670, although this latter may be the son of Laurence of Dolphin Leigh.⁵⁵⁰

Quartermaster Thomas Singleton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, the name, like that of Copeland, not uncommon at this period. However, in view of the regiment, it must be Thomas Singleton of Dendrum and Dalton in Furness, yeoman, Recusant and delinquent, still undischarged from sequestration in 1655.⁵⁵¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet Christopher How, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Pudsey's troop.

Cornet John How, claimed in the List from Northumberland in Lt. Colonel Eure's troop.

Quartermaster George Bodington, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Quartermaster Richard Paul, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Pudsey's troop.

The QUEEN'S Regiment of Horse (The Lifeguard).

This regiment, rooted in the Catholic heartland of Lancashire, served with the Oxford army, although some of its officers saw service initially in the north whilst awaiting the Queen's arrival from Holland. It is one of the best documented regiments raised in the north, largely because the eyes of friendly and hostile propagandists alike, tended to follow its campaigns carefully. The regiment produced one of the finest Royalist cavalry commanders of the war, John Clansfield (see below) and must have been, from its inception, an elite formation rivalled only by the King's Lifeguard and Prince Rupert's own.

Whilst the Lancashire background to this regiment cannot be overlooked, two other aspects are striking. The point has been made elsewhere that certain regiments almost seem, insofar as their officers are concerned, to have attracted nothing but Catholics and Recusants. This was particularly true of the Queen's Horse and, to a lesser degree, of her Foot (q.v.). Perhaps there was an element of defiance in the Queen's choice of officers, for she can have had no shortage of young men willing to wear her colours. The other feature of the regiment is what friend and foe alike saw as a Gallic content. Walter Slingsby (q.v., Strickland's Foot), now of Mohun's regiment, said that it was "most French" at Cheriton,⁵⁵² whilst Samuel Luke on July 18th 1643 referred to the regiment lying near Chichester to assist Prince Maurice, "most of them either Walloones or Frenchmen".⁵⁵³ This was certainly not strictly true, although there were, as will become apparent, several French soldiers of fortune in its ranks, as officers, and there may have been more as troopers. In Holland as early as December 1642, it was said that a thousand old soldiers had gathered around the Queen to serve her in her own regiments, and though this may be too high a figure, typical rounding off and upwards, there was some truth in it. The real recruiting began in 1643, after the Queen's arrival in Yorkshire. On April 4th her horse and foot were reckoned at 2000 strong, which if true, shows not only a foot regiment up to strength, but a horse regiment twice over.⁵⁵⁴ Symonds, on the other hand, gave her regiment the total prescribed strength of 500 "raised when the Queene landed at Burlington Bay".⁵⁵⁵ On July 20th, Luke noticed the regiment quartered in and around Oxford, "3 troopes at Heddington and 3 troopes att two townes called Cowleyes and one troope att Islipp". On the 22nd "there is 2 troope of horse of the Queen's forces which lye at Iffley and 3 troopes at the two Cowleyes and 2 at Heddington, 1 at Barton of the Queenes".⁵⁵⁶ The regiment was at Burford on August 21st and at Oxford the next day, and a troop of the regiment had been engaged at the siege of Bristol under Lord Grandison.⁵⁵⁷ On September 3rd Luke noted five columns leaving Oxford for the Gloucester siege, and Mercurius Aulicus noted on the 8th that three troops of the regiment, commanded by Lord Wilmot, routed seven enemy troops in a skirmish, killing 80 and taking up to 40 prisoners.⁵⁵⁸ On September 19th, the

regiment formed a reserve to Rupert in the battle at Aldbourne Chase, where the colonel, Lord Jermyn, was wounded.⁵⁵⁹ Engaged at the first battle of Newbury, on November 2nd Luke reported the "Queenes regiment is expected" at Towcester, having been busy plundering Winslow in Buckinghamshire.⁵⁶⁰ At the end of the month, troops were stopping cattle en route for London, in bodies of 200 or 80 men. It was rumoured at the start of December that the regiment, then quartered at Thame, might go north to assist Newcastle (one wonders if the northern officers were at all restive, as were their counterparts in the Northern Horse in 1645), but the Queen's own troop, 60 strong, was quartered at Wheatley on January 3rd 1644 and on February 4th was to be quartered in Oxford.⁵⁶¹ On March 17th, leading up to the battle of Cheriton, Sir Edward Walker wrote to tell Lord Forth that the chief officers of the regiment, with Jermyn, would hasten to him with all speed.⁵⁶² The regiment itself had been on the move on March 8th.⁵⁶³ After the fight at Cheriton, the Committee of Both Kingdoms received reports that indicated that the Royalist cavalry were "mainly shaken, and especially the Queen's Regiment",⁵⁶⁴ but on March 23/4 the regiment was marching from Oxford toward Bristol.⁵⁶⁵ In August the regiment had marched with the King into the West Country, and near Bocconock "when the King came up we saw most of their body of horse on the hill neare Brodocke, upon that downe: ymmediately the Earle of Cleveland's brigade and the Queen's regiment followed them and charged their rear."⁵⁶⁶ The regiment was engaged at the second battle of Newbury, having been stationed at Kingscleere shortly before.⁵⁶⁷ The regiment was now, however, in decline, probably failing to come up to full strength and losing officers. In heavy fighting near Donnington on November 9th, as Symonds noted, "the Queen's regiment of horse was drawne within danger of some musqueteers which [the enemy] drew down below Mr. [Dolman's] howse...and a body of the enemyes horse drew boldly out, the Prince Rupert commanded the Queen's regiment...to charge them".⁵⁶⁸ Badly beaten up at Blandford in the previous October where they lost "two colours and much Popish trumpery"⁵⁶⁹ and losing nearly a 100 men and horses near Weymouth soon after,⁵⁷⁰ they entered upon the lean year of 1645. Resentment against so favoured a regiment showed itself in high circles. On January 30th 1645 Rupert was the recipient of an angry letter from Colonel Howard at Campden House, alluding to the Queen's regiment quartering in Risgate Hundred: "Shall the Queen's seventy horse have Westmester Hundred, Tewkesbury hundred, and God knows what other hundreds, yet share half with me in Rissgate". (571) Nonetheless, the regiments presence near Woodstock put a stop to a proposed Parliamentarian attack on a nearby manor,⁵⁷² in late February. On April 25th Cromwell reported that he had fallen on the regiment near Oxford, and of 400 horse, taken about 200 "whereof many Officers and Gentlemen of quality, and the Queen's own colours". That, at least, is how Whitelock heard it.⁵⁷³ In skirmishing near Leicester on June 7th, the Queen's trumpeter and several others were killed outright,⁵⁷⁴ and the regiment was 150 strong on the eve of the

storm of Leicester and the battle of Naseby.⁵⁷⁵ Some surrendered with the Leicester garrison after the battle, others clung to the dwindling cavalry forces still with the King, being noted at Hereford on July 1st⁵⁷⁶ and on August 25th they were part of the brigade of Colonel Sir William Vaughan at Huntington.⁵⁷⁷ When the King marched to Newark, the regiment, or what was left of it, received another blow when it was cornered near Shelford and all but a few put to the sword for refusing quarter.⁵⁷⁸ Other incidents in the regiment's career will be found in the officer biographies, as and where they centre upon the doings of any single officer.

Colonel Henry (Lord) Jermyn: The first colonel of the regiment, he was also colonel of the Foot, which implies that the two regiments together formed the Queen's Lifeguard.

He is cited in the List under his title of earl of St. Albans, to which honour he was elevated at the restoration. The younger son of Sir Thomas Jermyn of Rushbrook, Suffolk, who had been Comptroller of the Royal Household and who died in 1645, Henry came from a thoroughly Royalist courtier family. "Butcherly Jermyn, contemptible Harry" has come down through history largely as the Queen's lover and future husband, but he was not lacking in the qualities that go towards making a field commander, and he took his regimental rank seriously. In 1642 Commissioner of Array in his native county, he rode at the head of the cavalry regiment at least until badly wounded at Aldbourne Chase in late 1643. Barred from pardon in 1648, by which time he had been almost four years in exile in France with the Queen, he became closely identified with the Louvre group of exiles, favouring a Presbyterian alliance to bring about the overthrow of the Republic. His barony dated to 1643, the patent being issued in September, whereas the first clear allusion to him as colonel comes in May of that year, from the Queen herself. He had been, in the years before the war, MP for Liverpool, Corfe Castle and, in 1640, Bury St. Edmunds, but his implication in the Army Plot obliged him to flee for safety to France, where he remained until returning with the Queen to Yorkshire in 1643. His career has been sufficiently dealt with elsewhere to require no further elaboration. He died in 1684.⁵⁷⁹

Colonel (Sir) John C(1)ansfield: Also spelt 'Campsfield', he was the second colonel of the regiment, having begun his career as major under Jermyn, rising to be lt. colonel and then colonel when Jermyn went into France with the Queen. The exact date of his birth, like that of his death, is uncertain, but he succeeded his father, also called John, in the estate centre on Robert Hall in northern Lancashire, in 1613. Styled Esquire, he compounded as a Recusant in 1629, and the records of the sequestration committee are replete with references to him as a papist and delinquent. His brother Charles was a seminary priest in

London from 1645 onwards. Of little prominence outside his immediate locality, in 1642 he suddenly came to the attention of the Parliament's sympathisers in London when it was reported that "Mr. Cansfield and Mr. Dalton are nowe raising [each] a troop, and....Mr. Cansfield hath already raised ffifty fyve and that they papists doe all ryse and Joyne with them", (see also Vol. 1., and for Dalton, Colonel Thomas Dalton). In September, he had appended his signature to the petition of the Lancashire Catholics, to the King, seeking permission to arm themselves in his cause. Having raised his troop, he was called across the Pennines to serve in Yorkshire, for in January 1643 he was captured and his men broken by Sir Hugh Cholmeley raiding out of Scarborough to Malton (see Vol. 1). Released when Cholmeley changed sides, or exchanged before that date, he seems to have ventured into Lancashire, for he fought at Lancaster and at the storm of Preston in March. He was probably recruiting his troop anew, and gathering additional support, for the Queen was now recruiting her Lifeguard and he was almost certainly commissioned at this point. He was probably major under Jermyne and Lt. Colonel Crofts (see below). Thomas Lord Saville, the time-serving peer who aroused the suspicions of both parties, on making his composition in 1646, endeavoured to show that he, too, had been a victim of papist Royalists, by singling out Cansfield for especial mention: "one Col^l Cansfield, a papist" and Sir Thomas Glemham, with 200 men, had been sent by Newcastle to arrest Saville in early 1643 when it was believed that he was conspiring with the enemy. Cansfield was not a colonel at that date, of course, but it is interesting to note that in citing him in 1646, Saville knew that the committee men would know precisely whom he meant. In November 1643 Cansfield first came to the notice of Mercurius Aulicus, for on the 6th of that month it recorded an attack on Olney Bridge on the 5th: "Sergeant Major Campsfield (Major of the Queenes Regiment) shot through the arm, who, as his manner is, behaved himself very manfully". There is some doubt as to whether he was knighted at this point, near Olney, or in October 1644 somewhere near Newport Pagnell. The Queen certainly thought highly of him, and in July 1644 wrote to the King: "please to give the commission of Cansfield's brother-in-law to that Colonel Tilsley; Cansfield cannot ask it on account of his religion, and the other is the nearest relation the young man has, and one against whom there can be no objection; and Cansfield has served you so well, and will do so yet, that you should not refuse so small a thing". Evidently, the Queen looked to her officers in much the same way as a good colonel after his men. In September 1644, Cansfield was in action at Lostwithiel, and afterwards drew the regiment near Plymouth to overawe the raiding cavalry there. He was by now colonel of the regiment, and at the second battle of Newbury on October 27th he distinguished himself. "Sir John Campsfield's regiment...stood...most gallantly" against a rebel charge, observed one writer at the time, but another added "if Sir John Campsfield had not...given...that brisk charge by which other troops

were ready to charge them in the flank, the King himself had been in very great danger". Cansfield, leading the charge and again wounded, "had the execution of them near half a mile". In August 1645, Cansfield's name went forward for the governorship of Oxford, his only rival being Sir Thomas Glemham, both "able stout and worthy men" as Edward Walsingham told Digby. The post went to Glemham, partly because of his experience of siege warfare, but also, one suspects, because Cansfield was a Catholic, and it was no time in the affairs of the King, to put a papist in such a position. He had already carried himself well at Naseby, commanding what was left of the Queen's regiment, about 150 horse in all (see above). He was on the Oxford Council of War in November, however, and in December was reportedly marching toward Chester with the Oxford cavalry, although he had turned back by Christmas Day. His last known fight, his last triumph, was in January 1646 when Mercurius Academicus for January 22nd reported a foray by the Oxford garrison cavalry into Wiltshire, supported by 200 men from Farringdon garrison. Quartered at Ogborn, Cansfield commanding, they were informed that three troops of horse and 500 foot were in Marlborough. At eight in the evening, Cansfield took his men in, his main body following upon his forlorn hope. The enemy were scattered, seven being captured, and the rest fleeing into the parish church, from which they emerged some hours after Cansfield had left the town. Now, quite suddenly, he appears to drop from contemporary record. In the sequestration papers relating to his estate, as early as 1648 he was reportedly dead, a delinquent papist. In 1651 his tithes from Irby in Tunstall were sequestered and in 1652 his lands placed in the third of the Treason Acts. Two years later the guardians of his infant son, also called John, petitioned on the child's behalf, and in doing so referred to the father as deceased. The sequestration was still not lifted in 1655, so clearly the funds were waiting to clear it. As for Colonel Sir John Cansfield, he had disappeared completely it would seem.⁵⁸⁰

Lt. Colonel [] Crofts: Symonds alludes to him as lt. colonel under Jermyn when the regiment was raised, and he seems either to have left the regiment in 1644 or to have been killed, probably the former. Identification is a problem. However on the strength of the available evidence, I suspect that this was Sir William Crofts of Croft Castle, eldest son of Sir Herbert Croft of Croft, and a Catholic like his father, who died in 1622 as a lay brother of the Benedictines at Douay. Sir William was MP for Malmesbury in 1623/5, so evidently he concealed his religion effectively. Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles I, he was dismissed for falling foul of the duke of Buckingham. In May 1641, Lady Harley of Brampton Bryan reported Sir William as busy influencing his fellow JPs against the Protestation. In Holland with the Queen in June 1642 (I take this as an evidence favouring the identification), he was back in Herefordshire in July and busy about the raising of troops. Lady Harley kept close watch

on her neighbours doings, and noted that "I never heard of a man so changed as they say S^r William Croft is. He gave me a slight visit". On July 5th Croft was commissioned to call out the local Trainband in the King's name, and Lady Harley wrote that "they are to put out all the old captains. They have summoned the Trainbands to be at Hereford on Saturday. I fear they will attempt to seize upon the arms which I have". Croft's commission to recruit a troop of horse "for the King's special service" was noted on the day previous, and Lady Harley told her husband that she believed she would find Croft "a most violent man". A warrant for his arrest as a delinquent came from Parliament to no avail. Sir William next appears as a prisoner of war near Hereford in April 1643, but for how long he was detained cannot be ascertained. If he was a prisoner for some time, however, then the implication may be that he did not actually take up his command in the regiment for some time. Symonds, already quoted on the matter, seems to imply that Croft was lt. colonel to Cansfield in 1644, which sounds strange and may be a mere ambiguity on Symonds' part. He was killed, at the age of 51, near Hopton or Stokesay Castle in Shropshire.⁵⁸¹

Lt. Colonel Sir Thomas Smith: Cited twice in the List, and on the second occasion by this rank, he presumably served as such under Cansfield. Probably promoted from captain at some stage, perhaps when Cansfield became lt. colonel of the regiment, Smith may be the captain of the same name signing for pistols at Oxford on November 24th 1643. He was born in 1598, the son of Lawrence Smith of Hather-ton, Cheshire, and of Hough, who died in 1641. Thomas, admitted to Lincolns Inn in 1614, and was knighted in the following year, was a lawyer. Of a prominent mercantile family in Chester itself, he was Mayor in 1622/3 and an Alderman thereafter. Like several Royalist field officers, he was opposed to the Ship Money levy, and was returned as MP for Chester in 1640. Given leave to absent himself from the House in June 1642, he did not return there, claiming subsequently to have been prevented by the military situation. He compounded in 1646 on a fine of £3,350 reduced from £6,700 and died in 1668.⁵⁸²

(Major Sir) Edward Bret(t): Cited in the List merely as Sir Edward Bret, the rank is conjectural but highly probable in view of his eminence in the regiment, and Symonds alludes to him apparently as major in September 1645, although from another source this rank appears to have been bestowed in 1644 under unusual circumstances. The exact pedigree of the family is not clear, but he seems to have been Sir Edward Brett of Blendenhall near Bexley in Kent, sergeant porter to Charles II, who died in St. Margaret's Parish Westminster in 1684. It may be unlikely, but such a man matriculated from Clare College in 1631, was awarded his BA in 1633/4 and his MA in 1637. Perhaps a relation of Major Arthur Brett listed in Surrey in 1628 as a Catholic suspect. The first likely allusion to

Edward comes in December 1642, when a Captain Brett was listed at Rotterdam awaiting transport for Newcastle with other officers. His activities are not, however, noted in England until 1644, and in July of that year the Queen wrote to the King, "if you would give Brett a pension of two hundred pieces, you would oblige me extremely". Upon the Queen's departure from England, Brett, who had apparently commanded her personal troop, was attached with one hundred of the regiment to Grenville in the west country, and in August 1644 moved into the King's Guard, whereupon Brett became major. This need not mean that Brett was major in the King's regiment, but at his attachment to it, assumed the rank in the Queen's. On August 17th "His Majestie attended with his owne troope, Queenes troope, commanded by Captain Brett, and sixty commanded troopers, went to Cliffe...", but this reference by Symonds, who took such care to be accurate, specifies Brett as captain, so that the promotion to major may in fact date to his knighthood after Lostwithiel. To quote Symonds again: "about 11 of the clocke [on August 31st] Captain Brett led up the Queenes troope, and most gallantly in view of the King charged their foot and beat them from their hedge killing many of them, notwithstanding their musquets made abundance of shott at his men; he received a shott in the left arme in the first field, and one of his men, La Plunne, a Frenchman killed, yet most gallantly went on and brought his men off; his cornett's horse shott, with 2 other horses, and 2 more wounded: he retreated to be dresst, and the King called him and tooke his sword which was drawne in his hand and knighted Sir Edward Brett on his horse's back". Symonds' allusion to Brett as major came in September 1645, as has been said, but his promotion at Lostwithiel, if not earlier, seems likely. In February 1646, Brett was wounded in action near Burrington, according to John Rushworth reporting the House of Lords. Whitelock noted "M. Bret" injured in the same engagement, and his style of reference implies that Whitelock thought Brett was a Frenchman, a fact unlikely but, in view of the uncertainty as to his origin, not to be absolutely discounted. The skirmish took place near Torrington. In May 1655, Brett was a Royalist agent at the Hague and in September Secretary Nicholas alluded to him in a letter to Langdale as being in Holland. Langdale, who had had dealings with Brett, had mistakenly called him "Pitt". He was in Cologne in February 1656. In October 1660, as a Gentleman Pensioner, he petitioned Charles II for favour, and the office he held at his death in 1684 may have been that granted him then.⁵⁸³

Captain Thomas Brockholes: Claimed in the List from Middlesex, and most probably the Captain Thomas Brockhills who claimed in the List under Sir William Bradshaw (q.v.). However, double claims, although occasionally identified, are unusual, and two Thomas Brockholes or Brockhills present themselves as Lancashire delinquents at this time. It is, of course, impossible to know which of them was an officer, and whether they were both serving officers in separate regiments.

Thomas Brockholes of Claughton or Clayton was born in 1593 and died in 1668, the eldest of the sons of John Brockholes of the same who died in 1642. Alternatively, John's brother Thomas, styled of Heaton, was a Catholic delinquent undischarged in 1655. Both men had their property inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652 as Catholics and delinquents, and both appear to have survived into the restoration, although the age factor may rule out Thomas of Heaton.⁵⁸⁴

(Captain) Sir Charles Charbo: Cited in the List, evidently a French officer. Roy misidentified him in the Royalist Ordnance Papers, rendering as 'Sherborne' or 'Sherburn'

this man signing on November 24th 1643 as lieutenant to Captain (Sir Thomas) Smith.⁵⁸⁵

Captain Gervase Clifton: Named by Symonds as from Lancashire, with a troop of 60 men when the regiment was raised. Such a man, of the same rank, claimed under Tyldesley's Horse (q.v.). This does look, in this case, as if we have a man claiming for service and rank in the 1648 or 1651 wars, who had originally served the Queen's Horse in 1643/6. He must be Gervase Clifton of Westby, sequestered as a Catholic delinquent. When he petitioned, he denied his Catholicism. He may also be the Jervas Clifton styled as of Latham who was in Shelford Manor at its capture (see above, regimental notation). Gervase Clifton of Westby compounded as a Catholic Recusant in 1629.⁵⁸⁶

Captain Lawrence Clifton: Cited in the List, eldest son of Sir Cuthbert Clifton's second marriage, and hence a half brother of Colonel Cuthbert Clifton (q.v.). A Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642, Lawrence is listed as a major in the list of Catholics killed in the civil war, and he was certainly slain at Shelford House in October 1645. A Passing reference to Clifton can be found in the papers of Lieutenant George Livesay, this regiment, q.v.⁵⁸⁷

Captain Thomas Cooke: Cited in the List, such a man of Speke, yeoman and Catholic delinquent was undischarged from sequestration in 1655, and had compounded as a Recusant in 1632.⁵⁸⁸

Captain Raoul Fleury: No reference in the List or in Symonds, but quite reasonably and tentatively suggested in this rank by Adair. Fleury commanded the regiment at Cheriton on March 29th 1644, where "doing his duty like a very worthy person" he had his leg blown off by a cannonball and died shortly afterwards. Adair implied that Fleury was a Frenchman, and styled him Monsieur, but there is a Rafe Floyer of Staffordshire, third of the five sons of Francis Floyer or London, merchant, born c. 1623 who may be the man in question.⁵⁸⁹

Captain Gotie Franc: Cited by Symonds, but particular attention should be paid to the remarks concerning the officer immediately following.

Captain Sherbo Franc: Symonds listed this man, as well as Gotie Franc (see above), and added in connection with Sherbo "Queen's page" of "Captain Sir John Smith's troop" of which Sherbo had assumed command. Now, as already pointed out, Captain Sir Charles Charbo (we do not know when he was knighted) was probably lieutenant in Sir Thomas Smith's troop, supposing that Symonds made an error in writing 'John' for 'Thomas'. It may be that we are here dealing with a reference by Symonds to nationality, using the word Franc, so properly rendered, the allusion would be to Captain Sherbo or Charbo, the Franc (Frenchman), and the same would then apply to Captain Gotie. This means that Gotie and Sherbo would be surnames and thus incorrectly listed here as forenames. The matter is open to argument of course.⁵⁹⁰

Captain [] Markham: Cited in the List, according to Symonds, Captain George Markham of Nottinghamshire raised 70 men when the regiment was recruited. If this identification is right, he was the second of the six sons of George Markham of Ollerton, and brother to Lt. Colonel Thomas Markham (see the duke of York's Horse). Styled of Worksop, he was born in 1616 and died in 1670. In October 1644, Mercurius Aulicus noted him in command of a troop in a raid on outlying enemy quarters near Basing House, and operating from Kingscleer.⁵⁹¹

Captain [] Meade: Cited in the List under Cansfield. Probably the Captain Robert Meade in Stockholm, April 1650, acting as representative from Charles II.⁵⁹²

Captain [] Norton: Cited in the List, possibly Simon Norton of Northampton, killed in arms, according to the petition of a man pillaged when he refused to join the King.⁵⁹³

Lieutenant George Livesay: This regimental designation is an interpretation of evidence, since there is no direct link with the regiment. Son and heir of Lawrence Livesay of Sutton, Lancashire, whom he had succeeded by 1642, his sequestration was the subject of much speculation as to what had become of him. One Gervase Clifton (unidentified, but apparently a trooper in this regiment) deposed that the troop he rode in was commanded by "Law: Clifton [as] Captaine and George Livesay was Lef.tnt, y^e said troope together with y^e rest of y^e forces then in y^e field were put to route by some of y^e Parliam^t forces, and in pursuit this examinant saw George Livesay, of Sutton...lying upon y^e ground dead as this examinant verily beleeveth, and hee is the rather induced to beleeeve he was

then dead in regard [he] heard by divers of y^e souldiers who were taken prisoners by the pliant souldiers and afterwards released, say that they saw Geo: Livesay dead, and afterwards cut open by the surgeons...". In the papers it was further stated that Livesay had left Lancashire in 1643. These clues, particularly the reference to Captain Clifton, make the regimental designation feasible.⁵⁹⁴

Lieutenant Richard Powell: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Meade's troop. Perhaps the Lieutenant Power captured at Rowton Heath in 1645.⁵⁹⁵

Cornet William Leyburn: For this man, see Ferdinando Leigh's Horse.

Quartermaster Roger Crofts: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Cansfield's troop. Unlikely but possibly the son of Edward Crofts of Knaresborough and of East Appleton, the father dying in 1665 aged 61. Edward was Governor of Knaresborough prior to the war, but even the rank of Quartermaster in the Queen's Lifeguard cannot be looked on as too humble for the younger son of a gentleman.⁵⁹⁶

Quartermaster Miles Dodson: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, and styled as Quartermaster General in Oxford. Such a man was son and heir of Richard Dodson, Rector of Kirkby Overblows in Yorkshire, was born in 1590 and apparently died in 1657 which may rule him out.⁵⁹⁷

Quartermaster Thomas Lancaster: Claimed in the List from Derbyshire, probably second of the three sons of Thomas Lancaster of Rainhill in Lancashire (see his brother, John, in Derby's Foot).⁵⁹⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant David Woodfield, claimed in the List from Oxford, Lt. Colonel Smith's troop.

Cornet George Dixon, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Markhams troop.

Quartermaster Lionel Butchard, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Clifton's troop.

Quartermaster John Deale, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Sir Edward Brett's troop.

Quartermaster John Grafton, claimed in the List from Northamptonshire, Captain Charles Charbo's troop.

Quartermaster Arthur Hutchinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Norton's troop.

Quartermaster Francis Reve, claimed in the List from Warwickshire, Sir Thomas Smith's troop.

Quartermaster William Sergeant, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Cansfield's troop.

Quartermaster William Wilkinson, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Brockholes's troop.

Colonel Sir Thomas RIDDELL'S Horse.

No more than a troop at least, it formed the mounted arm of the garrison of Tynemouth Castle in Northumberland. Colonel Riddell is dealt with as colonel of foot (q.v.). Only two officers claimed for this force in the List and one of these, Captain Thomas Paul who petitioned from Durham, cannot be identified.

Captain Gascoigne Eden: Cited in the List, see this man in Sir William Blakiston's Horse.

Lieutenant Ralph Eden: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Eden's troop. Probably third of the three sons of John Eden of West Auckland who died in 1625, and a copyholder in East Combe township, styled Gentleman, in 1646.⁵⁹⁹

Colonel Edward ROSTERN'S Horse.

Probably never much more than a troop ancillary to his regiment of foot raised for the defence of Lathom House in 1644, after Rupert's relief in May, Rostern is dealt with as colonel of foot (q.v.). He appears on two distinct occasions in the List, however. One as Edward Rawston, cited by claimants of Horse and Foot, and then again as Rosthorne, cited by infantry claimants.⁶⁰⁰ The name has also been rendered as 'Rosethorn' or 'Rosethorne', but Rostern seems to be the most proper usage. Details concerning the exploits of some of Rostern's officers have been given in Vol. 1, in the chapter concerned with the second siege of Lathom.

Major [] Munday: Probably a joint command to include the Foot, that is to say, a garrison command specifically. He is fleetingly referred to in the contemporary sources as a professional (see Vol. 1) and may have been from the Mundy family of Mark-eaton in Derbyshire.⁶⁰¹

Captain William Kay: Also spelt Key, he claimed in the List under Rostern as a cavalry captain, although like Mundy, he may well have combined with an infantry role too. Also described as a professional, he was tentatively identified as of Cobhouse near Lathom. A lieutenant in the first siege, he was promoted after Rupert's relief of the house, and in March 1644 we have a conclusive reference to him seizing malt from one William Hodges, then a prisoner in Lathom.⁶⁰²

Lieutenant Ralph Fletcher: Claimed in the List merely as lieutenant of horse, from Lancashire, but cited Captain Kay. Probably Fletcher of Whitefield, Pilkington, who when compounding protested that he had only been a trooper.⁶⁰³

Quartermaster Thomas Heapes: Claimed only as a Quartermaster in the List, from Lancashire, but cited Captain Kay. Perhaps the same man of Pilkington who, in his composition, admitted serving under the earl of Derby, but, like Lieutenant Fletcher, protested that he had only been a common trooper. He was probably not believed, for a fine of £101 was levied.⁶⁰⁴

Colonel Sir William SAVILLE'S Regiment of Horse.

Almost certainly one of the earliest cavalry formations raised in Yorkshire in the King's service, and that by a man hitherto identified closely with the Parliamentary opposition to Royal policy. It is a regiment to which some uncertainty also attaches, insofar as we do not seem to know what became of it following the death of its colonel in January 1644. There seem to be two solutions, one somewhat conjectural, and these will be discussed under the officers concerned.

The first cavalry were raised by Saville in late August 1642, as part of his agreement to contribute to a body of 250 horse which he entered into in mid July.⁶⁰⁵ On Friday August 26th Saville came with 24 light horse to York, where he placed them at the King's disposal under the command of Captain Sir Thomas Dallison, a southern officer who took the troop into the Oxford army.⁶⁰⁶ These troopers did not reappear in the north, and Saville was left to recruit his regiment virtually from scratch, under the auspices of the earl of Cumberland. The regiment, or what had by then been raised, fought at Bradford on October 24th and again on December 12th (see Vol. 1). Thereafter it followed the campaigns of the main army under its colonel, reappearing at Winceby in October 1643 when its flight was given as a cause of the Royalist defeat, although the story was later retracted by Mercurius Aulicus.⁶⁰⁷ Saville himself may have been wounded in this action, for the regiment was quartered near York on November 15th being re-equipped, and by this time Saville had become governor of the city in the absence of Sir Thomas Glemham. There he remained until his death, but his regiment was in the field again in Lincolnshire and the Isle of Axholm in December, January and early February of 1643/4, according to the memoir of its brigade commander, Colonel Sir John Mayney (q.v.).⁶⁰⁸ Driven from the Isle, Mayney apparently joined Newcastle in Durham in mid February and so, I suggest, did this regiment under its acting colonel, Sir Philip Monckton (see below). Some troop or troops appear to have been at Selby in April 1644, however, and certainly fought on Marston Moor, thereafter being swallowed up in the Northern Horse.

Colonel Sir William Saville: William was born in 1612, second son of Sir George Saville, 1st Bart., of Thornhill in Yorkshire and Rufford Abbey in Nottinghamshire, who died in 1614. He matriculated at University College, Oxford, in 1626 and was admitted to Gray's Inn in 1628, succeeding to the baronetcy on his brother's death. The son in law of Thomas Lord Coventry, and a nephew of the earl of Strafford, who apparently helped him to offices in Yorkshire and Nottinghamshire, where he was Keeper of Sherwood Forest, he was not, however, either a creature of Strafford's nor a tool of the court as might, not unreasonably, have been expected. It is more likely that as a young man he came under the influ-

ence of his uncle and future Parliamentarian commander, Sir John Saville of Lupset. He was made a Trainband colonel in 1633, a JP in 1638 for the West Riding and for Derbyshire and Nottinghamshire and may, Keeler suggests, have been a member of the Royal Household in the latter year. Be that as it may, in 1638 he also refused to contribute to a levy of horse in the Riding, and by 1640 was a prominent opponent of the government on the issue of Ship Money. His personal antagonism toward Strafford particularly worried Laud, and it was observed: "If Sir William Saville may always prevail in his accustomed ways of opposition...both Lord President, Council, Deputy Lieutenants and Justices of the Peace may soon sit down and let him govern". Defeated in the 1640 election when he stood for York, in 1641 he was elected for Old Sarum in Wiltshire. He underwent a radical change in his attitudes once he was in the House, a not uncommon thing, and was committed to the Tower for reporting on debates to the Privy Council. By the outbreak of war, he had already committed himself to the Royalist party, and was perhaps one of the leading Royalists in Yorkshire, with an estate, as Cliffe has shown, of 50,000 acres both there and in Nottinghamshire, and an annual income of some £7000. During the course of the wars, Thornhill was destroyed after it had been garrisoned in 1648, but his estates were entailed and thus avoided the rigours of sequestration. He was appointed to the Commission of Array for Yorkshire and Nottinghamshire, and was one of the group of gentry who sought the replacement of the earl of Cumberland by the earl of Newcastle. He had by then been in action at least twice in the West Riding (see Vol. 1, and regimental notation above). Certainly on the Council of War of the northern army, he was at the battle of Leeds in January 1643 (see Vol. 1) and in May was appointed Governor of Sheffield Castle, which gave him command in the town and over all forces sent there for a garrison. In fact, Saville was a man of action, and he delegated his command to Major Thomas Beaumont of his foot regiment (q.v.). On September 9th he was engaged before Hull, and in October was a divisional commander at the battle of Winceby (see Vol. 1). Appointed Governor of York at least by the middle part of November, he was responsible for the issue of equipment from the magazine there. He also had power to sign orders sequestering property from Parliamentarian supporters. Saville died, quite suddenly, in York on or around January 22nd 1644, and the Marquess of Newcastle wrote to Major Beaumont in Sheffield: "I cannot expresse y^e sorrow I have for the losse of your noble Colonell; both in respect of his Maties service, and my owne particular...". His widow made her way to Sheffield where she held out with Beaumont for some months.⁶⁰⁹

(Colonel Sir) Philip Monckton: In identifying Monckton as the second colonel of this regiment, rather than as a colonel in his own right, as Young has done, I am interpreting somewhat unsatisfactory evidence. However, certain points need to be made clear before explaining Monckton's career and the process by which I have

supposed that he came to this command. He does not appear anywhere in the List, and although this is not in itself sufficient reason for dismissing him altogether as a colonel in his own right, with his own regiment, it does most strongly argue against the idea of a Monckton Horse unit at any time between 1642/6 and even in 1648, when he was most certainly a colonel with an active command. In Monckton's case, we have his own memoir to work from, from which some of what follows is drawn, although it has to be said that it is extremely cursory and concerns Monckton the man rather than Monckton the officer. Thus it casts no light upon the question of when he became a colonel, or why. Saville's regiment is almost unique in the north in the sense that we do not have a specific reference to Saville's successor as colonel. It could be argued that no colonel was appointed, and that the regiment's lt. colonel may have acted as field commander, but although this might be true for Saville's period as Governor of York, his death in January 1644 would strongly suggest that a colonel would be appointed in his place, since at that time, the northern Royalist army was still intact and still following forms and principles of command. In opting for Monckton as the missing successor, I have sought to explain how Monckton came to be a colonel (as he undoubtedly was in 1644, and had not been earlier, so far as can be ascertained), and what became of this regiment. Admittedly, the absence of reference to Monckton in the List is something of an obstacle, but far from insurmountable, if his actual period of command extended for a brief three or four months at most, whereupon the regiment was swallowed up in the Northern Horse and command systems ceased to have much relevance.

Philip was first of the two sons of Sir Francis Monckton of Cavill, Yorkshire, also a Royalist, who served on various York committees. He matriculated at University College in 1638 at the age of 16, and was in 1642 appointed a Commissioner of Array in his county. He was at that time, as he stated in his autobiography, the "eldest captain" of Colonel Sir Thomas Metham's Trainband Foot (q.v.), and saw service at the siege of Hull where, as he wrote, "I had the fortune to command the party that gave [first] fire in that war". Again according to his memoir, he fought at Adwalton Moor on June 30th 1643, by which time he was with the cavalry arm, although in which regiment, and Saville's is as good as any, we do not know. For the crucial period, for my argument, of January to March 1644 we are entirely reliant upon his own memoir, and he does not mention service in the Isle of Axholm, although that omission does not disqualify him for the colonelcy of this regiment, since he may equally well have been in the Isle, or assumed command after the regiment left there. Monckton alluded somewhat mysteriously, to his being in action at "Courtray" against the Scots, which seems to be a poor rendering of Corbridge, fought on February 19th 1644 (see Vol. 1), and the problem is whether the regiment or some part of it, could have reached Corbridge from the Isle of Axholm in the

space of, say, a week, which seems not improbable. He was knighted for his part in the action. At Bowden Hill in March (see Vol. 1), he fought as commander of 400 horse, which looks like the merging of two or more cavalry forces (perhaps with Brandling's, q.v., which we know was lacking its colonel taken at Corbridge), and by now he was fairly certainly a colonel. He further stated that he was sent to Rupert at Shrewsbury to urge him to hasten to the relief of York, and that he fought on Marston Moor (see Vol. 1), which is fairly straightforward but tells us extremely little. In the Northern Horse in 1645, he took part in the relief of Pontefract, and was at the fight at "Paylay" (?) whilst the King was in Leicester in 1645, which may be an obscure reference to Naseby, where he had three horses killed under him in the action. He claimed to have commanded the brigade at Rowton Heath in September, and according to his composition proceedings yielded on April 10th 1646, the joint fine (with his father) being set at £828. On May 6th, Philip took pleasure (one suspects) in stating that he had been a colonel, although in July the local committee alluded to him as major of Langdale's brigade, although the two ranks, being regimental and brigade, are not mutually incompatible. A draft ordinance to clear his sequestration was passed by the Lords in March 1648, by which time he was already plotting for the rising of that year. Again according to his memoir, he was the Yorkshire commander, certainly a colonel, but sharing authority with Lord Byron and Colonel Robert Portington (q.v., Glemham's Horse). He sat on a Council of War in Pontefract after its seizure, and fought at Willoughby where he was taken. He noted in his memoir that at Willoughby he fought with his reins in his teeth, having been severely wounded at Rowton in 1645, which must mean that his left arm was useless. He fled abroad after escaping, but in 1653 returned to England as an agent for the exiles, claiming that he could, or would, bring over Thomas Lord Fairfax. Noted for his opposition to murder plots against Cromwell, he did, however, favour the hiring of a Spanish army. Thurloe knew of his part in the 1654/5 plotting, and in 1656 he seems to have passed on information under questioning, if he is the man alluded to by Robert Lilburne: "Sir Phillip Mountaine (as he is called) hath made some further discoveries concerning the late plott". Imprisoned in Hull in 1658 on suspicion, he was apparently involved in the 1659 rising. At the restoration, he became Comptroller of Customs at Dunkirk, and was to become noted for his hostility to the earl of Clarendon. High Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1669, by 1671 he was in severe financial trouble, owing the Bishop of Durham £27 which he simply could or would not pay. An attempt to distrain on his goods was postponed, and a six month extension allowed him to find the money. He was by then MP for Scarborough, which seat he held until his death in 1679. A soured and embittered man, he was gaoled in 1676 for defaming Royal ministers and his belief that the old Royalists had been badly treated was deep rooted. Modern scholarship discounts this view, but in many cases it was true.⁶¹⁰

Lt. Colonel Roger Portington: Cited by name in the List as a captain, and without forname as lt. colonel, a rank to which he may have risen under Monckton, if not before. The point has already been made, in connection with his younger brother Robert (q.v., Glemham's Horse) that the prolific allusions to both brothers in arms now and in 1648 makes distinguishing between them difficult. In Roger's case, however, we have a clear allusion to his forename in this regiment. He was the first of the two sons of Robert Portington of Barnby super Dun and was born in 1609, the pedigrees tending to style him as captain of horse. Although the family was financially crippled by sequestrations and fines, Roger inherited the property of Sir Roger Portington of Leeds, not a direct relation, and was subsequently styled of Tudworth, Esquire. In 1639/42 he was Treasurer for Lamed Soldiers in the West Riding, and in the latter year a pensioned soldier was indicted for an assault on him. In March 1642 he was suspected of being involved in plots against Hull, and the next reference to him belongs to 1644 when it was stated (in 1646) that he had surrendered himself at the fall of York, but had returned to his arms, since he came in again in August 1645, from Sandal garrison, having been before then, perhaps, in Pontefract. Nonetheless, he was in Newark in 1646, and was named on April 23rd by the inhabitants of Roccliffe, Snaithe and other towns as one of "divers officers and soldiers formerly employed for the King pretending they are under the command of Major General Vandruske in the Scotch army, and commit great violences and oppress all by grievous assessments still declare themselves disaffected to the Parliament". Roger was in arms in 1648, styled colonel, in the garrison of Pontefract, where he still was in October of that year, and in March 1649. Having been fined £350 for his part in the first war, a fine of £1,365 was levied for his part in 1648. In 1660, when a prisoner in King's Bench, he petitioned for his release, stating that in 1649 he had been condemned in heavy damages for carrying off cattle in 1648 for the Pontefract garrison. He stated that witnesses in his defence had not dared to attend the tribunal to refute the allegations against him, because having been Royalists, they were restricted by the five mile limit and could not travel to Pontefract. Roger stated that the man on whose evidence he had been convicted, had since been found guilty of perjury and had disappeared. Having spent nine years in gaol, Roger concluded, he had lost £12000 in all, and begged release. The old judgement was set aside. He must have been arrested in 1651, for in 1650 he was found in London in contravention of the travel limits imposed upon delinquents, and sent back home. His confinement for so long cannot have been unconnected with suspicions concerning his sympathies. Appointed a JP in 1663/4, in 1669 he was enquiring into violence surrounding the drainage of Hatfield Level, violence in which he and his family (see Robert Portington, Glemham's Horse) had often been implicated. In 1674 appointed as a commissioner to enquire into Inquisitions Post Mortem, he died in 1683.⁶¹¹

(Lt. Colonel Thomas Wheatley): Conjectural, see this man as colonel of foot in his own right.

Major John Beversham: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, he also claimed under John Frescheville's Horse, a regiment not here dealt with, but attached to the northern army. This double claim raises several problems, not least that of the regiment with which he primarily served. He may have moved to Frescheville's after the death of Saville, at the time that I have suggested that Monckton probably took over the regiment, or alternatively, have been drafted to serve under Monckton when the man I take to have been the original regimental major, Wentworth (see below) was moved or resigned his commission. It may be possible to argue, this without supporting evidence of any kind, that Frescheville assumed the control of Saville's Horse, but I doubt it. It has been pointed out to me that the printer of the List may have mistaken Saville and Frescheville, and have given Beversham a double claim where none was intended. Of Beversham, we know the following. In November 1650 the Goldsmith's Hall committee was asked to report as to whether "Mr. Beversham" had compounded, since he had murdered a corporal named Crisp. Such a man served under the duke of York at the battle of the Dunes. In September 1650 Major Beversham, in England without licence, was apprehended by two men who claimed a gratuity for their work.⁶¹²

Major [] Wentworth: Cited in the List, and not the easiest of names to identify, lacking a forename. A process of elimination must be followed. A Major Wentworth was captured at Selby (see Vol. 1), and a Lt. Colonel Wentworth at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645. We must discount Sir William Wentworth of Ashby Puerorum, Lincolnshire, killed on Marston Moor, who was Strafford's brother, since he rode as a Gentleman Volunteer. Our major was probably (Sir) Mathew Wentworth of Bretton, born in 1612, third of the six sons of George Wentworth of Bretton who died in 1638. Mathew succeeded as heir in 1675 and died in 1677.⁶¹³

Captain John Benson: Cited in the List, I have considered him to be one and the same as the captain in Newcastle's Horse (q.v.), for since the surname is not uncommon, the possibilities are however limited to one man only. John Benson of Wakefield, at his composition, claimed to have been a captain of horse for upwards of a year, and surrendered in August 1644. A fine of £96 was imposed on him. He was in arms again in 1648, when he was a standing officer of the then Pontefract garrison dissenting from a plan to ransom a Parliamentarian sympathiser who had been seized for that precise purpose. Benson was a younger brother of Robert Benson of Red Hall, near Wakefield, and uncle of Robert Benson, Lord Bingley.⁶¹⁴

Captain John Copley: Cited in the List, the eldest of the five sons of Alvery Copley of Batley who died in 1623, and styled

Esquire. The son in law of the rich Royalist alderman, Bryan Cooke of Doncaster, John was wounded, probably at Adwalton Moor, on June 30th 1643, and was buried at Batley on August 19th. His will was dated to within seven days of his death, but probate was not granted until 1661. His troop was handsomely supplied with horses and men by the Cooke family.⁶¹⁵

Captain Sir John Goodricke: Cited in the List, he was either the seventh or the eighth of the nine sons of Sir Henry Goodrick of Ribston and Hunsingore, on the edge of Marston Moor (the house at Hunsingore was destroyed during the civil war). Born in 1617, he succeeded his father, who died in 1641 and had been a depury lieutenant and Vice President of the Council of the North. Cliffe described John as a rack-renter, and as a Parliament man until the eve of the fighting. Educated, somewhat unconventionally, at Aberdeen, he toured France in 1636/8, and was a Trainband captain of infantry in 1639. He was made a Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire in 1642, at which time he was also a JP, and took 20 horse to the siege of Hull. On August 3rd it was reported in London that "on Friday last Sr John Goodricke...Bart...brought in his horse and men being 36 in number, very bravely accoutred". Lord Fairfax cited him as the captor of Sir John Saville of Lupset, the uncle of Goodricke's future colonel. His signature appeared on the articles to bring Newcastle into Yorkshire, but his military career was remarkably brief. He was captured in arms at Bradford in October (see Vol. 1), which quite incidentally proves the existence of Saville's Horse at this date. Gaoled first in Manchester and then moved to London, he was unsuccessful in his attempts to be exchanged. On May 18th 1644 he was still in the Tower, where he complained of hard usage. He informed the Commons and the Lords that on first entry to this prison, he had been charged £50 for the various officers of the Tower, together with £1.10s a week to cover his food. He and his fellow prisoners had no income from their sequestered estates, nor were they permitted to speak together (these restrictions seem unusually harsh and somewhat pointless). The House of Lords recommended the matter to the Commons immediate consideration, for fear of reciprocal treatment of Parliamentarian officers. It is still a mystery, however, as to why Goodricke had not been exchanged. Although not a markedly rich man, he had been an eager contributor to the Royal cause in 1642, and Saville, for example, might have wanted him back. Either the Parliament, for some reason, refused to make any bargain concerning him, or someone in the Royalist army did not want him back. In 1645 the question of his composition came up, when the Commons referred his case to Goldsmith's Hall and alluded to his four years in gaol and his taking of the National Covenant. Amongst the particular charges levelled against him was one that he and his troopers had seized the cattle of Thomas Stockdale, no insignificant figure in the Fairfax circle in Yorkshire (see Vol. 1). Sir John denied this, and said that when he had learned of it, his wife had arranged for the return of the

livestock. A fine of £1,508.14.8d. was reduced to £1,200, all of which was to be handed over to Stockdale in reparation. (One cannot but observe here that Stockdale's compensation can only have been the result of influence by him or on his behalf). Some attempt to escape from the Tower in this year was made and foiled. Released sometime during 1646, he made his way to Rome in 1647 but was back in England by 1650 when he made voluntary discovery of other assets to the compounding committee and was fined an additional £143.10s. A Knight of the Shire in 1661, he was appointed to the 1664 Commission for the Regulation of Corporations, and died in 1669/70.⁶¹⁶

Captain Christopher Grimston: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and cited as well. He does not appear in the pedigree of Grimston of Grimston Garth, a Royalist family. Such a man, a prisoner in the Fleet in 1641, petitioned for discharge so that he might pursue a suit against one Priscilla Holt. Probably taken at Selby in 1644 (see Vol. 1), he was in the Pontefract garrison, perhaps leaving with Langdale after the relief in March 1645. He was a standing officer in Pontefract in 1648, and may be the man of the same name, styled of York, whose will was passed for probate in 1675.⁶¹⁷

Captain [] Horsfald: Also spelt Horsefall or Hrsfal, he does not appear in the List, but Saville made a distinct reference to him in letters to Thomas Beaumont in Sheffield.

On September 22nd 1643, Saville acknowledged receipt of a muster list for Horsfald's troop, and told Beaumont that he was to go direct to Lincolnshire, since the regiment was short of captains. A Captain Richard Horsefield was taken at Selby in April 1644 (see Vol. 1) and such a man, in Pontefract garrison in 1645, left for Sandal on August 8th, where he surrendered when the castle fell. Two possible identifications can be made, either father or son, but the son seems more likely. Richard Horsfald of Storthes Hall, Yorkshire, was the son of Richard Horsfald of the same who died in 1644, and was styled Esquire. Richard II, born in 1613, and dying in 1666, admitted in his composition that he was at the surrender of Sandal Castle, and compounded on a fine of £340 in respect of property in Storthes Hall, Thurstland, Neals Ing in Giggleswick, and elsewhere, in 1646. He admitted captaincy of horse under the Marquess of Newcastle, but claimed he had deserted, implying that he could have continued to fight, under the terms for the surrender of Sandal. His delinquency was cleared in 1647 when he was styled Gentleman. He has been wrongly identified as a captain in Ramsden's foot by his biographer.⁶¹⁸

Captain Philip Markham: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, his exact identity is a mystery, although a Philip Markham of Boulderstone in Bradfield, Gentleman, was presented at Pontefract Quarter Sessions in April 1642 for erecting a cottage without

assigning four acres of land according to statute. Sir William Saville referred to him in a letter of June 3rd 1643, written to Beaumont at Sheffield: "For Capt. Markham he is not to have any pay, nor his dragoons (sic). I wonder much he should expect any. I make no question but he will behave himself well and carefully, and if he does so, he may easily believe I will be careful of him". This may be a reference to a charge, to be laid against Markham in 1644 by John Haigh of Middop, that he had seized upon Haigh's goods. The charge was made to Lord Fairfax, but Saville may have penalised Markham for plundering.⁶¹⁹

Captain Roger Neville: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, third of the five sons of Henry Neville of Chevet, and brother of Quartermaster General Gervase Neville. Possibly alluded to at Bradford in December 1642 (see Vol. 1). On June 13th Sir William Saville at York wrote to Mr. Holland, the innkeeper of the 'George' at Northampton. In the letter, he stated that Mr. Neville, the writer's friend and a servant of the King, had a horse stayed at Northampton and wished to recover it but had no leisure to press the business. Saville asked Holland to find two honest attornies and two sureties for bail for the horse, and then to send it to Captain Neville at the 'Talbot' in York. This must concern Roger.⁶²⁰

Captain Henry Portington: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he was third of the four sons, but first of the second marriage, of Robert Portington of Barnby super Dun and styled of Stainforth. Born in 1619, by his marriage he also acquired Fishlake, of which place he later came to be styled. He was presented at Pontefract Quarter Sessions in April 1642, with others, for riotous assembly and for entering a house. He served in Pontefract garrison in 1644/5 and in 1648. At his composition in 1646, he admitted to having been in arms, and seems to have come in with the garrison of Oxford. He claimed to no personal estate, holding everything in right of his wife, but his fine was fixed at £96.13.4d.⁶²¹

(Captain) Gervase Rockley: This designation rests entirely upon the Rockley pedigree. Gervase, son of Robert Rockley of Rockley, Esquire, who died in 1644, and had been a contributor to the coffers of the Royalist army, is styled both as lieutenant and as captain in this regiment.⁶²²

Captain John Saville: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but under no specific regiment. However, in his composition proceedings he admitted to his rank, by commission from his kinsman Sir William, which implies this regiment is the missing one. Styled of Slingsby, in the North Riding, Gentleman, he was fined £80. Probably the fourth of the six sons of Henry Saville of Copley, who died in 1640. John was born in 1604.⁶²³

Captain Abraham Vernatt: Cited in the List on two occasions, and clearly a connection of the Vernatti family, of Italian stock, settled at Nortofts near Hatfield Level. This man aroused enormous hostility, for in August 1643 John van Haesdonck appealed to the earl of Newcastle on behalf of himself and others, against Vernatt's arbitrary activities in the Hatfield area. Sir Philip or Sir Filibert Vernatti petitioned in 1641 for release, having been imprisoned on the strength of illegally obtained bonds, he had financially over-reached himself in the cause of draining the Level. In 1642 Abraham Vernatti petitioned the House of Lords for a protection whilst he acted as a surety to Sir Philip in the proceedings then in hand. Clearly, Captain Vernatt(i) saw the civil war as a chance to get his own back.⁶²⁴

Lieutenant Richard Harland: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Goodricke's troop, he was born in 1592, and was styled of Sutton on the Forest, where his mural tablet remains, erected by his grandson in 1722. In his composition proceedings he was referred to as a cornet, which led Clay to suppose this to have been his final rank, whereas both the List and the monument prove him to have become a lieutenant. "He was counted a great plunderer in the country" it was said of him, and a fine of £34 imposed in 1646. In 1657 he was brought before the magistrates for stopping up a highway, and his son was said, at New Malton Quarter Sessions in July of the same year, to owe £40 to Oliver Cromwell. In 1660 he petitioned for the office of keeper of the Manor of York with the Park, hitherto held by Robert Lilburn, which was granted. He showed himself active in hunting down seditious elements in the post-restoration years. He also petitioned in 1660 that one Luke Robinson be exempted from the act of indemnity for having unlawfully seized and imprisoned Harland in York gaol during the Interregnum. In 1665 he fought a duel and slew Sir Thomas Carnaby, probably the former major of Carnaby's Horse (q.v.), in a house in Blake Street, York. No proceedings seem to have been taken against him, nor is the cause of the duel known. He died in 1689 at the age of 97, and his grandson, who raised the monument in All Saints Church at Sutton on Forest, had inscribed: "He first engaged himself in the troop of noblemen and gentlemen associated to guard their sovereign's person at York, and had the honour to serve as Lieutenant to that troop". Can this really be a reference to Goodricke's?⁶²⁵

Lieutenant Michael Keighley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Vernatt's troop. A prisoner at Selby in April 1644 (see Vol. 1). In view of the troop, certainly the man of Hatfield Level, whose will was granted probate in 1665.⁶²⁶

Lieutenant Richard Sherburn: Claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire in Captain Markham's troop. "One Sherborne, a Cavalier, now in the Quarter-master-General's

[regiment]", having joined the Scots upon the fall of Newark.⁶²⁷

Lieutenant Thomas Spurgeon: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Portington's troop. Clearly of Thorne near Doncaster, probate granted 1681. The same man, significantly, was a witness at Pontefract Quarter Sessions in 1641 in a case of theft concerning the Vernatti family.⁶²⁸

Lieutenant Michael Wentworth: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Wentworth's troop. The Wentworth pedigree is thick with possibilities, but in view of age and for other factors which debar most possibles, he is probably third of the five sons of William Wentworth of South Kirby, styled as of South Elmsall. The father died in 1635. Probably the same man pardoned for his part in the murder of one Robert Mynne in c. 1642/3.⁶²⁹

Cornet John Taylor: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Henry Portington's troop. Probably the same of Sandal, yeoman who had been in arms and claimed to have deserted in 1644. A fine of £35 was levied, despite subsequent service with the forces of Parliament.⁶³⁰

Quartermaster John Carrington: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, perhaps second of the four sons of William Carrington of Spawnton. Born in 1593, died in 1674, Gentleman.⁶³¹

Quartermaster Eman Justice: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Goodricke's troop. Such a man, fully named as Emmanuel, was listed as a pensioned soldier in Pontefract Quarter Sessions, April 1640, 1641 and 1642.⁶³²

Quartermaster Thomas Loft: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Wentworth's troop, such a man of Batley had his will granted probate in 1675.⁶³³

Quartermaster John Milner: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Benson's troop, but the name relatively common. Perhaps the John Milner, fifth of the five sons of William Milner of Oundle, born in 1615 and the victim of an assault case at Halifax Quarter Sessions in 1638.⁶³⁴

Quartermaster Thomas Rawson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, fourth of the four sons of Lawrence Rawson of Shipley, and born c. 1622. Styled of Tong, yeoman, he was dead by August 1662.⁶³⁵

Quartermaster William Settle: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such of Peakefield in Nidderdale apparently died in

1661, no date of probate.⁶³⁶

Quartermaster William Stone: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Roger Portington's troop. Such a man was a juror at Doncaster Quarter Sessions in October 1637, and was so again at Barnsley in 1639. The victim of an assault in 1641.⁶³⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Oliver Fleetwood, cited in the List.

Captain [] Ord, cited in the List.

Captain William Sclater, claimed in the List from Warwickshire.

Lieutenant Richard Bishop, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Henry Portington's troop.

Lieutenant Stephen Brearecliffe, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant William Chapman, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Grimston's troop.

Lieutenant Robert Nunne, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Wentworth's troop. (See Cornet Nunne, Pontefract siege, Vol.1).

Cornet William Bright, claimed in the List from Essex, Captain Vernatt's troop.

Cornet James Chambers, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Fleetwood's troop.

Cornet Thomas Goodyear, claimed in the List from Derbyshire.

Cornet John Mainwaring, claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Captain Fleetwood's troop.

Quartermaster Robert Clough, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster John Dunkin, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Grimston's troop.

Quartermaster Cuthbert Halely, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ord's troop.

Quartermaster William Reddish, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Copley's troop.

Colonel Thomas SLINGSBY'S Regiment of Horse.

Whilst we can be fairly sure of this regimental structure, we know very little of its activities. It fought at Hunslett in March 1644 (see Vol. 1), and was probably part of the Northern Horse. It may have grown from a troop of volunteers raised by Colonel Henry Slingsby (q.v.), the clue to this being in the person of the regimental major, Andrew Grey (q.v., below).

Colonel Thomas Slingsby: He was third of the three sons of Sir Henry Slingsby of Scriven near Knaresborough, who died in 1634, and consequently a brother of Colonel Sir Henry Slingsby. Awarded his MA at Oxford in 1642, he next appears in York at its surrender, at least according to his composition proceedings. He was fined £340, a large sum suggestive that he was in business in some way in York, of which town he was ordinarily styled, Esquire. He admitted his rank. It is not impossible that he was the Mr. Slingsby captured at Sherburn in Elmet in October 1645, although his composition records do not support this. In 1648 the ordinance to clear his delinquency was drafted. In October 1650 he was bound in £1000 to appear when required, and to be of good behaviour, and was subsequently granted a pass to sojourn in York for six weeks, so evidently the authorities had their eye on him. He died in 1670.⁶³⁸

Lt. Colonel Thomas Metcalfe: Cited in the List, he was third of the four sons of Sir Thomas Metcalfe of Nappa Hall who died in 1655. Thomas was married to the sister of Cornet Burdet, also of this regiment (see below). From a classic case of a declining gentry family, he succeeded his brother James as lord of Nappa and died in 1684 aged 70. As a JP at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1776 a man was presented for saying of him, "if a dog or a cat went to Mr. Metcalfe for a warrant they might have it granted".⁶³⁹

Major Andrew Grey: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, see the same man, Sir Henry Slingsby's Foot. He was, according to Sir Henry, governor of Cawood Castle when it surrendered to the Hothams in October 1642, described as a "Scotsman, one Captain Gray, wch afterwards was maior in my Regiment of Voluntiers". Grey is cited, without forename, under Henry Slingsby, and for it not to be the same man would be too coincidental. He may have transferred to an active service unit when Henry Slingsby's Foot became permanently on garrison duty in York.⁶⁴⁰

Captain [] Wharton: Cited in the List, possibly Michael Wharton of Beverley, eldest son of Captain Michael Wharton of Cholmeley's Horse (q.v.). He was in arms, yielded in 1644, and was fined £1600 in respect of his own and his father's delinquency, his father being dead. However, the possibility cannot be ruled out that the

man in Cholmeley's and this man were one and the same, the move to Cholmeley's a consequence of the surrender of York.⁶⁴¹

Lieutenant William Blanchard: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wharton's troop. Such a man, of York, Gentleman, died in 1663.⁶⁴²

Cornet Amery Burdet: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Metcalfe's troop, his brother in law. He was second of the sons of Francis Burdet(t) of Birthwayt, JP, who died in 1637/8, by the father's second marriage. Himself styled of Swawell, he was born in 1624 and was at Oxford in 1640. Possibly the Emor Burdett of Denby in Pennistone, probate granted 1678.⁶⁴³

Cornet Thomas Vavasour: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Metcalfe's troop. Possibly Thomas of Weston, Gentleman, son of William Vavasour of Weston, Esquire who, an aged delinquent, resided in York during the siege. His son Thomas was in arms in 1648 as well, and was fined in November 1650 the heavy sum of £593.19.2d.⁶⁴⁴

Colonel John SMITH'S Regiment of Horse.

Young assumed that this was a regimental structure, and the evidence, slim as it is, tends to support the view. Of the regiment's doings we know next to nothing, although from details concerning its colonel, it was probably recruited in 1642/3. A regiment for which lt. colonel and major are lacking, it probably never approached full strength.

Colonel John Smith: The son of George Smith of Eshe in Co. Durham, and related to the Lambtons and Methams by marriage, George and his son John were staunch Catholics. Father and son compounded in 1630 as Recusants, and John compounded in the same year for his wife. In 1642 he was listed as a Papist commissioned in Newcastle's army, and his property at Elmedon, Barmeton and Sedgfield was sequestered in 1644, Elmedon alone returning rents of £100 a year by 1650/1. He signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, and died, in exile in Paris, in 1649. His son and heir John II, died in 1651 and it was the fourth son, Edward, who succeeded to the Eshe estate. It does not appear, however, that Colonel John ever held the Eshe lands, but was, until his death, heir to his elder brother. This is not altogether clear. In 1660 a patent to make Edward Smith of Eshe a Baronet was granted in acknowledgement of the father's services as a colonel of horse to Charles I.⁶⁴⁵

Captain Ralph Booth: Claimed in the List from Durham (see also, Grey's Dragoons). Such a man refused the 1641/2 Protestation of Durham St. Oswald, and there is identified as the son of Richard Booth of Hurworth, and son in law of the Colonel Thomas Howard (q.v.) killed at Piercebridge in 1642.⁶⁴⁶

Cornet William Bulmer: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, second son of William Bulmer of Merrick, Esquire, also a delinquent. William II was styled in 1650 as of Silksworth, Co. Durham, a sequestered Recusant.⁶⁴⁷

Cornet Thomas Singleton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man of Mitton cum Bashall was listed as a Recusant in 1669.⁶⁴⁸

Quartermaster William Greenwell: Claimed in the List from Durham, probably William Greenwell of Stonilee, and of Greenwell Ford, Co. Durham, son of the William who died in 1624, cited as a Catholic delinquent. Alternatively in the will of Nicholas Greenwell of Fenhall in Lanchester Co. Durham, yeoman who died in 1640, are references to his son William principal legatee, and his nephew, also called William, son of John Greenwell.⁶⁴⁹

(Colonel Sir) Thomas STRICKLAND'S (Regiment of) Horse.

The existence of this 'regiment' is hedged with problems, hence the above qualifications of status. Similarly, we cannot be sure that Thomas Strickland was ever a colonel, at least not until 1648, if even then, but whilst this is to emphasise the doubts, there is no conclusive evidence against such a rank in, for example, 1644 when he was captured at the battle of Selby. This force of cavalry cannot be seen in isolation from the Foot of Colonel Sir Robert Strickland (q.v.), since it may have been an ancillary troop raised by Robert and handed over to his son to command. For a fuller discussion of the possibilities, we must turn to Thomas himself, with reference to the father's career and infantry.

(Colonel Sir) Thomas Strickland: Cited as a field commander in the List, he was first of the four sons of Colonel Sir Robert Strickland of Thornton Bridge, Yorkshire, and was himself styled of there and, later, of Kilnwick. Born in 1621, he matriculated at St. Alban Hall in 1638 and entered Gray's Inn. In May 1642 the King commissioned him to be captain of a company of Trainband foot, presumably in his father's regiment, with a prescribed company strength of 114 men. He apparently fought at Edgehill in command of his father's Foot, where he was knighted. So far, the point is fairly clear, and his early military career not beset with problems. To turn briefly to the father, it will be seen that in early 1643 the earl of Newcastle commissioned Sir Robert as Captain of the 'North Riding' troop of Horse, perhaps a body intended to wait upon the Queen, hence the strange name given to it. It is not unlikely, since Robert remained as a colonel of foot, that Thomas assumed command of this troop as its captain and may also have become, lt. colonel of the foot regiment (q.v., the matter is discussed at length). There is, therefore, every reason to suppose that the troop might have acquired, or attempted to acquire, regimental status by the time of Selby in 1644, after which it almost certainly broke up. Thomas may already have been an open Catholic, as his father was a covert one, and after his capture at Selby where he was alluded to as a lt. colonel (see Vol. 1, the matter is not clear, and the wording ambiguous), he was confined in London after a spell in Hull. He was then evidently exchanged, for in 1645 he was named by Lord Digby to the commission to govern Skipton garrison during the illness of Mallory, but he apparently came out of the garrison on December 1st 1645, before it finally yielded. When he petitioned in 1646, he claimed only that he had been a captain of cavalry. In arms in 1648, he is probably the lt. colonel Strickland captured at Appleby in September. He remained quiet during the Interregnum, and was apparently purchasing forfeited property, although he has been described as extravagant and wasteful, particularly after the restoration when, farming the tax on Scottish salt, he became heavily in debt. During the reign of Charles II he was openly a Catholic, even though

Knight of the Shire for Westmorland in 1661. In 1664 appointed to the Commission for regulating corporations, in 1676 he was expelled from the House for his Catholicism, having been presented as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1674. He was one of the few who stood by James II in 1688, and went with him into exile, dying in France in 1694.⁶⁵⁰

Major [] Philipson: Cited in the List, almost certainly a second war rank. See Captain Robert Philipson, Sir Philip Musgrave's Horse.

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant John Threlkeld, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Cornet John Beck, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Cornet Richard Graham, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Philipson's troop (therefore, presumably a 1648 rank).

Colonel Richard TEMPEST'S Regiment of Horse.

To be distinguished from that of Colonel Sir Richard Tempest (q.v.). A doubt has arisen as to whether this 'regiment' ever existed, and the 19th century writers tended to dismiss it as a fiction in the family pedigrees. However, he appears too clearly in the List and enough of the officers can be identified to make the regimental structure a reality, if never up to full strength or properly approaching it.

Colonel Richard Tempest: Born in 1620/1, son and heir of Sir Richard Tempest of Bowling Hall and Bracewell who died in 1639.

Richard II, ordinarily resident at Bracewell, had an unhappy military career. A Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire, he was taken in arms in 1642 and sent to Manchester. It has been assumed that he no longer participated in the war, but he must have been exchanged, for in January 1644 there is a clear allusion to "Tempest of Bowling" being ordered to raise forces to assist Newcastle. However, the regiment may, by this time, have disbanded, and officers moved to other regiments (see, for example, Major Salvin below). In 1646 Tempest petitioned to compound on a fine of £1056, but was apparently out in 1648, for a second fine was levied in 1649 of £1748. These fines apparently ruined him, for after a brief spell abroad in 1654 on business for which he obtained a permit, he found himself in King's Bench for debt and died in 1657.⁶⁵¹

Major [] Salvin: Cited in the List, but see the same man (?) as Lt. Colonel in Sir Richard Tempest's Horse.

Captain Samuel Banks: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Meareboth, Conisby in Lincolnshire, he died in 1685. See most pertinently, the next officer.⁶⁵²

Captain Tempest Brighthouse: Claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, he was son and heir of Richard Brighthouse of Bradford, Gentleman, who was assessor for raising monies. He is mentioned in his father's will of 1650 as to have the remainder of the property in Bradford and Horton, provided that he pay £150 to his sister within two years of their father's death. In 1663 Tempest was 45 years old. He did not compound, but his father was fined £51.⁶⁵³

Captain Richard Monk: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but almost certainly Richard Mounkes or Monke of Gisburn, Gentleman, fined £210 in 1649.⁶⁵⁴

Captain John Roe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man of Norton Priory did not appear at Dugdale's visitation.⁶⁵⁵

Lieutenant John Manknowles: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Roe's troop. Possibly a relation of Henry

Mancknowles, of Marsden, Papist, deceased.⁶⁵⁶

Quartermaster William Sadler: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Salvin's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Trimdon.⁶⁵⁷

The following officer has not been identified.

Quartermaster Thomas Holt, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Richard TEMPEST'S Regiment of Horse.

Colonel Tempest came to prominence largely in the 1648 war, but his regiment certainly existed between 1642 and 1645. There is a specific reference to it in the composition of Thomas Shalford of Eppleton who admitted to sending a man called Robinson as a trooper under Tempest.⁶⁵⁸ With this regiment, however, we come up against the problem of determining between first and second war ranks, which is, as has been said, quite often insurmountable, for even a composition in 1649 does not mean delinquency only in 1648. However, in this regiment there are specific officers for whom we can with a degree of certainty ascribe a 1648 role, but it is not conclusive and caution requires their insertion in the analysis, with such qualifying remarks as may seem necessary. From details concerning certain officers, it is clear that this regiment was probably in Northumberland with Glemham from the start of 1644, and later fought on Marston Moor, which means that it must have served in the Durham campaigns in March and April. No doubt it became part of the Northern Horse.

Colonel Sir Richard Tempest: Of Stella, Co. Durham, born in 1620, first of the five sons of Sir Thomas Tempest, Bart., whom Richard succeeded in 1641. His father had been a convicted Recusant in 1630, and Richard, who matriculated at Queen's College in 1636 and entered Lincoln's Inn in that year, was repeatedly alluded to as a Papist during the civil war. He was appointed to the Commission of Array for Durham in 1642, and next appears with certainty, in 1644 at Alnwick where, in January, Glemham was in talks with his subordinates as to the methods to be adopted against the Scots (see Vol. 1). At the end of the year he was signing letters in Newcastle during the latter stages of the siege. In 1648 he was captured either at Coquet Water as commander of the Durham forces, or at Cartington Castle when it fell, but escaped custody and went abroad. In 1651 he was listed as a Catholic delinquent, and his property inserted in the first Treason Act, of that year. He seems to have been back in England by 1650, for in that year orders went out to prevent him from leaving London for the north. In 1656 he was noted as a reliable Royalist in northern England, but if he was involved in conspiracy he kept it very covert. In 1660 listed to provide a horse and man for the Lord Lieutenant's muster, he died in 1662 and was buried in St. Giles, Durham.⁶⁵⁹

(Colonel Sir William Blakiston): Cited in the List, this is a brigade rank dating to 1648. See Colonel Blakiston in his own right.

(Lt. Colonel) Sir Nicholas Cole: Cited in the List as a field commander in his own right, his designation in this regiment is somewhat arbitrary. It is, however, based upon the evidence for (Major) Sir Francis Liddell, (q.v., below).

Sir Nicholas was the son and heir of Ralph Cole of Newcastle, "considered by his contemporaries to be one of the richest men in the North", as Howell put it. Ralph gave his son the Brancepeth estate. Nicholas, created a Baronet in 1640, had been Sheriff of Newcastle in 1633 and Mayor in 1640, his election to that post seen by Howell as a sign of a heavy swing against the Puritan and Parliamentary interest in the city. Imprisoned by the Scots in 1640 for his obstructiveness, in 1642 he was appointed to the Commission for Array for the county, and was declared a delinquent in the same year. At the outbreak of war, styled ordinarily as of Gateshead, from which place he could keep an eye on his commercial ventures (he was Governor of the Hostmen in 1641), he gave money to the cause. Of his activities we know very little, but he was in the city during the siege, and had signed the letters of defiance in February 1644 (see Vol. 1). With the surrender of the city, he escaped custody and was able to get to London, where he went into hiding (clearly with merchant friends) until he could safely compound, which he did in 1650/1 having been fined £312.10s. This fine lends some support to the view that certain persons were leniently treated, but it must be pointed out that his father was then alive and also fined as a delinquent. The new, ruling Parliamentary oligarchy in Newcastle did not, however, anticipate his return to the city with any enthusiasm, and tried to have him kept in London whilst they prepared charges against him. He was not, however, long delayed, and seems to have re-established his position at least by 1656/7. With the restoration, Cole underwent a change in his attitude, encouraging sectaries, particularly Quakers, and it was said that he never entered the city "except to make disturbance". He died in 1669. (It is unlikely that this rank represents a 1648 position in view of Cole's being then in London).⁶⁶⁰

(Major) Sir Francis Liddell: Cited three times in the List, as field officer in his own right, as such under Cole, and as such under Tempest. It is upon this link that Cole is inserted in the regiment, and by a process of elimination the rank of major advanced for Liddell. A Catholic Recusant, he was born in 1607, second of the seven sons of Thomas Liddell of Redheugh, Co. Durham. Mayor of Newcastle in 1625, Thomas was created a Baronet in 1636, and Francis succeeded him, but when is not clear. In 1636, by which time a brother in law of (Lt. Colonel) George Tong of Anderson's Horse (q.v.), he was giving evidence against the future regicide John Blakiston. Then aged 28, it was said that he had lived away from the city and had not been resident there since he was 16, which might have had something to do with his Catholicism. Elected Sheriff in 1640, on the same platform as Cole, he formed part of the Royalist, pro-court swing in Newcastle politics already alluded to. He was not, however, so thorough-going as most, and was in 1645 described as a "moderate enemy", whatever that may mean. Styled of Bamburgh and Redheugh, he was fined £342.16s in 1649,

which included activity in 1648. Governor of the Hostmen in 1665 and Mayor of Newcastle in 1666, Sir Francis died in 1680.⁶⁶¹

Captain [] Clavering: Cited in the List, perhaps the same as Thomas Clavering of Clavering's Horse (q.v.) but also, perhaps, John, fourth of the seven sons of Sir John Clavering of Callaly, and a brother of Colonel Robert Clavering (q.v.). John II, who matriculated at Queen's College in 1638, petitioned to compound in 1650 and was living in 1687.⁶⁶²

Captain Richard Cole: Cited in the List under Cole, perhaps a relation, but see also Anderson's Horse and James King's Horse.

Captain Richard Morpeth: Claimed in the List from Durham, he was of Stillington, Gentleman, sequestered in 1644, a Catholic. The son of Christopher Morpeth of the same who died in 1640, Richard died in 1670. He refused the Protestation of 1641/2 when he was at Redmarshal, and on the outbreak of war, according to his composition papers, went into Cumberland and took up arms. His debts amounted at the time of composition to £300, and his fine was set at £100.⁶⁶³

Captain [] Tempest: Cited in the List, the matter is wide open to speculation, but the name is not altogether common and in view of the regiment, the pedigree may be trusted when it alludes to Robert, sixth of the nine sons of Sir Stephen Tempest of Broughton (who died in 1626) killed in arms as a captain of horse.⁶⁶⁴

Lieutenant Henry Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, under Cole, Captain Fenwick's troop. Probably of Askrigg, yeoman, presented with his wife as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1634.⁶⁶⁵

Lieutenant William Ord: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but the Ords are as thick on the ground as the Fenwicks and Erringtons. Such a man of Thistlerigg and probably of Berwick, Catholic delinquent in arms, was sequestered, but the number of possible identifications is in excess of six and lacking additional information, precludes accuracy.⁶⁶⁶

Lieutenant Edmund Sober: Claimed in the List from Durham in Captain Smith's troop, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Darlington.⁶⁶⁷

Cornet Thomas Carmigal (Carmichael): Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Cole's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Sunderland.⁶⁶⁸

Cornet Thomas Douglass: Claimed in the List from Northumberland under (Major) Liddell, such of Berwick signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁶⁶⁹

Cornet Ambrose Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Colonel Blakiston's (brigade) troop; such of Matfin, Gentleman, listed as a Recusant between 1677 and 1682, died in 1714. The rank of cornet in 1642/5 or in 1648 might fit his age.⁶⁷⁰

Cornet George Hume: Claimed in the List from Durham, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Morpeth, Northumberland.⁶⁷¹

Cornet Ralph Ord: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Liddell's troop. Perhaps seventh of the seven sons of William Ord of East Ord, High Sheriff in 1638/9, Ralph born in 1623.⁶⁷²

Cornet Thomas Parker: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, such a man of Grafton Leigh had his lands inserted in the third Treason Act, and sold to Cuthbert Tyldesley.⁶⁷³

Quartermaster Ralph Hedworth: Claimed in the List from Durham, Blakiston's (brigade) troop. Of Chester le Street, an undischarged delinquent in 1651, he had refused the 1641/2 Protestation, and was styled Gentleman.⁶⁷⁴

Quartermaster Thomas Stobbs: Claimed in the List from Durham, (Lt. Colonel) Cole's troop. Presented in 1633 for a clandestine marriage, his mother was presented for scandalous words; that Protestants were "lost people" and "they did God good service who did kill one of them". She equated the Anglican catechism with two dozen Robin Hood stories in terms of value. The case was dropped.⁶⁷⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Edward Duncombe, claimed in the List from Durham.

Captain [] Fenwick, cited in the List under Cole.

Captain [] Smith, cited in the List.

Captain James Watson, claimed in the List from Northumberland under Liddell.

Lieutenant Thomas Iley, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Clavering's troop.

Lieutenant William Wilkinson, claimed in the List from Durham under Liddell.

Quartermaster Edward Hodgson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Tempest's troop.

Quartermaster Henry Manger, claimed in the List from Durham under Cole.

Quartermaster William Wilson, claimed in the List from Durham, Liddell's troop, under Cole.

Colonel Francis TRAFFORD'S Regiment of Horse.

Going by the List, this was almost totally a Yorkshire horse unit, and its origins can be traced to 1643 with certainty. However, it is shrouded in a mantle of mystery, in that neither the colonel nor the major can be positively identified, and the lt. colonel only tentatively. Young, in his examination of the northern cavalry,⁶⁷⁶ which was almost entirely based upon a direct reading of the List, ignored Trafford. Yet on November 14th 1643 the regiment was at Scarborough, and was being issued with 232 pistols from the York magazine.⁶⁷⁷ Indeed, together with 100 swords, this sounds like a newly raised regiment or a newly equipped one. It may possibly be the time at which a force from Ireland, under a Colonel Trafford, which had landed in North Wales, was strengthened. This is, however, conjectural.⁶⁷⁸ For further, slender clues to this regiment's whereabouts, see Colonel Trafford, below.

Colonel Francis Trafford: Cited in the List as a field commander, he also claimed himself from London/Westminster as a colonel of horse under Newcastle. Two other colonels claimed under Newcastle, but it cannot be ignored that this may be the missing field commander of Newcastle's own cavalry regiment (q.v.). Want of proof necessitates caution, and thus we must take the claim under Trafford in the List as indicating a distinctive regimental structure. Trafford may well be the Catholic major dismissed from the army in 1640 on religious grounds. He does not appear in the pedigree of the Traffords of Trafford, a Royalist family on the whole, but that may merely mean that he came from a cadet or collateral branch. He was in York on October 30th 1643 receiving weapons, and we have already noted the issue in November. It seems probable he was equipping for a move north, and may have served with the main army against the Scots. In October 1644 we next hear his regiment is in North Wales. Sir Thomas Middleton reported to the Committee of Both Kingdoms on the 29th of that month that 'Sir' Francis Trafford, "a professed papist" was in defence of Ruthin Castle with 120 horse and 200 foot, sharing command with Colonel Marcus Trevor. "Colonell Trevor and Collonell Trafford with about four hundred horse and foot whoe withstoode our entrancē into the towne but after some exchange of shotte were beate uppon them, and beate them out of the towne". What became of Trafford cannot presently be said.⁶⁷⁹

Lt. Colonel [] Morley: Cited in the List, but even lacking the forename, the possibilities are few supposing that the field officers would reflect the general northern appearance of the regiment. He was probably Francis Morley of Wennington in Lancashire, Gentleman, third of the three sons of Francis Morley who died in 1649. Francis II, born in 1609 and compounding as a Recusant in 1629, "hazarded his life in the service of Charles I" and fled to Europe, returning,

according to the pedigree, to find his wife had supposed him dead and had re-married, whereupon he went back to France. It seems romantic, but not for that reason improbable. His father, who dwelt in Thurland Castle during the siege, returned to Wennington and gave men to the Parliamentarian cause. The heir to the family, Thomas, was, like his father, a leaseholder of Lord Morley (q.v.), and was listed as a Catholic delinquent, although he apparently managed to compound by taking the requisite oaths, with a fine £165 though he protested he was a "poore gent".⁶⁸⁰

Major Godfrey Dennis: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, a Major "Dinnis" was a standing officer in Pontefract garrison in 1645. There is a reference in September 1642 to "two strangers", Dennis and Ballard, raising horse for the King near Sheffield.⁶⁸¹

Captain [] Hillyard: Cited in the List, probably Christopher, first of three sons of Richard Hilyard of Ottringham, and son in law of (Colonel) Sir Francis Cobbe(q.v.). Christopher, born in 1614, was styled of Routh, Gentleman, and in his composition admitted to laying down his arms in 1644 at the fall of York, but was afterwards seized by Cholmeley's raiders as a deserter and detained for 10 days. He admitted to having been an officer. A fine of £130 was imposed.⁶⁸²

Captain Richard Hunter: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man of Frodingham had his lands in the third Treason Act of 1652, and such a man of Bishop Burton was dead by 1677. Bishop Burton and Frodingham are both in the East Riding and not far apart.⁶⁸³

Captain George Thimbleby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, but in a document of November 17th 1643 referred to as receiving weapons for Trafford's 'Dragoons'. He may be George Thimbleby of Snydal, Gentleman, who died in 1664, the son of Charles Thimbleby of the same who was a convicted Recusant in 1629 and was fined £2083.13.9d. as a Catholic delinquent.⁶⁸⁴

Captain Edward Wyvall: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, this is very probably Edmund Wyvall, fourth (or second) of the four sons of Sir Marmaduke Wyvell of Burton Constable, and married into the Lowthers of Cumberland. Perhaps the Captain "Winell" cited as a prisoner of war on February 10th 1644 (see Vol. 1).⁶⁸⁵

Lieutenant John Errington: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Wyvell's troop. Possibly he of Wood Appleton and Whitby Strand, Gentleman, who surrendered in November 1645, and took the Covenant. His fine of £75 was reduced to £45.⁶⁸⁶

Cornet Thomas Lowther: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Wyvell's troop, the link seeming to confirm the identification made for Wyvell. Perhaps third of the four sons of (Colonel) Sir Richard Lowther (q.v., Vol. 1, and Appendix IV).⁶⁸⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Cornet John Hall, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Dennis's troop.

Quartermaster Philip Herbert, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Hillyard's troop.

Quartermaster Charles Jackson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Morley's troop.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas TYLDESLEY'S Regiment of Horse.

Here again, we are concerned with a regimental structure that emerged in 1642/6, again in 1648, and finally in 1651. The usual problems attend a survey of its officers. It was raised in Lancashire early in 1643, though it may have had some initial troop(s) operating as early as September 1642 (see Vol. 1). Drafted away from Lancashire, it was at Hawarden on March 20th where it sustained an attack without appreciable loss.⁶⁸⁸ Going back into Lancashire in April, the regiment served at Whalley (see Vol. 1) and in the last campaigns of the earl of Derby, before being summoned back south to join the Oxford army. Receiving equipment at Oxford on November 17th 1643⁶⁸⁹ the regiment was sent away north again in the same month to help consolidate Lord Byron's foothold in the Cheshire/Lancashire area (see Molyneux's Horse). It remained in the area until the arrival of Rupert on his way to relieve York, and was reported beating up siege lines around Lathom in April 1644 (see Vol. 1). Engaged on Marston Moor, it would seem from the officer details that it suffered badly. Returning south with Rupert, it was temporarily engaged in Lancashire in August, probably involved at Ormskirk (see Vol. 1) in that month. Thereafter, its manpower declining, it disappeared into the general cavalry forces of the Oxford army, only Tyldesley himself emerging as a recognisable figure at certain critical moments. This is another regiment in which the officer cadre was almost entirely Catholic or Recusant, which suggests a deliberate policy on Tyldesley's part. Comparison can be made, for example, with the cavalry units of Robert Clavering, George Middleton, Viscount Molyneux and, among others, Walter Vavasour.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas Tyldesley: He was born in 1596, son and heir of Edward Tyldesley of Morley's Hall in Leigh, Lancashire, and cousin by marriage of the Viscount Molyneux (q.v.). The question of his religious persuasion remains far from certain, for although looked upon by his Lancashire contemporaries as a Catholic he was not a Recusant. Styled ordinarily as of Myerscough, Esquire. He was early active for the King: "In Amundernesse among the Papists there were severall Companies rayzed under the leading of Mr. Thomas Tildesley of Merskoe as Colonell, a man much esteemed in the Country, most were willing to comply with him". That is a telling remark from a Parliamentarian writer, not only in that it implies Tyldesley was a Catholic without saying as much, but in that it shows he was a man of no small significance. This may account for the campaign of vilification directed at him over the years. William Pilkington, a compounding Royalist, deposed during his proceedings that Tyldesley, busy raising men in Wigan, had boasted that the mayor of Preston planned to arrest him (this seems hardly likely in view of Mayor Mort's politics, see Vol. 1), and that had he done so, his gaol would have been fired. "Truly", remarked one

Parliamentarian, "it were well if the Parliament would send for this Tilsley, for he is a Captaine, one of the Commission of Array, and doth more harme than any man I know....[his] lieutenant and one of his sergeants are Papists". Here again, the implication is unavoidable, although the problem of his exact rank in 1642 remains in doubt. It is likely that he began as a captain, and may even have held a Trainband rank. A man of experience in the European wars, and a covert Catholic (as we must consider him), this would account for his ease in raising men. Present in June at the riot in Manchester (see Vol. 1), he was later accused of killing the first man in the civil war, Richard Perceval a linen weaver, but as has been shown, this was scurrilous propaganda. Present at Preston Moor Array in the same month, he was closely associated with the command of Derby's army at least until October, when he may have marched away south with Molyneux. Although his regiment was apparently at Hawarden in mid-March 1643, Tyldesley was himself said to have been at the burning of Lancaster and, in consequence, at the storm of Preston afterwards. That is not unlikely. On March 15th he was described by Mercurius Aulicus as a lt. colonel, and this raises the problem of his precise rank, for according to the monument raised to him by Cornet Alexander Rigby (who served under him in 1651) at Wigan Lane, he was also a lt. colonel at Edgehill. The regimental designation is a mystery, unless Tyldesley was Derby's lt. colonel and fought with Derby's Horse (a poorly documented regiment, q.v.) as its field commander. He fought at Whalley in April, after which he is recorded as retreating to Wigan with nine troops of horse and 700 foot, although it is unlikely that these represented his own regiments, rather than a homogeneous Royalist force. Joining the Queen at York, and probably by now a colonel in his own right, he was knighted for his part in the storming of Burton on Trent as the Queen's forces made their way south to Oxford, (see in this context, Darcy's Foot). On November 22nd at Evesham, by the 29th he was marching north with Molyneux to assist Byron and to prepare for the arrival of 'Irish' regiments in Cheshire. In that county throughout January, February and March 1644, he was raiding into Lancashire in April, and marched with Rupert to Marston Moor in June. On September 18th, he was captured in action near Montgomery Castle, and sent to Stafford as a prisoner. On October 2nd Meldrum wrote to the Committee of Both Kingdoms concerning plans for Tyldesley's exchange, and noting that the local people in Lancashire (or part of Lancashire) were strongly against such a scheme in view of his record. It did not much matter, for he contrived his own escape. Various secondary sources seem to imply that he was commanding in Liverpool when that port surrendered in November, but that seems unlikely (see Vol. 1). Apprehended a second time, apparently, and on this occasion exchanged, he ended the first civil war in Lichfield garrison, having a narrow escape whilst raiding from there toward Cannock, "being unhorst [he] gott into some house and could not bee found", though he lost both "horse cloake and hatt". Deputy governor

to Lord Aston, he refused a summons from Brereton for the surrender of the town. On June 6th 1646 the King wrote to him from Newcastle: "The greatest of my misfortunes is that I cannot reward so gallant and loyal a subject as you are as I ought and would: for the present I must deal freely with you, and give you my conditions, which is that I can give you no relief but desire you to hold out until Oxford be rendred, which will be ranked amongst the rest of the good services done by you to your most assured friend...". Unable to rest, Tyldesley was plotting in early 1647 for the rescue of the King, although he had been barred by name from the court and from holding any office. Taken again whilst plotting, he escaped and made his way probably into Scotland. On September 18th 1648 he was near Berwick "with about fifteen hundred...not suffered to come in". Making his way west, he joined the forces which were broken at Appleby, where he was captured and given six months to settle his affairs and then to go overseas. Returning with the army of Charles II in 1651, he was at Warrington on the Council of War on August 19th, and was killed in action soon after at Wigan Lane, where his monument stands.⁶⁹⁰

(Lt. Colonel) Hugh Anderton: This rank may represent 1648 activity, although that is by no means certain. However, in the sequestration proceedings concerning this most thorough-going Royalist, he was referred to as a major. Here again, it is not impossible that Tyldesley, like James King (q.v.), may have opted for a major as second in command of a cavalry regiment, rather than a lt. colonel. Anderton is cited twice in the List. Born in 1600, the son of William Anderton of Euxton, Esquire, who died in 1618, Hugh and his mother compounded as Recusants in 1630, and Hugh was a Catholic throughout his life. In 1642 Derby's Commissary for Amounderness Hundred, he was described as a "dangerous Papist". In 1643 he was serving with Derby's army in the Lancashire campaigns (see Vol. 1) and although captured at the fall of Preston, was present at its recapture. In his composition, Anderton admitted to his Catholicism, and stated that at this date he was a major, a rank which he never deviated from in his deposition, even though there is a clear reference to him by rank in Liverpool in November 1644 as lt. colonel. In Oxford in August 1643, he was styled major. He appears again in 1647 refusing the negative oath, and in 1649 his wife petitioned to be allowed one fifth of her husband's sequestered estates for her maintenance, and in the proceedings it was stated that Anderton had been in arms in Ireland, probably in 1648/9. In arms in 1651, after being released from captivity in the castle at Lancaster by the Royalist forces, Mercurius Politicus spoke of him as "a bloody Papist, and one that when Prince Rupert was at Bolton, boasted much of being to the elbows in blood at that cruell massacre". After the collapse of the rising, and the death of Tyldesley, Anderton was almost certainly a marked man, and appears to have kept himself hidden. In 1652 his property was inserted in the Treason Act, and the authorities at last managed to

lay their hands on him in 1656. Major General Worsley wrote to Thurloe in February: "I light of one Hugh Anderton in Lancashire, one noted by all your friends to be one of the most wicked, dangerouse men in this commone welth. I intend to send him to the castle of Chester to the rest. Hee hath bene sought for often, but could never be found before. Hee was deepe in the blood of Boulton". Clearly one of the most notorious of the northern Royalists, he survived into the restoration and died in 1670, re-established at Euxton.⁶⁹¹

Captain [] Anderton: Cited in the List, without a forename the problem is insurmountable. It may be a reference to Lt. Colonel Anderton as a troop commander, or in an earlier rank, but, more likely, to one of the many Andertons, all of them Catholics or Recusants, who were in arms during the war. Particular mention should here be made of Hugh's younger brother, James, and of Hugh's son, also called James. However, James Anderton of Burchley, Esquire, born in 1617, heir of Roger Anderton of the same, seems a more likely identification. He succeeded his father in 1640, and came in in 1646 on Ludlow articles, but was prevented from compounding since he was a Recusant. His property was sold in 1653.⁶⁹²

Captain [] Bailden: Cited in the List, the name is not common and two possibilities present themselves. If this is a 1642/6 rank, then he is probably William Baylton of Barneker, Yeoman, a delinquent. More likely, perhaps, but in that case a 1651 rank, is Francis Bailden of Bailden Yorkshire, in arms as a minor. Francis was born in 1626/7 at the earliest. He was listed for the Royal Oak knight-hoods in 1660 when his estate, drawn mainly from colliery interests, was reckoned at £600 yearly. He had been a ward of Colonel Francis Malham of Elslack (q.v.).⁶⁹³

Captain John Bamber: Cited in the List, referred to by a contemporary as of the Lower Moor, Catholic. He died in the Isle of Man, according to the proceedings in his son's attempt to compound for sequestered property. John was the second son of Richard Bamber of Moor House in Carleton, Gentleman, who died in 1631.⁶⁹⁴

Captain Rowland Beckingham: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, styled of Hornby, Gentleman, fined £16 for being in arms between 1642/6, though he did not petition until 1651. In the papers of Richard Horton is a reference to this officer, Captain Beckingham, in action in 1648 in the Hornby Castle area, and Horton deposed that Beckingham told him to raise a troop of horse, otherwise he would "drive his grounds". Evidently a servant of Lord Morley (q.v.), he had the responsibility of managing the Hornby estate.⁶⁹⁵

- Captain Edward Bradley: Cited in this rank and regiment by a contemporary observer, and singled out as a Protestant in an otherwise Catholic officer cadre. Possibly, but not necessarily, the same as Captain Bradley of Sir Timothy Featherstonehaugh's Foot (q.v.). He was the son and heir of James Bradley of Bryning in Lancashire who died in 1627. Born in 1602 or 1604, Bradley was killed in action on Marston Moor.⁶⁹⁶
- Captain John Brooks: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, possibly twice, see Vere's Horse.
- Captain John Butler: Cited in the List, confirming the rank given in the pedigrees. Son and heir of John Butler of Kirkland, Lancashire, who died in 1659, John was in arms at Ormskirk where he was killed in action, August 1644. His father was a convicted Recusant, but John, apparently conformable, compounded on his mother's behalf.⁶⁹⁷
- Captain [] Carus: Cited in the List, but see Middleton's Horse.
- Captain Gervase Clifton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, probably for 1648 or 1651. See the same man (?), Queen's Horse
- Captain Cuthbert Hesketh: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was first of the six sons of Gabriel Hesketh or Heskith of White Hill, born in 1624 and still alive in 1664. A Foreign Burgess of Preston Guild in 1642, he was examined in the proceedings in 1652 in the case of William Winckley of Billington. Listed in 1680 as a Recusant, of Goosenargh. Not sequestered probably because his father was still living.⁶⁹⁸
- Captain Francis Holden: Claimed in the List from Middlesex, and cited, the son of John Holden of Chaigley, Gentleman, and a convicted Recusant in 1632.⁶⁹⁹
- Captain John Swinglehurst: Cited in the List, possibly the Captain Swinglehurst cited under Tyldesley's Foot (q.v.). Such a man was killed in action as a Catholic.⁷⁰⁰
- Captain Edmund Twaddell: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was of Myerscough and died c. 1666.⁷⁰¹
- Captain Charles Westby: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, fourth of the five sons of Thomas Westby of Burne and Molbreck, Esquire, the pedigree gives him as an officer in Charles II's Lifeguard (post-restoration). The father was a convicted Recusant in 1629.⁷⁰²

- Captain George Westby: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, also cited. The eldest son of Thomas of Burne and Molebreck (see Charles Westby, above). Styled of Upper Rawcliffe, a Catholic and, in 1680, a Recusant. The pedigree insists that he was a major.⁷⁰³
- Captain Robert Whitfield: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, such a man of Randleholm, Cumberland, had his lands inserted in the 1652 Treason Act. In 1660 he denounced former Parliamentarian committee man, Cuthbert Studholme, who was "not to be allowed to come near the King". Robert compounded as a Recusant in October 1632.⁷⁰⁴
- Captain Thomas Winckly: Cited in the List, eldest of the sons of John Winckl(e)y of Billington. Thomas compounded as a Recusant in 1632, having been listed as such in 1629/30, and his fine was in arrears in 1634. Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642, he was killed in arms near Liverpool in 1644 (probably at Ormskirk).⁷⁰⁵
- Lieutenant Richard Butler: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Butler's troop, eldest son of Henry Butler of Rawcliffe. Styled in the pedigree as captain, he was taken at Liverpool in 1644 and imprisoned in Manchester. He and his father were foreign burgesses of Preston in 1642, and Richard predeceased his father who died in 1664. Richard Butler of Liscoe is the Recusant of 1680.⁷⁰⁶
- Lieutenant William Gerard: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was of Punnington, yeoman, petitioning for his delinquency in the 1642/6 war, and fined £2.1.6d.⁷⁰⁷
- Lieutenant Richard Tempest: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bailden's troop (see Bailden, above). Tempest may have served in 1648 rather than in 1642/6. Of Bolton Hill, Yorkshire, fourth of the sons of Sir Stephen Tempest of Broughton, and connected with Lancashire through his wife, a Grimshaw from Clayton de la Mores. Listed as a Recusant in 1664.⁷⁰⁸
- Lieutenant Richard Waring: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, listed as a Catholic delinquent of Whittingham, yeoman, he tried to compound in 1649 for service in 1642/6.⁷⁰⁹
- Cornet Christopher Anderton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire in Captain Anderton's troop. In view of the suggested identification of the captain, this may well be the second son of Roger Anderton of Burchley. However, the forename is as common to the Andertons in all branches, as is that of James.⁷¹⁰

- Cornet William Dickinson: Claimed in the List from Middlesex, Captain Winckly's troop. Probably second of the four sons of William Dickinson who died in 1652, referred to in the pedigree as "of Gray's Inn" which implies the right age.⁷¹¹
- Cornet Hugh Dickinson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain George Westby's troop. A man of the same name claimed as a quartermaster in Dalton's Horse (q.v.). Hugh Dickinson of Wraisholme or Wrasom, styled variously as gentleman or yeoman (!) was the son of Sir William Dickinson of the same who died in 1652. Hugh, born in 1621, compounded in 1649 for service in arms and a fine of £124.10s. levied. However, he appears in 1655 as an undischarged Catholic delinquent. He died in 1664/5. (A Hugh Dickinson, son of William Dickinson of Eccleston, Gentleman, was a Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642 and may be the quartermaster of Dalton's Horse, although either identification might suit either rank).⁷¹²
- Cornet John Gardiner: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Anderton's troop. Possibly John Gardiner of Cockerholme, Gentleman, who petitioned in 1649 and was fined £5.10s. Alternatively, John Gardiner of Little Farrington, Gentleman, Foreign Burgess of the Preston Guild in 1642.⁷¹³
- Quartermaster Robert Adamson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, styled of Brough(ton), yeoman, undischarged Catholic delinquent in 1655. Son of Thomas of the same place.⁷¹⁴
- Quartermaster Henry Banister: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Winckly's troop. Probably third of the three sons of Thomas Ban(n)ister of Preston who died in 1630. Henry is styled as a citizen of London in the pedigrees, and must be the Henricus Bannester listed in 1642 as a Foreign Burgess of Preston, his elder brother William also referred to.⁷¹⁵
- Quartermaster John Hoole: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain George Westby's troop. There was a John Hoole, Captain of Clubmen to the earl of Derby in March 1643; and a John Hoole, first of the four sons of Robert Hoole of Attercliffe.⁷¹⁶
- Quartermaster Edward Oddy: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, has such of A(u)ghton, yeoman, will dated October 1663. No probate.⁷¹⁷
- Quartermaster Edward Rogerson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Holden's troop. There were Rogersons, Catholic Recusants, at Fullwood in 1639, yeomen, and two more such, of Manchester and Coppull, Gentleman and Webster,

were listed as delinquents. Not one of these four is named Edward, but a connection with one at least of them may be possible to sustain eventually.⁷¹⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Daniel Dale, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Lieutenant William Sharpe, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Cornet John Bradwood, claimed in the List from Cumberland in Captain Whitefield's troop.

Cornet Robert Ingleton, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Carus's troop.

Quartermaster John Maughan, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Quartermaster James Pearson, claimed in the List from Lancashire in Captain Banister's troop.

Quartermaster Edward Waring, claimed in the List from Middlesex, Captain Swinglehurst's troop.

Colonel Sir Walter VAVASOUR'S Regiment of Horse.

Next to Clavering's, probably the most Catholic regiment raised east of the Pennines. It is hard to trace its history as a unit, but it was evidently raised early in 1643 when Newcastle began to commission Catholic field officers. Certainly engaged with the main army, since from its officer lists it was clearly of substantial size, perhaps as near to full strength as any, the regiment was devastated at Selby in April 1644, which indicates that it did not go north with Newcastle against the Scots, (see Vol. 1). It had also been in action in the East Riding in March of the same year.⁷¹⁹ What was left of it joined the Northern Horse.

Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour: Colonel Vavasour was first of the five sons of Sir Thomas Vavasour of Hazlewood, Bart., who died in 1632. Sir Walter, born in 1613, was the brother-in-law of Lord Belasyse (q.v.). In January 1643 Lord Fairfax listed him as a commissioned papist. According to his petition to compound in 1650 (his lands were nonetheless inserted in the second Treason Act of 1652), he surrendered with York in July 1644 and was given a pass by Lord Fairfax to go abroad. He went from Hull to Rotterdam, and remained there until 1650 when he returned home. He may be the Sir W. Vavasour sent, in 1649, to Oldenburg with news of Charles I's death, to borrow 22000 dollars or a larger sum, or 10000 if more was not to be had. He lived in retirement during the Interregnum, but in July 1659 there is a warrant for his release from detention, so he must have been arrested on suspicion, or as a precaution, perhaps in the same year. He died in 1679, and within a few weeks was named as having been implicated in a spurious Catholic conspiracy against the crown.⁷²⁰

Colonel Francis Hungate: Second colonel of the regiment, taking over what was left at the fall of York, originally lt. colonel from the time of raising the regiment. The son and heir of Sir Philip Hungate of Saxton, Yorkshire, who, with his mother, had compounded as a Recusant in 1630. According to the pedigrees, Francis assumed the active role in the war intended for his father. He signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, and was killed in action at Rowton Heath in September of that year. There is a mural tablet in his memory at Saxton parish church. He is missing from his father's composition papers which chiefly concern Francis's son, also named Francis. His will was granted probate in 1650. His daughter Mary, married to John Fairfax of the Catholic branch of that family, was gaoled in 1684/5 for refusing the oath of allegiance then prescribed.⁷²¹

(Lt. Colonel) Sir William Blakiston: Cited in the List, the rank is conjectural. Not to be confused with Colonel Sir William Blakiston (q.v.) nor with

William Blakiston of Cholmeley's Foot (q.v.). This was very probably "Sir. Will. Blakeston, late of Old Byland Knight, otherwise Rob. Roberts of Royston in the County of Cambridge, Gentr. otherwise Will. Blakeston of Gibsett in the County of Durham Esq.", who, on August 26th 1657 "with force of arms att Old Byland, in and upon the Constable there in the publique peace an assault and affray did make, and the said Constable then and there did beat, wound and evilly intreate to his great damage". He was son and heir of Sir Ralph Blakiston of Gibside, Co. Durham, second baronet, who died in 1650/1, and grandson of Sir William of Gibside who died in 1641. This has to be stressed since the pedigree is occasionally confused by later writers. A Catholic, he was admitted to compound for his delinquency in arms in both wars, and paid his fine of £800 at Newcastle in 1652. The committee there complained that he had paid a fine assessed on his estates prior to his submission and that he had not taken the oath of abjuration. From his aliases, we might assume an active conspirator.⁷²²

Lt. Colonel John Vavasour: Thus cited under Hungate in the List, and he probably replaced Blakiston in the rank. He was fourth of the five sons of Sir Thomas Vavasour, and a younger brother of Colonel Vavasour. In 1652 he was drawing an annuity from the Hazlewood estate, and he is presumably the 'John Vaglor' signing the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse. A Mr. John Vavasour, on May 19th 1679, brought before the magistrates for seditious words, denied any Papist plot and challenged the Justices to prove it.⁷²³

Major [] Bland: Cited in the List, he is Adam, second of the two sons of Sir Thomas Bland of Kippax, and brother of Lt. Colonel Thomas Bland (q.v., Wentworth's Foot). Styled of South Cave, he was born in 1618 and died in 1657 having married the widow of Colonel Sir John Gerlington (q.v.). He signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse, and his property, being his wife's dower, was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. Named by Thurloe's agents as a leader in the 1654/5 rising, no action seems to have been taken. His will was proved in 1657 when he was styled as of South Cave, Esquire.⁷²⁴

Major William Vavasour: Cited in the List, he probably preceded Bland in the rank, since his younger brother rose to a higher rank under Hungate. Second of the five sons of Sir Thomas Vavasour, and brother of the colonel, rank and regiment were given by Dugdale in the pedigree. Clay suggests that he was killed, unmarried, at Tewkesbury, but suggests no date, and this is, I think not likely. Raising forces for Newcastle in January 1644, he was captured at Hunslett in March, released, and fought at Selby in April, going into exile with his brother after the fall of York, in his case because he was convalescing from a wound (see Vol.

1). He came back to England, perhaps in 1650, and in 1652 was drawing an annuity from the Hazlewood estate. He may be the William Vavasour of Yarm listed for knighthood in the Order of the Royal Oak, 1660, when his estate was estimated at £600 yearly. Almost certainly a Catholic, though unconvicted.⁷²⁵

Captain William Dol(e)man: Cited under Vavasour and Hungate in the List, he is dealt with under Eure's Horse (q.v.).

Captain [] Messenger: Cited in the List, see Clavering's Horse.

Captain [] Thwing: Cited in the List, identified as George Thwing. In March 1685 Catherine Lassells, widow of Lieutenant Edward Lassells (see this regiment), petitioned that she was confined in York gaol as a Recusant for refusing the oath of allegiance, and referred to her father George who had raised a troop of horse for the King. Of Kilton and Heyworth, Gentleman, he was presented as a Recusant in 1624, 1631, 1632 and 1639. There may be a reference to him, as a servant of Sir George Palmes of Naburn, presented in 1619. He contributed to the 250 Horse allotted in July 1642, and was cited by Lord Fairfax as a Catholic commissioned in January 1643. He took the oath and the covenant in 1645/7 to save his land, and was fined £906. He was in debt to the sum of £620, and his wife had to petition in 1646 for subsistence. Dead by 1660, his son petitioned for favour in respect of his own and his father's services.⁷²⁶

Captain John Thorpe: Cited in the List under Hungate and Vavasour, he was of Danthorpe, Yorkshire, son and heir of William Thorpe of the same by Elizabeth Vavasour of Willitoft and was born in 1614. His father died in 1620. He may be the same indicted as a Recusant in 1664 with his wife.⁷²⁷

Captain [] Vavasour: Cited in the List under Vavasour, probably the Lt. Colonel John Vavasour already dealt with. This is not conclusive, however. See a Captain Robert Vavasour in Appendix IV. A Captain Vavasour, probably the future Lt. Colonel Vavasour, was captured on February 10th 1644 on the Yorkshire Wolds (see Vol. 1).⁷²⁸

Lieutenant William Flesher: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Vavasour's troop, such a man was churchwarden at Sutton on the Forest in 1630 (in this connection, see Richard Harland in Saville's Horse).

Lieutenant John Giffard: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Vavasour's troop. Such a man born in 1604, was heir of Simon Giffard of Darlington.⁷²⁹

Lieutenant Nicholas Gifford: Claimed in the List from Staffordshire, Captain Thorpe's troop. The positive identification

of this man may call in doubt that tentatively put forward for John Giffard (see above). Nicholas was probably one of the younger sons of Walter Giffard of Chillingham, Staffordshire, who died in 1632 and whose eldest son, and heir, Peter, was an active Royalist. His mother was a convicted Recusant.⁷³⁰

Lieutenant Edward Lassells: Inserted in this regiment on the strength of the evidence concerning his father in law, Captain George Thwing (q.v.). He died before 1684.

Lieutenant James Mennel: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thwing's troop, sixth of the six sons of Anthony Maynell Esquire of North Kilvington, he was born in 1621 and was living in 1665, the father dying in 1669. A Catholic family, James was indicted as a Recusant in 1674.⁷³¹

Cornet Richard Calvert: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, under Hungate. Probably Richard, son of Richard Calvert of Cockerholme who died in 1650. The pedigree is hard to interpret satisfactorily, for want of dates. John Calvert of Cockerholme, a Recusant, had two sons, Richard the elder and John II. John II's son and heir, Richard, was 13 in 1650. Richard the elder son had a son Richard, his eldest, who was living when he himself died. Richard I, son and heir of John of Cockerholme Esquire, was born in 1598, being 18 at his father's inquisition post mortem.⁷³²

Cornet John Dolman: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Hungate, third of the four sons of Marmaduke Dol(e)man of Duncoats who died in 1670. May be the John Doleman of Awstbers, indicted as a Recusant in 1664.⁷³³

Cornet Thomas Frank: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, second of the three sons of George Frank of Knighton, Yorkshire, his elder brother a captain. The family had Recusant leanings, and Thomas was indicted in 1674.⁷³⁴

Cornet Edward Hamerton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, brother of Philip Ham(m)erton of Munkroyd, of a Recusant family. The father, Mathew, compounded in 1629 for himself and his eldest son, and had been presented in 1613. The pedigree gives rank, and Edward married a daughter of Colonel Sir Francis Cobbe (q.v.), two of his nieces becoming nuns.⁷³⁵

Cornet Bryan Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Messengers troop, such a man had probate granted in 1687.⁷³⁶

Quartermaster George Crawford: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wilson's troop, such a man of North Park had probate granted for his will in 1677.⁷³⁷

Quartermaster William Eratt: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, under Hungate, Lt. Colonel Vavasour's troop. Such a man of York died c. 1685.⁷³⁸

Quartermaster Thomas Eyves: Claimed in the List from Lancashire under Hungate. The name is extremely common at this period in Lancashire, both forename and surname in juxtaposition. Four such were listed as Foreign Burgesses of Preston in 1642. Two such, both of Fishwicke, distinguished as yeoman and as husbandman, were Catholic delinquents according to the composition and sequestration records extant.⁷³⁹

Quartermaster William Richmond: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Messenger's troop. Such of North Cave, yeoman, probate granted 1678. He may well be the victim of a sheep theft in 1637, and witness to another such theft in 1638.⁷⁴⁰

Quartermaster Ralph Seaton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thwing's troop, of Brotton, yeoman, fined £126 in 1649. Juror at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in 1639, styled Gentleman, and at Special Sessions in 1630 at Gisbrough. Brotton may be Broughton near Stokesley in the North Riding.⁷⁴¹

Quartermaster Richard Tempest: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Hungate's troop. Perhaps second of the four sons of Richard Tempest of Bowling.⁷⁴²

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Wilson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet John Garnett, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thorpe's troop.

Cornet Christopher Hutchinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wilson's troop.

Quartermaster William Atkinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Sir William Blakiston's troop.

Quartermaster Henry Jackson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thwing's troop.

Quartermaster Francis Ketling, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dolman's troop.

Quartermaster John Prince, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Bland's troop.

Quartermaster James Steude, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Vavasour's troop.

Quartermaster Peter Thomson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Robert Watson, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, under Hungate, Captain Dolman's troop.

Colonel Edward VERE'S Regiment of Horse.

Despite references to Vere in the first war, it is likely that here we have officers claiming for 1651 as well, as will be seen in the details which follow. It is not a well documented force, and the lt. colonel is unknown. Perhaps attached to Lathom garrison in 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Colonel Edward Vere: It has not proved possible to identify this man. On January 21st 1644 he was raiding the Parliament's siege lines around Lathom and at Knowsley House, and was actually in Lathom after Ormskirk, threatening raids on Liverpool siege lines in October. Raising horse around Preston in 1651, he sat on the Warrington Council of War and was taken, badly wounded, either at Warrington or Wigan Lane.⁷⁴³

Major John Bermingham: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, perhaps the Captain Bermingham to be permitted, according to an order of June 9th 1641 from the King to the Lords Justices and Privy Council in Ireland, to raise 100 volunteers to go to any foreign state at peace with the King. There is a reference to him again in August 1641 as a colonel. He was in Chester on March 23rd 1644, but beyond that, is unidentified.⁷⁴⁴

Captain John Brooks: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, probably a double claim (see Tyldesley's Horse). Such of Elston died in 1670, and such a man was probably a prisoner after Ormskirk.⁷⁴⁵

Captain Richard Eltenhead: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, either Richard I of Sutton, Gentleman, petitioned in 1649, or his son, Richard II, inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. The son was born in 1611 and was living in 1664, as was the father, but the age would suggest the son. The latter paid a £92.2s. fine.⁷⁴⁶

Captain John Shaw: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, possibly second of the four sons of Lawrence Shaw of High Bullhaighe, styled of Balerigg and Layton, died c. 1670.⁷⁴⁷

Lieutenant John Barton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire in Captain Bryers' troop, such of Claughton or Clayton, yeoman, Catholic delinquent undischarged in 1655. Barton is alluded to in connection with Lathom garrison.⁷⁴⁸

Lieutenant James Williams: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. In 1651 such a man of Carleton, observing troops marching toward Scotland, said to one "Thou prittie face,

hast thou noe better fortune than to fight against the King?" He also added that one of these days, they would all be hanged, and called them "traytorley rogues".⁷⁴⁹

Cornet Jeremy Crosston: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was fifth of the five sons, but eventually heir, of John Croston of Berry and Heath Charnock. John died in 1643 and Jeremy, born in 1621, was living at Thirsk in 1665. He married a French waiting lady of the Countess of Derby. A man of the same name was executed at Chester for treason in 1651.⁷⁵⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Bryers, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain John Hamilton, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain John Ward, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant William Heald, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Lieutenant Francis Masham, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Major Bermingham's troop.

Lieutenant Thomas Middleton, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Colonel Sir Edward WIDDRINGTON'S Regiment of Horse.

Another regiment with a pronounced Catholic quota in its officer ranks, it was raised in Durham and Northumberland in 1642/3 under the aegis of the earl of Newcastle. Its period of service was probably from then until it broke up after Marston Moor, some of the officers going into the Northern Horse, others dispersing, as will be seen, elsewhere. None of its specific actions can be traced, except to say that it almost certainly fought on Marston Moor and in the campaign against the Scots in the earlier part of 1644.

Colonel Sir Edward Widdrington: The eldest son, by the father's first marriage, of Roger Widdrington of Cartington Castle, Northumberland, he was born in 1614 and was a Catholic from his childhood. Created a baronet of Nova Scotia in 1635, he was listed as a Catholic commissioned in 1642 by Rushworth, and given as a commander under Newcastle in October. He seems to appear in Liverpool with Rupert in June 1644, which suggests that he was riding with Newcastle's cavalry sent away from York before the siege got properly under way. His property was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652, and he himself was granted a pass to go into Flanders for his health in 1654. Arrested in London in February 1657, he was released in August to go back to Holland. In London in March 1658, he was licensed to remain there, in June going to the "Spaw" by permission, which suggests both weak health and a continuing Royalist commitment (or a suspected one). In October 1660 he delivered a petition which is worth noting in full: He desired reparation for his losses from the estates of Parliamentarians whose property was forfeited; in obedience to Charles I's proclamation, he had raised forces against the Scots in 1639/40 and had been despoiled by them to the sum of £1,900. In 1642, he and his kinsman Lord Widdrington (q.v.), raised 3000 foot and horse to serve the King, and he had been sequestered and banished the realm. His wife had been fined £400 for giving intelligence to Royalist conspirators in the Interregnum, and Cartington Castle had been destroyed, worth some £8000. He died and was buried in Bruges date unknown.⁷⁵¹

Lt. Colonel [] Constable: Cited in the List, but since there are very few possibilities, and since the claimant citing him claimed from Yorkshire, this was probably Henry Constable, Viscount Dunbar. He certainly was in arms, fighting on Marston Moor under a colour bearing the motto "In Hoc Signo + Vinces", and in the defence of Scarborough. Sir Henry Constable was born in the latter years of the reign of Elizabeth I, son and heir to Sir Henry Constable of Burton Constable who died in 1608. Henry, himself knighted in 1615, was created Viscount 1620, the first of the Yorkshire gentry to be so ennobled. He was in many ways, or appears now to have been, the archetypal cavalier, a

Catholic Recusant and a great gambler who wasted a good deal of the estates which he inherited. A friend of the duke of Buckingham and a rival of the future Parliamentarian family, the Boyntons, he was passed over for office in Yorkshire when Strafford took over, although the King in 1630 instructed Strafford (or Wentworth as he then was) to reduce Constable's fine for Recusancy from £300 to £250. He was under arrest in November 1642, but escaped to add his weight to the King's party in the East Riding, where he had already shown he could raise men in 1639. In November 1643 he was receiving equipment for troopers at York, which looks like a conclusive reference to his military activities, although his sequestration papers alluded to nothing than can be construed as evidence for it. He was killed in action in the defence of Scarborough in 1645, and his property inserted in the second Treason Act of 1652, his wife petitioning for relief in 1654 and referring to her husband's wasted estates.⁷⁵²

Lt. Colonel William Langley: Cited in the List, the son of Sir William Langley of High Gobion, Bedfordshire, and of Lumley Castle, Co. Durham, Bart. In the father's composition papers is a direct reference to William's rank and regiment. On June 20th, 1644, Sir William Armyne told Sir Henry Vane that the father wished to make his peace with Parliament, so perhaps William II came in at this time as well. Constable may have replaced him, which seems feasible.⁷⁵³

Captain James A(y)scough: Cited in the List without a forename, but the identification is conclusive. He was referred to by rank, by his brother Francis (q.v., this regiment). The first of the five sons of Allan Aiscough of Skewsby in Yorkshire, who died in 1666, he was born in 1613 and entered Gray's Inn in 1633. Styled also of Middleton One Row in Co. Durham, his lands there were sequestered in 1644 when he was described as a papist, and his goods were put up for sale in September of that year. His estates were in the third Treason Act of 1652 and were sold in the following year.⁷⁵⁴

Captain (Sir) Edward Charlton: Cited twice in the List, he may have become regimental major though there is nothing to suggest it. He was the eldest of the four sons of William Charlton of Hesleyside in Northumberland, and like his father, a Catholic and a Recusant. Listed in 1638/9 as a Freeholder in Anton Hill, and styled Gentleman, he was commissioned in 1642. The commission survives, but badly damaged. It was issued by Newcastle and alludes to Charlton as captain of "Harkabushires" in "Widrington's regiment", which suggests a somewhat amorphous dragoon/horse force at first. The commission appears to be dated January 7th 1643. Of his military activities we know nothing, most of the papers concerning him which have survived dealing with his career after

1660. In 1658 he petitioned the Protector and Council for leave to stay in London, where he had gone to try to settle debts. Permission was given. All of his property had been inserted in the Treason Act in November 1652. Married to one of the co-heiresses of his colonel, he became in 1660 Captain of Berwick but was barred from the Governørship of Hartlepool because of his religion. From his papers, he appears to have been, in turn, Captain in the duke of York's regiment, and then major in FitzGerald's Foot in 1672. He died in 1674. His baronetcy appears to date to 1645/6.⁷⁵⁵

Captain Thomas Pearson: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, such a man of Myerscough, Lancashire, Gentleman, but a leaseholder of Thomas Tyldesley in Newcastle, was fined £5 in 1653. In his petition he said he had not been resident in Lancashire since 1643.⁷⁵⁶

Captain Henry Widdrington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, not to be confused with a man of the same name, major in Lord Widdrington's Foot (q.v.). This man, of Buteland, Gentleman, Catholic delinquent in 1644 when sequestered, and also styled of Riton, probably first of the sons of Benjamin Widdrington of Little Swinburn, was born in 1603. He died before 1668. In March 1655 he was named in a plot to seize Newcastle, and was listed as a Recusant in the same year. His property was in the third Treason Act of 1652.⁷⁵⁷

Lieutenant Francis A(y)scough: He does not appear in the List, and should be related to Captain James Ascough of this regiment (above). Fourth of the five sons of Allan Aiscough of Skewsby, he was gaoled in York in 1684/5 for refusing the oath of allegiance. He petitioned that he was lieutenant in the troop of his brother James, was wounded and gaoled during the war. Listed as a Recusant in 1665/6, he was similarly confined in 1679/80. In 1676 he had been presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions as a party to disputes over a bridle-way from Skewsby to New Malton. There appears to be a reference to him as a standing officer in Pontefract garrison in 1648.⁷⁵⁸

Lieutenant Henry Brigham: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Ascough's troop, the son of Ralph Brigham of Witton. The family was Recusant, the father a church papist to 1627, but presented in 1629 with his wife, who had also been presented in 1619. Henry was listed as a Recusant in 1670.⁷⁵⁹

Lieutenant William Conyers: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Langley's troop. Probably the second son of Sir George Conyers of Sockburn who appears to have been listed as a Recusant in 1637.⁷⁶⁰

Cornet John Daniel: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Constable's troop, and in view of the identification of Constable, possibly he of Beverley who died c. 1673, but whether a son of Sir Ingleby Daniel or not cannot be said.⁷⁶¹

Cornet Ralph Emerson: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Charlton's troop. Such a man was presented in 1631 for a clandestine marriage, and he submitted to pay costs and to undergo an unspecified punishment. Such a man is also mentioned in the will of George Emerson of Stanhope in Weardale who died in 1627, as a supervisor.⁷⁶²

Cornet Ralph Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Widdrington's troop. Perhaps fifth of the five sons of Major Tristram Fenwick (q.v., Carnaby's Horse) of Kenton, living 1698/9; but the name is extremely common.⁷⁶³

Cornet Thomas Simpson: The rank and regiment are given in his composition papers, and it is further stated there that he deserted and became a Parliamentary captain. Sir Edward Widdrington arrested him as a deserter in January 1644, but he seems to have escaped. He added that he had been a captain under a Colonel Wren, who in his turn deposed that Simpson had served under his brother, Captain Henry Simpson. The editor obscured the facts by implying that Henry was a captain under Widdrington but this is hard to read into the source.⁷⁶⁴

Quartermaster Miles Newton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ascough's troop. Such a man of Little Thorp near Ripon was sequestered as a delinquent. His property was inserted in the third Treason Act.⁷⁶⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Edward French, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

*Lieutenant Stephen Kirk, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ascough's troop.

Quartermaster Henry Fenwick, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Charlton's troop.

Quartermaster James Hobson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain French's troop.

Quartermaster Richard Whitfield, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Charlton's troop.

*The fact that three lieutenants appear under Captain Ascough cannot be taken as calling in question Francis Ascough's presence in this regiment, since the acknowledgement that he was captured would provide opportunity for him to be replaced.

Colonel Sir William (Lord) WIDDRINGTON'S Regiment of Horse.

Widdrington was one of the most prominent commanders in the north in the late part of 1642, associated with Newcastle in recruiting in Northumberland (see below). This regiment probably came into being before Newcastle entered Yorkshire in December, but was certainly fully equipped and in the field in early 1643. Unfortunately, for this regiment as for so many, there is hardly any independent reference to its activities, and it must be supposed that it followed the normal career of a northern cavalry regiment, often explained. It is true, however, that here, as with Tyldesley's and Sir Richard Tempest's Horse, we are concerned with a regiment that certainly had some standing in 1651, but in this case it is virtually impossible to isolate any one officer as belonging more properly to that year.

Thomas Leaker, "a souldier under Sir William Witherington" was buried in Leeds on July 29th 1643.⁷⁶⁶ He was probably a casualty of Adwalton Moor and died of his wounds, but whether he properly belongs here, or in Widdrington's Foot (q.v.) is debateable. The distinction between 'trooper' and 'soldier' was rarely, if ever, made. Almost certainly at Marston Moor, the regiment formed part of the Northern Horse thereafter, when its colonel had gone into exile.

Colonel Sir William (Lord) Widdrington:

Sir William was born in 1610, the son and heir of Sir Henry Widdrington of Widdrington, although through the need to escape relentless Recusant persecutions, Sir William came to be resident ordinarily at Great Swinburn. The family was closely identified with the old faith, as evidence Colonel Sir Edward Widdrington. William's son and heir, William II, was a Recusant, and his second son, Edward, was killed in arms for James II at the Boyne Water. William, created a baronet in 1642 was, in 1643, elevated to the peerage as Lord Widdrington of Blankney in Lincolnshire, but he had been knighted as early as 1631. A JP, in 1636 Sheriff of Northumberland, he was apparently an assiduous collector of ship money, and in 1640, when deputy lieutenant, was elected to Parliament as MP for the county. Identified strongly with the Straffordian faction, in 1641 he was committed to the Tower and was expelled from the House in 1642. Whether Sir William was a Catholic, albeit a covert one, it now seems impossible to say, but the evidence, such as it is, strongly suggests a church papist. Clarendon described him as "one of the most goodly persons of that age...higher than most tall men...of the best and most ancient extraction...one of the first who raised both Horse and Foot at his own charge....a man of great courage and choler". On July 1st 1642, it was reported in the Lords that his steward was bringing in the Widdrington tenants in arms, although at this date Sir William himself was still in the Commons. Absenting himself, he was in Newcastle by the 14th of the month.

Appointed to the Commission of Array and of Oyer and Terminer in Northumberland by the King, he was also a Commissioner of Array for Durham and Lincolnshire. On November 9th Sir Marmaduke Langdale told Sir William Saville that Widdrington was experiencing difficulties in raising men on the estates of the earl of Northumberland, a Parliamentarian. Even so, he had equipped horse and dragoons and had two cannon on the way to him. Appointed President of the Council of War by the earl of Newcastle (see Vol. 1), he was busy in Durham in March 1643, but was in action at Wakefield in May. Given command in Lincolnshire in the late summer (see Vol. 1), he was defeated in action at Winceby on October 12th, whereupon he seems to have tried to consolidate his position a little with no success (see Vol. 1). Raised to the peerage in November, he was in Newcastle upon Tyne to face the Scots in February 1644, and fought with the army on its retreat to York where he held a command. In action on Marston Moor as a brigade commander, he opted for exile with the earl of Newcastle after the battle, and left from Scarborough. What became of his regiments is unknown, but the cavalry that remained certainly joined the Northern Horse. Exempted from pardon in 1646, on March 14th 1649 he was proclaimed an enemy and a traitor. His estates were sequestered, and appeared in the 1651 Treason Act, his wife petitioning in 1650 for a fifth for her maintenance and that of his children. One of the advisors dismissed from attendance on Charles II by the Scottish Presbyterians, he marched into England in August 1651 and was killed alongside Thomas Tyldesley at the battle of Wigan Lane.⁷⁶⁷

(Lt. Colonel) Sir William Riddell: Cited in the List by name, the rank is conjectural. He was perhaps first lt. colonel of the regiment or, as is remotely possible, served in 1651. He was misnamed 'Liddell' in the List, but can only be identified as Sir William Riddell, eldest son of Sir Thomas Riddell of Gateshead, and listed as a Catholic commissioned in 1642. His military career was brief, being captured in arms at Sherburn in Elmet in December 1642 and imprisoned in London at the Tower. He apparently abjured his faith and so compounded for £300, being discharged in 1652.⁷⁶⁸

Lt. Colonel John Ogle: The identification is based solely upon a letter written from Calais by Ogle to the earl of Newcastle on March 16th 1644, but from the content it looks as if Ogle had been appointed, in absentia, to replace Riddell. In the letter Ogle was apologising to Newcastle for the delay in his return to England, and reported that he had about £700 worth of arms. The letter, which fell into Parliamentarian hands, was endorsed: "This is a priest as I hear, a lieutenant-colonel of the Marquis of Newcastle, and a great engineer, he is lieutenant-colonel to my Lord Widdrington". He must be the John Ogle, Esquire, prisoner in Winchester House, January 20th 1645, petitioning that he is in want because

all his friends are in the Low Countries. He requested leave to go to Holland in return for sufficient bail. The House required him to provide the names of those willing to provide sureties, and an order for his release on £1000 bail was passed on February 18th. In April, it was revoked, probably because the sureties had not been forthcoming, and he petitioned again on July 8th. Still confined in March 1646, Ogle again requested leave to go to the Low Countries, and this time he was styled as Colonel John Ogle. He cannot be identified as a seminary priest, but here priest may merely mean an Anglican cleric. If so, however, no such man appears as a sufferer during the time of rebellion.⁷⁶⁹

Lt. Colonel John Thornton: Cited in the List, a brigade rank, see the same man in Blakiston's Horse.

(Colonel) Sir William Mason: Cited in the List, brigade attachment (perhaps in 1651, see Mason's Horse and in particular Lt. Colonel John Galliard).

Colonel Sir Edward Widdrington: Cited in the List, brigade status, see his own Horse regiment.

Major Roger Carleton: Cited in the List, but very little known of him, except that he was styled as of Wolsingham, Gentleman, and compounded in 1645 on £40. Nonetheless, his property was inserted in the third Treason Act.⁷⁷⁰

Major Gilbert Errington: Cited in the List, probably of West Denton, Northumberland. Fined £66.3.4d. in 1649, he was active in the 1654/5 conspiracies, and was captured off the Northumbrian coast. A Catholic at the time of his composition. He had been forbidden to attend the King in 1646. Probably the heir of Mark Errington of West Denton who died in 1654.⁷⁷¹

Captain David Errington: Cited in the List, probably the Catholic given a commission in 1642. Probably of Byfron or Beaufront, and a major in the 1648 war, he had colliery and salt interests. Listed as a Catholic in 1649, he was fined £15 as being in reduced circumstances (the result of plundering?).⁷⁷²

Captain Ralph Errington: Cited in the List, possibly a brigade reference, see Dacre's Horse. A Captain Errington buried in York Minster on August 21st 1643 has been identified, conjecturally, as the second son of Anthony Errington of Denton Northumberland, named Ralph.⁷⁷³

Captain John Errington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, and what follows may apply equally well to Cornet John Errington (q.v., below). The captain may well be a

brother of Captain David Errington, but the eldest son of their father, Henry Errington of Byfron, also a delinquent, who died c. 1664. However, to illustrate the problem of coping with Erringtons, the following are also possibilities, both for this captain and for the cornet. John Errington of the Hurst, born in 1605, eldest son of Thomas Errington of the same, was buried in 1645. John Errington of Alwick, living in 1678, younger brother of Edward Errington of the same who died in 1676. John Errington, perhaps the most likely man, younger brother of Major Gilbert Errington (q.v., this regiment). There are additional references to such a person as Whittington, Hexham and Seaham who may or may not be, identical to any one of the above named.⁷⁷⁴

Captain [] Fenwick: Cited in the List, and with such a surname, even tentative identification is impossible. However, in July 1642 when the earl of Newcastle came to Tynemouth, he found the castle ruinous "and none in it but one Captain Fenwick and his familie, who was willing that the castle should be at my Lord's command". This man is identified in a footnote to the source as Captain Henry Fenwick, noted in 1634 and 1636 as Captain of Tynemouth, killed in Yorkshire during the wars, his widow living in 1656. This suggests that Fenwick did not remain in the castle with Sir Thomas Riddell (q.v.), but beyond the chance that he is this captain we cannot go, unless the link through Thomas Riddell with (Lt. Colonel) Sir William Riddell (q.v., above) has any merit.⁷⁷⁵

Captain Peter Forcer: Cited in the List, probably brigade, see Clavering's Horse.

(Captain) Sir Ingram Hopton: This designation is based not upon the List, where he does not appear, but upon interpretation of a letter written by Hopton on August 26th 1643, and sent to Major Thomas Beaumont (q.v., Saville's Foot) in Sheffield Castle. The letter was written from Leathley. He observed that "by my Colonell's appointment" he was to send a prisoner to Sheffield, and was then to go on into Lincolnshire, but hoped to meet Beaumont first. Now, Hopton was killed in action at Winceby in October, in which battle only two northern regiments are known to have been present, the cavalry forces of Sir William Saville and Sir William Widdrington. Beaumont was Saville's major of foot, and if Hopton had served under Saville as well, would surely have alluded to "our Colonell's appointment". The allusion clearly implies, though it does not prove, that Hopton served under Widdrington. Ingram was born in 1614/15, the son of Ralph Hopton of Armley Hall, Esquire. Knighted in June 1642, when he was a JP in the West Riding, Ingram was related through his mother to the Catholic Nowells of Read Hall, Lancashire, and his wife, Eleanor or Ellinor, was to marry as her second husband Colonel Robert Brandling (q.v.). A Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire, Ingram commanded forces at Bradford on

December 17th 1642 (see Vol. 1). He had been part of the group pressurising Newcastle to come to Yorkshire, and no doubt fought at Adwalton Moor. A soldier of his, "John Wilkinson" was buried in Leeds on July 26th, perhaps dead of wounds. Hopton was cut down at Winceby after, it was said, wounding Cromwell.⁷⁷⁶

Captain William Lambton: Claimed in the List from Durham, he is not to be confused with the Captain Lambton of Blakiston's Horse (q.v.). 'William' may here be an error, and should perhaps read 'Thomas Lambton' who, according to the pedigrees, was second son of Colonel Sir William Lambton (q.v.) and was given as "Captain of the horse in the co. pal. of Durham for King Charles I", dying in 1662.⁷⁷⁷

Captain John Mallory: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man of Ripon styled Gentleman, died before 1673 when his will was granted probate.⁷⁷⁸

Captain Anthony Senhouse: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, probably a 1648 rank. He was second of the five sons of John Senhouse of Seascales, Esquire, who died in 1638. Anthony was styled of Hall Bolton in Cumberland.⁷⁷⁹

Captain [] Swinburne: Cited in the List, possibly John Swinburn of Capheaton, heir of William Swinburn who was Sheriff of Northumberland in 1639. John was murdered, or so it seems, in 1643 by a fellow Royalist officer, John Salkeld of Rock (q.v. Grey's Horse), which may account for the single claimant naming him in the List. John Swinburn was listed as a Recusant in 1637. However, alternatively, we have William Swinburne of Nafferton, Esquire, his lands inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. William did, though a Catholic delinquent, claim he had been too old for active service.⁷⁸⁰

Lieutenant Marmaduke Blakeston: Claimed in the List from Durham. A problem attaches to his identification. Such a man was Rector of Sedgefield at the start of the war, and his son (apparently also his heir) Ralph became in 1660 Rector of Ryton. Perhaps another son was the lieutenant. Alternatively, Marmaduke Blakeston of Monk Fryston, Yorkshire, styled in 1629 as the younger, implies a father of the same name. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Durham at Bishop Middleham.⁷⁸¹

Lieutenant Edward Errington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was, in 1636/7, Collector for the earl of Northumberland's lands in Tynedale, and must be the same of Wallick Grange, Tynedale, listed in 1638/9 as a freeholder. We have two other possibilities, of Alwick (dead c. 1672) and of Netherwitton,

yeoman, listed as a Catholic in 1682.⁷⁸²

Lieutenant Mark Errington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain John Errington's troop. The allusions to Mark Erringtons are several, and none of them convey a clue to attempt even a tentative identification. In view of the rank and the claim after the restoration, he may be Mark, one of the nine sons of Mark Errington of Woolsington who died in 1637.⁷⁸³

Lieutenant Mathew Gayle: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Sir William Mason, a brigade reference, but possibly Gayle may properly belong in Mason's Horse (q.v.). There is a Mathew Gayle claiming in the List under Godfrey Floyd's Foot (q.v.) but it is unlikely to be the same man. Such a man, of Bulmer, was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in May 1641. Perhaps a brother, or other relation, of Captain Robert Gale (q.v., Belasyse's Foot).⁷⁸⁴

Lieutenant George Herbert: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Forcer's troop. Such a man of Chester le Street signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁷⁸⁵

Lieutenant Gowen Snawden: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Errington's troop. The Snawden family was established at Bickerton. In March 1655 Captain Gowen Snawden brought 50 "blue caps" with horses, to the proposed attempt to seize Newcastle. The family was apparently of Recusant and yeoman status.⁷⁸⁶

Cornet John Beckwith: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Fenwick's troop. In view of the northern aspect of the regiment he might be either of New Malton or of Ripon, persons of this name dying in 1682 and 1685 respectively. John Beckwith of Ackton, Protestant and Gentleman, claimed that he was well affected to the Parliament when seeking removal of the sequestration from the land of his brother, Thomas, a deceased Catholic delinquent.⁷⁸⁷

Cornet John Ogle: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain David Errington's troop. Such a man, of Alwick, Gentleman, was aged 26 in 1633 when he gave evidence in a case of adultery as servant to Robert Brandling of that place, the father of Colonel Robert Brandling.⁷⁸⁸

Cornet Henry Pawson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Ralph Errington's troop. The Pawsons were a Yorkshire family, and according to the pedigree they eventually established themselves in Northumberland in the 18th century. The link is sufficient, however, to make this Henry, second of the five sons of Philip Pawson of Leeds who died in 1631, Henry dying in 1663.⁷⁸⁹

Cornet Roger Read: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Errington's troop.

Such a man of South Shields was fined £210 in 1649 for delinquency in the 1648 war, but that seems a large sum of money for a rank normally associated with younger sons or brothers. If the same man, the cornetcy might date to 1642/6 and he have been a volunteer in 1648.⁷⁹⁰

Cornet Thomas Shaftoe: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, fourth of the seven sons of James Shaftoe of Tanfield Leigh and born in 1610, dying 1676. Listed as an undischarged delinquent in 1651. Signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁷⁹¹

Cornet Charles Tempest: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain John Errington's troop. Probably second of the two sons of George Tempest of Winlaton, the cadet line of the Stella family. George was born in 1591 and Charles in 1621.⁷⁹²

Cornet William Widdrington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, eldest of the seven sons of Major Henry Widdrington (q.v., Lord Widdrington's Foot), he was admitted to Gray's Inn, belatedly, in 1651 and succeeded his father in 1665, dying in 1681.⁷⁹³

Cornet George Winter: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Forcer's troop. Such a man refused the 1641/2 Protestation at Kelloe, seat of the Forcers.⁷⁹⁴

Quartermaster Francis Hodgeson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Sir William Riddell's troop. Such a man was of Collierly, compounding as a Recusant, in 1636/7, but the name must be considered commonplace.⁷⁹⁵

Quartermaster Nicholas Lodge: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Carleton's troop. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Cockfield, and witnessed the will in 1642/3 of John Pemberton of Aislaby.⁷⁹⁶

Quartermaster Cuthbert Weightman: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Gateshead.⁷⁹⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Thomas, cited in the List.

Lieutenant John Fenwick, claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Thornton's troop.

Lieutenant William Nicholson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Swinburne's troop.

Cornet John Errington, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Cornet Johnathan Hutchinson, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Thomas's troop.

Cornet William Lambton, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain 'William' Lambton's troop.

Cornet Ralph Mackow, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Lt. Colonel Thornton's troop.

Cornet Robert Smithson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Thornton's troop.

Cornet John Mason, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Carleton's troop.

Quartermaster William Glennel, claimed in the List from Northumberland under Sir Edward Widdrington (perhaps belonging properly in that regiment).

Quartermaster John Hildreth, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Thornton's troop.

Quartermaster George Ray, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Ralph Errington's troop.

Colonel Sir Francis WORTLEY'S (Regiment of) Horse.

Wortley was one of the first Yorkshire gentry to raise men for the King, and he appears also as a commander of foot and dragoons. It is unlikely, however, that the cavalry remained intact in any formal regimental structure for more than a few months if, indeed, such a structure was ever aimed at. Wortley himself appears to have faded from the forefront of political and military activity towards the end of 1642, curiously, with the appearance of Newcastle in command in Yorkshire, though that may be mere coincidence.

Colonel Sir Francis Wortley: Cited as a field commander in the List, he was the heir of Sir Richard Wortley who died in 1603. Francis, created a baronet in 1611, was a JP, having matriculated from Magdalen College in 1608/9. He sat as MP for East Retford in 1624/5 and was a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to James I. Appointed a Commissioner of Array in Yorkshire in 1642 (see also Vol. 1), he was actively raising men and inquiring into the sympathies of his neighbours in the summer of that year and adopting an uncompromising attitude towards the Parliament. His literary activities marked him out for particular condemnation by the Parliamentarians, but by the end of the year he had faded into the background. He was still active in arms in November 1643, for he received on the 25th of that month an order from the Marquess of Newcastle to disarm and to arrest, if need be, Sir Edward Wortley, and to occupy his property in Nottinghamshire. Edward was his brother, and this may be a hint to some doubt attaching to Francis himself at this time, with the advent of the Scottish invasion and the failure of the Royalist party to capitalise on its initial successes. Captured in the defence of Walton Hall in June 1644, he was conveyed to London and imprisoned there for two years, petitioning in June 1646 for leave to compound and to go to Tunbridge Wells for his health. He was fined £500, and died in 1652.⁷⁹⁸

Lt. Colonel William Henderson: There is a precise reference to this man in a document dated at Oxford, January 1643. He was there giving evidence concerning a dispute between Scottish and English officers in the Royal army. No other evidence for his rank and regiment, or to his identity, has been found. Conceivably, this may be an error for John Henderson (q.v., as colonel, Vol. 1) but there is no proof that John Henderson ever served under Wortley.⁷⁹⁹

Captain [] Bilby: Cited in the List, see also Mansfield's Horse and Cavendish's Horse, but note that this reference may imply Wortley was a field officer under Mansfield.

Captain Marmaduke Holtby: Cited in the List, where he also appears cited as a field commander and where he also claimed in his

final rank of colonel, although he did not rise to that rank in this regiment. Commissioned in 1642 and noted as a Catholic, he was of Skackleton, Yorkshire, Esquire. In 1634 two of his servants were presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions as Recusants, and he for harbouring them, appearing himself in 1641. He seems to have compounded on a conviction in 1629, and there are references to his Catholicism back in 1624. Holtby's movements are confusing and interesting. In 1643 he was still in the north, apparently as a major, but on October 28th Colonel 'Tuke Haldby' was alluded to at the second battle of Newbury, 1644. He is listed as lt. colonel under Sir Robert Howard in the List, whilst the Oxford Ordnance Papers for November 1643 show that he was then lt. colonel to Henry Percy (q.v.). His property was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652 and sold, but what became of him thereafter is not clear.⁸⁰⁰

Quartermaster Thomas Garnett: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Holtby's troop, such a man, yeoman, of Skewsby was dead by 1664. The place-name connection with Holtby seems strong. Such a man was, however, also Constable of Wakefield in 1640, which gives a link with Wortley.⁸⁰¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Walter Naylor, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant Robert Oglethorpe, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Bilby's troop.

Cornet Richard Ruckly, claimed in the List from Gloucestershire.

Colonel George WRAY'S Regiment of Horse.

A Durham and Northumberland regiment evidently raised in those counties by the agents of the earl of Newcastle late in 1642, early in 1643. Once again, it hardly surfaces above the level of general allusions to Newcastle's army as a recognisable unit in itself, but the officer evidence is good on the whole, and it can be assumed to have been involved in most of the actions of Newcastle's cavalry, eventually going on to become part of the Northern Horse.

Colonel George Wray: George Wray of Lemonden or Lemington, Northumberland, was a staunch Catholic Recusant, and his commission was noted in late 1642. He was the fourth son of Sir William Wray of Beamish who died in 1629, and brother of Thomas Wray of Beamish who, like George, was a convicted Recusant. George was listed as such in 1637, when he was styled as of Ambel. He was the defendant in 1638 in a case of distress levied by the Sheriff of Northumberland on lands at Ambel belonging to Thomas Lewen, and so was evidently in some financial difficulty. Listed as a Gentleman and a freeholder in 1638/9, he was in Scotland in 1648 and Parliament was making overtures to secure his person. His property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652 as a Catholic delinquent, and his property at Lemington clearly came from his wife, since there is a note that he did not enter his estate in full until 1650. He was in London trying to secure leave to compound in 1651/2, and his wife petitioned that "she has scarce good room in the manor house of her husband's estate to live in, and that Cuth. Thomson, living in part of the house through which she must leave her room, is very troublesome, and his wife a brawler and a scold. Begs his dismissal, as the tenants threaten to pull down the house if he is continued tenant". Thomson, permitted to plunder at will by the laws which seized and then disposed of Wray's property, was cutting down timber and selling it on a large scale, whereas evidence was lodged that Wray had been improving his property and had opened a colliery.⁸⁰²

Lt. Colonel (Ralph) Millet: Cited in the List as 'Robert'. Robert, styled of Whittle or White Hill in Chester Ward Co. Durham, was a relation by marriage of the Wrays of Beamish. Styled Esquire, he was dead by 1653. I believe that the name 'Robert' was given in error for that of 'Ralph', since Robert was probably too old for military service and all the evidence indicates that his son, Ralph Millet or Millot, also styled of Whitehill, is this officer. Ralph is listed as a field commander in his own right, and Young accepted that he was a colonel but that is hard to substantiate, at least for the 1642/6 war (the case of 'Colonel' Francis Malham is similar). Ralph was a Recusant and convicted as such in 1632, and his property inserted in the 1652 Treason Act as a Catholic delinquent, although he was then in London trying to obtain leave to compound.

He had refused the 1641/2 Protestation when he was styled of Edmonsley, Co. Durham. Styled ordinarily as of Mayland, his house there was, by 1653, in decay and valuable only for the materials of which it was built. He appeared at Alnwick in January 1644, fought at Marston Moor, and signed the 1645 petition of the Northern Horse. In action in 1648, he was captured as Lt. colonel at the Coquet Water. In action again in 1654/5, he was named as a leader in the northern conspiracies, and in 1656 Ralph Millet was finally commissioned as a colonel in his own right by Charles II, and he was to have a regiment which included two Lambtons as captains. He was listed in 1660 for knighthood in the Royal Oak when his property was assessed as worth £600 yearly. It may be noted that in 1650/1 his sequestered estate was returning a net yearly rental of £133.⁸⁰³

Major John Danby: Cited in the List, almost certainly a transfer and a promotion from Clavering's Horse (q.v.). He was John Danby of Leake, Esquire, born in 1616 and living in 1665, first of the three sons of Thomas Danby of Braworth. Thomas died young, and John succeeded his grandfather, Thomas of Leake, in about 1632. John of Leake is not to be confused with his father's brother, also a Catholic, styled John and seated at Borrowby. The uncle compounded as a Recusant in 1629, and John of Leake refused the 1641/2 Protestation. He also sat on a committee in London formed by Catholics to represent their case to Cromwell for toleration in 1654. In 1637, when he was distinguished from his uncle by the style 'Junior', he was presented for failing to pay assessments towards the repair of Leake church. His property had been sequestered and inserted in the Treason Act of 1652, when it was bought (perhaps on his behalf) by Colonel Anthony Byerley (q.v.).⁸⁰⁴

Captain George Danby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he does not appear in the Danby of Leake pedigree, but such a man of Barton, Gentleman, was a juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1625.⁸⁰⁵

Captain William Edsforth: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he, his wife and daughter, himself styled as yeoman, of Brough in Hang East, were presented as Recusants at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in May 1641.⁸⁰⁶

Captain Marmaduke Frank: Cited in the List, he was of Low Worsall and Kneedon in Yorkshire, first of the three sons of George Frank of Knighton (Kneedon) who died in 1607. Marmaduke, born in 1597, died in 1666. Styled Esquire, he was presented as a Recusant at Richmond in 1630 and at Thirsk in 1637, and his property was inserted in the third Treason Act as a Catholic delinquent's. This was not done without opposition, however, one George Metcalfe arguing that he had a

claim on the property through Frank's wife. There is perhaps a reference to him in a letter dated September 10th 1643 from Colonel Sir William Saville (q.v.) to Major Beaumont.⁸⁰⁷

Lieutenant Edmund Danby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Danby's troop, he was his major's brother, sixth of the six sons of Thomas Danby of Leake, but styled as of Borrowby near Northallerton. He may be the man presented as a Recusant in 1625 and 1629. He was fined £186 in 1652 and his property withdrawn from the Treason Act, which implies that he had conformed.⁸⁰⁸

Cornet Robert Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Durham under Millot, he was probably the same as refused the 1641/2 Protestation with Millot (see above).

Quartermaster George Chicken: Claimed in the List from Durham in Lt. Colonel Millot's troop, such a man of Medomsley signed the 1641/2 Protestation, but so did another of Bishopton.⁸⁰⁹

Quartermaster Lancelot Katherick: Claimed in the List from Durham, and probably a relation of Anthony Cathricke Esquire of Carleton who compounded for Recusancy in 1632.⁸¹⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Henry Sympson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, and perhaps a spurious claim (see Simpson, Sir Edward Widdrington's Horse).

Cornet Richard Wharton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Frank's troop.

Quartermaster Christopher Lazenby, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Danby's troop.

James duke of YORK'S Regiment of Horse.

This regiment, which had its origins in a troop under the titular command of the young duke, but commanded at Edgehill by the Lord D'Aubigny (who was killed there) grew to full regimental structure in the north under the earls of Cumberland and Newcastle, and remained with the Northern army throughout the war, eventually merging with the Northern Horse.⁸¹¹ Under its successive colonels, it served in all the major campaigns, most notably in Derbyshire in the autumn of 1643 where it appears to have been badly mauled, if the denial by Mercurius Aulicus on January 13th 1644 that Gell had captured three colours, is anything to go by. The regiment served at Marston Moor, and in the Northern Horse took part in the relief of Pontefract (see Vol. 1). On September 15th the regiment was in Newark, as Luke noted on the 26th, and served in the rear-guard at Naseby where it lost its colours.⁸¹²

Colonel Sir Charles Cavendish: Second son of William earl of Devonshire, and a troop commander in the horse at Edgehill, styled of Wellingore, Lincolnshire. A Commissioner of Array for that county, he was the first colonel of the regiment appointed after D'Aubigny's death, but his career was cut short. He commanded a force of 2000 foot and 20 troops of horse in the escort of the Queen when she left York for Oxford in June 1643, his intention being to establish himself in Lincolnshire, although, as the Queen noted, he "desired extremely" to continue his journey with her. Nonetheless, commanding in Lincolnshire in July, where this regiment may well have been, he was either killed in action by "a thrust under the short ribs" which "killed him", or murdered on the field of Gainsborough. His body was apparently buried at Grantham, and his property sequestered in 1651, for it seems he was overlooked in earlier surveys.⁸¹³

Colonel (Sir) Samuel Tuke: Tuke took over from Cavendish, having been his major previously. A Catholic, styled of Cressing Temple, Essex, the son and heir of Samuel Tuke, Esquire, and perhaps connected distantly with the Tukes of Kelham, Nottinghamshire. Created a baronet in 1663, he may have been knighted during the war, in view of the prestige attached to this regiment. He did not, however, serve in the Northern Horse at the relief of Pontefract, since Mercurius Aulicus refuted a rumour that he had been killed at Melton Mowbray (see Vol. 1) and stated that he had been at that time in Somerset. His activities before this date are hard to establish, but he evidently fought with the regiment at Marston Moor. Nor did the regiment remain within the Northern Horse very long apparently, for in 1645, between Naseby and second Newbury, when he was described as the "eldest Colonel of Horse" in the western army, he was given the task of reorganising Lord Capel's cavalry, to which he had added his own "broken regiment". A commander in Colchester in 1648, he is apparently the

man who arrived in Holland in 1659 to be greeted with a frosty reception and the opinion that he should return to Suffolk, "as he is obnoxious to prejudice". What he had done to merit such treatment is hard to say. In 1660 a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles II, and a baronet in 1663, he died in 1674. His son was killed in arms for James II in Ireland.⁸¹⁴

Lt. Colonel [] Gamull: Cited in the List under Tuke as field commander, he evidently replaced Lt. Colonel Markham (q.v., below). He may be Sir Francis Gamull of Chester, MP for the city in 1640, but that is pure conjecture and there is want of evidence to link that Gamull with this regiment.⁸¹⁵

Lt. Colonel Thomas Markham: Cited in the List, first of the six sons of George Markham of Ollerton, Esquire, in Nottinghamshire. A Catholic family, the religious decision having been taken by Thomas's father and uncle, Thomas was himself considered to be a Catholic and is referred to as such in contemporary papers. He owned property at Skelton in Yorkshire (although which of the six Skeltons is not clear), and was killed in action, with Colonel Cavendish, at Gainsborough in 1643.⁸¹⁶

Major [] Cromwell: Cited in the List is a James Cromwell, which might seem a link with the reference which alludes to a Major Cromwell of the duke of York's Horse, taken at Malpas in 1644 (see Vol. 1). James Cromwell cannot be traced in the Cromwell of Hinchingbroke family, but according to the List James must have been a colonel, as a lt. colonel claimed under him, so he must be tentatively set aside. Alternatively, we have Thomas Cromwell of Staughton Magna, Hants., styled as major in his sequestration and composition proceedings, who was fined £40 after lying under "surgeons' hands" at Nantwich. This link with the officer captured at Malpas is good enough to make Thomas our man. He may have been second son of Oliver Cromwell of Hinchingbroke, and part of a thoroughly Royalist family. The father was a Knight of the Bath and MP for Huntingdonshire, and Thomas a cousin of Protector Cromwell.⁸¹⁷

Captain Sir Robert Browne: Claimed in the List, from Northamptonshire, he was the second son of Sir Robert Browne, 1st Bart., of Warcot or Walcot near Peterborough and succeeded his elder brother as baronet in 1635. A Catholic family with little or no offices in their native county, Sir Robert was suspected of Catholicism in 1656. He died in 1662.⁸¹⁸

Captain Newdigate Poyntz: Cited by rank and regiment in his sequestration papers, he was killed in action at Gainsborough in 1643. A relative of the Parliamentarian

commander Sydenham Poyntz (perhaps a brother? see Vol. 1), his son petitioned in 1660 and alluded to his father's death in action.⁸¹⁹

Lieutenant Robert Shipman: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Lt. Colonel Gamull's troop, under Tuke. He was of South Witham, Lincolnshire, and compounded on a fine of £26.13.4d.⁸²⁰

Lieutenant George Wayt: His insertion here is conjectural, and based upon the interpretation of a later allusion. In 1684/5 "Mrs. Mary Wayt, widdow to George Wayt, gent., whose brother was mortally wounded at Hessay Moor, and dyed presently after his wound; whose said husband George Wayt was lieftennant to Major Markham of a troop of horse; she being of a loyall family of the Lanctons in Lancashire, whose estate was sould from them for their loyalty; her estate sequestered, by which she is a great sufferer". The poor woman had been gaoled for refusing the oath of allegiance. The choice of Markhams is sufficiently limited to make this a very strong probability that we are concerned with Thomas Markham of this regiment, particularly since Wayt and Markham were both Catholics, and we have already noticed the tendency on the part of Catholics to gravitate into each others' units. George was second of the two sons of George Wayt of Leyburn who died in 1664. George II, born in 1624, married the petitioner already quoted, although it would seem to have been his wife's brother killed at Hessay (Marston Moor) rather than George's. George was presented as a Recusant in 1674 as his father had been before him. In 1658 we have two clear references to George Wayt in Brussels with the court, most probably George II. The father refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I.⁸²¹

Cornet Leonard Reresby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Tuke, third of the five sons of Sir Thomas Reresby of Thribergh who died in 1619, and a brother of Sir George. Leonard fought at Marston Moor and was, in 1648, an officer in Pontefract garrison.⁸²²

Quartermaster John Julian: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire in Captain Barker's troop, under Tuke. He must be John Julian alias Gilian of Thornholm, yeoman, son of Robert Julian selling lands in 1658 at Barmston.⁸²³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Barker, cited in the List under Tuke.

Captain Henry Lemming, claimed in the List from Essex under Tuke.

Lieutenant Edward Batson, claimed in the List from Northamptonshire, Tuke's troop.

Quartermaster William Smith, claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Lt. Colonel Markham's troop.

NOTES

1. Young, Marston Moor, p. 56.
2. Northallerton Record Office, Hutton of Marske Mss. ZAZ.
3. Terry, C.S., 'The Scottish Campaign in Northumberland and Durham between January and June, 1644', Arch. Ael., XXI, pp. 151/2.
4. M.A., 4.1.45, p. 1328.
5. Surtees, R., History and Antiquities of the County of Durham (Gateshead), p. 166. Foster, J., Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 23. Howell, R., Newcastle upon Tyne and the Puritan Revolution, p. 189. Hunter Blair, C.H., 'The Mayors and Lord Mayors of Newcastle upon Tyne 1216-1940 and The Sheriffs of the County of Newcastle upon Tyne 1399-1940', Arch. Ael., 4th Series, Extra Vol., Vol. XVIII, p. 66. HMC Fifth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 34. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 254. Vicars, III, p. 299. Welford, R., ed: Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, Surtees Society, Vol. CXI, pp. 101/5. CCC, p. 1011. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 34/5. LJ, X, p. 360. Underdown, D., Royalist Conspiracy in England, p. 142. HMC Report on Mss. in Various Collections, Vol. II, Harford Mss., p. 353. Dendy, F.W. ed: Extracts from the Records of the Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle upon Tyne, Surtees Society, Vol. XCIII, p. 202.
6. Longstaffe, W.H.D., ed: The Acts of the High Commission Court within the Diocese of Durham, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXIV, p. 156 and f.n. List, col. 1. Kirby, D.A. ed: Parliamentary Surveys of the Bishopric of Durham, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXXXIII, p. 35. Northamptonshire Record Office, Finch-Hatton Mss., 133. Durham University Library, Mickleton and Spearman Mss., Vol. 9 f. 259. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 68, 328/9, 321, 364/6. Warburton, III, p. 71.
7. List, col. 1. Foster, J. ed: Pedigrees Recorded at the Visitations of the County Palatine of Durham 1575, 1615, 1666, p. 95. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 153. Hodgson, J.E. ed: Correspondence of Miles Stapleton, Northumbrian Documents of the 17th Century, Surtees Society, Col. CXXXI, p. 135 f.n. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 36, 68, 181. LJ, X, p. 94. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Burke, J., History of the Commoners of Great Britain and Ireland, I, p. 689. Raine, J. ed: Depositions from the Castle of York, Surtees Society Vol. XL, p. 99.
8. List, col. 1. Wood, H.H. ed: Durham Protestations 1641/2, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXXV, p. 17. LJ, VIII, p. 348.
9. Foster, J., Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 141. Hutchinson, W., History and Antiquities of the County Palatine of Durham, Vol. III, p. 366. Raine, J., The History and Antiquities of North Durham, p. 225. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 221 f.n. Catalogue.
10. List, col. 1. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland p. 79. Talbot, C. ed: 'Northern Book of Compositions 1629/32, CRS, Miscellanea Vol. LIII, p. 399.
11. List, col. 1. Nicolson, J., Burne, R. eds: The History and Antiquities of the Counties of Westmorland and Cumberland, II, p. 344. Foster, J., ed: Pedigrees Recorded at the Heralds' Visitations of the Counties of Cumberland and Westmorland, p. 70. For Henry Featherstone see below, Dacre's Horse.
12. List, col. 1. Clay, J.W. ed: Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire, III, p. 432.
13. List, col. 1. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 264. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 217. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 159. Martin, M.T., Index of Northumberland Entries in the Recusancy Rolls in the P.R.O., p. 151. Collins, F. ed: Wills in the York Registry, YASRS, Vol. IV, p. 122.
14. List, col. 1. Ferguson, R.S. ed: Edmund Sandford's A Cursory Relation of all the Antiquities and Families in Cumberland, Kendal, 1890.
15. List, col. 1. Martin, Index of Northumberland Entries, p. 120.

- Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 154 f.n., 221. Dendy, Records of the Merchant Adventurers, pp. 145, 163/4, 166.
16. List, col. 1. Brockett, J.T., 'A List of Freeholders of Northumberland in 1628 and 1638/9', Arch. Ael., Old Series, II, p. 322.
17. List, col. 1. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 180. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 337. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 27.
18. List, col. 1. A History of Northumberland, VI, p. 210. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 98, 177.
19. List, col. 1. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 55.
20. HMC Ormond Mss., N.S. II, Moone, J., A Brief Relation of the Life and Memoirs of John Lord Belasyse, pp. 382/4.
21. Roy, I. ed: Royalist Ordnance Papers, pp. 313/4.
22. Quoted in Godwin, G.N., The Civil War in Hampshire, p. 395.
23. BM Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 208.
24. Adair, J., Cheriton, pp. 47, 56.
25. See Vol. 1.
26. Moone, Life of Belasyse, passim. Childs, J., The Army of Charles II, p. 234. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, passim. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 153. Warburton, III, pp. 201f. BM. Harl. Mss., 6804 f. 104, 6852 f. 117. Coate, M. ed: The Letter Book of John Viscount Mordaunt, Camden Society, 3rd Series, Vol. LXIX, p. 115. Northants R.C., Finch Hatton Ms., 133. Holiday, P.G., Royalist Composition Fines and Land Sales in Yorkshire, 1645-65, Leeds University Ph.D. Thesis, p. 360. CSPD 1659/60, pp. 116, 118, 162, 180. CSPD 1650, pp. 520, 558. CSPD 1651, pp. 137, 150, 168, 254, 417. CSPD 1654, p. 435. DNB. Foster, J., Pedigrees of the County Families of Yorkshire (unpaginated). Philip, I.G., ed: Journal of Sir Samuel Luke, Oxfordshire Record Society, p. 131. Walker, Sir Edward, Historical Discourses Upon Several Occasions, p. 146. Firth, C.H., ed: 'Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Narrative of the Siege of Scarborough 1644-5, EHR, Vol. 32, p. 578. Young, Edgehill, passim.
27. List, col. 9. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition Papers, YASRS, III, pp. 57/8. Atkinson, J.C., ed: Quarter Sessions Records, North Riding Record Society, IV, p. 197; III, p. 320. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 48/50.
28. List, col. 9. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 184.
29. List, col. 9. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 158/9. CCC, p. 1016.
30. List, col. 9. Longstaffe, W.H.D., ed: Nathan Drake's Journal of the Siege of Pontefract Castle, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXVII, passim.
31. List, col. 9. Foster, Pedigrees of Yorkshire County Families. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 58. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 568. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 160.
32. List, col. 9. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 218; III, p. 9. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 134. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 556/7.
33. List, col. 9. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 120.
34. List, col. 9. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 21. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 63, 78.
35. Long, C.E. ed: Diary of the Marches of the Royal Army...kept by Richard Symonds, Camden Society, p. 249.
36. Tibbutt, H.G., ed: The Letter Books 1644/5 of Sir Samuel Luke, pp. 165/6.
37. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 146. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 119, 121/2. CSPD 1645/7, pp. 161, 164/5. CSPD 1651, p. 485. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 339. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Ormerod, Lancashire Civil War Tracts, p. 275. Warburton, III, pp. 71, 105. Carlisle, N., An Inquiry into the Place and Quality of the Gentlemen of His Majesty's Most Honourable Privy Chamber, p. 167.
38. List, col. 13. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 691; II, p. 331. T.T. 669. 6 (53) A Letter from the Leaguer before Hull, July 13, 1642. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 361. Stephens, T.

- ed: 'Seven Civil War Tracts, Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle upon Tyne, 3rd Series, Vol. II, 'The Copy of a Letter from one of our Commanders in the North July 2 1648', p. 22. LJ, VII, p.434. Warburton, III, p. 71. Crossley, E.W., ed: Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry, 1673/80, YASRS, Vol. LXVIII, p. 118.
39. List, col. 13. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 600. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 67. T.T. 669 6 (66) A List of Such English and Scottish Commanders &c., as have left their command under the P. of Orange &c.
40. List, col. 13. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 111. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 2, 11, 61, 65, 184. Ridge, C.H. ed: Index to Administrations in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury 1655/60, British Record Society, I, p. 127.
41. List, col. 13. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 207. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 338. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Skaife, R.H., The Register of Burials in York Minster, p. 7. Lambton was apparently born in 1617.
42. List, col. 13. HMC Seventh Report, Lowndes Mss., p. 569.
43. List, col. 13. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 61.
44. List, col. 13. Crossley, Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry, 1660/5, YASRS, Vol. XLIX, p. 34.
45. List, col. 13. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, passim. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 132. CCC, pp. 1762/3. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 216.
46. Leeds City Library, Temple-Newsam Mss., A I/12.
47. Raines, F.R. ed: A Visitation of the County Palatine of Lancaster, Chetham Society, Old Series, Vols. 84, 85, 88. Vol. 84, p. 52. Burke, J., Burke J.B., eds: Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies of England, p. 79. Abram, W.A., ed: The Rolls of Burgesses at the Guilds Merchants of the Borough of Preston, Co. Lancaster 1397-1682, LCRS, Vol. IX, p. 107. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 349. Anstruther, G., The Seminary Priests, Vol. II, The Early Stuarts 1603-59, p. 34. Ford, J.R., and Fuller-Maitland, J.A., eds: John Lucas's History of Wharton Parish, pp. 90, 92. Vicars, II, p. 200 (and see Vol. 1). Stanning, J.H., ed: The Royalist Composition Papers...so far as they relate to the County of Lancaster, LCRS, Vol. 24, pp. 228/33.
48. List, col. 15. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 229. Wotton, Thomas, The English Baronets, I, p. 336. Catalogue.
49. List, col. 15. Brownbill, J. ed: Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 418. Peacock, M.G.W., An Index of...Royalists, Index Society, II, p. 44. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 145, 504. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689.
50. List, col. 15. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 97. Fishwick, H. ed: A List of the Lancashire Wills proved within the Archdeaconry of Richmond 1457-1680, LCRS, Vol. X, p. 89.
51. List, col. 15. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 118. Temple-Newsam Mss., 2A I/12. He signed for two trumpets which may mean only two troops in the regiment, although they may also have been replacements for lost or damaged ones.
52. Rushworth, III, II, p. 614. See also, Vol. 1.
53. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 350. Clay, J.W., The Yorkshire Gentry at the time of the Civil War, YAJ, Vol. XXIII, p. 353. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 163. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 211. M.A., 4.4.43, p. 175. LJ, IX, pp. 494, 497/8, 511. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 468. CSPD 1657/8. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 121.
54. List, col. 15. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 184. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 65, 124, 125 f.n. Hunter Blair, C.H., ed: Durham Armorial of the Seventeenth Century, Arch. Ael-, 4th Series, Vol. XV, p. 162.
55. List, col. 15. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40. History of Northumberland, XIII, pp. 350/1. Warburton, III, p. 71.

56. List, col. 15. Ross, F., Contributions towards a History of Driffield, p. 137. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 322. James, M.E., ed: Estate Accounts of the earls of Northumberland 1562-1637, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXIII, p. 202.
57. List, col. 15. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 296. CAM, p. 1073. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 177. Vicars, III, p. 299. Crossley, E.W. ed: Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry, 1681-88, YASRS, Vol. LXXXIX, p. 134. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 137. Aveling, H., Northern Catholics, p. 312.
58. List, col. 15. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
59. List, col. 15. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 145.
60. List, col. 15. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 11.
61. CSPD 1660/1, p. 118.
62. Roland Phillips, J., Memoirs of the Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, p. 195. Carte, T., A Collection of Original Letters and Papers concerning the Affairs of England from the year 1641 to 1660, I, pp. 34/6.
63. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 95.
64. Warburton, III, p. 104. Phillips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, p. 227.
65. Mahaffy, R.P. ed: CSP Relating to Ireland 1633-47, pp. 360, 388, 771, 767. Harl. Ms. 2135, ff. 14, 15. Philips, Luke Journal, p. 213. M.A., 30.12.43, p. 752. Metcalfe, W.C., A Booke of Knights 1426-1660, p. 201. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 487. Mercurius Politicus, 24.6.50, p. 44. CSPD 1655, p. 193. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 219; IV, p. 444. HMC Ninth Report, Ormond Mss., II, p. 126.
66. List, cols. 18, 19, 138, 152. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition Vol. 95, p. 279. Stanley Papers, Chetham Society, Vols. LXVI, LXVII, O.S., p. 102. Catalogue. Rylands, J.P., Lancashire Inquisitions, Stuart Period, 12 to 19 James I, LCRS, Vol. XVI, p. 209. Ainsworth, J., Index to Administrations in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury 1649-54, British Record Society, 1944, p. 383. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations, 1655-60, III, p. 92.
67. List, col. 19. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 340.
68. Carte, Original Letters and Papers, I, pp. 34/6.
69. List, col. 19. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 300. Ormerod, Lancashire Civil War Tracts, p. 73f.
70. List, col. 19. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 298. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 150/2.
71. List, col. 138. CCC, pp. 1263/4.
72. List, col. 19. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 90/1.
73. List, col. 19. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 129.
74. List, col. 19. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 116.
75. List, col. 138. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 163. Hutchinson, History and Antiquities of Durham, II, p. 43. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 126.
76. List, col. 19. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 124. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 323.
77. See Vol. 1.
78. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 165.
79. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 178.
80. Vicars, II, p. 299. See Vol. 1.
81. History of Northumberland, V, p. 333; X, p. 408. Spalding, John, Memorials of the Trubles in Scotland and England, II, p. 317. Rushworth III, II, p. 637. Whitelock, B., Memoirs of the Reign of King Charles I, p. 92. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 143. LJ, VIII, p. 296.
82. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, X, p. 408. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 30. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 357. Warburton, III, p. 71. CCC, p. 3256. HMC Mss. In Various Collections, II, Harford Mss., p. 353. Foster, Visitations of Northumberland (unpaginated). Ridge, Prerogative Court of Canterbury Administrations 1655-60, p. 73.

83. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, X, p. 408. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 376 f.n. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 142. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 188 f.n. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 216, 222. CSPD 1657/8, p. 296.
84. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, X, p. 327; XIII, pp. 360/1. Wood, H.M. ed: Wills and Inventories from the Registry at Durham, Surtees Society, Vol. CXLII, p. 127. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 53. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, pp. 317, 321.
85. List, cols. 18, 22. Ainsworth, Prerogative Court of Canterbury Administrations 1649-54, p. 62.
86. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 143, 190. History of Northumberland, V, p. 333; X, p. 408. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 31.
87. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, X, p. 408. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 31. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 207.
88. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 66. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 99.
89. List, col. 22. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 322. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 202/3. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46.
90. List, col. 22. CCC, p. 2592.
91. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, VI, p. 153. Forster, A.M., ed: Durham Entries on the Recusants Roll 1636/7. Surtees Society, Miscellanea III, Vol. CLXXV, p. 147.
92. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 376 f.n. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 206, 222, 228, 230.
93. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 61, 66, 197/8. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 166. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 68 f.n. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 300. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 99.
94. List, col. 22. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 112.
95. List, col. 22. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 101.
96. For this brigade's activities in the summer of 1644, see Vol. 1.
97. Firth, C.H. ed: Memoirs of the Duke of Newcastle, p. 201, see Vol. 1.
98. Burke, B., A Genealogical History of the Dormant, Abeyant, Forfeited and Extinct Peerages, pp. 109/10. CCC, p. 1799. CSPD 1651, p. 162. Rushworth III, II, p. 637.
99. List, col. 25. CSPD 1644, pp. 43, 258. Armitage, G.J., Rylands, W.H., eds: Gregory King's Staffordshire Pedigrees Based on the Visitation of that County made by William Dugdale 1663/4, Harleian Society, Vol. LXIII, p. 206. CCC, pp. 1576, 2315. RCHM, Newark: The Civil War Siege Works, p. 22, f.n. 1. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 478. P.R.O., SP 29/102 f. 181.
100. List, col. 25. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 58, 510.
101. List, col. 24. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 120.
102. List, col. 25. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, pp. 44/6. Collins, F. ed: Wills in the York Registry 1636-52, YASRS, Vol. IV, p. 194. Crossley, Wills in the York Registry 1673-80, p. 9. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
103. List, col. 24. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 173. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 22. CSPD 1659/60, p. 371.
104. List, col. 24. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 45. Walker, J.W., Wakefield, its History and People, II, pp. 438/9.
105. List, col. 25. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 190. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 67/8.
106. List, col. 24. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 378. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 194. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
107. List, col. 24. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 415. Jefferson, F. ed: Isaac Tullie's History of the Siege of Carlisle, p. 40. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, pp. 22, 152.

108. List, col. 25. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 89.
109. List, col. 24. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 190. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48.
110. List, col. 26. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, passim. Ormerod, Lancashire Civil War Tracts, p. 276.
111. List, col. 26. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 195/6.
112. M.A., 25/6.3.43, pp. 152/3.
113. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, pp. 572, 575.
114. Temple Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20.
115. See Vol. 1.
116. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 580.
117. Ibid., p. 575.
118. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 255. DNB. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 153, 261, 314, 316, 359. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 186. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 348. Holiday, Royalist Fines and Land Sales in Yorkshire, p. 374. Keeler, M.F., The Long Parliament 1640/1, pp. 134/5. Firth, Cholmeley Siege of Scarborough, passim. M.A., March 1643 passim. Mercurius Politicus, 25.350, p. 683. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 39. Turton, R.B., The Alum Farm, p. 183. CSPD 1654, p. 442. Clay, J.W., Abstracts of Yorkshire Wills in the time of the Commonwealth, YASRS, Vol. IX, pp. 163/4.
119. List, col. 26. (col. 76 represents Newark rank). Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 144. Clay, J.W. ed: Joseph Hunter's Familiae Minorum Gentium, Harleian Society, Pt. III, p. 928. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 390. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 99. CSPD 1661/2, p. 21. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 119.
120. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 274/5. Graves, J., The History and Antiquities of Cleveland, p. 331. See also Vol. 1, the battle of Selby April 11 1644.
121. List, col. 26. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests, II, p. 94. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 272.
122. List, col. 26. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 138. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 379. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 379/80. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 93/4. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 29, 96, 325.
123. List, col. 26. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 43. See Vol. 1.
124. List, col. 26. See Vol. 1.
125. List, col. 26. Crossley, E.W. ed: Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry, 1681-8, p. 69.
126. List, col. 26. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 172.
127. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland p. 43.
128. Longstaffe, W.H.D., ed: Memoirs of the Life of Ambrose Barnes, Surtees Society, Vol. L, p. 339. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 76, (apparently on April 24th).
129. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 38.
130. Rushworth, III, II, p. 746.
131. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 164/6.
132. Vicars, II, p. 299.
133. Hedley, W.P., Northumberland Families, I, p. 168. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 239. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 537. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 286. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, p. 190. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 359. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, pp. 92/3. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 175. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 155. Terry, Scottish Campaigns in Durham and Northumberland, p. 154. Spalding, Memorials of the Troubles, II, p. 317. Warburton, II, pp. 434/5. Phillips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, p. 200. See also Vol. 1, passim.

134. List, col. 49/50. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 123. Talbot Northern Book of Compositions, p. 338. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, pp. 152, 173/4. Rushworth III, II, p. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxii, 18/19, 208/9. HMC Mss. in Various Collections, Harford Mss., p. 353. CSPD 1659/60, pp. 98, 106. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 178.
135. List, cols. 27, 50. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 95, 117, 310. Baildon, W.P., ed: Compositions for not taking Knighthood at the Coronation of Charles I, YASRS, Vol. LXI, Miscellanea, I, p. 103. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 82. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 317. Warburton, III, p. 71. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 120. Ridge, Canterbury Prerogative Administrations 1655-60, III, p. 27.
136. List, col. 22. History of Northumberland, X, pp. 402/3, 408. Brackett Northumberland Freeholders, p. 323. CCC, p. 1012. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 145 f.n. Rushworth III, II, p. 271. T.T. E 88 (19) for Leeds 23.1.43, see Vol. 1. Foster, Northumberland Heralds' Visitation. Warburton, III, p. 71.
137. List, cols. 27, 50. Catalogue. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 300. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 178/9, 198. P.R.O. SP 16/475, ff. 52/3. Lumb, G.D., ed: Mss. Written or Possessed by Ralph Thoresby, Thoresby Society Miscellanea Vol. XXVIII, pp. 435/6. Phillips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, p. 200. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 268, 335. Baildon, Compositions for refusing Knighthood, p. 103. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 319, 367 f.n. 98. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 206, 209, 238. Rushworth III, II, p. 746. Vicars, III, pp. 16, 299.
138. List, col. 49. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. xxxiii. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 46.
139. List, cols. 27, 50. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 537. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 239. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 79, 157. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, pp. 167/8, 181. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests, II, p. 60.
140. List, col. 27.
141. List, col. 27. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 87, 205. History of Northumberland, V, pp. 96/8. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 228. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50 noted him as a Catholic.
142. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 201/2. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. History of Northumberland, XII, p. 375; XIII, p. 361. CSPD 1655/6, p. 283. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 88.
143. List, col. 50. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 123. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 148. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, p. 152. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 12. Catalogue. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50 noted him as a Catholic.
144. List, cols. 26, 50, 150. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 185; IV, p. 212.
145. List, col. 50. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 122, 193. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
146. List, col. 50. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 179/80. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 137, 271. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, pp. 13, 196. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 312.
147. List, cols. 22, 27. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360; XIV, p. 252.
148. List, col. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 15/16. Clay, Abstracts of Wills, p. 46.
149. List, col. 49. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 210; IV, p. 81. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 313. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 182, 269, 356.
150. List, col. 27. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 148, 180. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 110. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 345. LJ, V, pp. 85/6, 109.

151. List, col. 50. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, pp. 322/3.
152. List, col. 27. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 191.
Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 345.
153. List, col. 50. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 137.
154. List, col. 50. History of Northumberland, VIII, p. 360.
155. List, col. 27. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 80.
Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 50.
156. List, col. 27. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, p. 197.
157. List, col. 27. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests, II, p. 217.
158. List, col. 50. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 41.
Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 198; V, pp. 47, 104; VI, p. 204.
159. List, col. 50. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 345.
Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 245; IV, p. 192.
Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 270. Aveling, H., Catholic Recusancy in the City of York, CRS, Monograph 2, p. 244.
160. List, col. 150. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 259/60. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 76.
161. List, col. 50. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 117. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 324.
162. List, col. 50. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 173. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 30. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 167. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 12.
163. List, col. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 61, 253. Martin, Northumberland Entries Register, p. 125.
164. List, col. 50. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 189.
165. List, col. 22. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, p. 66. History of Northumberland, XII, p. 176.
166. List, col. 50. Welford, R., Newcastle Householders in 1665; Assessment of Hearth or Chimney Tax, Arch. Ael., 3rd Series, Vol. VII, p. 59.
167. List, col. 22. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 10.
168. List, col. 50. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 123.
169. List, col. 50. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 324.
170. List, col. 27. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 325.
Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 41.
171. List, col. 50. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 193.
172. Young, Marston Moor, p. 57.
173. List, cols. 28, 111. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 355/6. Poulson, G., The History and Antiquities of the Seignior of Holderness, II, p. 426.
Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 345. Toynbee, M., Young, P., Strangers in Oxford, p. 259. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 199.
Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Bailden, Compositions for Refusing Knighthood, p. 105. Leeds City Library, Vyner Mss., 5815 T/32/42. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 306. CSPD 1657/8, p. 553. Holiday, Composition and Land Sales in Yorkshire, p. 360. CSPD 1660/1, p. 290. Young, Edgehill, p. 152. Park, G.R., Parliamentary Representation of Yorkshire p. 297. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 153.
174. List, col. 28. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 90.
175. List, col. 111. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 12. Davies, R., ed: Dugdale's Visitation of the Counte of York, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXVI, p. xx.
176. List, col. 111. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 378. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 369. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III p. 345. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 61. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 124. LJ, X, p. 94.
177. List, col. 34. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 357. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 185. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 199. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26 pp. 91/5. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42. CCC, p. 1695. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 198. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 587. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 141. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 290, 327. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation

- p. 191. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 343. Gent, T., The Antient and Modern History of the Loyal Town of Ripon, p. 124. CSPD 1645/7, p. 456, apparently in Worcester when it fell in 1646.
178. List, col. 34. CCC, p. 1592.
179. List, col. 34. HMC, Reports on Mss. in Various Collections, Wombwell Mss., p. 116.
180. List, col. 34. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 178. Faraday, M.A., ed: The Westmorland Protestations Returns, CWAS, Tract Series, No. XVII, pp. 37, 41.
181. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 122.
182. List, col. 35. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 99. HMC 10th Report, Muncaster Mss., p. 274. CCC, pp. 2930, 3155. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
183. List, col. 35. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 98. CCC, p. 1754. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562
184. See Vol. 1 for this incident.
185. Wenham, L.P., The Great and Close Siege of York, p. 178.
186. Child, H., ed: Memoirs of the Life of Colonel Hutchinson by Mrs. Hutchinson, pp. 195/7. Vicars, II, p. 104f. Ferguson, R.S. ed: John Denton's An Account of the most considerable Estates and Families in the County of Cumberland, pp. 140/1. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 25 f.n.
187. List, col. 35. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 147. Spalding, Memorials of the Trubles, II, p. 317. Rushworth, III, II, p. 268. Vyner Mss., 5815. T/32/42. LJ, VIII, p. 349. CSPD 1660/1, p. 236.
188. List, cols. 35, 46. CCC, p. 1142. LJ, X, p. 78. HMC Seventh Report House of Lords Mss., p. 4. Young, Marston Moor, pp. 149, 171.
189. List, col. 35. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 227; XII, p. 464.
190. List, col. 35. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 139/40.
191. List, col. 35. Foster, Pedigrees of the County Families of England, I, Lancashire, p. 95.
192. List, col. 35. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 283. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 171. Forster, Durham Recusants Roll 1636/7, p. 175. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 39. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, p. 478. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 207.
193. List, col. 35. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 287. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 107. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 338. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 45. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22.
194. List, col. 35. Lister, J., ed: West Riding Sessions Records, Vol. II, Orders 1611-42, Indictments 1637-42, YASRS, Vol. LIII, pp. 25, 33, 252.
195. List, col. 35. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 15/17. Morant, A.W. ed: Whitaker's History and Antiquities of the Deanery of Craven, p. 574.
196. List, col. 35. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 53.
197. List, col. 35. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 206/7.
198. List, col. 35. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 254. Vicars, III, p. 299. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 59/60.
199. List, col. 35. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 99.
200. List, col. 35. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 332.
201. List, col. 35. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 16.
202. M.A., 29.7.43, p. 405.
203. CCC, pp. 1726/7. HMC 10th Report, p. 274. Finch Hatton Mss. 133. Musgrave Mss. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, passim. Nanson, W., Carlisle During the Siege of 1644-5, CWAS, 1884, pp. 58/9. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, pp. 182/5. T.T. E 303 (18) The King's Forces Totally Routed. CSPD 1660/1, p. 171. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 193.
204. List, col. 34. CCC, p. 3123. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39.

205. List, col. 35. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40.
206. Fetherston, J., Richard St. George's Visitation of the County of Cumberland, Harleian Society, Vol. 7, p. 5. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 358. Walker, J.W., Yorkshire Pedigrees, Harleian Society, Vols. XCIV-XCVI, pp. 256/8. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 35. Keeler, Long Parliament, p. 152. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Musgrave Mss. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 189. CCC, pp. 960/1. Haswell, F., The Family of Dalston, CWAS Transactions, N.S. Vol. X, p. 224. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. Nanson, Carlisle and the Siege 1644-5, pp. 58/9. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Brunton, D., Pennington, D.H., Members of the Long Parliament, p. 201. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, p. 149. Wotton, Baronets, I, p. 360.
207. List, col. 36. Nanson, Carlisle and the Siege 1644-5, pp. 58/9. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. CCC, p. 1671. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 212. LJ, IX, p. 544.
208. List, col. 36. Musgrave Mss. Young, P., Emberton, W., The Cavalier Army, p. 168.
209. List, col. 37. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 523. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 94. Harland, J., ed: Lancashire Lieutenancy Under the Tudors and Stuarts, Chetham Society, Vol. L, p. 312. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr in Lancashire, p. 19. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 349. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, pp. 92, 425. Burke, B., Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Landed Gentry, 1937 edn., p. 554. CCC, p. 2559. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 16. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42.
210. List, col. 37. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 155. Catalogue. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 286/7, 303/5.
211. Phillips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, pp. 11/12.
212. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 142.
213. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 86.
214. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 244f.
215. See Vol. 1 for a fuller discussion. Stanley Papers, p. 8. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 63 and passim. CCC, pp. 1100/18. DNB.
216. List, cols. 38, 102 (for Caernarvons). Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 292. Foster, Lancashire Pedigrees. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 66. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 61. Gibson, T.E. ed: William Blundell - A Cavalier's Notebook, p. 166. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 614. Young, Edgehill, p. 153.
217. CCC, p. 2786. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 239/42.
218. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 60f. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenancy, p. 279. HMC Fourth Report, Beamont Mss., p. 368. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, pp. 34, 124 f.n. 70.
219. Young, Marston Moor, p. 57.
220. RCHM, Newark: Civil War Siege Works, p. 56.
221. Brown, W., Royalist Clergy in Yorkshire 1642-5, YASRS, Vol. LXI, Miscellanea I, p. 156.
222. CCC, pp. 1844, 2864. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 196. CSPD 1644, pp. 42/3. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 111. Warburton, III, p. 71. M.A., 8.3.45, pp. 1401/7. LJ, VIII, p. 296. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, II, p. 33. The error as to identity is in Pennington, D.H., and Roots, I., The Committee at Stafford 1643-5, p. 14.
223. List, col. 40. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 264. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 24. Ackerley, F.G., A History of the Parish of Mitton in the West Riding of Yorkshire, pp. 29, 55. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 69/78. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 350, 398. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, pp. 376/7. Coates, W.H. ed: The Journal of Sir Simond D'Ewes, pp. 157, 163. Catalogue. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. shows Richard I was a Commissioner of Array in 1642.

224. List, col. 40. Raine, Depositions from York Castle p. 95.
225. CAM, p. 1338. CCC, p. 2804.
226. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 3. T.T. E 108 (40) A Speedy Post with more news from Hull, York and Beverley. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 199. Roy, I., The Royalist Army in the First Civil War, Oxford D. Phil Thesis, p. 32. LJ, V, p. 21. Finch Hatton, Ms. 133. T.T. 669 (6) 52 Truth from York Hull and other places. CSPD 1641/3, p. 415. Ainsworth, Canterbury Prerogative Administrations, 1649-54, p. 124.
227. List, col. 40. LJ, IV, pp. 195, 418, 425, 441, 620. Rushworth III, II, p. 268f.
228. List, col. 40. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 189.
229. List, col. 41. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 40. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 93. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 383. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49. He may be the Captain Vincent p.o.w. Selby April 1644, see Vol. 1.
230. List, col. 41. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 129.
231. List, col. 41. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1660-65, p. 142.
232. List, col. 41. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1660-65, p. 129. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 112.
233. List, col. 42. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 339. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 61. Wood, Durham Wills and Inventories, p. 249.
234. List, col. 42. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 114, 283. CAM, p. 1234.
235. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 227.
236. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 165, 166 f.n.
237. List, col. 5. For Atkins, see Appendix IV, undesignated officers.
238. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 153/4. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 3, 22, 35, 57, 66, 96. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 61. Forster, Durham Recusants Roll 1636/7, p. 181. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 343. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 120.
239. List, col. 43. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 35, 66, 225, 229. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 163.
240. List, col. 43. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 193. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 320.
241. List, col. 43. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 59.
242. List, col. 44. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 83.
243. List, col. 44. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, pp. 53/4.
244. List, col. 43. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 68.
245. List, col. 44. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 57, 66, 185/6. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, p. 185. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, pp. 70/1.
246. List, col. 44. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, p. 149.
247. Warburton, II, p. 254.
248. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 123.
249. Clay, J.W., The Extinct and Dormant Peerages of the Northern Counties of England, pp. 59/60. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 167. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 421. Forster, Durham Recusants Roll 1636/7, p. 143. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 103. T.T. E 244 (23) Names of Divers Commanders under the Earl of Newcastle. T.T. E 88 (23) A Relation of the taking of Leeds and Wakefield.... Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Catalogue. Skaife, York Minster Burials, pp. 10/11. Young, P., Toynbee, M., Cropredy Bridge, p. 142. CSPD 1660/1, p. 447.
250. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 448. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 377. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 308. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 343.

251. List, col. 44. CCC, p. 1981. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 186. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 156.
252. List, col. 44. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, p. 190. History of Northumberland, V, p. 243. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 115. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 167. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 111. Catalogue.
253. List, cols. 44, 74. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. CCC, pp. 1749/50. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 156.
254. List, cols. 44, 151. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 356. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 194. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 61. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 6, 7, 24, 224/9, *passim*. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 308. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 358. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 212 and *passim*.
255. List, col. 44. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 192. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 344.
256. List, col. 44. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 203, 365. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, *passim*. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 166/8. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 88. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
257. List, col. 44. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 172.
258. Ibid.
259. List, col. 44. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 212.
260. List, col. 44. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 312, f.n. 29. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests II, p. 86. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 183. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 34.
261. CSPD 1644, p. 42f. See Vol. 1.
262. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 102, 114.
263. Hodgson, J.C., ed: Correspondence of Miles Stapleton, Northumbrian Documents of the 17th and 18th Centuries, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXXI, p. 168. History of Northumberland, III, pp. 236/53; XII, p. 352. Foster, Northumberland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 55. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 203 f.n., 368. Keeler, The Long Parliament, pp. 174/5. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders p. 323.
264. List, col. 46. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 65, 115. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 134.
265. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 6/7.
266. List, col. 46. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 182. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 357.
267. List, col. 46. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 97. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 322. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 358. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 83. Fenwick of Wallsend was probably the same as George Fenwick involved in 1647 in a dispute among brothers of the Guild of Merchant Adventurers at Newcastle, viz. Dendy, F.N., Extracts from the Records of the Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle upon Tyne, Surtees Society, Vol. XCIII, pp. 144/5.
268. List, col. 46. History of Northumberland, IV, pp. 91/2.
269. List, col. 46. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. II, p. 651.
270. List, col. 46. History of Northumberland, X, p. 176.
271. List, col. 46. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 311. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-5, p. 66. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. II, p. 633.
272. List, col. 46. History of Northumberland, VI, p. 96.
273. List, col. 46. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 83.
274. CAM, p. 1237. CCC, pp. 1698/9.
275. M.A., 1.2.44, p. 813.
276. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 123.

277. Wood, Nottinghamshire in the Civil War, p. 88. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 168/9.
278. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 215.
279. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 119. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 112. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 280 f.n. 23. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 198. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 14, 67, 84, 106. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, pp. 29, 95. Curwen, J.F., Castles and Towers of Cumberland and Westmorland, p. 465. LJ, V, p. 166. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 16. Vicars, II, p. 169. RCHM Newark Civil War Siege Works, pp. 21, 77. He was debarred from office in 1646 and from court, although dead.
280. List, col. 56. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland I, p. 254. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, p. 90.
281. List, col. 56. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
282. List, col. 56. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 27. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
283. List, col. 56. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
284. List, col. 56. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 116; Vol. 36, p. 51. He held barely three acres.
285. List, col. 56. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 26.
286. Long, Symonds' Diary, pp. 225, 242.
287. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 123.
288. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 571. Bruce, J. ed: Verney Papers. Notes of Proceedings in the Long Parliament, Camden Society, p. 92. LJ, VI, p. 401. York Public Library, City of York House Book, B 36, 1637-50, f. 82b. HMC, Mss. in Various Collections, Buxton Mss., p. 256. Coates, Journal of Simond D'Ewes, p. 110. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 78, 83, 123. CSPD 1644, p. 422. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 134. Harl Ms. 6804, f. 28. Whitelock, Memoirs, pp. 224/5, 299. Bruce, J., ed: Charles I in 1646, Camden Society, p. 78. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 451. Carte, Collection of Original Letters I, pp. 25, 163, 179.
289. List, col. 56. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 423. Mason, J., The History and Antiquities of Thorne, p. 164. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
290. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 355. Terry, Scottish Campaigns in Durham and Northumberland, p. 168 (see Vol. 1). Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
291. List, col. 56. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 420. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 357. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 191. Ross, F., Contributions towards a History of Driffield, p. 129. LJ, X, p. 29. Armitage and Rylands, King's Staffordshire Visitation, p. 66.
292. List, col. 56. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 51.
293. List, col. 56. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 61, 291.
294. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 330. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 372. Young, Marston Moor, p. 152.
295. List, col. 56. Wood, Durham Protestations, passim. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 29. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22.
296. List, col. 56. CCC, p. 1888.
297. List, col. 56. CSPD, 1660, p. 187; 1661/2, p. 305. HMC, Mss. of Leyborne-Popham, p. 39. CSPD 1655, pp. 338, 355/6. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 97.
298. List, col. 56. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 96/7. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 390. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 382. Baildon, Compositions for refusing Knighthood, p. 94.
299. List, col. 56. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 39.
300. List, col. 56. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 260.
301. List, col. 56. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 21/2.

302. List, col. 58. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 409.
303. List, col. 58. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 346.
Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 207, 325, 330.
304. List, col. 59. Musgrave Mss. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361.
Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 17. Black, W.H. ed: Docquets of Letters Patent, pp. 366/7. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 128/30. Buchan, J., Montrose, p. 143. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 58 and passim. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Spalding, Memorials of the Troubles II, p. 130. HMC Sixth Report, Graham Mss., passim. Murdoch and Simpson, Wishart's Montrose, pp. 45, 51. Clay, Abstracts of Yorkshire Wills, p. 61. See also Vol. 1.
305. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 1b.
306. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 211.
307. Ibid., pp. xxxi, 215/7. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 534/5; XIV, p. 328. Foster, Northumberland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 62. Watts, S.J., & Watts, S.J., From Border to Middle Shire, Northumberland 1586-1625, p. 260. Raine, History of North Durham, p. 331. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 82/3. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 166/7, 463. M.A., 10. 10.44. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22. Firth, NewcastleLife, p. 7. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., p. 476. Add. Mss. 19678, f. 52b. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, passim. Carlisle, Gentlemen of His Majesty's Privy Chamber, p. 165. HMC, Mss. in Various Collections, Harford Mss. p. 353.
308. List, col. 60 and errata, in which he appears to have claimed belatedly.
309. List, col. 60. Temple-Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20. Musgrave Mss. CCC, p. 140. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 208.
310. List, cols. 1, 60. Warburton, III, p. 71. CCC, p. 1976. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., III, p. 334. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 240.
311. List, col. 60. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 351. LJ, VIII, p. 349. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22.
312. List, col. 60. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 149. History of Northumberland, V, p. 313; XI, p. 391.
313. List, col. 60. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 199. LJ, IX, pp. 46, 200. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 265.
314. List, col. 60. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 215. Raine, History of North Durham, p. 326. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 66. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
315. List, col. 60. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 171. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, pp. 111/2. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 325. History of Northumberland, I, pp. 130, 148. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 142. James, M.E. ed: Estate Accounts of the earls of Northumberland, 1562-1637, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXIII, p. 200.
316. List, col. 60. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxii, 87, 322. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. Hedley, W.P., The Ridleys of Ridley and Williemoteswick, Arch. Ael., 4th Series, Vol. XXXII, p. 169. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 188. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 135.
317. List, col. 60. CCC, p. 3126. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48.
318. List, col. 60. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 4. Dickinson, W., History and Antiquities of Newark, p. 112. CSPD 1660/1, p. 113.
319. List, col. 60. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, pp. 298, 301. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 91. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 319.
320. List, cols. 23, 61.
321. List, col. 60. Raine, History of North Durham, p. 326. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 152.

322. List, col. 60. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 303; VI, p. 201. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 319.
323. List, col. 60. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 83.
324. List, col. 60. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 129. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, p. 192.
325. List, col. 61. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 315 f.n.
326. List, cols. 52, 61.
327. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 1b.
328. List, col. 67. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 57. History of Northumberland, IV, pp. 339, 341. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 191. CSPD 1644/5, p. 97. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 216. Fairfax, Memorials, p. 213. Heron was buried, Skaife, York Minster Burials p. 7, in York Minster on July 3rd. His elder brother, Cuthbert, was created a baronet in 1662.
329. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 693. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 133. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 27, 65, 212 and f.n. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 301. Apparently listed for a Knight of the Royal Oak.
330. List, cols. 13, 67, 151/2. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests, II, p. 150.
331. List, col. 67. History of Northumberland, IX, p. 171. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 216.
332. List, col. 67. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1681-8, p. 80.
333. List, col. 67. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 209. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 258. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 315. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 105. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 309.
334. List, col. 73. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 196. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 166. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 63. T.T. E 244 (3). Catalogue. Skaife, Burials in York Minster, p. 7.
335. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 166. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitation Pedigrees, p. 63. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 6, 34, 57, 251. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 2. Ferguson, R.S., The Siege of Carlisle in 1644-5, p. 107. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Vicars, III, p. 334. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 18. CCC, pp. 2588/9. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
336. List, cols. 72, 73. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 287. Raine, History of North Durham, p. 222. Young, P., The Northern Horse at Naseby, Journal of the Society for Army Historical Research, Vol. 34, p. 58 (this latter paper is, in effect, no more than a list of regiments). Catalogue. LJ, VII, p. 434. Warburton, III, p. 71.
337. List, col. 73. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, pp. 9, 18. History of Northumberland, VIII, p. 321.
338. List, col. 72.
339. List, col. 73. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 101. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 270. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 66, 44, 56, 201. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 102/3. CSPD 1660/1, p. 238. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 161.
340. List, col. 73. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim.
341. List, col. 73. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 408. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 41.
342. List, col. 73. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 124.
343. List, col. 73. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1881-8, p. 115.
344. Temple-Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20, 22.
345. HMC Seventh Report, Lowndes Mss., p. 569, and see Vol. 1.
346. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 104.
347. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 196. Wotton, Baronets, I, pp. 487/8. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 77. Carlisle, Gentlemen of His Majesty's Privy Chamber, p. 140. Lister, West Riding Sessions,

- p. 390. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Vyner Mss., 5809 T/32/50. CCC, p. 879. CAM, p. 745. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 1. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 365. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 378. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 329. HMC Seventh Report House of Lords Mss., p. 117. LJ, VII, p. 40; IX, p. 12; VII, p. 405.
348. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 357. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 155/6; II, p. 52. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 117/9. CSPD 1661/2, p. 26.
349. List, col. 77. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 103/4. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. IV, p. 1213. Empsall, T.T., Local Royalists, The Bradford Antiquary O.S., Pt. V, p. 245. Baildon, Compositions for refusing Knighthood, p. 96.
350. List, col. 77. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xvi.
351. List, col. 77. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 147. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 237.
352. List, col. 77. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 51.
353. Lumb, G.D., The Registers of the Parish Church of Leeds 1639-67, Thoresby Society, Vol. VII, p. 165.
354. List, col. 78, both from London and Westminster.
355. List, col. 23. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 148/9. History of Northumberland, XI, pp. 454/6.
356. DNB. Vol. 1, passim. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria..., pp. 149/50, 238. M.A., 2.10.44, p. 1186. CSPD 1650, p. 52. Gardiner, S.R., ed: Letters and Papers Illustrating the Relations between Charles II and Scotland in 1650, pp. 38/9. LJ, VII, p. 55. Firth, Newcastle Life, passim.
357. List, col. 78. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361. Armitage, Ryland, King's Staffordshire Pedigrees, p. 109. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 181, 203. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 435. Mercurius Politicus, 30.8.51, p. 1039. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 99. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 45.
358. List, col. 78. CSP Ireland, p. 53. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 20. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 66, 231. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 161.
359. List, col. 78. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 297. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 354. Marshal, G.W., ed: Le Neve's Pedigrees of the Knights, Harleian Society, Vol. 8, p. 72. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 42/5. Rushworth, III, II, p. 268f.
360. List, col. 78. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 158/9. C.S. Terry, The Siege of Newcastle by the Scots in 1644, Arch. Ael., Vol. XXO, p. 238. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 66, 575. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 195.
361. List, col. 78. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 571. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 202. CSPD 1655, p. 368. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 427. Farrow, M.A., Barton, T.F., Index of Wills Proved in the Consistory Court of Norwich...1604-86, Norfolk Record Society, Vol. XXVIII, p. 89. CCC, p. 1579.
362. List, col. 78. Clay, Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire, II, p. 165. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 79/80. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
363. List, col. 78. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
364. List, col. 78. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 101.
365. List, col. 78. CSPD 1660/1, p. 378. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, pp. 44, 55.
366. List, col. 78. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 37.
367. List, col. 78. CCC, p. 2102.
368. List, col. 78. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 130.
369. List, col. 78. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
370. List, col. 78. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 107. Crossley, E.W., ed: Index of the Original Documents in the Consistory Court of York 1427-1658, and also of the Probate and Administration Acts in the court of the Dean of York, 1604-1722, p. 50.

371. List, col. 78. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 293 and passim; V, pp. 212, 219.
372. List, col. 78. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xvi.
373. List, col. 78. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 286.
374. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 334.
375. List, col. 81. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40.
376. List, col. 81. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 73.
377. List, col. 81. CCC, pp. 2435/7. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
378. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 93.
379. Ibid., p. 102. M.A., 16.9.43, p. 517.
380. Peacock, Index of Royalists, pp. 1/2. Sunderland, F.H., Marmaduke Lord Langdale, 1926, passim. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 1326. Brynmor Jones Library, Hotham of South Dalton Mss., DDHO/1/23. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 188. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 403, 412. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation, p. 297. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 176. City of York House Book, f. 82b. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 196. HMC, Mss. In Various Collections, Harford Mss., p. 349. Musgrave Mss. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 117. Long, Symonds' Diary, pp. 159, 166, 175, 182, 218, 225, 238, 239, 242, 243 and passim. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 141, 150, 145/6. M.A., 15.4.45, p. 1546. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 159. CSPD 1649/50, p. 39. Aveling, H., Post-Reformation Catholicism in East Yorkshire, 1559-1790, p. 46. HMC Seventh Report, Verney Mss., p. 459. CSPD 1655, p. 216. Clay, Extinct Peerages of Northern England, p. 119. Nicholas, D., Mr. Secretary Nicholas, p. 277. Burke, Extinct and Dormant Peerages, p. 314.
381. List, col. 82. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 362/3. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 335. Carlisle, Gentlemen of His Majesties Privy Chamber, p. 143. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 264. LJ, V, p. 55. Wotton, Baronets, II, p. 48. Warburton, III, p. 71. Miller, N.J., Winestead and its Lords, pp. 144/5 and passim. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 91/2. LJ, X, p. 92. CSPD 1660/1, p. 119. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss., p. 275.
382. List, cols. 6, 82, 87. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies p. 33. CCC, p. 2298.
383. List, col. 81. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 49. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 211. CSPD 1660/1, p. 122. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 96. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 89. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 111, a possible reference to him in York.
384. List, col. 81. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 49.
385. List, col. 81. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 95/9. Clay, Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire, III, p. 199.
386. List, col. 81. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 116.
387. List, col. 81. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 131.
388. Lumby, J.H., A Calendar of the Deeds and Papers in the possession of Sir James de Houghton, Bart., LCRS, Vol. LXXXVIII, p. 257. Vyner Ms. 5816 T/32/47. Watson, J., History and Antiquities of the Parish of Halifax, p. 151. Black, Docquets of Letters Patent, pp. 60/1. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 22/3. Ridge, C.H. ed: Index of Administration in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1655-60, British Record Society, Pt. II, p. 8. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360.
389. List, col. 82. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 199. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, pp. 295/7. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions p. 355.
390. List, col. 81. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 67. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 269. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 70.
391. List, col. 81. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 108. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 341.

392. List, col. 81. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 97. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 375. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1443. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 42. Boothroyd, History of Pontefract, p. 183. Watson, History of Halifax, p. 256. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. II, p. 637. Horsfall Turner, J., The History of Brighouse, Rastrick and Hipperholme, pp. 185, 187. Empsall, Local Royalists, Pt. V, pp. 244/5. LJ, X, p. 29.
393. List, col. 82. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 361.
394. List, col. 81. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, pp. 16, 17, 25, 29, 44, 53. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 341.
395. List, col. 82. Hamilton, A.H.A., ed: Note Book of Sir John Northcote, pp. 30, 63.
396. List, col. 81. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 38.
397. List, col. 81. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 86.
398. List, col. 81. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 210.
399. List, col. 81. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 173.
400. List, col. 81. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 201.
401. List, col. 81. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. I, p. 412.
402. List, col. 82. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 187.
403. List, col. 82. CCC, p. 2537.
404. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 50.
405. Temple-Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20.
406. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 366. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 356. Taylor, R.V., Biographia Leodensis, p. 90. CAM, p. 924. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 100. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90. Leigh was one of those who signed the documents to bring Newcastle into Yorkshire in 1642.
407. List, col. 83.
408. List, col. 83. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 202. CCC, p. 2048. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 343.
409. List, col. 84. Taylor, Biographia Leodiensis, p. 90. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 455.
410. List, col. 83. Ingledew, C.D., History and Antiquities of Northallerton p. 312. Anstruther, The Seminary Priests, II, p. 184. Hargrove, E., The History of the Castle and Town of Knaresborough, p. 156.
411. HMC, Leyborne-Popham Mss., p. 5. List, col. 94. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Catalogue. Skaife, York Minster Burials p. 6. Nicolson and Burn, History of Westmorland and Cumberland, I, p. 145. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 308. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 89. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 413. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 359. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 36. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, pp. 81/2. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43.
412. List, col. 83.
413. List, col. 83. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim.
414. List, col. 84. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 21.
415. List, col. 84. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 178.
416. List, col. 88.
417. List, col. 88. CCC, p. 3125. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48.
418. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 116. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 186. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 184. Warburton, III, p. 71. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 206. Brayshaw, T., Robinson, R.M., A History of the Ancient Parish of Giggleswick, p. 76. CCC, p. 1788.
419. List, col. 90. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 80. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
420. List, col. 90.
421. List, col. 90. CCC, p. 1681.
422. Vyner Mss., 5810 T/32/46.
423. List, col. 90. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 155; II, pp. 135/6. Keeler, The Long Parliament, p. 464. LJ, V, p. 274. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/190. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 413. Vyner Mss., 5809 T/32/50; 5810 T/32/46; 5811 T/32/41; 5814 T/32/43.

- CSPD 1655, p. 273. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 378. Ridge, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1655-60, II, p. 108.
424. Vicars, III, p. 109. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 413. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 761. Ainsworth, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1649-54, p. 190.
425. List, col. 90. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 21.
426. List, col. 150.
427. List, col. 90. Brayshaw and Robinson, History of Giggleswick, pp. 76, 81/2. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 21.
428. Wood, Nottinghamshire in the Civil War, p. 123 f.n. 4. Keeler, The Long Parliament, p. 129. Brunton and Pennington, Long Parliament, p. 209. Clay, Extinct and Dormant Peerages in Northern England, pp. 155/6. Rushworth, III, II, p. 637. CSPD 1651/2, p. 108. CSPD 1653/4, pp. 2, 61, 371, 385. CSPD 1651, pp. 155, 527. CSPD 1658/9, p. 374. Mr. Geoffrey Trease, who is presently working on a new biography of the life of the duke of Newcastle, in a letter to the present writer, has argued on the strength of Nottingham University, Portland Papers, PW1 644, that Mansfield was only 15 in 1642! The reference gives Mansfield as about 17 in 1644, and this may as well mean two years older than that, or even more. I do not consider the matter satisfactorily settled.
429. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. III, p. 1031.
430. List, col. 91. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 153/4. CCC, p. 1657.
431. List, col. 91. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, IV, p. 1235.
432. List, col. 91. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 221. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 111. Skaife, Burials in York Minster, p. 10.
433. List, col. 91. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 198/9.
434. List, col. 91. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 15. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 194. LJ, IX, p. 61.
435. List, col. 91. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition, p. 338.
436. List, col. 91. CCC, p. 1087.
437. List, col. 91. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 65.
438. List, col. 91. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 65, 78, 124/5. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 209. Welford, Newcastle Householdors 1665, p. 59.
439. List, col. 91. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 255.
440. List, col. 91. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 193.
441. List, col. 91. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 41. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 189.
442. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 165, 166 f.n.
443. List, col. 92. HMC Ninth Report, II, Pole Gell Mss., p. 392. Warburton, III, pp. 67/8, 71. CCC, pp. 1837/8. Metcalfe, Book of Knights p. 202. CSPD 1655/6, p. 133. Thurloe State Papers, V, p. 84. Young, Marston Moor, p. 209.
444. List, col. 92. Warburton, III, p. 71. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 298/9, 303. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, II, p. 63. Mercurius Politicus, 30.8.51, p. 1039.
445. List, col. 92. CCC, pp. 1586, 2938.
446. List, col. 92. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 137.
447. Rushworth, III, II, p. 305.
448. M.A., 30.3.44, p. 914.
449. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 134.
450. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 165, 166 f.n.
451. Alwick Castle Mss., Services Performed by S^r John Mayne of Linton in the County of Kent, Kn^t and Baronet. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, p. 349. Hasted, E., The History and Topographical Survey of the County of Kent, IV, pp. 269, 367. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 298. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, pp. 116/7. Warburton, II, p. 397. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 138 and passim. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 368. CSPD 1650, pp. 159, 516; 1651, pp. 183, 203.

452. List, col. 93. Catalogue. Bruce, Verney Notes of Long Parliament, p. 80.
453. List, col. 94. Burke, Commoners, II, pp. 637/8. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 110/1. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 169. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 136. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 310.
454. List, col. 93. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 511.
455. List, col. 93. Marshall, Le Neve's Pedigrees, p. 398. Everett, A., The Community of Kent and the Great Rebellion, pp. 109, 130, 229, 324, and *passim*. CSPD 1650, p. 532.
456. Fishwick, Lancashire Wills at Richmond, p. 240.
457. List, col. 93. Add. Ms. 24023, f. 20. HMC Eighth Report, Ormond Mss., p. 527. CSPD 1650, pp. 530, 541.
458. List, col. 93. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 340. P.R.O. SP 16/495, A List of Recusants.
459. List, col. 93. CSPD 1660/1, p. 96.
460. List, col. 94. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 120.
461. List, col. 94. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 324, 330.
462. Burke and Burke, Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies, p. 34. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 198. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, History of Wharton, pp. 72/3. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 115. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 199. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 13. LJ, V, pp. 66, 449. Curwen, Castles of Cumberland and Westmorland, p. 465. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 131/5. CCC, pp. 1783/4. Thurloe State Papers, IV, pp. 495, 595. Lancashire Record Office, Towneley of Towneley Mss., DDT0 H4.
463. List, col. 94. Young, Marston Moor, p. 178. Hodgson, J.C., ed: The Journal of John Aston, 1639, North Country Diaries I, Surtees Society, Vol. CXVIII, p. 10. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 329. CCC, p. 1172. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 69.
464. List, col. 94. Warburton, III, p. 71.
465. Catalogue.
466. List, col. 94. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 1. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 100.
467. List, cols. 94, 149, 150. Fishwick, Lancashire Wills at Richmond, p. 115. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-5, p. 164.
468. List, col. 94. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 46. Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 95, p. 16; Vol. 96, p. 298.
469. List, col. 94. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 45.
470. List, col. 94. CCC, p. 1907. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 186.
471. List, col. 94. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 151/2, 154. Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 96, p. 397. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 125. Vicars, III, p. 16.
472. List, col. 94. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 81.
473. List, col. 94. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 403.
474. List, col. 94. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 73. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 132.
475. List, col. 94. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 166.
476. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 142.
477. Secomb, J., House of Stanley, p. 202. Warburton, II, p. 227.
478. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 71/2.
479. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 217.
480. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 195.
481. DNB. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 207. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 27. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, pp. 1, 344. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 115. Ffarington, S.M., ed: The Farington Papers, Chetham Society, Vol. XXXIX, p. 78. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 13, 51, 95, 99. M.A., 25.5.43. HMC 13th Report

- Portland Mss., III, p. 111. M.A., 20.9.43, p. 528. Stanley Papers, I, p. 102. M.A., 15.6.44, p. 1031. Warburton, III, p. 104. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 223. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 149/67. CCC, pp. 1343/7. LJ, X, p. 168. CJ, V, p. 488. CSPD 1651, p. 530. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 245.
482. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 18. Gibson, T.E., ed: William Blundell - A Cavalier's Note Book, pp. 45, 166. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 115. Baines, E., The History of the County Palatine and Duchy of Lancaster, II, pp. 304, 391. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 124.
483. List, cols. 19, 95. CCC, pp. 2703/4. Armitage and Rylands, Cheshire Pedigrees, p. 17. CCC, p. 1518. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 88.
484. List, col. 95. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 56. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 86. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees Catalogue.
485. List, col. 95. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 298, 301, 303f.; Vol. 36, p. 102. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 327. Farrer, W., Brownbill, J., The Victoria History of the County of Lancaster, III, p. 30. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 109.
486. List, col. 95. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 34/5; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 409. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of Wharton, p. 92. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions p. 347.
487. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 154. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 323. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 112.
488. List, col. 95. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of Wharton, pp. 71, 88. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 322. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 135.
489. List, col. 95. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, pp. 266/7. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 471.
490. List, col. 95. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 125/8. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 67. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 324. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of Wharton, p. 88. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 38, his Woolston lands were in the third Treason Act of 1652.
491. List, col. 95. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees.
492. List, col. 95. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 69/70. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43.
493. List, col. 95. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 413. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, pp. 102, 208. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 115.
494. List, col. 95. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 149/51; Vol. 96, p. 416. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of Wharton, p. 89. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 326. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 44.
495. List, col. 95. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, pp. 47, 72, 409. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 86.
496. List, col. 95. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 27, p. 87. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42.
497. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, pp. 137/9. Burke, Extinct and Dormant Peerages, p. 417. Clay, Extinct Peerages of Northern England, p. 210. Ffarington, Farington Papers, p. 9. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 105. LJ, V, pp. 33, 64, 68, 95. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 177/91. LJ, VI, p. 93. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 135. LJ, VIII, pp. 154/5, 221, 253. Shaw, W.A. ed: Minutes of the Committee for the Relief of Plundered Ministers and the Trustees for the Maintenance of Ministers Relating to Lancashire and Cheshire 1643-60, LCRS, Pt. 1, Vol. XXVIII, p. 19. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 40.
498. List, col. 97. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 185; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 407. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, Pt. 1, pp. 6/7. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of

- Wharton, p. 89. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 325. HMC, 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 99. Vicars, II, p. 16. Mercurius Politicus, 30.8.51, p. 1039.
499. List, col. 97.
500. List, col. 98.
501. DNB. Keeler, Long Parliament, p. 283. Jefferson, S., The History and Antiquities of Cumberland, I, p. 473. Burton, G., The Life of Sir Philip Musgrave, passim. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Vicars, II, p. 80. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 299. HMC Portland Mss., I, p. 451. CCC, p. 2308. Mercurius Politicus, 6.11.51, pp. 1201/2. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 1. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, pp. 182/5. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 69. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 313, 431.
502. List, col. 98.
503. List, col. 98. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 60. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Raine, Depositions from York Castle pp. 102, 106 f.n. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 563.
504. List, col. 98. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, passim. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 105. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 183. Musgrave Mss. Curwen, Castles of Cumberland and Westmorland, p. 470.
505. List, col. 98. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 115. CSPD 1661/2, p. 253.
506. List, col. 98. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 171. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 118.
507. List, col. 98. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 348. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, pp. 318/9.
508. List, col. 98. CCC, p. 3090. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 46.
509. List, col. 98. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 37.
510. List, col. 99. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CCC, pp. 1556/7, 1744. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
511. List, col. 99. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275.
512. T.T. E 153 (15) True Newes from York, Young, Edgehill, pp. 87, 205.
513. Child, Hutchinson Life, pp. 121/2. Firth, Newcastle Life, passim. DNB. Burke, Extinct and Dormant Peerages, p. 109. Collins, Historical Collections, p. 31 and passim. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 165, 692. Gardiner, Charles II and Scotland, pp. 54, 61/2, 126, 154. Mercurius Politicus, 17.6.50., p. 28. Whitelock, Memoirs, pp. 342/3. CSPD 1654, p. 288; 1656/7, pp. 11, 279; 1657/8, pp. 300, 311; 1659/60, p. 378. LJ, XI, p. 119.
514. Jackson, C. ed: The Autobiography of Mrs. Alice Thornton of East Newton, Co. York, Surtees Society, Vol. LXII, p. 41. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 320. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 358. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 160.
515. List, col. 100. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 163.
516. List, col. 100. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 75. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 337. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, pp. 160/2. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 11.
517. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 182/7. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 356/7. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire, I, p. 157. Sheard, M., Records of the Parish of Batley, pp. 75, 271. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, pp. 27, 154.
518. List, cols. 63, 100. CCC, p. 952. Wood, Nottinghamshire in the Civil War, p. 139. Rushworth, III, II, p. 637. Firth, Newcastle Life, passim.
519. List, cols. 33, 100. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 129, 133.
520. List, col. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 1/2.

521. List, col. 100. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 207.
522. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 307/8. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 402/3. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, II, p. 248.
523. List, col. 100. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 107. Wood, Durham Protestations, passim.
524. List, col. 100. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 61.
525. Young, Marston Moor, p. 57.
526. Peacock, Army Lists of the Roundheads and Cavaliers, p. 17.
527. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 369/70. Hunter, J., South Yorkshire, I, p. 145. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 190. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 382/3. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 237 and passim. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CCC, pp. 1027/8. CAM, p. 285. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 159/60.
528. Peacock, p. 17. Wotton, Baronets, I, p. 586.
529. Peacock, p. 18. See Vol. 1.
530. Peacock, p. 17. T.T. 669 f. 6 (66) op. cit.
531. Peacock, p. 18. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 315. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, pp. 137/9. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 423/4. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 201. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 82.
532. List, col. 102. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 388. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360. Hodgson, J., ed: Autobiography of Sir John Gibson, North Country Diaries II, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXIV. Turton, Alum Farm, pp. 161, 168, 172, 178. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., pp. 175/6. T.T. E 116 (9) The Last True News from York, Nottingham, Coventry and Warwick. T.T. E 118(1) Exceeding true and happy neues from Oxford. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 194/5.
533. Peacock, p. 18. Vicars, II, p. 10.
534. Peacock, p. 18. T.T. 669 f. 6 (66), op cit.
535. Wentworth, C.E., History of the Wentworths of Woolley, YAJ, Vol. XII, p. 10. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 92. Forster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 323. Clay, Abstracts of Yorkshire Wills, p. 37. Collins, F. ed: Wills in the York Registry 1636-52, YASRS, Vol. IV, p. 157.
536. List, col. 55.
537. Young, Edgehill, pp. 52, 207. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 23.
538. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 2.
539. List, col. 104. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 418. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360. Blagg, T.M., ed: Index of Wills proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1657-60, British Record Society p. 227.
540. List, col. 104. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 439. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 364. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. III, p. 979. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275.
541. List, col. 104. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 213.
542. RCHM Newark: Civil War Siege Works, p. 89.
543. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 236. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 427. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 75/87; Vol. 96, pp. 362/7. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 125/6. Catalogue. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 304. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 482. Baines, History of Lancaster, II, p. 699.
544. List, col. 108. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 115.
545. List, col. 108. Raines, Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 325. CCC, pp. 1888/9. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 70/1; Vol. 95, pp. 141/6. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenantcy, p. 280 f.n. 23. For his son, see Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 72, pp. 80f. Catalogue.
546. List, col. 108. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 92. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 180. T.T. E 244 (23) A Declaration of Parliament...together with the names of the divers Commanders

- under the earl of Newcastle. Young, Marston Moor, p. 34. LJ, VIII, p. 349. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 89 f.n.
547. List, col. 108. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271.
548. List, col. 108. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 286. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 327/8. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, pp. 148/9.
549. List, col. 108. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 89.
550. List, col. 108. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 97. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26 pp. 77/9. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 27. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 184.
551. List, col. 108. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 102/4; Vol. 96, p. 417.
552. Adair, Cheriton, p. 103.
553. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 120/1.
554. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 193.
555. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146.
556. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 123/4.
557. Ibid., p. 139. Warburton, II, p. 243.
558. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 146. M.A., 8.9.43, p. 497.
559. M.A., 19.9.43, pp. 525/6.
560. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 188.
561. Ibid., pp. 202. 204/6, 224, 228/9.
562. CSPD 1644, p. 57.
563. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 630. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 265, 271.
564. CSPD 1644, p. 99.
565. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 645.
566. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 62; see also Major Bret(t), this regiment.
567. M.A., 28.10.44, p. 1232.
568. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 148.
569. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 103.
570. Ibid., p. 105.
571. Warburton, III, pp. 56/7.
572. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 454.
573. LJ, VII, p. 339. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 138. Carlyle, T., The Letters and Speeches of Oliver Cromwell, I, p. 193. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 163, gives six men lost.
574. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 553.
575. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 181.
576. Ibid., p. 205.
577. Ibid., p. 231.
578. Ibid., p. 249.
579. DNB. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 234/5. Warburton, II, p. 229. Adair, Cheriton, p. 103. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 10. Black, Docquets of Letters Patent, p. 71. Thurloe State Papers, I, p. 80. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 17. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 205 and passim.
580. List, cols. 20, 113. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, Pt. II, p. 2. CSPD 1645/7, p. 424. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas' History of Wharton, p. 88. Anstruther, Seminary Priests, II, pp. 42/3. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenantcy, II, p. 312. Rushworth III, II, pp. 49/50. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 4/5; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 95, p. 16; Vol. 96, p. 407. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 8. Adair, Cheriton, p. 103. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 202. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, pp. 249/50. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 80/1. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 112. CSPD 1645/7, p. 59. Add. Ms. 27402, f. 100. CSPD 1645/7, pp. 262, 278. CCC, p. 3101. Shaw, Committee for Plundered Ministers, p. 114. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
581. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146. Carlisle, Gentlemen of His Majesties Privy Chamber, p. 131. Lewis, T.T. ed: Letters of Lady Brilliana Harley, Camden Society, Vol. 58, p. 152. LJ, V, p. 169. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., III, p. 89.

582. List, cols. 113, 150. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 313. Shaw, Committee for Plundered Ministers, I, p. 154. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 341/2. CAM, pp. 738/9. CCC, pp. 1319/20.
583. List, col. 113. Ridge, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1676-85, p. 46. Venn, J., and Venn, J.A., eds: Alumni Cantabrigienses, I, p. 210. HMC, 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 1. LJ, V, p. 496. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 249. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 55, 63, 242. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 74. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 202. M.A., 7.9.44, pp. 1151/2. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 100. Whitelock, Memoirs, p. 198. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 457. HMC Report on Mss. in Various Collections, Harford Mss., p. 352. CSPD 1655/6, p. 159. P.R.O. SP 29/102 f. 181.
584. List, col. 113. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 58. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 385. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 244. Stanning Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 246/9; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 407. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 12.
585. List, col. 113. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 313.
586. List, col. 129. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 45/6, 56. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 88.
587. List, col. 113. Raines, Dugdale's Visitation of Lancashire, I, p. 86. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 56. Catalogue. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 110.
588. List, col. 113. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 408. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 349.
589. Adair, Cheriton, pp. 103, 133, 193. Armitage and Rylands, King's Staffordshire Pedigrees, p. 90.
590. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146.
591. List, col. 113. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 146. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. M.A., 28.10.44, p. 1232.
592. List, col. 20. CSPD 1650, p. 104. Gardiner, Charles II and Scotland, p. 100.
593. List, col. 113. CCC, pp. 2683/4.
594. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 103/9. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 189.
595. List, col. 20. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 184.
596. List, col. 113. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 419.
597. List, col. 20. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. II, p. 777.
598. List, col. 20. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 172.
599. List, col. 109. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 111. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Survey, I, p. 60.
600. List, cols. 109, 111.
601. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 25.
602. List, cols. 109, 150, 152. Young, Marston Moor, p. 181. Stanley Papers, p. 94. Secomb, House of Stanley, pp. 265, 273. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 109. See also Vol. 1.
603. List, col. 50. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 175/6.
604. List, col. 152. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 115. ~~T.T. E 107 (30) Advertisements from York and Beverley.~~
605. T.T. E 107 (30) Advertisements from York and Beverley.
606. T.T. E 116 (9) The Last Trewe Neues from York.
607. M.A., 22.10.43, p. 600; 2.12.43, p. 693. See also Vol. 1.
608. Alnwick Castle Mss., Mayney Services, f. 181a.
609. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 373. Clay, Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire, I, p. 67. Foxcroft, H.C., The Life and Letters of Sir George Saville, Bart., First Marquis of Halifax, I, pp. 7, 10/12. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. Gooder, A., ed: The Parliamentary Representation of the County of York 1258-1832, Vol. II, YASRS, Vol. XCVI, pp. 49/50. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 334/5. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 380. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 489. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 136 et. seq. Huddersfield City Library, Whitley-Beaumont Mss., WB A5/11.

- Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 22. Temple Newsam Mss. Brown, W., Royalist Clergy in Yorkshire, YASRS, Vol. LXI, Miscellanea I, p. 155. CAM, p. 1018. CCC, p. 2917. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 164.
610. Peacock, E., ed: The Monckton Papers, passim. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 144. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1020. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Warburton, III, p. 71. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 67/70. LJ, X, pp. 96/7. Bilson, J., Newbald Church, YAJ, 1910, p. 41. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 434. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, passim. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Thurloe State Papers IV, p. 498. Hodgson, Correspondence of Miles Stapleton, p. 244.
611. List, cols. 116, 117. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 423. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 371. Mason, History of Thorne, pp. 80/2. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 380. Lister, West Riding Sessions, pp. 290, 387. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, pp. 109, 357/8. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 94/5. M.A., 16.8.45. Walker, Wakefield II, p. 439. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 5. LJ, VIII, p. 349. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., pp. 434, 436/7. LJ, IX, p. 75. CSPD 1650, p. 187. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 117, 175/6. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss., p. 275.
612. List, cols. 51, 116. CSPD 1650, p. 438; 1659/60, p. 195. Young, P., Tucker, N., Military Memoirs of Richard Atkyn and John Gwynn, p. 90.
613. List, col. 116. Vicars, II, p. 299. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 325.
614. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 200. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 435. Clay, Extinct Peerages of Northern England, p. 13. It must, however, be pointed out that a Captain Benson (no forename supplied) was in Pontefract garrison in 1645, viz. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, pp. 5, 38; and then in Sandal, viz. Walker, Wakefield, II, p. 439.
615. List, col. 117. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 355. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 156. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636-52, p. 114. Crossley, ibid., 1660-65, p. 114. Sheard, Records of Batley, pp. 74, 377. Hunter, South Yorkshire, I, pp. 58/9.
616. List, col. 116. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 55. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 46, 334. Hargrove, History of Knaresborough, p. 224. Gooder, York Parliamentary Representation, pp. 87/8. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Survey, I, p. 363. T.T. E 154 (34) Terrible Newes from Beverley and York. T.T. E 108 (35) A True Relation of the Proceedings from York and Beverley. Rushworth, III, II, p. 140. T.T. E 88 (23) The Rider of the White Horse... M.A., 12.8.43, p. 436. Miller, Winestead and its Lords, pp. 144/5. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 73/80. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss. p. 275.
617. List, cols. 116, 151. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 986. HMC Fourth Report House of Lords Mss., p. 41. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 437. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 47.
618. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 139. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 36. Walker, Wakefield, II, p. 439. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 363. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 203. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 163/5. LJ, IX, p. 459. Brayshaw and Robinson, History of Giggleswick, p. 76.
619. List, col. 116. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 138. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 365. Brotherton Library, Leeds, Wilson Mss. L III f. 62b.
620. List, col. 116. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 393. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 158. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. HMC Fifth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 28.

621. List, col. 116. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 423. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 368. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 4. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 434. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 104.
622. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 372. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Wilkinson, J., Worsborough, its Historical Associations, p. 82.
623. List, col. 149. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 199. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 233.
624. List, cols. 116, 117. CSPD 1641/3, pp. 481/2. HMC Fourth Report, House of Lords Mss., pp. 39, 50, 71. HMC Fifth Report, p. 59.
625. List, col. 116 and errata. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 362. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, pp. 238, 243. CSPD 1660/1, p. 340. HMC Seventh Report House of Lords Mss., p. 96. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 188.
626. List, col. 116. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-65, p. 126.
627. List, col. 116. LJ, VIII, p. 349.
628. List, col. 116. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 130. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 275.
629. List, col. 116. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Black, Docquets of Letters Patent, pp. 60/1.
630. List, col. 116. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 106/7.
631. List, col. 117. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, pp. 426/7. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 20.
632. List, col. 116. Lister, West Riding Sessions, pp. 209, 290, 386.
633. List, col. 116. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 178.
634. List, col. 117. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 92.
635. List, col. 117. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 242. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-65, p. 72.
636. List, col. 117. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-65, p. 78.
637. List, col. 117. Lister, West Riding Sessions, pp. 37, 110, 296.
638. List, col. 120. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 69. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1365. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 123/6. LJ, IX, p. 628. CSPD 1650, pp. 522, 562. Kaye, J.W., Records of Harrogate, p. 74.
639. List, col. 121. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 514. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 123. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 137. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 260.
640. List, col. 120. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 79. Vicars, II, p. 160. See also Vol. 1.
641. List, col. 120. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 138. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 93.
642. List, col. 120. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-65, p. 10.
643. List, col. 121. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 348. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 376. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673-80, p. 148.
644. List, col. 121. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 31/2.
645. List, col. 121. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 338, 354. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 28, 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 10, 57, 344/5. Warburton, III, p. 71. CSPD 1660/1, p. 510.
646. List, col. 121. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 147.
647. List, col. 121. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 79. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 65, 138. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
648. List, col. 121. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 168.
649. List, col. 121. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 114. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, pp. 283/4.
650. List, col. 125. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Bellasis, E., Strickland of Sizergh, CWAS, 1889, passim. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 58. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 375. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1436. HMC Fifth Report, Strickland Mss., p. 331. Nicolson and Burn,

- History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 101. Vyner Ms. 5815 T/32/42. CSPD 1644, p. 125. Rushworth, III, II, p. 619. Hornyold, H., Genealogical Memoirs of the Family of Strickland of Sizergh, pp. 123/4. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 160/3. CCC, p. 1130. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, pp. 360, 381. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. of Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 210.
651. Clay, Abstracts of Yorkshire Wills, p. 105. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 376. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Vyner Ms. 5809 T/32/50. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 163, 204. CSPD 1654, p. 305. Emsall, Local Royalists, V, pp. 238/9. He left his property to John Rushworth.
652. List, col. 128. Ridge, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1676-85, p. 19. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 78.
653. List, col. 128. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 113/4. Emsall, Local Royalists, IV, p. 175. Train, K.S.S., ed: Nottingham Visitation 1662-4, Thoroton Society, Record Series Vol. XIII, p. 17.
654. List, col. 128. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 220.
655. List, col. 128. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xvi.
656. List, col. 128. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 113/7.
657. List, col. 128. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 152.
658. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 334.
659. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 166. Wotton, Baronets, I, pp. 252/3. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 521. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 356. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1465. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Mickleton and Spearman Mss., Vol. 9, f. 259. Add. Ms. 19678, f. 18. Terry, Scottish Campaigns in Northumberland and Durham, p. 154. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 238. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 476. History of Northumberland, I, p. 131. CSPD 1650, pp. 430, 565. HMC, Mss. in Various Collections, Harford Mss., p. 353. Ibid., Wombwell Mss., p. 116.
660. List, col. 29. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, pp. 15/16 and passim. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 124. Hunter Blair, Mayors and Sherriffs of Newcastle, p. 57. CSPD 1640/1, p. 157. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CJ, II, p. 778. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 135. Rushworth, III, II, p. 613. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 204, 238. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 64, 162/3. Longstaffe, Memoir of Ambrose Barnes, pp. 397, 400.
661. List, cols. 29, 85, 128. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 145. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 98. Hunter Blair, Mayors and Sheriffs of Newcastle, pp. 72, 66. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, pp. 158/9. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, p. 124. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 268/9. CSPD 1645/7, p. 124.
662. List, col. 128. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 537.
663. List, col. 128. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 13, 68, 296/7. P.R.O. SP 16/495, List of Recusants. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 179.
664. List, col. 128. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 123. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 476.
665. List, col. 29. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 23.
666. List, col. 128. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 305/6. See also, Burke, Commoners I, p. 562, pedigree of Ord of East Ord(e). History of Northumberland, V, p. 247, Ord of Prudhoe. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 206. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 340. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
667. List, col. 128. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 83.
668. List, col. 29. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 150.
669. List, col. 85. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 189.

670. List, col. 128. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 228. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 82.
671. List, col. 128. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 194.
672. List, col. 85. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 252. See also ibid. VII, p. 360. Raine, History of North Durham, p. 253.
673. List, col. 128. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 44. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, p. 11.
674. List, col. 128. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 66. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 8.
675. List, col. 29. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, pp. 52/3, 71/2.
676. Young, Marston Moor, pp. 56/7.
677. Temple Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20.
678. Carte, Original Letters, I, p. 48.
679. List, cols. 100, 130. P.R.O. SP 16/745 ff. 52/3. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, pp. 315/8. Temple Newsam Mss., 2 AI/13; 2 AI/17. CSPD 1644/5, p. 81. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 191.
680. List, col. 131. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 210. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 324. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 175/7, 193/4.
681. List, col. 130. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 4. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 134.
682. List, col. 131. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 11/12.
683. List, col. 131. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 61.
684. List, col. 131. Temple Newsam Ms., 2 AI/24. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-5, p. 90. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 310. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 59. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 75.
685. List, col. 131. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 468. The latter source states third son, but the following give him as the second: Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 434. HMC Seventh Report, Lowndes Mss., p. 569.
686. List, col. 131. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 134/7.
687. List, col. 131. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
688. M.A., 20.3.43, p. 890.
689. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 312.
690. Baines, History of Lancaster, II, p. 201. DNB. Catalogue. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, passim. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, p. 56f.; Vol. 95, p. 16. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, passim. Toynbee, M., ed: The Papers of Captain Henry Stevens, Waggon-Master General to King Charles I, Oxfordshire Record Society, p. 23. Philips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, pp. 103, 206/7. CSPD 1644/5, p. 5. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 277. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 344. Day, W.A. ed: The Pythouse Papers, p. 21. HMC Fourth Report, Bagot Mss., p. 340. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 78. Thurloe State Papers, I, p. 81. Whitelock, Memoirs, pp. 238, 332.
691. List, cols. 129, 130. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 326. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 6. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 326. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 54f.; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96 pp. 359/60. Vicars, III, p. 62. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 275. Mercurius Politicus, 19.8.51, p. 1009. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 534.
692. List, col. 129. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, pp. 5/6. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 75/81.
693. List, col. 129. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 155/7. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 208. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 693. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 58. CCC, pp. 1748/9.

694. List, col. 129. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 120/4.
695. List, col. 129. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 157/9; Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 95, pp. 171/4. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276, possibly the p.o.w. Appleby 1648.
696. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 49. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, II, pp. 79/80.
697. List, col. 129. Catalogue. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 63. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 90. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 328.
698. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 137. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 113. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 324. Gibson, Blundell Note Book, p. 167.
699. List, cols. 129, 130. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 348.
700. List, cols. 129, 130. Catalogue. Killed on Marston Moor.
701. List, col. 129. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 290.
702. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 332. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 323.
703. List, cols. 129, 152. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 332. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, pp. 296/7. Gibson, Blundell Note Book, p. 167.
704. List, col. 129. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. CSPD 1660/1, p. 37. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 92. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 348.
705. List, col. 129. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 323. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 326, 390. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, pp. 89, 93. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 118. Catalogue.
706. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 64. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 260f. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 108. Gibson, Blundell Note Book, p. 166.
707. List, col. 129. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 71.
708. List, col. 129. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 123. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 475. Raine, Depositions from York Castle p.138.
709. List, col. 129. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 282.
710. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 5.
711. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 98.
712. List, col. 129. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, p. 253; Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 96, p. 409. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 98. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p.91.
713. List, col. 129. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 1. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 145.
714. List, col. 130. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 10/11; Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 96, p. 406.
715. List, col. 129. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 25. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 95.
716. List, col. 152. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 28. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, IV, p. 1203.
717. List, col. 130. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-5, p. 65.
718. List, col. 130. P.R.O. SP 16/495, List of Recusants. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, p. 157.
719. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 104. See also, Vol. 1.
720. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 378. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 228. CCC, pp. 2228/30. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 109; III, pp. 116/7. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 30. Gardiner, Charles II and Scotland, p. 124. CSPD 1659/60, p. 35. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 544. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 243.

721. List, cols. 134 (as lt. colonel), 74 (as colonel). Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 363/4. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 49. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 319. Wheater, W., The History of Sherburn and Cawood, p. 49. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 145/6. Ainsworth, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1649-54, p. 191. Catalogue. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 269/70. Warburton, III, p. 71.
722. List, col. 134. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 146. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, p. 251. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 65, 119, 122.
723. List, col. 74. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 229. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 117. Warburton, III, p. 71. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 237.
724. List, col. 134. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 352. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 327. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 198. CCC, p. 1097. Warburton, III, p. 71. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 354. Blagg, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1657-60, p. 68. CSPD 1655, p. 215.
725. List, col. 134. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 378. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 228. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition II, p. 109 ; III, p. 117. Vyner Ms., 5809 T/32/50. Wotton, Baronets I, p. 336. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 693. CSPD 1644/5, pp. 197/8.
726. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 270. List, col. 134. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 206, 317 ; IV, p. 121. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 345. Aveling, H., Catholic Recusancy in the City of York, p. 234. T.T. E 107 (30) Advertisements from York and Beverley. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. LJ, V, p. 580. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 184/5. CSPD 1660/1, p. 188.
727. List, cols. 74, 134. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 452. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 121.
728. List, col. 134. HMC Seventh Report, p. 569. See also Vicars, II, p. 160. There was a Captain Vavasour in Pontefract, viz. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 4, at a time when John was already a lt. colonel.
729. List, col. 134. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 137.
730. List, col. 134. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 207. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 424. CCC, p. 2711.
731. List, col. 134. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 404. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 317. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 210.
732. List, col. 74. CCC, pp. 2131/2. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 2/4. Ford and Fuller-Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 88. Shaw, Committee for Plundered Ministers, p. 27. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, II, pp. 131/2.
733. List, col. 74. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 122.
734. List, col. 134. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 312. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 361. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 105 ; VI, p. 201.
735. List, col. 134. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 26. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 309/10, 364 f.n. 3.
736. List, col. 134. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 192.
737. List, col. 134. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 155.
738. List, col. 74. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 94.
739. List, col. 74. Abram, Preston Guild Burgesses, p. 111. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 409 ; Stanning, ibid., Vol. 26, p. 286.
740. List, col. 134. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 96. Lister, West Riding Sessions, pp. 63, 73.

741. List, col. 134. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 212. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 310 ; IV, p. 113.
742. List, col. 134. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 123.
743. List, col. 135. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 69. CSPD 1644/5, p. 5. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 135. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 614.
744. List, col. 135. CSP Ireland, pp. 301, 339/40. Stanley Papers, I, p. 102.
745. List, col. 136. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 49. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204.
746. List, col. 136. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, p. 279. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 103. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42.
747. List, col. 136. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 262. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 249.
748. List, col. 135. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 85 ; Vol. 96, p. 407.
749. List, col. 136. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 48.
750. List, col. 136. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 78. Mercurius Politicus, 8.9.51, p. 1060.
751. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 109. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 564. T.T. E 244 (23) List of divers Commanders under the earl of Newcastle. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 36. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, pp. 369/73. CSPD 1654, p. 439 ; 1656/7, p. 376 ; 1657/8, pp. 549/52 ; 1660/1, p. 339 ; 1658/9, p. 577. For his Catholicism, see Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 357/8. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, pp. 68/70. Watts and Watts, Border to Middle Shire, p. 264. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 243.
752. List, col. 140. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 306. DNB. Young, Marston Moor, p. 34. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 321, 377. Clay, Extinct Peerages of Northern England, p. 31. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 68. Temple Newsam Ms., 2 AI/14. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 30. Catalogue. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 113/5.
753. List, col. 140. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 263. CSPD 1644, p. 255.
754. List, col. 140. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 377. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 7, 19/20, 57, 106/7. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 82/4. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 354. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 271.
755. List, cols. 140, 151. History of Northumberland, XV, p. 252 ; VII, p. 360. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 390. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 324. Lancashire R.O., Weld of Stonyhurst Mss., DD St. Box 10. CSPD 1657/8, pp. 319, 552. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 107. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 304. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 36. Catalogue. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 339. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 150/3. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46.
756. List, col. 140. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 45/6. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 308/9. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 44.
757. List, col. 140. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 87, 375/6. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. Hedley Northumberland Families, II, p. 113. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 222. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 244.
758. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 137, 244, 269, 271. Clay Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 82. Aveling, Northern Catholics p. 309. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 254. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 435. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 376.

759. List, col. 140. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 310. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 182.
760. List, col. 140. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 83. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636-7, p. 149.
761. List, col. 140. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 156.
762. List, col. 140. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 71. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, pp. 211/2.
763. List, col. 140. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 361.
764. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 342/3.
765. List, col. 140. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 131. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
766. Lumb, Leeds Parish Registers, p. 165.
767. DNB. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 101. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, p. 73. CSPD 1611/18, p. 465. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 564. Hunter Blair, C.H., Members of Parliament for Northumberland and Newcastle upon Tyne 1559-1831, Arch. Ael., 4th Series, Vol. XXIII, p. 113. Clay, Extinct Peerages of Northern England, p. 250. Keeler, The Long Parliament, p. 394. Brunton, Pennington, Members of the Long Parliament, pp. 201, 245. LJ, V, p. 170. HMC Fifth Report House of Lords Mss., p. 37. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 302. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Mickleton and Spearman Mss., Vol. 9 f. 259. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, pp. 69, 169. M.A., 28.3.43, p. 284. LJ, VII, p. 55. Thurloe State Papers, I, p. 80. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 17. CSPD 1649/50, p. 39. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxi, 378/82. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 1. Mercurius Politicus, 15.7.50, p.91.
768. List, col. 141. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 208. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 28, 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 67, 74, 216, 248, 321 f.n. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 87. Riddell was Widdrington's brother in law.
769. CSPD 1644, p. 55. LJ, VII, pp. 148, 209, 322, 488. HMC Sixth Report House of Lords Mss., p. 104. LJ, VIII, p. 200.
770. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 60, 142.
771. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 188/90. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 208. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 72. Terry, C.S., Visits of Charles I to Newcastle in 1633, 1639, 1646/7, Arch. Ael., Vol. XXXI, p. 110. History of Northumberland, XII, p. 463.
772. List, col. 141. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 188. CSPD 1635/6, p. 305. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 71.
773. List, col. 141. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 8.
774. List, col. 140. History of Northumberland, IV, pp. 153, 188, 227 ; XIII, p. 196. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 231. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, pp. 322, 324. Ainsworth, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1649-54, p. 118. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 197, 368.
775. List, col. 141. History of Northumberland, VIII, p. 182 f.n. 2. CSPD 1656/7, p. 196.
776. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 139. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 363. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 339. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 190. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 186. Lumb, Leeds Parish Registers, p. 165. Vicars, II, pp. 46/7.
777. List, col. 141. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 207.
778. List, col. 140. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 75.
779. List, col. 141. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 121.
780. List, col. 141. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, pp. 104, 109. Forster, Durham Recusants' Roll 1636/7, pp. 164/5, 182/3. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 339.

781. List, col. 141. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 160. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 11. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 158.
782. List, col. 141. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 323. James, Northumberland Estate Accounts, p. 205. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 159. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 71.
783. List, col. 140. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 463/4.
784. List, col. 141. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 188.
785. List, col. 141. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 12.
786. List, col. 141. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 206, 222. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 206. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 324.
787. List, col. 141. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681-8, p. 79. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 180.
788. List, col. 141. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 61.
789. List, col. 141. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 173.
790. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 318.
791. List, col. 141. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 106. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 67. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 44.
792. List, col. 140. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 172.
793. List, col. 141. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 326, 335.
794. List, col. 141. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 139.
795. List, col. 141. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, pp. 190, 201.
796. List, col. 141. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 79. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 301.
797. List, col. 141. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 18.
798. List, col. 146. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1682. Lister, West Riding Sessions, p. 354. Carlisle, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, p. 103. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Vicars, I, p. 81. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 331 and passim. Sheffield Central Library, Wharnccliffe Muniments, D 651. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 28 f.n. 37. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 384. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 197; III, p. 39. CCC, pp. 1166/71. Clay, Abstracts of Yorkshire Wills, pp. 49/50.
799. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 89.
800. List, cols. 69, 100, 146. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 13, 190. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 311. Atkinson, North Riding Sessions, III, p. 206. Baildon, Compositions for Refusing Knighthoods, p. 100. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 49. Warburton, III, p. 31. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 304, 370/1, 494. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 116. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 50.
801. List, col. 146. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660-5, p. 34. Lister, West Riding Sessions, pp. 238, 326.
802. Rushworth III, II, pp. 50, 28. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, p. 170. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 354. Dendy, F.W., Exchequer Commissions and Depositions relating to Northumberland, Arch. Ael., 3rd Series, Vol. IV, p. 32. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 451. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxii, 385/8. CCC, pp. 2667/71.
803. List, col. 146. Warwick, Memoirs. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 178. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, p. 14. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 293. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, p. 145. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 13. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Spalding, Memorials of the Trubles, II, p. 317. Warburton, III, p. 71. Stephens Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22. CSPD 1655, p. 216. Thurloe State Papers, V, pp. 574, 578. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689.

804. List, col. 146. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitations, III, p. 403. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 320. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 246. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 315. Forster, Durham Recusants 1636/7, p. 183. Longstaffe, Durham Court of High Commission, p. 181. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 191/2. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
805. List, col. 146. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 246.
806. List, col. 146. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 197.
807. List, col. 146. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 361. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 313. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 307 ; IV, p. 83. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 69/70. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 140.
808. List, col. 146. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 403. Wood, Durham Registry Wills, p. 164. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 345. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 247. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 61. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
809. List, col. 146. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 32, 159.
810. List, col. 146. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 344.
811. Young, Edgehill, p. 87. Roy, Royalist Army, p. 102 f.n. 3.
812. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, pp. 339, 577. RCHM, Newark: Siege Works, p. 20.
813. DNB. Ainsworth, Canterbury Prerogative Wills 1649-54, p. 65. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 222. HMC 12th Report, Beaufort Mss., p. 40. Warburton, II, p. 271 f.n. 2. Vicars, II, pp. 9/10. CSPD 1651, p. 114.
814. List, col. 133. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 534. Marshall, Le Neve's Pedigrees, p. 180. M.A., 8.3.45, p. 1500. HMC, 12th Report, Beaufort Mss., pp. 30, 43. Bulstrode, R., Memoirs and Reflections upon the Reign and Government of King Charles I and King Charles the II, p. 141. CSPD 1658/9, p. 247. Carlisle, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, p. 168.
815. List, col. 133. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 182/3. CCC, pp. 1874/6.
816. List, col. 24. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Farrow and Barton, Norwich Consistory Wills, p. 21. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition, p. 354. Catalogue. CAM, pp. 838, 1890.
817. List, col. 34. Philips, Civil War in Wales and the Marches, II, p. 200. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 340. CCC, pp. 918/9. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, Pt. II, p. 436.
818. List, col. 24. I am indebted to John Burgess who traced this man in the course of his work on the Northamptonshire community.
819. CCC, p. 1252. CSPD 1660/1, p. 25.
820. List, col. 133. CCC, p. 1292.
821. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 272. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 35. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 199. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 310. CSPD 1657/8, p. 340. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 437. Baildon, Compositions for Refusing Knighthood, p. 100.
822. List, col. 24. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 330. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 435.
823. List, col. 133. Poulson, History of Holderness, I, p. 191.

Faint, illegible text at the top of the page, possibly a header or introductory paragraph.

Second paragraph of faint, illegible text.

THE FOOT

Main body of faint, illegible text following the section header.

Colonel John (Lord) BELASYSE'S Regiment of Foot.

To speak of a single regiment may seem somewhat misleading, for, as will be gathered from the officer analysis below, the force underwent distinctive changes in its field command in 1643/4. There is no doubt, however, that the regiment which emerged late in 1643 had its roots in the recruiting by John Belasyse at the end of 1642. By the time that the regiment was finally destroyed, at Naseby in 1645, Belasyse was back in its ranks, serving as a volunteer under Colonel Gilby.¹

Moone, Belasyse's biographer, noted that the regiment was first raised by his master in the late summer of 1642 with money provided by Thomas Lord Fauconberg, Belasyse's father: "His being one of the first regiments that came into His Majesties service which was soon after armed and recruited to the number of 1000 men from Nottingham"². That statement is misleading, in that, from the List at least, it would seem that the regiment had a high Yorkshire element in its officer cadre. It may be that company commanders swelled their units whilst in Nottinghamshire. From Nottingham, the regiment marched to Shrewsbury and then to Edgehill where it fought after being present at the muster on October 12th at Norton and Sutton.³ Marching south with the royal army, the regiment was engaged at Brentford, where according to Moone, it showed courage: "towards the end, his regiment coming in fresh, he advanced and bet them through the town and pursued almost as far as Hammersmith" in which action the regiment took six colours and a field officer. On November 24th the sum of £182.11s. was set aside for pay for the men,⁴ who had drawn 150 lbs. of powder on the 5th, and by Christmas it was quartered at Banbury.⁵ Going into garrison at Reading in the late winter of 1642/3, where Belasyse was apparently in command, it was present until the town surrendered.⁶ At Culham Camp in May the regiment was technically at full strength insofar as companies were concerned, but whether it was more than at half its potential in men is doubtful.⁷ At the storm of Bristol, the regiment was one of four in the third Tertia of infantry which was commanded overall by Belasyse,⁸ and was temporarily put into garrison when the city was captured. By the end of 1644, regimental command had changed hands, according to Moone, Belasyse giving the colonelcy to Theophilus Gilby (q.v., below). From the records of the battle of Selby in April 1644, however, it would appear that whilst Gilby was mustering his new regiment, 355 strong, near Oxford, some at least of the officers that had joined Belasyse in 1642, were with him in Yorkshire (see Vol. 1). Whether there was any real break in continuity at this point, in the changeover of command, however, is not altogether clear and it may merely be that Belasyse took with him into Yorkshire in January 1644 selected officers of company command rank to assist him in recruiting anew. This does raise the question of whether in the List, we are not dealing with three, rather than with two, regimental structures unified by name and origin.

It would be difficult to distinguish them one from another, but theoretically the regiment would consist of officers and men raised in 1642 by Belasyse: officers and men brought in by Gilby when he assumed command, to replace those who went north with Belasyse: and officers and men raised under Belasyse in Yorkshire in January and February 1644, who would have had no link at all with Gilby. This problem is, of course, insoluble, and all one can do is to state it.

At Gilby's muster in April 1644 there were nine captains, 10 lieutenants, 11 ensigns, 11 gentlemen of arms, 22 sergeants, 30 corporals, 14 drummers and 268 rank and file.¹⁰ Whilst very few Royalist regiments, except for the elite, were at full strength at this date, or at any other, this figure does argue for some depletion of the ranks when Belasyse went north. In Oxford on June 19th when it was noticed by a Parliamentarian as "Colonel Gilby's regiment",¹¹ it cannot, as Young opined, have fought on Marston Moor¹² or have served in York garrison, although clearly, elements which had been present at Selby must have done so. Gilby's regiment fought at Naseby in 1645 where it was more or less wiped out, Belasyse, as has been said, serving in its ranks.¹³

Colonel John (Lord) Belasyse: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, see Appendix 1.

Colonel (Sir) Theophilus Gilby: Cited in the List as a field commander, he was fourth of the seven sons of Sir George Gilby of Stainton, Lincolnshire, and was himself styled ordinarily as of Everton, Nottinghamshire. Major of the regiment at Edgehill, he quickly replaced the first lt. colonel (see below, Danby) and as lt. colonel signed the articles for surrendering Reading in April 1643. Receiving equipment for the regiment at Culham Camp in May 1643, he was still lt. colonel in August when he was requiring equipment for 450 men under his command newly arrived from Bristol. His advance in rank came at the end of the year, when Belasyse handed him the regiment before leaving for Yorkshire to take up command there (see above, and also Vol. 1). Styled as a colonel in his own right in April 1644, to this period or soon after must belong the undated petition signed by himself and other infantry commanders, urging the King and the Council of War to look to pay and to supplies, and to see to the recruitment of the old regiments back to strength, rather than issuing new commissions. His signature also appeared on the 'Protestant' letter to the earl of Essex urging peace talks, in August of the same year. Taken prisoner at Naseby, and then exchanged, he went to Newark with what was left of his forces, and was knighted there on October 27th. Of his doings between 1646 and the restoration we catch only glimpses. He was in Scotland in March 1651, apparently narrowly escaping arrest, and was on the Council of War at Warrington in August of the same year, implying that he must have fought at Wigan Lane or, later, at Worcester. He had clearly been actively engaged in the secret

preparations for the rising, since in 1649 he was paid the sum of 2000 guilders for expenses. In a petition which he presented in 1660, Gilby set forth in brief his own activities which serves to fill the gaps. After the 1646 defeat, he had entered the service of the Dutch, joining Charles II when summoned and, after Worcester fight, went into the service of the duke of Tuscany. In 1657 he had returned to the King's service in Flanders, and in 1659 was arrested in England as an agent. This all suggests a man of experience in the European wars prior to 1642. Short of money in 1660/1, he was petitioned against by his old commander who wanted to pre-empt Gilby's claim on certain fen drainage rights. Apparently balked by Belasyse, Gilby petitioned for favour and was authorised to survey Scarborough Castle and to report on the requirements for a garrison there. In 1667 he appears again as major in the earl of Chesterfield's Foot.¹⁴

Lt. Colonel (Sir) Thomas Danby: Cited by rank and regiment in A Most True Relation of the Present State of His Majestys Army, he probably held this command for but a brief period, centering upon Edgehill, and may appear elsewhere in the List as a field commander in his own right. He was born in 1610, the son of Christopher Danby of Farnley and Thorp and Perrow, and was raised as a Protestant contrary to the wishes of the maternal side of the family. He matriculated at St. John's, Cambridge, in 1627, was knighted at Dublin in 1633, and became by 1636 JP and deputy lieutenant under the authority of Strafford, with whom he was closely associated. As High Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1637/8, he was an unequivocal collector of Ship Money. Returned as MP for Richmond in 1640, he voted against Strafford's attainder and was in every way a model Royalist. Cliffe has given his income on the outbreak of war as some £2,300 per annum, but he was in debt to the tune of £5000 borrowed in 1638, and still owing at the time of his composition. He appears to have been a prisoner of war in Manchester in 1643, and if this is so, it implies that he went back north after Edgehill for unknown reasons, although in his composition in 1646 he admitted to having recruited in Ripon and Kirby Malzeard, which suggests that he was fulfilling the commission implied in the List. Fined the enormous sum of £4,780.16s., he kept his head down during the Interregnum, emerging as MP for Richmond again in 1660, the year of his death.¹⁵

Lt. Colonel Henry Darcy: Cited in the List, his rank may belong to the period of Belasyse's Yorkshire command of 1644. Third of the six sons of Conyers Lord Darcy (q.v.), he was styled as of Appleton, Esquire, and had been born in 1610. He established his own branch of the family at Colborne, but in 1642 was not seated there. In his composition, he admitted to having assisted forces against the Parliament, and it was deposed that he had surrendered in November 1645. A fine of £176 was imposed. He would appear to have avoided trouble during the Interregnum,

but his son and heir, Henry, born in 1632/3, was in arms in 1654/5, for on March 11th 1656 a pass was issued to him to journey abroad despite his having been engaged "in the last insurrection", and he was arrested again in March 1657. Henry the father died in 1668 and was buried at Haddesley.¹⁶

Lt. Colonel Francis Godfrey: Although he does not appear in the List, Young deduced from the evidence that Godfrey, a Norfolk Catholic, rose in the ranks of this regiment. Discharged as a Catholic in 1640, when he was an ensign, he served as a captain at Edgehill, became major of the regiment when Gilby was lt. colonel, replaced Pell (q.v., below) as lt. colonel by the time of Naseby, and was there taken. His name also appeared in the August 1644 appeal to the earl of Essex for peace negotiations, which seems odd in view of his religion, but which is remarkable also in that this regiment seems to have had a major part in the forum which drew up the letter. The matter of identity may be confused by the Captain Francis Godfrey killed at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645.¹⁷

Lt. Colonel [] Murray: The name and rank are given by Peacock, but Murray cannot be traced with certainty.¹⁸

Lt. Colonel (Sir) Bartholomew Pell: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster under Gilby, probably of Lincoln origin, and born in 1598. Curiously, his knighthood, which came in the spring of 1643, preceded that of his superior Gilby, which suggests that whereas Gilby was the professional, Pell was of some local eminence in Lincolnshire. He signed for powder on November 5th 1642, and was equipping his company at Culham in May of the following year. By July, when with the regiment at Bristol, he was already alluded to as a knight, and may have been honoured for some action in the storm of the city. His signature also appeared on the August 1644 letter to Essex, when he was certainly lt. colonel of the regiment, in which rank he was replaced before Naseby. In October 1645 he commanded in Langford garrison against Cromwell himself, receiving an escort to Oxford upon the surrender of the house. Nothing more seems to be known of him. He died in 1671.¹⁹

Major John Beverley: Cited in the List under Gilby as field commander, he was born in 1618, eldest son of Vincent Beverley of Gt. Smeaton, Yorkshire, whom he succeeded in 1634. Captured at Naseby, at his composition it was stated that he had been exchanged. A fine of £247 was levied. Beverley continued his association with Gilby after the restoration, for in 1662 he was instructed to gather money on Gilby's behalf for Trainband uses. Styled at this date as of Jervaulx, Gentleman, he appears to have retained his major's rank. Intended for the knighthood of the Royal Oak, he died in 1680.²⁰

Major William Booth: Cited in the List, probably the original major of the regiment after it was reorganised in the wake of Edgehill. Of Killingholme, Lincolnshire, Esquire, his company was at the Culham muster in May 1643 and he later transferred, as Lt. colonel, to Pelham's Horse, a regiment with which we are not concerned. Fined £415 at his composition, Booth seems to have died in or around 1660.²¹

Major John Hilliard: Cited in the List under Belasyse, he may have risen to the rank during the service in Yorkshire in 1644. He was second of the three sons of Richard Hildyard of Ottringham, who died in 1628, and was himself born in 1619. He was a captain at Culham in May 1643, and would appear to have died overseas by 1653/4. We have no record of sequestration or of composition in his case. John was a cousin of Lt. Colonel (Sir) Robert Hildyard (q.v., Langdale's Horse).²²

Major [] Pope: Given by Peacock, and unidentified.

Major Thomas Whitmore: This designation rests entirely upon a reference to the man killed near Newark in 1646 when Belasyse was in command there. He is not included in the survey for want of corroborative evidence.²³

Captain Humphrey Baine: He does not appear in the List, but his company was at Culham Camp in May 1643 and he himself was buried at Radley, Berkshire, in July. The pedigree of the Baynes of Woodale has several Humphries, none of whom seem to fit this person. However, Humphrey Baine of Over Ahead who died in 1601, and who was succeeded by a son John, had a grandson Humphrey, a Catholic, of whom little is known.²⁴

Captain Henry Bellingham: This man was mortally wounded at Edgehill, probably second of the three sons of Alan Bellingham of Levens, Westmorland, born c. 1623 and a nephew of Colonel Sir Henry Bellingham (q.v.).²⁵

Captain Thomas Booth: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, but probably fifth of the seven sons of Nicholas Booth of Pontefract. At the restoration, he petitioned that in 1645 he had been captured on a raid from Newark, and improperly detained contrary to the articles for the surrender of the garrison. He claimed that his captor, Francis Fiennes alias Clinton, should be excluded from the act of Indemnity.²⁶

Captain Martin Frobisher: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire under Gilby. Such a man, of Kingston upon Hull, had his will granted probate in 1679.²⁷

Captain Robert Gale: Cited in the List, one of the few identified Catholics

in the regiment. Styled of Akeham (Acomb) Grange near York, Esquire, he was the son of Robert Ga(y)le of the same place who died early in the century, or conceivably the son of Francis Gale of Akeham who, in 1630, compounded for the Recusancy of himself, his wife and children. Robert found the burden of sequestration financially crippling, and by 1660 was heavily in debt. This may be why he failed to appear at Dugdale's visitation, when he was noted as of Rufforth, near York.²⁸

Captain Doyly Gower: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, which conclusively disproves the claim of the genealogist Frederick Barlow that Doyly was colonel of his brother's dragoon regiment (see Sir Thomas Gower's Dragoons). Cited also as Captain Gore in this regiment by a claimant in the List. A younger brother of Sir Thomas Gower of Stittenham, he was styled of the same place which implies dependence upon his elder brother. Styled Gentleman, he came in at the fall of York and petitioned in 1647, being fined £36. He died in 1672.²⁹

Captain [] Hodges: Given by Peacock, but possibly Captain William Hoog or Hogg who served in Newcastle's army, and whose son was apparently a lieutenant. The information came from Hoog's grand-daughter, gaoled in 1684/5 for refusing the oath of allegiance to Charles II.³⁰

Captain [] Homer: Given by Peacock, but such a man was captured at Appleby in 1648.³¹

Captain Thomas Monck: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, such a man was in Carlisle garrison in 1644.³²

Captain John Pollock: Cited in the List, his company was at Culham in May 1643 receiving equipment.³³

Captain Alphonso Thwing: Cited in the List, of Heworth near York. He died between 1674/80, for in 1674 his wife was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk Quarter Sessions. In 1684 his niece was gaoled for refusing the oath of allegiance, and in her petition for release alluded to her uncle's military service on the King's behalf. One of Alphonso's nephews had been executed as a Catholic priest, and it is safe to assume that he was himself a Catholic.³⁴

Captain William Trueman: Cited in the List, and appearing as a sequestered delinquent in the composition papers. However, Clay was uncertain as to whether William Trueman of Marderby and Captain Trueman of Kilvington were one and the same. The problem beset the local committee men in 1652 as well. Two such men did concern Dugdale in 1665, for he noted that William Trueman of Marderby and William Trueman of Felixkirk near Ripon, failed to appear at his visitation. Marderby

lies 2½ miles from Thirsk; Kilvington is also in that area, so Captain Trueman of the proceedings, and William Trueman, have to be one and the same. Felixkirk, Feliskirk or Felliskirk lies three miles from Thirsk, and it looks as if Dugdale may himself have made an error, unless we are dealing with a father and son.³⁵

Captain (Edmund) Uvedale: Listed at Culham, without a forename, in May 1643, undoubtedly Edmund Uvedale of Dorset, petitioning to compound in 1646 for holding a garrison. On October 17th 1645, Major Edmund Uvedale (he had probably left the regiment) was one of the commanders in Langford House, in which connection, see Lt. Colonel Pell, above.³⁶

Captain John Woolverston: Claimed in the List, from London/Westminster, but unidentified. He was at Culham Camp in May 1643, when a captain, and seems to have been a lieutenant at Edgehill. Such a man was taken at Selby in April 1644 (see Vol. 1) which supports the contention that Belasyse took officers north with him.³⁷

Lieutenant Stephen Forster: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Frobisher's company, under Gilby. Such a man, of Escrick, Yorkshire, Gentleman, surrendered at Oxford and was described as a Deputy Musterman (see also, Captain Forster, Osborne's Horse, above).³⁸

Lieutenant John Milner: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Lt. Colonel Darcy's troop. Such a man was fifth of the five sons of William Milner of Oundle who died in 1654. John, born in 1614, may be the same as of Skipton who died in 1664.³⁹

Lieutenant John Nodding: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Gore's (Doyly Gower's?) company. Such a man of Cambe, in Kilburn, died c. 1663.⁴⁰

Lieutenant John Orrey: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Gale's company, possibly the John Orrey of Barton, yeoman, juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1634.⁴¹

Lieutenant James Rythe: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Francis's company. Such a man, of St. Martins in the Fields, petitioned in 1647 that he and his father in law went to Bristol and there, adhered to the Royal forces. Surrendering with the town, James was fined £100 and re-sequestered in 1652 for failing to pay. The link with Bristol is extremely valuable (see regimental notation, above) and renders the identification secure.⁴²

Ensign Thomas Swale: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Hilliard's company. The only identified Thomas Swale

was second of the 13 sons of Francis Swale of South Stainley, Yorkshire, who died unmarried. However, ensign seems too low a rank for a man whose younger brothers were company and troop commanders.⁴³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Barret, given by Peacock.

Captain Mathew Francis, cited in the List under Gilby.

Captain [] Holloway, given by Peacock.

Captain [] Legge, given by Peacock.

Captain William Marsh, claimed in the List from Sussex, under Gilby.

Captain [] Metoo, given by Peacock.

Captain [] Withers, given by Peacock.

Lieutenant Charles Askew, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Beverley's company.

Lieutenant James Fosse, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thwing's company.

Ensign John Chambers, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Booth's company.

Ensign Robert Dickenson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Thwing's company.

Ensign William Geldart, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Pollock's company.

Ensign Michael Harrison, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Darcy's company.

Ensign William Kay, claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Gilby.

Ensign Richard Sawkins, claimed in the List from Essex.

Colonel Sir Henry BELLINGHAM'S Regiment of Foot.

This Cumbrian regiment, though it may have been in the field in 1648, most certainly existed, or was at least commissioned, in 1643. Scholars, most recently C.B. Phillips, have tended to believe that Bellingham was more or less enjoying neutrality in the years 1642/6, whilst Phillips has contended that he did not become actively Royalist until 1644, which would seem a curious time at which to make such a move, when most 'neutrals' were shifting toward Parliament and when, in Cumbria, Royalism was crumbling.⁴⁴ Whilst a discussion of Sir Henry's sympathies would be better dealt with below, it is crucial to the claim that this regiment existed in the first war. The evidence is slender, confined really to one contemporary reference, but it is one positive source in a sea of negatives. In the Musgrave Mss. there is a list of commissioned colonels, dated to the spring of 1643, and Bellingham's name appears on it. Whether he bothered to do much with the commission is another matter, and one discussed elsewhere in general (see Vol. 1). Certainly, whilst with this regiment we are beset by the problem of 'which war' on a grand scale, the force had roots in 1643.

Colonel Sir Henry Bellingham: Born in or around 1595, second of the three sons of Sir James Bellingham of Helsington whom he succeeded in 1641. A fellow commoner of Queen's, Cambridge, in 1609, he entered the Middle Temple in 1611 and was created a baronet in 1620. Knight of the shire for Westmorland in 1625/6, and a JP in his native county, he was returned to Parliament in 1640 and does not appear to have been expelled. There is no doubt that Sir Henry played an entirely ambiguous role during the first civil war, being at one and the same time, commissioned by Newcastle and allowed to move freely about in the north-west, whilst having been appointed by Parliament to raise assessments for the Parliamentary army and to seize upon delinquents estates. The fact of the matter is, that he did very little, virtually nothing, for either side, but if he was active at all, it was in the royal interest which predominated in Westmorland until late 1644. His son James, who was certainly in arms for the King, was by October 1644 named as JP for the Parliamentary party, and this clearly illustrates the chronic lack of communication between the extreme north-west and the rest of the country, a point stressed elsewhere (see Vol. 1). Sir Henry was in arms for the King in 1648, which implies Presbyterian leanings on his part, and his Durham property was sequestered. Since he died in 1650, we have no way of knowing how he was viewed at the restoration, or whether he was likely to have been implicated in Interregnum conspiracies.⁴⁵

Major Thomas Glaster: Cited in the List, such a man of Lea in Backford parish, Cheshire, surrendered in 1645. Major Glaster was in Carlisle in October 1644, and was captured at

Appleby in 1648. However, a Thomas Glaster of Stanley (or Stainley) in Yorkshire had his will granted probate in 1679.⁴⁶

Captain Humphrey Bagaley: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, such a man was taken at Appleby in 1648.⁴⁷

Captain [] Giles: Cited in the List, see such a man, possibly the same, in Newcastle's or Timothy Featherstonehaugh's Foot regiments.

Captain John Orbell: Cited in the List, possibly an error for Nicholas Orbell who petitioned to compound as of Capleside, Westmorland, admitting rank, but claiming he had laid down his arms before Appleby fight. Possibly a second war rank only. Fined £68.⁴⁸

Lieutenant Giles Bailey: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, such a man was captured in 1648 at Appleby.⁴⁹

Lieutenant Bryan Taylor: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, such a man was taxed at £20 in January 1656.⁵⁰

Ensign John Sharp: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, Major Glaster's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Orton.⁵¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain William Guy, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Captain Richard Prisso, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Captain Peter Shepherd, cited in the List.

Captain Hamon Thurstan, claimed in the List from Norfolk.

Lieutenant Peregrine Anderson, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Giles's company.

Lieutenant Simon Bagaley, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Bagaley's company.

Lieutenant Francis Churnel, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Anthony Preston, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Orbell's company.

Ensign John Beck, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Shepherd's company.

Ensign Edward Briggs, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Orbell's company.

Ensign Francis Hunter, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Ensign Gerard Rose, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Prisso's company.

Colonel Charles BRANDLING'S Regiment of Foot.

If this regiment saw any active service at all, then it was probably in 1644 during the defence of Newcastle, even though interpretation of the officer cadre implies its existence as early as the spring of 1643. There is no clue as to its whereabouts at any other time.

Colonel Charles Brandling: Styled of Alnwick Abbey, Esquire, son and heir of Sir Francis Brandling who died in 1641. Sir Francis, as Sheriff of Northumberland in 1625 and as MP in 1624, had been a fierce persecutor of Recusants, but Charles was, nonetheless, a Catholic. Born in 1620, Charles matriculated at Queen's, Oxford, in 1637, and in his composition proceedings said that he had only assumed arms when the Scots invaded the country, and that he had surrendered with Newcastle. The claim may well be dubious, however, and in this context see below, Lt. Colonel Brandling. Listed as a Catholic in 1649, Charles was fined £898 and died in 1665.⁵²

Lt. Colonel Robert Brandling: Cited in the List. See him as a colonel in his own right, Appendix 1, Horse.

Captain Robert Brandling: Cited in the List, third or fourth son of Sir Francis and hence a brother of his colonel. He was styled as of Whitehouse, Alnwick, and died in 1664. Listed as a gentleman volunteer in 1660, he may have been a Catholic, if it is his son Robert who is listed as a Recusant in 1677/84.⁵³

Captain John Collingwood: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, it is a common name there, particularly to be noted in Recusant lists. He must not be confused with Cornet John Collingwood of Clavering's Horse (q.v.). Possibly second of the five sons of Cuthbert Collingwood of Dalden, Esquire, who died in 1666. This was a strong Catholic family, John's brothers Thomas and Roger being priests in Europe and another brother, Benedict, was killed at Naseby in arms for the King. However, Cuthbert's elder brother was named John, and was styled as of Eppleton to which estate he succeeded in 1644/5 on their father's death. A John Collingwood, reformado, was taken at Coquet Water in 1648.⁵⁴

Lieutenant Ralph Carre: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, the name being extremely common. Perhaps Ralph Carre of Lesbury who died in 1703, but see also Gray's Foot regiment, below.⁵⁵

Lieutenant Thomas Rutherford: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, rank confirmed in his composition papers. The eldest of the 19 (!) sons of Gawen Rutherford II of Rutchester, Northumberland. The father was still living in 1653, by

which time, according to the pedigrees, his sons had been virtually wiped out in the King's service. Thomas, sequestered in 1644 as a Catholic delinquent, had been convicted as a Recusant in 1629 and was so listed in 1647, although a man of similar name signed the 1641/2 Protestation as from Willington in Brancepeth, Co. Durham, though this may have been politicking on Thomas's part. His property was inserted in the 1652 Treason Act and in 1668 he had to sell the family home.⁵⁶

Quartermaster Philip Goodrick: Claimed in the List from Durham, regimental staff rank. He was Charles Brandling's steward, and was styled as of Felling, Co.

Durham.⁵⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant George Davison, claimed in the List from Durham in Lt. Colonel Brandling's company.

Lieutenant William Fenwick, claimed in the List from Northumberland (a difficult name to positively pin down, see Clavering's Horse).

Ensign Ralph Errington, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Quartermaster John Harwood, claimed in the List from Northumberland (he must have preceded or followed Goodrick in the rank, see above).

Colonel Anthony BYERLEY'S Regiment of Foot.

The period of existence for this regiment cannot have lasted more than three or four months in the field, for it was commissioned specifically in early 1644 by Colonel Sir Thomas Glemham (q.v.), acting on Newcastle's behalf, in the face of the Scottish invasion.⁵⁸

Colonel Anthony Byerley: First of the four sons of Christopher Byerley of Midridge Grange, Co. Durham, he came from a markedly Recusant family and it would seem that the decision to conform came from Christopher, since Anthony's uncle Thomas continued the family tradition. Born in 1620, Anthony was in Sidney College in 1636, and entered Gray's Inn in 1638/9. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Co. Durham, when he was residing at Heighington. His war service is hedged with problems, since at composition, largely concerning the father, Anthony was said to have been in arms in 1642, and he certainly went into hiding late in 1644, when attempts were made to seize him. He failed to take the Negative Oath, which hints that he may have retained some Catholic views. His father denied the charges and stressed that his son had been commissioned by Glemham in 1644, and that he had not helped to equip the regiment which his son raised. Eventually yielding in 1644/5, Anthony took the Covenant, and a fine of £4,261 was cut by 1649 to £2,261 which suggests no participation in the 1648 rising. Even so, in 1655 Anthony was deep in conspiracy, for information was passed to Major General Worsley from Newcastle that "Mr. Byareley, a rich gentleman his father is reputed to bee, hath disbursed 200 l. for horses, and hee with some others should have mett the lord Willoby at Yorke with 500 horse". No actions were taken against him. The family money was invested in forfeit Royalist lands during the Interregnum, in some cases to assist the owners, and Anthony went on to marry the daughter of that stern Protestant, Colonel Sir Richard Hutton (q.v.). Listed for the Royal Oak in 1660 when his estate was assessed as worth £600 yearly, Anthony was a JP in 1663 and in 1665 was appointed to a committee to arrange for the inventory of the lands and goods of the regicide, Henry Vane Jnr. He died in 1677.⁵⁹

Major Thomas Hall: Cited in the List, two possibilities present themselves for consideration. Thomas Hall I was second son, but heir, of John Hall of Consett and Birtley, born in 1602. No delinquency, however, seems to have attached to him. He is more likely to have been Thomas Hall of Hornby in Cleveland, fourth of the six sons of Francis Hall of Newsam who died in 1605. At his composition, Thomas Hall II of Hornby claimed he had attended the King at York in 1642, but had performed no other services, which may have been skilful concealment, for he was fined £253 in 1651. He is alluded to in passing, in the papers of his brother, Christopher Hall of Hartburn. Thomas failed to appear at Dugdale's visitation. He may

be the Thomas Hall of Shittleheugh listed in January 1661 as a gentleman volunteer under the Lord Widdrington.⁶⁰

Lieutenant Ralph Grange: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man of Bedale was listed as a Recusant in 1669, 1670, 1674 and, apparently, in 1664.⁶¹

Ensign Richard Oswald: Claimed in the List from Durham, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Coniscliffe, and in 1650 was evading payment of money due to the Committee for the Advance of Money.⁶²

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Hercules Bouche, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Captain Francis Gaines, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Quartermaster Marmaduke Blackwell, claimed in the List from Durham.

Colonel Henry CHAYTOR'S (Regiment of) Foot.

This regimental structure is extremely problematical, although Young⁶³ assumed its existence and presence as a regiment at Marston Moor. However, from the evidence in the List, it seems that this force may have had close links with the regiment of Colonel Sir Henry Fletcher (q.v.), and Chaytor may just possibly have been lt. colonel to Fletcher before promotion. Of the regiment's activities we know very little, nor can we be absolutely sure that it fought on Marston Moor as a regiment, although Chaytor held a command there. It is most likely that the claimants given below, served under Chaytor in the defence of Bolton Castle (q.v., Vol. 1).

Colonel Henry Chaytor: Styled of Croft, Yorkshire, second of four sons of Sir William Chaytor, he was born in 1617 and had early military experience in Ireland where he soldiered with George Monck. His father died in 1640, and Henry was probably actively in arms in England towards the end of 1642. He compounded in 1649 for activities in both wars, having been, in 1645, Governor of Bolton Castle. A fine of £100 was levied, and he was then styled Gentleman. Active in the 1654/5 conspiracies, he died in 1664 "tooke a sicknesse this last Saturday night, beeing well and hunting all day, but he departed yesterday, and was buried...."⁶⁴

Captain John Pawlet: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, he was in the defence of Carlisle in 1644.⁶⁵

Captain Lancelot Walker: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, see the same man (apparently), Fletcher's Foot.

Captain Ralph Willy: Claimed in the List from Durham, such a man of Croft Bridge, Gentleman, was fined £1.13.4d. in 1650/1 on a personal estate worth £10. He was captured at Rowton Heath in 1645, and at Appleby, so it seems, in 1648.⁶⁶

The following officer has not been identified.

Captain William Wharton, claimed in the List from London/Westminster (for problems of identification, see Langdale's Horse, above, Appendix 1).

Colonel Edward CHISENALL'S Regiment of Foot.

The regiment was almost certainly recruited, in Lancashire, in May and June 1644, during Rupert's triumphant progress through the earl of Derby's old recruiting grounds. However, although the regiment does seem to have fought at Marston Moor in July, it cannot by definition have attained even half strength in so short a period. Young described it as a regiment of "raw levies"⁶⁷ but this view does not seem to be valid even though the regiment was rapidly recruited. On the contrary, Rupert's reappearance awoke the Royalism of many men in Lancashire who had seen service with Derby in 1642/3 and who may have carried into the officer ranks of the regiment, some expertise. What became of the regiment after Marston Moor is conjectural, although there is slim evidence for its having been involved in the defeat at Ormskirk in August 1644.⁶⁸

Colonel Edward Chisenall: (See also, Chisenall's Horse). Styled of Chisenall, Lancashire, Esquire, son and heir of Edward Chisenall who had succeeded to the property of Thomas Chisenall and Chisenall although only the fifth son. His mother a Recusant, Edward II had leanings that way, and was the author of Catholike History, but outwardly was a firm Anglican. According to his memorial tablet in Standish Church, he was a Trainband colonel in 1631, which is at variance with the pedigrees which are unanimous in giving him as 35 when he died in 1653. The problem is further complicated by Baines in his history of Lancashire, who alluded to a Colonel Chisenall living, in exile, in 1655 but whom it has proved impossible to identify. The probability is, that Chisenall's age at his death is an error, but that would not account for the mysterious person alluded to by Baines. In action with the earl of Derby in 1642/3, probably as a captain, he took part in the attack on Lancaster and led the first section which stormed the defences of Preston immediately afterwards. In his composition, when he paid a fine of £800, he was described as a servant of Prince Rupert, and it was further said of him that "being newly called to the bar at Graye's Inn, he adhered to and assisted the forces raised against the Parliament". It was stated that he had never taken his barrister's oath, even though called in 1642, and had not been in residence in the Commons since September 1641. In his composition he requested permission to reoccupy his rooms there. In arms again in 1648 and captured at Appleby, he died in 1652/3.⁶⁹

Major William Farmer: Cited in the List, described by Secomb as a professional soldier and a Scot, he was killed in action on Marston Moor?⁷⁰

Captain Henry Ashton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Probably second of the four sons of Richard Ashton of Croston, from a notably Royalist family. Born in 1615 and styled of Blackrod, Gentleman, he was still sequestered in 1655 as a Catholic delinquent,

his lands inserted in the Treason Act of 1652. Another Henry Ashton, of Preston, was fined as a Recusant in 1629 but cannot be the same man in view of the age problem. Henry Ashton of Blackrod was captured in arms at Appleby in 1648.⁷¹

Captain Robert Hesketh: Cited in the List and extremely difficult to identify properly. The name is very common, five being noted as Preston Guild Burgesses in 1642, but only one of these, Robert Hesketh of Rufford, appears to fit the evidence. He was styled ordinarily of Furness, the bastard son of Robert Hesketh of Rufford, Esquire. A Catholic delinquent, his wife petitioned for a fifth for her maintenance in 1652, and his brother Cuthbert (or half-brother), having been a Parliamentarian officer, was noted as guardian of the children. It would seem that Robert was able to compound in 1649 before his Catholicism was discovered, but he died in 1651 before his father. He is clearly the Hesketh in Lathom garrison in 1644, and may be the Major Robert Hesketh bound on two sureties for leave to depart from home in Furness contrary to the limits imposed on delinquents' travel. If so, he may have become major after Farmer's death (q.v., above).⁷²

Captain Thomas Rigby: Cited in the List, second of the three sons of Alexander Rigby of the Burgh and of Layton who died in 1650. Thomas was styled of Dublin in 1664.⁷³

Lieutenant John Ashton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Ashton's company. Probably his captain's younger brother, fourth of the four sons of Richard Ashton of Croston. Alternatively, Richard Ashton of Middleton, Esquire, who died in 1616, left four sons, the second of whom was John. This was also a Royalist family.⁷⁴

Lieutenant Thomas Goodwin: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Rigby's company. A very complicated case. It was deposed during composition proceedings, that Thomas Goodwin of Eccles had served under Rupert at Ormskirk, and had been seen in Lathom in the company of Captain Hesketh (presumably of this regiment). It was further deposed that Goodwin had been taken prisoner on Marston Moor serving under Chisenall. Goodwin of Eccles denied this, and it was deposed that he had told one John Briddock that another Thomas Goodwin had served in Lathom, although Briddock, who knew such another man, Thomas Goodwin of Little Bolton, a Recusant, said that he had personally no knowledge that the latter was in the house. No real conclusion seems to have been reached, and the problem is rendered the more difficult by the allusion to Goodwin at Ormskirk which would seem unlikely if he had been taken at Marston Moor.⁷⁵

Lieutenant John Maudsly: Claimed in the List from Lancashire in Major Farmer's company, third of the four sons of William Maudisley of Maudisley who died in 1628. Taken

prisoner at the fall of Preston in 1643, he may be the same styled of Lytham whose will was granted probate in 1676.⁷⁶

Ensign Thomas Holme: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Ashton's company. Such a man was fourth of the four sons of Thomas Holme of Goosenargh, father and sons listed as Foreign Burgesses of Preston in 1642. He may be the Recusant sequestered at Downholland as a yeoman in 1650, and such a man, styled of Lindall or Lyndale, wrote his will in 1669.⁷⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Ensign Thomas Hunter, claimed from Lancashire in Captain Hesketh's company.

Quartermaster Laurence Twisse, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Colonel Sir Hugh CHOLMELEY'S Regiment of Foot (Scarborough Garrison).

Like Cholmeley's Horse (q.v.), this regiment had its roots in the men recruited by Cholmeley in the Parliament's service in 1642/3. Cholmeley himself reckoned it as 600 strong in March 1643 when he went over to the King, but Mercurius Aulicus gave it as 400 strong.⁷⁸ During the difficulties which confronted Cholmeley at Scarborough when his return to his allegiance became known, the regiment was virtually disbanded, but the men apparently returned to their colours when his authority was re-established.⁷⁹ On November 14th 1643, the regiment drew 338 muskets, 20 bundles of match and 20 barrels of powder from the York magazine.⁸⁰ Reduced to barely 300 men by desertion after Marston Moor,⁸¹ it served in the defence of Scarborough to the surrender in 1645 (see Vol. 1). As with the Horse regiment, certain sections of this force may have fought with the field army during the campaigns of 1643/4 in Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Hugh Cholmeley: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel William Blakeston: Cited twice in the List, he was the son of William Blakeston of Old Malton, and was born in 1611. Admitted to Peterhouse in 1639, he entered Gray's Inn in 1641. Styled Gentleman, he claimed to have yielded in August 1644 and compounded on a fine of £60 in 1646, though he did not appear before the committee due to an accident. In 1666 residing at Pidding Hall Garth, Co. Durham, he was MP for Durham in 1679/81, Mayor of the city in 1678 and died in 1685.⁸²

Major Henry Jenkyn: Brother to Lt. Colonel Toby Jenkins (q.v., Cholmeley's Horse), the pedigrees agree in assigning Henry this rank, but the choice of regiment is conjectural. Little is known of him, beyond the fact that he entered Gray's Inn in 1639 and so must have been born c. 1620/1.⁸³

Captain Richard Legard: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, the son of John Legard of Ganton, a Parliamentary officer. Second of his father's five sons, descended from the Legards of Anlaby, Richard was described as an Utter Barrister of the Middle Temple, and was born in 1607. At his composition he stated that he "was drawne into his Majesty's service when he for some months continued", which was a little less than the truth, and a fine of £100 imposed in March 1646. He may well be the Legard captured at Wakefield in May 1643. In 1661 he was granted the Keepership of York Castle and gaol for 31 years in reversion, and died in 1681/2.⁸⁴

Captain James Cholmeley: Claimed in the List from Durham, but probably of Cramlington, Northumberland and of Whitby in Yorkshire. He petitioned in 1647, admitted having

been in arms, and stated that he had been taken prisoner at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645 (see Vol. 1). Severely wounded, he had been imprisoned at Pontefract, and was unable to travel to London. A fine of £73 was imposed. Although he was to petition in 1660 that he had been deputy governor of Scarborough and had had his health ruined by wounds during the war, he was apparently very active in 1651. The Council of State was informed in May of that year that Captain James Cholmeley "and some Frenchmen now at Whitby...go armed, and under pretences, may gather disaffected people together, and produce some ill effects" which sounded ominous. The Council of State replied on June 10th, that Cholmeley was returning to "dwell at Whitby, and is ill affected; it is conceived that his being there, having an interest in the workmen and sevrants about the alum works, being persons generally of a mean and mercenary condition, may bring danger to the peace and quiet of those parts. Send for and examine him as to his intention of coming thither, and if you conceive his being there will occasion danger, take his recognizance with two sureties not to come within 20 miles of Whitby, without special leave of Parliament or Council, and signify to us what you shall do herein".⁸⁵

Captain Leonard Conyers: In this context, see also Edmund Conyers, Cholmeleys Horse. Leonard was fifth of the six sons of Nicholas Conyers of Bowlby, Yorkshire, and was mortally wounded in Newark by a cannon ball, 1645. He seems to have served there under Lt. Colonel Toby Jenkins (q.v., Cholmeley's Horse), but as an infantry officer. This designation seems not unreasonable. Born in 1620, his father had interests in Whitby and this provides a link with his colonel.⁸⁶

Captain James Denton: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, his claim and that of Captain James Cholmeley (see above) tend to suggest that Cholmeley's regiment recruited from sea-going men plying the coastal trade, and this is supported by the only evidence applying to Denton. In 1651 he and some others were at New Malton where they proclaimed Charles II King, and it was given in evidence to the justices that Denton was a pirate preying on ships friendly to the Parliament, and had served under Cholmeley in 1642/3. There is, however, some uncertainty as to whether the forename should be James or John.⁸⁷

Captain John Garrett: Cited in the List, quite possibly one and the same as Captain John Garnett of Heron's Horse (q.v.) but, alternatively, John Garrett of North Dalton, yeoman, who died c. 1680. A Catholic Lieutenant Garrett was captured at Leeds in January 1643 which looks a bit early for this regiment unless Garret transferred to it.⁸⁸

Captain John Patrickson: This is a conjectured rank and regiment, based upon strict interpretation of the family pedigree in

which John, second of the four sons of William Patrickson of Stockhow, is said to have died in arms as captain in the defence of Scarborough. Probably the same as of Calder Abbey, Cumberland, whose will was granted administration in 1652.⁸⁹

Captain Robert Thomas: Cited in the List, probably he of Norton, probate granted 1664, and perhaps the same man taken at Wakefield in May 1643.⁹⁰

Captain [] Whickham: Referred to by Cholmeley himself, but not given in the List. Undoubtedly William Wickham, youngest of the two sons of Henry Wickham, Archdeacon of York, and related to his colonel by marriage. More importantly, William's sister married Lt. Colonel Toby Jenkins of Cholmeley's Horse (q.v.). William was born in 1624 and died in 1667 when he was styled as of Rowsey.⁹¹

Lieutenant John Banks: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Sheafe's company: such a man of Settrington, Gentleman, who had been in actual arms, yielded in 1645 and at his composition was fined £200 in 1647, reduced from £240.⁹²

Lieutenant John Collinson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Legard's company. Such a man of Danby died c. 1680, but though the name is not overly common, the various Danbys in Yorkshire lie in the North Riding, whilst some link with Legard at Ganton would be expected.⁹³

Lieutenant William Farside: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Blakeston's company, he was born c. 1621, eldest son of John Farside of Hutton Bushell, of which place he was styled when he compounded on a fine of £1 against a personal estate of £6. Succeeding his father ultimately, he came to be seated at Fillingdale and at his death in 1670 was captain in the Trainband.⁹⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Sheafe, cited in the List.

Captain Cholmeley Wright, claimed in the List from Durham.

Lieutenant Thomas Reynolds, claimed in the List from Cambridgeshire in Lt. Colonel Blakeston's company.

Ensign Daniel Cliffe, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Garrett's company.

Quartermaster Arthur Graham, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Robert CLAVERING'S Regiment of Foot.

Attention has been drawn to the remarkable Catholic representation among the officers of Clavering's cavalry regiment (q.v.), and the same will be found to be true of the infantry, although to a lesser degree. For the existence of this regiment, quite apart from the evidence of the List, we have the direct statement of Sir Marmaduke Langdale in 1660 which has already been given (see Colonel Clavering's biography, Appendix 1). Unfortunately, the List is superficially unhelpful in enabling us to determine how this regiment was organised above the rank of captain, for no field officer is named. Even supposing that Clavering retained personal control as colonel, we are left to assume that Forcer, his lt. colonel of Horse, served the same rank in the Foot, and so on. With Clavering's death in 1644, his regimental structure broke up to the extent that the Horse under Forcer probably followed their own course, whilst the Foot either disappeared entirely, or, what was left of them, regrouped, as I suggest below, under former company commanders of the regiment.

Colonel Sir Robert Clavering: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, Appendix 1.

Colonel James Swinhoe: This rank is based upon the evidence of the List and its interpretation. Swinhoe is cited in the first instance as a captain of the regiment under Clavering; in the second, however, he is listed as a field commander in his own right with a lt. colonel subordinate to him, a Lt. Colonel Ord (q.v., below). The link of the two names with Clavering's Foot seems to be strong as a clue to what became of this regiment, whilst there is some evidence that Swinhoe may have been lt. colonel under Clavering, so far as the Foot were concerned, in 1643. He was James Swinhoe of Chatton, son and heir of Colonel Gilbert Swinhoe (q.v.) and was in arms in both wars, being fined £393.13.4d. In 1672 James and his brother Gilbert became involved in an argument with one James Carre at Chillingham, and in the brawl that followed, James was mortally wounded by Carre.⁹⁵

Lt. Colonel (Thomas) Ord: Cited as a captain under Clavering in the List, presumably the lt. colonel cited under Swinhoe. Thomas Ord(e) of Longridge Co. Durham, Gentleman, was fined £73.13.4d. in 1649 for his delinquency, which may represent a punishment for being in arms in 1648, since in his papers he was said to have yielded in 1644 and to have taken the Covenant in 1645, whereupon a fine of £50 was levied. He had not paid his fine by 1651, but was discharged in 1653. Welford identified him as the son of George Orde of Longridge who acquired the property prior to 1633.⁹⁶

(Major) William Reed: Cited in the List under Clavering, but without any rank, which has been conjectured for want of rivals to the position. He was William Reed of Kelloe, the seat

of the Forcers, and son of William Reed Snr., who died c. 1656. Fined £20.17s. in 1650, at which time he was styled as of Fenham, he does not appear to have been a Catholic, although his association with the Forcers at Kelloe and the Riddells at Fenham might suggest otherwise. He may be the William Reed of Titlington, Northumberland, listed in 1661 as a gentleman volunteer under Lord Widdrington, but the link is tenuous.⁹⁷

Captain John Carre: Cited in the List, but almost defying identification since the name is so common. Two such men appear elsewhere as infantry captains (see Fletcher's Foot and Lord Widdrington's Foot). Possibly John, second son of Thomas Carre of Lesbury, listed as a freeholder on the eve of the war, and dying in 1662.⁹⁸

Captain Richard Curtis: Claimed in the List from Durham, possibly he of Durham city, stationer, selling property in 1630 to a future Royalist delinquent.⁹⁹

Captain Robert Davison: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, perhaps the same man, Gentleman, of Thropton Spittle, listed as a Recusant in 1655. Robert Davison of Southwark, London, compounded, or attempted to do so, and petitioned that he had yielded in November 1645 at Morpeth, Northumberland. Here we may be dealing with a man who endeavoured to compound at London to avoid the strictures against Catholic delinquents.¹⁰⁰

Captain Thomas Gayre: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Morpeth (see the possible link with Davison, above).¹⁰¹

Captain Robert Heighington: Claimed in the List from Durham, and perhaps a brother of Cornet John Heighington of Byron's Horse (q.v.), in which case Robert would be either the eldest son of Richard Heighington of Greystones, Co. Durham, or a son of John Heighington Mayor of Durham. Robert Heighington signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Auckland St. Helen, and may have been a leaseholder in the Old Park, Evenwood. A Captain Robert Heighington was captured at Appleby in 1648.¹⁰²

Captain Richard Lawson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, and probably the same as signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Morpeth (again this link, see above).¹⁰³

Captain Robert Matthews: Cited in the List, such a man of Sadberge signed the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁰⁴

Captain John Scott: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. In October 1650 such a man, a prisoner in York gaol, was to be released upon taking the engagement and providing £500

security and two sureties to appear when summoned and to be of good behaviour.¹⁰⁵

Captain John Whitfield: Claimed in the List from Westmorland, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Boulton.¹⁰⁶

Ensign John Lyddal: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but perhaps the apprentice who, in 1649, was before the court of the Merchant Adventurers Company at Newcastle who observed that the length of his hair was then "reformed", but who had to have it cut in open court in February 1650. Such a man of Plawsworth refused the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁰⁷

Ensign Richard Satterthwaite: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Matthews' company. Perhaps the Ensign 'Smathweight' taken prisoner at Wakefield in May 1643.¹⁰⁸

Ensign Humphrey Stephenson: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Heighington's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Durham St. Mary.¹⁰⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Daniel Dabbs, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain Robert Moore, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Lieutenant Henry Crome, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant Eleazar Potts, claimed in the List from Newcastle.

Lieutenant Thomas Rowntree, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Carre's company.

Lieutenant William Swinhoe, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain James Swinhoe's company.

Ensign Edward Maine, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Thomas Ord's company.

Ensign Lancelot Read, claimed in the List from Northumberland, (Major) William Reed's company (a relation?).

Colonel Cuthbert CLIFTON'S Regiment of Foot.

A regiment with a notably brief life-span, since it was raised in May or June of 1644, and disappeared in November of that year. Raised in the Fylde area of Lancashire for the purpose of providing a garrison for Liverpool, a hostile contemporary observer noted that "some of them were good plunderers".¹¹⁰ At the fall of Liverpool in November, the conditions allowed for Clifton and his officers, but not for his men, to march away with horses, personal weapons and a proportion of equipment enough to be carried by horses, and to go to any garrison,¹¹¹ were dishonoured.

Colonel Cuthbert Clifton: The problem of the genealogy of the Cliftons, as Dugdale gave it, was carefully solved by Stanning. Cuthbert was the eldest son of Thomas Clifton Esq., Thomas being heir to Sir Cuthbert Clifton of Westby, Lancashire. Thomas was seated at Lytham. The family was wholly Catholic, and Sir Cuthbert was noted as a convicted Recusant in 1630. Colonel Clifton, commissioned by Rupert, saw little active service until the defence of Liverpool, after which, and contrary to articles, he was arrested and gaoled, dying in prison of hard usage. His sequestration papers allude copiously to his Catholicism, and his mother petitioned for maintenance as a Recusant.¹¹²

Major William Westby: Cited in the List, he was the eldest son by the second marriage, of Thomas Westby of Mowbreck, Lancashire, and was himself styled of Rawcliffe, Esquire. A Catholic, although not apparently a Recusant like his father, he was a Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642, and his brother, Dr. Thomas Westby, was killed in the defence of that town in 1643, (see Vol. 1).¹¹³

Ensign John Boardman: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Major Westby's company, probably a son of Robert Boardman of Orford in Warrington, a Recusant in 1630.¹¹⁴

Colonel Cuthbert CONYERS'S Regiment of Foot.

A regiment raised originally in Durham, of its history we know little, lost as it is, amongst the forces of the earl of Newcastle. However, from the officer details given below, it will be clear that it must have been engaged with the main army from 1643, and was virtually destroyed at Malpas in August 1644, if the presence of senior officers at that battle is an indication of the survival of part of the regiment after Marston Moor.¹¹⁵

Colonel Cuthbert Conyers: A Catholic Recusant, born in 1611, eldest of the two sons of Sir Ralph Conyers of Layton Co. Durham who died in 1643. Heavily in debt in 1642, Cuthbert's property was sequestered in August 1644. He was killed in action at Malpas, and the local committee in Durham found him possessed of goods to the value of £96.10s., £38 worth of which were sold to his widow. She was still endeavouring to have the sequestration lifted in 1651.¹¹⁶

Lt. Colonel Rowland Place: Not given in the List, but according to information laid before the sequestration committee in Co. Durham in the case of Christopher Hall of Hartburn. Rowland was born in 1616, eldest of the three sons of Christopher Place of Dinsdale, Esquire, whom he had apparently succeeded by 1641/2 when he signed the Protestation. In 1656 he and many others petitioned the Lord Protector concerning their claims to their sequestered property, since they found that the Treasury Commissioners had ordered the local committees to stop the hearing of claims. Listed in 1660 as of Stockton Ward, to provide a horse and man at the Lord Lieutenant's muster, Place died in September 1676.¹¹⁷

Major Michael Pemberton: Again, for this rank and regiment we are reliant upon a reference in the case of Christopher Hall of Hartburn. Michael was first of the four sons of John Pemberton of Aislaby, and was born in 1614, dying in 1652. He succeeded his father, and was sole executor of the will, in 1643, and in the following year his property in Egglecliff, Norton and Elton was sequestered, although he appears to have compounded, having admitted his delinquency for in 1646 he appears as a leaseholder in Sadberg. He died of wounds, or was killed in action, during the 1651 rising according to the composition proceedings, which calls in question the later date of the pedigrees.¹¹⁸

Captain Abraham Clarke: Cited in the List, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Greatham, Co. Durham, and was apparently buried in October 1644, which suggests death in action (in Newcastle?).¹¹⁹

Captain John Killinghall: Claimed in the List from Durham, eldest son of

William Killingham of Middleton St. George whom he succeeded in 1644, at which time his property was sequestered. Surrendering in 1644, he hurried to make his composition with the local committee and paid a fine of £60, but in 1646 he was obliged to pay a further £48. The brother-in-law of Lt. Colonel Nicholas Chaytor (q.v., Eden's Foot), Killingham's mother was a Recusant. He died c. 1651,¹²⁰ according to the pedigree, but the claim suggests otherwise.

Captain William Sheraton: Cited in the List, he was of Elwick Co. Durham, Gentleman, a delinquent Catholic whose lands were inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. He eventually compounded in 1653 on a fine of £70.18.6d.¹²¹

Captain John Woodhouse: Claimed in the List from Durham, probably the son of John Woodhouse of Corneforth, and an undischarged delinquent in 1651. Either the father or the son may have signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Bishop Middleham, but the John Woodhouse "chirurgion" whose will was granted probate in 1681 may be the son with whom we are concerned.¹²²

Ensign John Hett: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Sheraton's company. Two such, probably father and son, signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Hart.¹²³

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant John Pearse, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Clarke's company. (Lieutenant Pearse's name is remarkably common at this time).

Lieutenant Christopher Smith, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Killingham's company.

Ensign Cuthbert Harrison, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Woodhouse's company (and not to be confused with a captain of the same name in Sir Henry Slingsby's Foot, q.v.).

(The earl of Cumberland's Foot).

It is necessary to deal briefly with the forces, such as they were, raised or intended to be raised personally by the earl between his appointment as Commander in Chief in Yorkshire and his retirement from the scene in December 1642, (see Vol. 1). Not a particularly old man, he had been born in 1591, Henry Clifford, last of the earls of Cumberland, whatever else he may have been, was not a military man, nor did he have any aptitude for inspiring others, hence his swift replacement, by a coterie of the Yorkshire gentry, with the earl of Newcastle. (Cumberland's activities and personality have been discussed in Vol. 1).

The List makes only a single allusion to him, in the person of one Captain Joseph Ward who claimed to have held commissioned rank in Cumberland's Foot. Ward may be the same, of Durham Gentleman, undischarged in 1651, but beyond that it has not proved possible to go.¹²⁴ Cumberland himself enjoyed a purely titular colonelcy of what Moone, Belasyse's biographer, referred to as "a regiment of guards for [the King's] person", but nothing came of this, and he does not appear to have held this regiment together.¹²⁵ Something akin to a troop of horse appears to have existed as late as December 12th 1642, attached to the earl's name,¹²⁶ but hardly sufficient evidence remains to justify its inclusion as a separate cavalry force, whereas the List at the least, supports the probability of a tentative move towards an infantry body. The paucity of evidence to show Cumberland as an energetic Royalist recruiter can be taken as proof, negative though it may be, that he really did very little during his command except to dip into his pocket for the general funds. That would be a superficial judgement. It is not surprising that hardly anything remains to indicate the efforts made to recruit men, by a man who had himself so short a military career, and who was to live in retirement until his death in late 1643.

Colonel Sir Patricius CURWEN'S Regiment of Foot.

Like most of the regiments raised in Cumbria, it saw little or no active service, unless detachments served in the defence of Carlisle in 1644/5. Commissioned late in 1642, or early 1643,¹²⁷ this regiment does, at least, appear to have attained some strength, to judge from the officer lists.

Colonel Sir Patricius Curwen: (See also Curwen's Horse). Born in 1601 or 1602, he was the son and heir of Sir Henry Curwen of Workington, succeeding his father in 1625, having matriculated at Queen's, Cambridge, five years earlier. Created a baronet in 1627, apparently through the influence of the duke of Buckingham, Curwen was always associated strongly with the court. Knight of the Shire for Cumberland in 1625, 1628 and 1640, he voted against the impeachment of Strafford and can be considered of the court party. A JP and a deputy lieutenant in Cumberland, he raised forces as a Trainband colonel in 1640, and in 1642 was appointed to the Commission of Array, in which he was active. Sheriff in 1636/7, he was probably the only man capable of rivalling Musgrave for control of the counties, but does not appear to have thrust himself forward, and spent much of 1643 in Oxford. Back in Cumberland in 1644, he contributed £20 there to the defence of Carlisle, but had taken the Covenant by October 8th of that same year. In his petition to compound in 1645, he protested that he had been coerced into taking up arms for the King, but that he had actively hindered the movement of troops and had been twice gaoled for it. The records concerning Royalist affairs in Cumbria are sparse, so that we cannot be sure Curwen was telling the truth, although he may have been placed under house arrest by Musgrave during one of the numerous disputes which sabotaged Royalist organisation in the area (see Vol. 1). Fined £2000 and stripped of all rights to present clergy to livings in 1647, Curwen remained quiet during the Interregnum, paying over £40 in 1656 under the decimation levy with complaint. Restored in offices and power in 1660, and appointed a lt. colonel in the Trainband, he died in 1664.¹²⁸

(Lt. Colonel Wilfred Lawson): Not cited in the List, but rank and regiment according to Lawson's composition proceedings and so probably accurate. Created a baronet in 1640, Lawson's career during the civil war was, to say the least, curiously colourful. Apparently a Presbyterian, somewhat like Sir Henry Bellingham (q.v.), Lawson was appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642 and, presumably, was commissioned soon afterwards. Nonetheless, so dilatory a Royalist was he, that it was no obstacle to his being appointed a deputy lieutenant in Cumberland in 1645 by the Parliament. This was after he had been the object of bitter complaints from the Scottish commanders who saw him as an unreformed malignant. They stated that he was a "knowne malignant...actually in Rebellion

under the Earle of Newcastle against the Parliament, and continued in Armes till those Countyes were reduced to...Obedience". Even so, he was now commander in chief of the Parliamentary forces in the area, had recently been appointed High Sheriff of Cumberland, and a committee man. He was actively protecting Catholics and delinquents, and employing in his forces, former members of Montrose's "Black Band". He was also accused of plotting against Scottish control of Keswick. Whilst we must be wary of accepting the Scottish charges on their face value, and not only because the Parliament clearly did not consider them justified, since Lawson was neither removed nor cautioned, they reveal a perplexity felt then and still felt now, concerning Lawson and men like him. Charitably, he might be seen as a Royalist fitting in as well as he could for his own good, and the good of others, with the new power in the land. Conversely, he must be seen as a coat-turner rather like Colonel Robert Brandling (q.v.). C.B. Phillips does not seem to have resolved the problem. Lawson died in 1689.¹²⁹

(Captain) Anthony Bouche: He does not appear in the List, but served in this regiment according to his composition papers.

From his social status, the rank has been assumed, but is tentative. Styled of Cockermouth, son and heir of Michael Bouch(e) of the same place, he was born in 1600. He gave £2 to Carlisle defences in 1644, and was fined £20 at his composition. In the 1656 decimation tax he was assessed for £22 in respect of his personal estate, and was styled Gentleman.¹³⁰

Captain Robert Highmore: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, he was the eldest of the three sons of Robert Highmore who died in 1616. The youngest son, Richard, is said by the pedigree to have been a colonel of horse to Charles II and to have died at Breda. Robert, styled of Armathwayt, Esquire, was born in 1597 and died sometime after 1665. He contributed £2 to the Carlisle defences, and in his composition admitted his rank but stated that he had not left the county, which was probably true.¹³¹

Captain John Whelpdale: Cited in the List, but see also possibly the same man, Fletcher's Foot. Such a man of Penrith was taxed at £13.13s., in the 1656 levy, and may be the man captured in 1648 at Appleby.¹³²

Lieutenant Richard Patrickson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, third of the four sons of William Patrickson of Stockhow who died in 1645. The family was almost totally Royalist, see also Curwen's Horse.¹³³

Ensign Anthony Sibson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland. He may be connected with the Major Suibson mentioned by Tullie as a Reformado from York in 1644.¹³⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Tickell, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Edward Southgate, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant William Troutbeck, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Whelpdale's company.

Quartermaster Henry Rawling, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir William DALSTON'S Regiment of Foot.

The regiment was commissioned on June 15th 1643, the commission still surviving.¹³⁵ It was apparently part of the reorganisation which the earl of Newcastle found necessary when the Queen began her preparations to leave Yorkshire with substantial forces from the northern army. The commission is also alluded to in the Musgrave Mss. A guard of 60 men from the regiment went into Carlisle Castle on November 15th, which was probably a routine procedure in which various regiments took periods of duty.¹³⁶ Although Dalston was actively Royalist, unlike most of his fellow commanders in Cumbria, of the regiment's history we know virtually nothing.

Colonel Sir William Dalston: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel George Denton: Cited twice in the List, under Dalston and as a field officer in his own right. The son of Henry Denton of Cardew who died in 1622, George, styled Esquire, was born in 1621. He was in Carlisle garrison in 1644/5, and gave £2 towards the defence funds, later claiming he had yielded in September 1644. Fined £60.10s., which he paid by 1650, he was taxed for £10 in 1656. He seems to have been in arms in 1648 too. Appointed a JP in 1663, the exact date of his death is not clear, although he was in 1666 lieutenant to the then deputy governor of Carlisle.¹³⁷

Captain Henry Gent: Cited in the List. Henry Gent of Moyns, Essex, married into the Dalstons in 1589, and died in 1639. Very probably this officer was a son or grandson.¹³⁸

Lieutenant George Lowther: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Lt. Colonel Denton's company. The name is common at this period, and one George Lowther was brother to Colonel Richard Lowthwr (q.v., Vol. 1 and Appendix IV) was an officer.¹³⁹

Lieutenant Thomas Wilson: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Gent's company. Perhaps second of the four sons of Thomas Wilson of Underlay, Westmorland, who died in 1646. The eldest son was born in 1622/3.¹⁴⁰

Ensign John Eglesfield: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, under Denton. Probably sixth of the six sons of George Eglesfield of Alwarby, Cumberland. The eldest son died in 1652. A Gawen Eglesfield fought in Sir John Byron's regiment and in 1647 was installed as minister of Plumbland, Cumberland. Thomas and Richard Eglesfield of Alwarby, father and son, were in arms for the King.¹⁴¹

Ensign William Hindmer: Claimed in the List from Westmorland under Denton. Such a man of Kirby Stephen signed the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁴²

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Laurence Walker, cited in the List under Denton.

Lieutenant Thomas Addinson, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Walker's company.

Lieutenant Alexander Hodgson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Quartermaster Robert Blaymyre, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Conyers Lord DARCY & CONYERS'S Regiment of Foot.

The regiment is split into two in the List due, apparently, to the vagueries of claimants who failed to give more than the name 'Darcy' for their field commander. Rooted in a pre-war Trainband foot regiment, under the command of Lord Darcy, this is one of the very few such regiments which can be identified, and our knowledge is due entirely to a reference in Slingsby's diary.¹⁴³ The Queen noticed the regiment on May 10th 1643 and referred to it as newly come into the field, and not fully armed.¹⁴⁴ Even so, it fought at Wakefield later in the month, and was in Pontefract soon after.¹⁴⁵ It formed part of the Queen's escort to Oxford, and was engaged in the storm of Burton on Trent where it carried itself with outstanding courage (see the officers, below). By August it was at Gloucester forming part of the forlorn hope, and was being provided with ammunition.¹⁴⁶ Engaged at the first battle of Newbury, where its second (perhaps first) colonel was seriously wounded. It ultimately fought at Naseby and ended its career in Newark garrison where Belasyse was governor.

(Colonel) Conyers Lord Darcy: Probably a titular rank, although he was most probably the original Trainband commander.

The active command and the rank in fact went to his eldest son (see below) when the regiment left Yorkshire in 1643. Lord Darcy was the eldest son and heir of Thomas Darcy Esquire of Hornby Castle, Yorkshire, who died in 1605. Born in 1570, Conyers was elevated to the peerage as Lord Darcy in 1641 and given a patent for the barony of Conyers in 1644. Previous to this advancement, he had been created a baronet. Something of a Puritan figure, he had been involved in disputes with Strafford concerning abuse of his position as a JP in the North Riding. His name appeared on the letters to the earl of Newcastle in September 1642, and his decision to stand by the King may have had something to do with his legal dispute with the Parliamentarian Savilles of Lupset. He spent most of the war in Oxford, and died in 1654.¹⁴⁷

Colonel Sir Conyers Darcy: Eldest of the seven sons of Lord Darcy, he was born in 1599 and seems to have been styled of Ainderby, Yorkshire, at the outbreak of war.

The family was split, his son and heir Conyers serving on the Parliamentary committee for the West Riding in 1645. A Commissioner of Array in Yorkshire in 1642, Conyers assumed command of the regiment in 1643 and led it in the storm of Burton on Trent when the regiment apparently formed the van of the Royal forces. On July 24th he was receiving powder and shot for the regiment in Oxford, but in September was severely wounded at Newbury and disabled from active command. Petitioning in 1645, he admitted that he had been in arms, but stated that he was too lame to travel to compound personally. A fine of £2327.10s. was levied, which was reduced in 1652 to £1287.10s. It was paid,

and Conyers was discharged. On the fringe of the 1654 rebellions, he was created earl of Holderness in 1682 and died in 1689.¹⁴⁸

Colonel Marmaduke Darcy: The 'Darcy' in the List, major of the regiment when it left Yorkshire, lt. colonel after the storm of Burton on Trent, and colonel when his elder brother was invalided out. Fifth of the sons of Lord Darcy, he was born in 1616 and in later life was to be seated at Knaith in Lincolnshire. Of Lincolns Inn in 1633, he did not apparently achieve his M.A. until 1663. The most thorough-going of the Royalist Darcys, Marmaduke proved himself a competent field commander and an inveterate conspirator. He commanded the regiment from September 1643, and took what was left of it into Newark where Belasyse gave him 100 men as part of the defence reorganisation there. He was a commissioner for the surrender of the garrison in 1646. He made no attempt to compound, apparently, and went into exile, but was in England in 1654/5 when, so Thurloe was told, he raised 60 men for the Marston Moor rendezvous that was to lead to the capture of York in the King's interest. An informant in Holland wrote to Thurloe in January 1656 "Collonell Marmaduke Darcy is uppon his returne to [Cologne] from England, where he hath prepared the waye for his master, whoe hath made choyse of him for his guide, when he goes thither". Darcy was close to the King, and from personal loyalty, not as part of any recognisable political grouping in the exiled court. "Mr. M.D., brother to the lord Darcey, is a person much trusted and valued" Thurloe had been told in April 1655. By December 1657 a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Charles II, after the restoration he became Gentleman Usher to the King in 1665, and, in the same year, MP for Richmond, Yorkshire. His honorary rank of colonel survived the war, and he seems to have been known as Colonel Darcy in Yorkshire. He died in 1687, unmarried.¹⁴⁹

Lt. Colonel (John) Dalton: Cited in the List without forename, he was John Dalton of Hawkeswell and Sleningford in Yorkshire, the son of Attorney General Sir William Dalton. He was born in 1603, and was the son-in-law of Lord Darcy, although the Daltons were closely allied to leading Catholic families in Yorkshire, and the Daltons of Swine were notably Recusant. Lt. Colonel Dalton was mortally wounded at the storm of Burton on Trent, and would seem to have lingered on at Newark until 1646 when he finally died and was conveyed to York Minster for burial.¹⁵⁰

Major John Beverley: Cited in the List, perhaps the same as Major John Beverley of Belasyse's Foot (q.v.), to which latter regiment he may have transferred, unless this is a specifically Newark grouping. Alternatively, he may be John Beverley of Selby, uncle of Belasyse's major, and second of the seven sons of Thomas Beverley who died in 1613, the younger brother of Vincent Beverley of Smeaton. A John Beverley of York was presented as a Recusant in 1624.¹⁵¹

Major [] Darcy: Cited in the List, almost certainly a reference to Colonel Marmaduke Darcy before promotion.

Captain Ralph Atkinson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man of Garristone, Gentleman, adhered to the Royal cause and was fined £147.6.8d. in 1652 after sequestration the previous year.¹⁵²

Captain Christopher Crofts: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, probably the 'Crofts' taken at Wakefield in May 1643. He was styled of Cotescue in Coverham, Gentleman, when he compounded in 1646 as a Trainband captain, and was fined £56. He petitioned that he had been sent into action "by command of the gentry". Such a man was a juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1625, and Christopher Crofts of Coverham refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I. Crofts's wife was a Recusant, and he himself was presented in 1641.¹⁵³

Captain Thomas Darcy: Cited in the List, fourth of the six sons of Lord Darcy and styled ordinarily as of Winkburn in Nottinghamshire but perhaps not in 1642. He was born in 1613. His rank in comparison with that of his younger brother Marmaduke may seem strange, but that is in itself insufficient argument against the identification. As an alternative, however, we have Thomas Darcy, second son by the second marriage, of Lord Darcy's father. This Thomas died in 1653 and might well have been of reasonable age to have served in 1642/6.¹⁵⁴

Captain Thomas Metcalfe: Cited in the List, but consider also Captain Thomas Metcalfe, Lord Widdrington's Foot.

Lieutenant Thomas Conyers: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Darcy's company. He may be the third son of Robert Conyers of Bowlby (1601-40), himself the son and heir of Nicholas Conyers of Whitby. Thomas may be the Thomas Conyers of Newholme Beck, Whitby, who died in 1679.¹⁵⁵

Lieutenant Francis Jaques: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Darcy's company, second of the three sons of John Jaques of Catterick. He signed in Oxford in August 1643 for shovels and picks, for his major's company, a fact which tends to call in question my interpretation of the progression of Marmaduke Darcy to the rank of Lt. colonel before this time. It may, however, imply that there is an error in the Ordnance records, or an allusion to a promotion for Captain Thomas Darcy (q.v., above) for which there is no other record. Jaques was apparently a nephew of Sir Roger Jaques of York and Elvington, in York garrison during the sieg.¹⁵⁶

Lieutenant John Robinson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Beverleys company, probably the same of Thornton in Pickering Gentleman, fined £150 for being in arms, upon information laid by himself. Possibly John Robinson of Deighton in the East Riding, Esquire, in later life.¹⁵⁷

Ensign William Bearperk: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Metcalfe's company. A William Bearperk of Wensleydale, labourer, was presented as a Recusant at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1624. His son Henry was styled a yeoman at the same time, and so Ensign Bearperk may be another son, or a son of Henry.¹⁵⁸

Ensign Christopher Pybus: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Very probably a son of Mathew Pybus of Fencotts in the Wapentake of Hang West who refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I. Hang West is the Wapentake in which the Darcy seat was situated.¹⁵⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Ensign Luke Thompson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Darcy's company.

Ensign John Wright, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Dalton's company.

James Stanley earl of DERBY'S Regiment of Foot.

The officers noted for this force are based upon the List, and upon the very scant surviving contemporary references to officers who do seem to have served directly under Derby, as opposed to having served in units under his overall authority. It has not proved possible to identify a lt. colonel or a major for this regiment, but it is not impossible that the early allusion to Colonel Sir Thomas Tyldesley (q.v., Appendix 1) as a lt. colonel, may provide a clue. According to one source, Derby raised 3000 Foot in 1642, which technically would mean three regiments, and so we must suppose that this alludes to assistance given to two other colonels, as well as to his own efforts.¹⁶⁰ Almost certainly, the regiment was at full strength on December 30th 1642 when, this from a contemporary document, four companies lay at Warrington being equipped there (two of which, interestingly, were said to be Welsh); three companies lay in Wigan; two at Preston; and one at Brindle under a captain who cannot be identified. The lists of arms and of weapons were to be given to the major, who was not named.¹⁶¹ The regiment almost certainly fought under the earl until June 1643, when it of necessity disbanded, and one would suppose that certain officers transferred to other field formations, or simply went home. The Lancashire composition records are replete with allusions to individuals who may well have served in this regiment in the ranks, or as non-commissioned officers. Thomas Walls of Prescot, a shearman, served as a "Trayned soldier" from Warrington Hundred, for three weeks (or so he said) under the earl. John Rascowe, yeoman, of Aspull, claimed that he was forced to serve in the fight on Houghton Common (q.v., Vol. 1), although in his case he seems to have remained in arms until 1645 which suggests he needed very little coercion. Similar stories apply to William Pilkington and Thomas Heape(s).¹⁶²

Colonel the Lord Derby: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, Appendix 1.

Captain [] Ashton: Cited as a company commander in Warrington, December 30th 1642. Ashton is a common name, but a tentative identification can be arrived at by a process of eliminating other commissioned Ashtons serving under other commanders. This is, of course, tentative in the sense that we may be dealing with a transfer after Derby's regiment collapsed. Possibly Richard Ashton of Croston, a Catholic delinquent, Esquire, the son of Thomas Ashton of the same who was also a convicted Recusant in 1632. According to Richard's composition papers - he was later farming his own sequestered estate - he was actively assisting Rupert in 1644, at a time when many Royalists who had gone to ground, re-emerged to join the colours. A large number of charges were levelled against Ashton by William Hodges, who had sat on the committee which had sequestered Ashton's property in 1643, so it would seem firstly, that Ashton had been active in 1642/3, and secondly that he had used his opportunity in 1644 to take his

revenge on Hodges. Ashton was still a sequestered Catholic delinquent in 1655.¹⁶³

Captain [] Barrow: Cited with his company in Wigan at the end of 1642. Peter Brook of Bolton stated (in the composition proceedings of Christopher Anderton of Lostock) that he had served under Barrow in the fight on Houghton Common. Barrow may be John Barrow of Weeton, compounding as a Catholic Recusant in 1629, or William Barrow of Wigan, nine years old at the time of his father's inquisition post mortem in 1620. However, the possibility of error somewhere cannot be overlooked, since in the proceedings against Isaac Allen of Preston is a reference to Richard Barlow, tenant of the earl of Derby, raising men in 1642. That Barlow may be a mistake for Barrow seems possible, but in view of the other evidence, hardly likely that Barrow is the name in error.¹⁶⁴

Captain [] Bayard: An extremely tentative designation insofar as the regiment is concerned. Bayard, "a fierce man and a great plunderer" was recruiting in Leyland Hundred in 1642.¹⁶⁵

Captain William Bower: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, of Lathom, yeoman who petitioned to compound in 1649 for his first war activities. He was fined £25. Possibly the same as Captain Barrow, see above, but if so, leaving Richard Barlow in the air.¹⁶⁶

Captain [] Charnock: Cited with his company at Wigan in December 1642. Roger, first or second of the sons of Thomas Charnock of Astley, Foreign Burgess of Preston Guild. From his composition papers, Roger of Astley, styled Esquire, would seem to have been his father's heir. Probably the master 'Chernock' at the siege of Manchester in September 1642.¹⁶⁷

Captain Edward Chisenall: Company commander at Wigan, December 1642, but see him as colonel of Foot in his own right.

Captain [] Ffarrington: Company commander at Preston, December 1642. William Ffarrington of Werden, Gentleman, was son and heir of Colonel William Fafarrington of the same who died in 1657. William II died in 1670. The family was closely connected with the Stanleys, and deeply involved in local government, Colonel Ffarrington (the rank appears to have been a pre-war Trainband commission) being High Sheriff in 1636 and a Knight of the Shire in 1640. Captain William, born in 1612, was associated with his father in the Commission of Array in 1642, was present at the siege of Manchester, and assumed command of his father's company when it was ordered to Wigan on November 25th of that year. He was captured when Preston fell in 1643, and compounded on a fine of £117.13.4d., his father being fined £511. Captain Ffarrington was intended for the Order of the Royal

Oak at the restoration.¹⁶⁸

Captain [] Houghton: Cited with his company in Preston, December 1642. He may be either Radcliffe Houghton, younger brother of Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton (q.v., Appendix 3, Dragoons), who was killed at the fall of Preston in 1643 and was said to have been a Catholic; or, but less likely, Henry, sixth of the six sons of Colonel Houghton who was, according to the pedigree, a captain of cavalry. Both Radcliffe and Henry were Foreign Burgesses of Preston.¹⁶⁹

Captain John Lancaster: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, under Edward Norris as field commander (q.v., below). The regimental designation is based upon the problem of Norris. John was born in 1610, son and heir of Thomas Lancaster of Rainhill, and was sequestered as John Lancaster, Esquire. His property at Prescott was inserted in the third Treason Act and sold in 1653.¹⁷⁰

Captain James Molyneux: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, probably fifth of the seven sons of Richard Molyneux of Hawkly who died in 1664. However, such a man of Ince-Blundell Gentleman, had his property inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652.¹⁷¹

Captain Edward Norris: This rank is the only one to which Norris would appear to be entitled by the evidence, although the claim of Captain Lancaster (see above) does imply promotion for Norris. It is conceivable, though it cannot be proved, that as well as being a company commander at Warrington in December 1642, he was also the unnamed regimental major alluded to at the same time (see regimental notation, above). He was the grandson of Sir William Norris of Speke, who died in 1626, and the son of William Norris of the same who died in 1651. Edward, his father's heir, appears to have died in 1644. The family had a history of Recusancy, the grandfather compounding as such in his life time, and Edward's father as recently as 1630, so that some suspicion must attach to Edward also. Norris was listed as a Trainband captain in January 1643, but soon afterwards became Governor of Warrington, and there would appear to be an allusion to him as a colonel at that stage, which seems unlikely. In March he was raising men for the garrison (see Vol. 1) and he was in command in May when the town fell. The cause and circumstances of his death are not known, and his property was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652.¹⁷²

Captain Cuthbert Ogle: Rank and regiment drawn from his composition papers. The son and heir of Henry Ogle of Whiston, Lancashire, who died in 1647, Cuthbert was born in 1614 and was alive in 1664. He claimed that he had resigned his commission at the peak of Derby's successes, but be that as it may, he was fined £120. Gentleman.¹⁷³

Captain William Pilkington: The following evidence is all drawn from his sequestration and composition records, and is noteworthy for the extreme detail which I have had to abbreviate. Pilkington was seen as a leading Royalist activist. Noted as a captain in Wigan commissioned by the earl, described as a "grand malignant" it was alleged that William and his brother Thomas had incited the earl to garrison the town - although Derby probably needed no such persuasion - and that William had been the chief engineer for the defences. That remark is in itself interesting, since although we know of professionals who assisted Parliament we know next to nothing of their Royalist counterparts: Pilkington may have seen some European or Irish service. He led his company at Wigan, at Bolton where he led three assaults, and at Houghton Common. When Wigan fell, he was reported to have "tould the Townsmen that he that laid moneys for the Parlant was a Treytor and he that Collect any was a Treytor and he that paid for the use of the Parlant was a Treytour". In 1644, when Rupert appeared, Pilkington came to a muster at Ormskirk and offered to go to Wigan to raise men for the march to York. He failed in this, but went himself with Rupert and fought on Marston Moor as a volunteer in the company of one William Yeereland. Pilkington was styled Gentleman, and was apparently a Pewterer.¹⁷⁴

Captain William Smith: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, in July 1642 quite probably the "Capt. Smith, being in the front, [who] gave a fierce...firing against the Inhabitants of Manchester". He was also the earl of Derby's Commissary for West Derby Hundred, but his identity remains undiscovered.¹⁷⁵

Captain Thomas Standish: Tentative designation, Thomas was the son of the 'neutral' MP, Thomas Standish of Duxbury, and was killed in arms at Manchester in 1642. He had earlier been ordered to confiscate the Catholic weapons in the Chorley magazine by the earl.¹⁷⁶

Captain James Zouch(e): Claimed in the List from Lancashire, a somewhat mysterious figure. The only traceable Royalist delinquent of this name was dead by 1653 when his estate was the subject of an inquiry. This James Zouche's place of residence is not given, but if the same as Derby's officer, there must be a fraudulent claim here. However, it would probably have been easily detectable in the 1660's. A James Zouche of Surrey, Esquire, was listed for the Royal Oak at the restoration with an estate worth £2000 a year and he is the only other possibility, albeit unlikely.¹⁷⁷

Lieutenant John Haughton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, probably the son and heir of Lt. Colonel William Haughton of Dalton's Horse (q.v.), born in 1619 and living in

1664. However, according to his father's sequestration records, John, styled of Park Hall Esquire, although a Catholic, professed that he had not been a delinquent. Whilst this may be a cause of successful concealment it may also be true. In which case, we may be seeking a John Houghton, and such a man was nephew of Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton but the father was a Parliamentarian officer. John Haughton was a Burgess of Preston Guild in 1642.¹⁷⁸

Lieutenant [] Wood: The only reference to him is on December 30th 1642 when he was promoted to Provost Marshal.¹⁷⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Henry Brockden, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain Nicholas Stephenson, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Colonel John EDEN'S Regiment of Foot.

Although the history of this regiment is almost completely lost to us, the officer class is particularly well documented. Raised in the Tees valley and the North Riding, unless it was permanently based in that strategic area, it must have served with the infantry of Newcastle's army until Marston Moor, and have thereafter disbanded.

Colonel John Eden: This can only be the eldest of the two sons of Robert Eden of Windlestone, Co. Durham, who was still living in 1661.

John, born in 1615, probably a little earlier, has been confused with another John Eden who died in 1625. John of Windlestone was involved in a High Commission case concerning adultery in 1633, when one Mary Daniel was accused of co-habiting with him. The editor of the account related this case to another in 1630, and supposed that the man concerned on both occasions was the John Eden who had, in fact, died in 1625. At his father's Inquisition Post Mortem in 1663, John was styled of West Auckland, Esquire.¹⁸⁰

Lt. Colonel Nicholas Chaytor: Cited in the List, first of the five sons of Thomas Chaytor of Butterby who died in 1614. Nicholas, born in 1608, was himself styled of Butterby and Haughton le Field. His mother had compounded as a Recusant in 1630. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation, and seems to have been a conforming Anglican. Captured at Sherburn in Elmet in October 1645, he was apparently in arms again in 1648, perhaps as a colonel in his own right. His property at Butterby was sequestered in 1644, and he sought to compound in 1646, when he was designated as of Red House, and his rank confirmed during the course of the proceedings. He was fined £60. Listed in 1660 to provide a horse and a man at the Lord Lieutenant's muster, he seems to have died in 1665.¹⁸¹

Major James Bolt: Cited in the List, but he completely defies identification.

Captain John Allinson: Claimed in the List from Durham, of Bishop Auckland, yeoman. He and his father signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Auckland St. Andrew. His father may be the John Allinson, tanner, of Bishop Auckland, laying evidence before the court of High Commission in 1635 when he was himself 33. Captain Allinson was a copyholder in Newton Cap township in 1646 by surrender of his brother Ralph, who was also a Royalist officer (see John Tempest's Foot).¹⁸²

Captain Cuthbert Appleby: Claimed in the List from Durham, of Hurworth and Langleydale in that county. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation. Although in arms in both wars, and his estates at Hurworth sequestered in 1644, he avoided compounding until 1649, by which time it seems that the Hurworth property had been disposed of. In 1649 he paid £60 as his composition fine, but in 1651 some of his property was

still sequestered and bringing in an annual rent of £21.6.8d.¹⁸³

Lieutenant William Armstrong: Claimed in the List from Durham in Major Bolt's company. A strong possibility in view of the regiment's recruitment area must be William Armstrong of Whinfield House, in Stainton in Cleveland, who died c. 1681. There was also a William Armstrong of Park House near Hexham, the son of John Armstrong of that place, and this William was living in 1663. However, as perhaps a third William Armstrong pointed out in 1637 when presented for adultery before the High Commission, the name was very common, particularly near Haltwhistle and the Tyne valley area.¹⁸⁴

Lieutenant John Batmanson: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Appleby's company. Probably the son of Martin Batmanson of Eshe, a compounding Recusant, whose wife was also a Catholic, in 1637/8. In view of the rank, he is unlikely to be John, son and heir of William Batmanson of Ushaw, Martin's brother, since this John succeeded his father in 1605.¹⁸⁵

Lieutenant John Morley: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Chaytors company. Two such men figure in contemporary sources, and it is not impossible that they are the same. One, of Darlington, signed the 1641/2 Protestation. The other was presented at Thirsk Quarter Sessions for extortion in 1626, in his capacity as Seneschal of all Courts Baron and Leet in Langbargh Liberty. He was styled as of Whorlton, Gentleman.¹⁸⁶

Lieutenant Thomas Pilkington: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Parkin's company. Probably third of the three sons of Sir Arthur Pilkington of Nether Bradley who died in 1650. Such a man of Middleton in Auckland St. Andrew signed the 1641/2 Protestation.¹⁸⁷

Ensign Alexander Green: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Appleby's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Barnard Castle.¹⁸⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Timothy Parkin, claimed in the List from Durham.

Captain John Stevenson, cited in the List.

Lieutenant George Bowbank, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Stevenson's company.

Ensign Christopher Ward, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Stevenson's company.

Colonel William EURE'S Regiment of Foot.

Evidently a Yorkshire regiment, raised in 1643, it accompanied the Queen south in the summer and seems to have served with the Oxford army. Young and Toynbee were doubtful as to its presence at Cropredy Bridge in 1644,¹⁸⁹ although it does seem to have been engaged there. On August 21st the regiment was certainly with the Oxford army and in want of ammunition, being "destitute".¹⁹⁰ The force disappeared in 1644, and from the officer details, it would appear possible that that it formed a part of Rupert's forces on Marston Moor, perhaps some companies returning to end their careers in their native county. There does, however, seem to be evidence that it was part of Colonel George Lisle's Tertia of the Oxford army at the end of the year, but the possibility of confusion at this date with the regiment of Ralph Eure (with which we are not concerned) is strong.¹⁹¹

Colonel William Eure: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, Appendix 1.

Major Emmanuel Gilby: Cited in the List, fifth of the seven sons of Sir George Gilby of Stainton, Lincolnshire, and brother of Colonel Theophilus Gilby (q.v., Belasyse's Foot), he himself styled of Wakefield, Yorkshire, at his death in 1660. Recipient of a royal pardon for his part in what may have been the murder of a Parliamentarian sympathiser in 1643, he was commanding the garrison of Greenland House in February 1644. The force was substantial, consisting of 100 foot, 50 horse, and two cannon. He compounded in 1646 as of Pontefract, Gentleman, on a fine of £3.5s., in respect of his only possessions, a horse and clothes valued at £13.6.8d.¹⁹²

Captain William Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Yarm, yeoman and presented as a Recusant with his wife at Thirsk in 1641, and apparently also in 1632. He was later indicted in 1674. He had property in Bishopton which was sequestered in September 1644. During the Interregnum he seems to have outwardly changed his religious persuasion.¹⁹³

Captain John Plimpton: Cited in the List, the name more properly rendered as Plumpton. He was born in 1604/5, fourth of the 11 sons of Sir Edward Plumpton, and heir. The family was thoroughly Recusant, father and son compounding in 1629/30, and John having married into the Lancashire Towneley family. John pre-deceased his father (who died in 1658) being killed in arms at Marston Moor: "Johannes Plumpton arm. lethaliter vulneratus in proeli de Marston Moore, adversus rebelles fortissime dimicans, obiit a* 1644". In fact, John lay dying at Knaresborough until the end of July. His property in Yorkshire, and at Knockton Abbey in Lincolnshire, was inserted in the third Treason Act.¹⁹⁴

Lieutenant Thomas Ayscough: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Gilby's company. Fifth of the five sons of Allan Ayscough of Skewsby, and from a family almost totally Catholic and Royalist. Styled as of Dinsdale in 1666, he was presented as a Recusant in 1674.¹⁹⁵

Lieutenant Christopher Harris: "Mr. Christopher Harrys, Liefertenant to Captyn Plumton" was captured at Hunslett in March 1644. The location of Harris in this regiment is based upon the Plumpton link, but for the fuller problem and its ramifications, see George Middleton's Horse, Appendix 1. If this designation is accurate, it suggests that at least some of Eure's Foot came up with Belasyse to Yorkshire in January 1644.¹⁹⁶

Ensign Robert Benson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Pl(u)mptons company (but see also, Lambton's Foot). Such a man was captured at Leeds in January 1643, which may give an early date for the recruitment of the regiment.¹⁹⁷

Ensign William Lightfoot: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Barner's company. In view of the recruiting area, possibly the same of Melsonby, yeoman, Juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1626, or a son (in view of the rank).¹⁹⁸

Ensign Robert Pullen: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. A yeoman of Hawkswick had his willgranted probate in 1675. Hawkswick is, however, in the West Riding and close to Kettlewell, which may be a territorial hindrance to this tentative identification.¹⁹⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Barner, cited in the List.

Captain Henry Pullen, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Ensign John Richardson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Francis FANE'S Regiment of Foot.

From the known officers of this regiment, it would seem that Fane's Foot could only claim a tenuous link with the six northern counties with which I am concerned. Even so, and quite apart from its colonel's territorial interests in Yorkshire as well as in Lincolnshire, as the garrison of Doncaster it must have drawn fairly heavily upon Royalists in south Yorkshire, in the non-commissioned officer and rank and file levels. From the officer analysis it will be seen that part of this regiment must have fought at Selby in April 1644, and perhaps a detachment at Marston Moor, although Fane himself appears to have preferred the sedentary occupation of a garrison commander, taking command in Lincoln until it was stormed by the earl of Manchester.

Colonel Sir Francis Fane: He was born sometime before 1618, third son of Francis Fane 1st earl of Westmorland. Styled of Fulneck, Lincolnshire, and of Ashton in Yorkshire, KB at Charles I's coronation, he had poetic leanings (see also, the earl of Newcastle and, in passing, Sir William Davenant, Vol. 1). In 1642 he was appointed to the Commission of Array in Lincolnshire and in Yorkshire, and subscribed to levy horse for the King's service. Fane must have become governor in Doncaster by the early summer of 1643, and held it until March of the following year. Going into Lincoln, he commanded there until it fell to storm on May 6th, and he himself was taken prisoner with 800 men. It is unlikely that such a number is an indication of a fairly substantial regimental structure at so late a date, for there were apparently three other colonels in the town when it fell. He compounded in 1646 for £1,444 and thereafter kept himself to himself. He was issued in 1656 with a pass to journey into Europe, but does not appear to have been implicated in any conspiracies. Appointed a JP in 1664 and a commissioner for regulating corporations in Yorkshire, he died in 1681, the founder of his branch of the family.²⁰⁰

Lt. Colonel Alexander Forbes: Cited in the List, for what must be the same man, see Marley's Foot, below.

Major Redmain Burrell: Cited in the List, styled of Dowlby in Lincolnshire, Esquire, apparently a Catholic. A Commissioner of Array in his native county, he was taken prisoner when Lincoln fell, and compounded in 1645. He was discharged from sequestration in 1647. Very little can be traced concerning him.²⁰¹

Major George Rogers: Cited in the List, probably Burrell's predecessor in the rank since he was captured at Selby in April 1644. Of Mablethorp and Cockington, Lincolnshire, he compounded in 1647 on a fine of £105. 10s., and died in Europe before 1659, although not in exile so far as is known. Styled Esquire.²⁰²

Captain [] Balgy: Cited in the List. The Balguys or Balgys were seated primarily in Derbyshire, but the pedigree affords no feasible identification of this officer. A 'Sence Balguy' of Stamford, Lincolnshire, died before 1658 and may be the officer, whilst an Edward Balgy, yeoman, of Pontefract, had his will proved in 1686.²⁰³

Captain John Kirk: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, probably the son of Nicholas Kirk of South Austin, yeoman. John "assisted the King". A John Kirk of Wakefield, yeoman, died c. 1674.²⁰⁴

Captain William Purday: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. William Purdie, Gentleman, of Frickley, on December 20th 1637, not having lands in fee or offices of the yearly value of £100, carried a handgun loaded for action "and walked or rode with the same, not being in service of war, against the peace".²⁰⁵

Captain Robert Sandford: Cited in the List. If not a connection of the Westmorland Sandfords, two possibilities present themselves. Robert Sandford of Sandford in Shropshire was the eldest of the four sons of Francis Sandford, engineer to Colonel the Lord Capel. Another Robert, the second son of Arthur Sandford of Sandford, was captured in arms near Shrewsbury in 1645.²⁰⁶

Lieutenant John Wainwright: Claimed in the List from Derbyshire, Major Rogers's company, apparently providing a possible link with Captain Balgy, above. A John Wainwright of Ormskirk, described as a husbandman, was a sequestered delinquent in 1650 and was undischarged in 1655, but the identification is tenuous.²⁰⁷

Ensign Richard Barraclough: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire in Captain Halton's troop. Such a man, although perhaps this Ensign's father, refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I, and was styled as of Halifax.²⁰⁸

Quartermaster Thomas Spencer: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, and probably a prisoner at Selby in April 1644 (see Vol. 1). Such a man was second of the three sons of Thomas Spencer of Hooton on the Hill, Yorkshire, and a grandson of Henry Spencer of Bramley Grange. These places lie near Tickhill in south Yorkshire and seem territorially feasible. Thomas Spencer of Retford died in 1685 or thereabouts.²⁰⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Richard Briggs, cited in the List (see Selby, Vol. 1).

Captain [] Halton, cited in the List.

Lieutenant John Eliot, claimed in the List from London/Westminster in Major Burrell's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Moore, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Lt. Colonel Forbes's company. (See Selby, Vol. 1, and the garrison of Pontefract, *ibid.*)

Lieutenant William Shaw, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Balgy's company.

Ensign James Naylor, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Sandford's company.

Colonel John FEATHERSTONE'S Regiment of Foot.

A regiment for which there is no evidence outside of the List, and what can be gained from attempts to trace the various officers given there. Almost certainly rooted in a regiment raised in 1639/40, if it served anywhere, it probably remained on a war footing in the Tees valley area, as several Durham formations appear to have done, and doubtless dispersed in the summer of 1644.

Colonel John Featherstone: Born in 1598, son and heir of Ralph Featherstone of Stanhope in Weardale, Co. Durham. Little is known of his personal life, except that he was the last heir male of the family and seems to have died (one source suggests that he was killed) before the restoration. In April 1639 he was commanding a company of soldiers raised from his tenantry by border tenure, but none of the names of these men, admittedly rank and file, correspond with the officers of the List. A fine of £547.10s. was levied against him in 1650, and he was undischarged in 1651 by which time he may have been dead.²¹⁰

Lt. Colonel Anthony Maxton: Cited in the List, and something of a mystery. The name is uncommon, and this must be the Prebendary of Durham who died a delinquent in or around 1646/7 according to the Durham sequestration committee. Maxton was a Scot, a Deacon in 1608 and a priest in 1609, but the details concerning him are so slender that several writers have supposed him to have died in 1641. He had been Rector of Wolsingham and of Middleton in Teesdale and was accused of concealing Durham Cathedral plate from the Parliament by burying it in his garden.²¹¹

Major Charles West: Cited in the List, but defies identification unless he be Charles West of Stainford near Settle in Yorkshire, dead by 1653/4.²¹²

Captain John Martindall: Cited in the List, of Old Park, Durham, Gentleman, brother in law of Colonel William Eure (q.v.). A leaseholder in Bishop Auckland in 1625/6, which lease he transferred to (Lt. Colonel) Lyndley Wren (q.v., Hilton's Foot), his estate worth, according to the sequestrators, £100 a year. He compounded for his delinquency in 1644 but the sum is unknown.²¹³

Lieutenant John Gaynes: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major West's company, such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Durham St. Margaret's.²¹⁴

Lieutenant Oswald Johnson: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Martindall's company. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Brancepeth.²¹⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant William Buston, claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Maxton's company.

Ensign Robert Foster, claimed in the List from Newcastle, Major West's company.

Colonel Sir Timothy FEATHERSTONEHAUGH'S Regiment of Foot.

At his trial in 1651, Colonel Featherstonehaugh admitted that he had been a colonel of foot, although he said that he had raised 300 men at his own expense, which is nowhere near regimental strength.²¹⁶ He was certainly in command of some forces on January 17th 1643, when Colonel Sir Henry Fletcher (q.v.) complained of their activities.²¹⁷ At his trial already referred to, Featherstonehaugh stated that he had held no field command since Marston Moor, where he had fought, so clearly what was left of his regiment was dispersed there. Evidently it had not remained long in Cumbria where it was raised, as can be seen from the officer list, and must be one of the very few that actually left the north west to serve with the main army in Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Timothy Featherstonehaugh: Of Kirkoswald, he was born in 1601, the son of Henry Featherstonehaugh, High Sheriff of Cumberland who died in 1626. Timothy matriculated at Oxford in 1617, secured his B.A. in 1619/20, and entered Gray's Inn in the latter year. He was knighted at Whitehall in April 1628, and at the outbreak of hostilities was appointed a Commissioner of Array in Cumberland. He left there with 3000 foot in early 1643 for the main army at York, with which he served continuously. He was in the garrison of York and on Marston Moor, after which he retired to Cumbria, contributing money to the Carlisle defences. He compounded in 1647 for £128, but was in arms in the next year and in the enterprise of 1650/1. Captured, he, like the earl of Derby, was selected to be made an example of, and although he protested at his trial that he had held no command since 1644, which was probably true, his volunteer status was equally as offensive to his judges and he was executed. The result of this trial, like that of Derby's, must be seen as pre-ordained. His son Henry was a major in Sir Richard Dacres Horse (q.v., Appendix 1).²¹⁸

Captain Cuthbert Best: Cited in the List, second of the four sons of Cuthbert Best of Appleton upon Wiske, Gentleman. The family was solidly Recusant from about 1628, and Captain Best was named in 1640 at Thirsk Quarter Sessions to act as arbitrator in a dispute. He died before 1660, and probate was granted in 1661.²¹⁹

Captain Edward Bradley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. See also the same (?) man, Sir Thomas Tyldesley's Horse. If not, another Lancashire man, Edward Bradley of Chipping, yeoman, was sequestered in 1648 and undischarged in 1655, ostensibly a Recusant only.²²⁰

Captain Lawrence Giles: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, unidentified, possibly the same officer as cited under Colonel Sir Henry Bellingham's and the earl of Newcastle's Foot.

Captain Thomas Hesketh: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. The name is relatively common in composition proceedings, but in view of the claim, we must dismiss Thomas Hesketh of Rufford, Lancashire, who died c. 1646. This may be Thomas Hesketh of North Meoles, Esquire, fined as a delinquent and who survived into the Restoration. A third Thomas Hesketh, second son of Thomas Hesketh of Mains Hall, Lancashire, (the father died 1652), was apparently killed as a cavalry captain during the wars.²²¹

Ensign George Hally: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Giles's company. A George Hally of Bubwith, yeoman, had his will granted probate in 1686.²²²

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Francis Banks, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Giles's company.

Ensign Edward Anderson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Best's company.

Ensign Nicholas Hutchinson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Ensign Ralph Potter, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Best's company.

Quartermaster Thomas Lancake, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir Henry FLETCHER'S Regiment of Foot.

Compared with the normal run of Cumbrian regiments, Fletcher's was well organised and apparently well maintained, to judge from the available evidence. Fletcher himself, however, was not averse to hindering Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave in the routine administration of the north-west. Fletcher was raising forces in January 1643, and Mercurius Aulicus in July has a passing reference to further recruitment.²²³ Fletcher and his lt. colonel were in Cumberland in December 1643 and, according to Musgrave, were thwarting proposals for a muster at Penrith (see Vol. 1).²²⁴ Whether the regiment left the north-west is very doubtful, and Fletcher also had a formation of cavalry at his disposal with the remnants of which he may have left Cumberland in 1645.

Colonel Sir Henry Fletcher: Commissioned in 1643, and according to Musgrave, one of the leading personages in Cumberland. He was second son of Sir Richard Fletcher of Hutton on Forest, whom he succeeded in 1630, and was created a baronet in 1640. A deputy lieutenant in 1640, he was named to the Commission of Array in 1642. In the summer of 1643 only he and Musgrave remained in the north-west, disputing the authority between themselves, but by the time of the investment of Carlisle, Fletcher was in the garrison and contributing to the funds with plate and money. Upon the surrender of the city, he rode south in a troop commanded by Musgrave, and was killed in action at Rowton Heath in September 1645. His widow petitioned in 1647 on behalf of her son, George, against a fine of £2, 200, having secured control of her son's wardship from the Court of Wards in 1645. Upon review, the fine was cut to £714.17s. Sir Henry had been one of those barred by name from attendance upon the King in 1646, a few months too late for it to mean anything. At the Restoration, George Fletcher was supported by his father's old rival, Musgrave, in an attempt to secure the rents of the forfeited property of the Parliamentarian, Cuthbert Musgrave.²²⁵

Lt. Colonel William Carleton: Cited in the List under Fletcher, and as a field commander in his own right. He was of Carleton Hall, Esquire, but little is known of him. He contributed to Carlisle's defences in 1644 and was in arms in 1648, but no details of his composition proceedings have survived. Taxed in 1656 for £10.10s.²²⁶

Major William Flemming: Flemming is distinguished from the majority of northern officers by the extremely detailed account of his recruitment of men, given by Burn and Nicolson, apparently verbatim, from a document now no longer extant. He was commissioned in 1642 by the earl of Newcastle and raised the following men:

Ainstable	12
Croglin and Newby	6

Kirkoswald	18
Renwick	6
Melmerby	12
Ouseby	12
Glasonby	6
Gamelsby	6
Little Salkeld	6
Hunsonby and	
Winskell	6
Skirwith	6

Accepting the accuracy of this, Flemming raised a full company of foot. He was the heir of John Flemming of Skirwith, Cumberland, and was styled as of Rydal. Like his father, a convicted Recusant, he was a Catholic, but did not emerge in public life as had his father, who was High Sheriff in 1611. William gave to Carlisle defence funds, and petitioned to compound in 1647, but was dead by 1649 and his property in the third Treason Act.²²⁷

Captain Lancelot Walker: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, probably the officer of Chaytor's Foot (q.v.), and if so, claiming twice. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Lowther, Westmorland, and may be the Lancelot Walker of Torpenhow, whose property was in the third Treason Act. Perhaps also the captive at Appleby in 1648.²²⁸

(Captain) Thomas Whelpdale: Cited in the List, the rank conjectured. He may be Mr. Whelpdale of Penrith who gave £5 to Carlisle defences, but see also the Whelpdales in Curwen's Horse and Foot.²²⁹

Lieutenant Richard Brisby: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Lt. Colonel Carleton's company. Son and heir of Thomas Bresby or Brisby of Penrith who died in 1652, Richard was born in 1603 and living in 1665 at the visitation.²³⁰

Lieutenant Thomas Rowntree: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Carre's company. Possibly Thomas Ronetree of Appleton on Wiske presented as a Recusant at Thirsk in 1624, styled yeoman. A William Rowntree of Durham city was also in arms.²³¹

Ensign John Staveley: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Major Flemming's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Milburne.²³²

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Carre, claimed in the List from Durham.

(Captain) William Chamberlain, claimed in the List, rank conjectural.

Captain John Stephenson, cited in the List.

Lieutenant George Hetherington, claimed in the List from London/Westminster William Chamberlain's company.

Lieutenant Robert Howthwaite, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Major Flemming's company.

Ensign Thomas Rumny, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Thomas Whelpdale's company.

Quartermaster Nicholas Carleton, claimed in the List from Cumberland. Clearly, a link with Lt. Colonel Carleton is highly probable, but he cannot be traced.

Colonel Godfrey FLOYD'S Regiment of Foot.

The most mysterious regiment in the northern army, not least in that it was commanded by a decidedly non-northern colonel with a decidedly northern field and company commander cadre. Elsewhere I have suggested (see Mansfield's Foot) that Floyd may have been the (professional) field commander of a regiment raised or titularly commanded by a more eminent personage, but that is conjectural and there is no basis in the evidence to support it. In view, also, of the presence of two 'Welsh' companies in the earl of Derby's Foot (q.v.) in December 1642, it is not impossible that Floyd moved east of the Pennines in 1643 and was promoted. The Lancashire link will be apparent below.

Colonel Godfrey Floyd: He has absolutely defied identification. Cited in the List by several identified claimants, he must be the 'Coronal' (sic) Flood whose son was baptised in York on June 19th 1644. There is a reference to a 'Major' Flood going over to the Scots prior to the fall of Newark.²³³

Lt. Colonel [] Dewhurst: The want of a forename is particularly irksome here, but there may be a link with a Lancashire origin. Robert Dewhurst of Aston in that county, second of the three sons of Robert Dewhurst of the same, was killed in arms on Marston Moor. This seems a not improbable designation, but there are other Dewhursts, somewhat less likely, that must be mentioned. Robert Dewhurst of Bayley, Lancashire, yeoman, a deceased delinquent when his son James petitioned concerning the sequestration of the property. This Robert died in 1654. William Dewhurst, Gentleman, of Dewhurst, laid down his arms in June 1644 and petitioned to compound in 1645. Robert Dewhurst of Cumberhall, Lancashire, delinquent, the son of John of the same place, who died in 1649, is another possibility. However, the Dewhurst of Aston Royalist is the most probable.²³⁴

Lt. Colonel [] Jackson: Cited in the List, but the want of forename would seem to render the identification quite impossible. However, a Royalist officer not placed in any regiment is John Jackson of Harraton, Co. Durham, knighted for his services in 1660. His father, Thomas, died in 1632, and he himself in 1673. On August 1st he was captain of the Prince of Wales's Troop of Horse, signing for £62 in pay for the troopers, which may seem to rule against him being lt. colonel of a foot regiment under a colonel who, if not of humble origin, may have been a mere professional. He seems, however, to be the same as Lt. Colonel John Jackson of Rickleden who was in Durham in 1644 supplying butter for the Newcastle garrison, and if so, this suggests that his 1642 rank (if it is indeed the same man) was temporary.²³⁵

Captain Thomas Best: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. He was of Foxton, Gentleman, and according to his composition proceedings, had been a captain under Newcastle, "a great plunderer" who "forced rents from the well affected in those parts where he was". Best went to London with a forged certificate to clear his delinquency which was discovered, and the local committee was warned against this "notorious delinquent". Best was something of a turbulent spirit. His father was probably the JP at Helmsley Quarter Sessions in 1624. The son was in arrears in 1634 for assessments due to the constables of Craithorne, and a Thomas Best of East Harlsey (close to Foxton) was presented as a Recusant in 1628 with his wife.²³⁶

Captain Seth Mort: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, a stronger support for a possible Lancashire origin of the regiment. Seth was eldest of the six sons of Adam Mort, the Royalist Mayor of Preston killed defending that town in 1643 (see Vol. 1). Seth was sequestered in 1648 when he was styled of Preston, and does not seem to have attempted to compound. A Catholic?²³⁷

Lieutenant John Calvert: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Crow's company. Interestingly, John Calvert of Cockerholme in Lancashire, Gentleman, was a delinquent, apparently present when Lancaster was stormed in March 1643. Information was laid in 1656 that he and two others had concealed the manor of Cockerholme to avoid sequestration. His property was in the third Treason Act.²³⁸

Lieutenant Mathew Gayle: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, such a man, of St. Olave's, York, was listed as a Recusant in 1640. But see also Lieutenant Mathew Gayle, Lord Widdrington's Horse (Appendix 1).²³⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Crow, cited in the List.

Captain Christopher Wethinghall, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Ensign Francis Clough, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Jackson's company.

Quartermaster Edward Turner, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Thomas FORSTER'S Regiment of Foot.

This regiment is a singular example of what might be called a family concern, since all of the officers in the List, save one, were Forsters and must have been related in one way or another, to the colonel. Nothing at all is known of the date of commission, of its activities, or of its eventual dispersal.

Colonel Thomas Forster: Problematical. Thomas Forster of Adderstone and of Bamburgh, Northumberland, eldest of the two sons of Mathew Forster of the former, was born in 1604 and is a possibility. An alternative pedigree suggests that he was the eldest of the four sons of Thomas Forster who died in 1637, and it is not possible to resolve this contradiction, except insofar as the evidence for Thomas's pre-war activities and that for his lt. colonel seem to support the second pedigree. Thomas was presented in 1635 for laying violent hands on Robert Stephenson, clerk, as they sat at wine together after a wedding. Thomas's brother John (q.v., below) was similarly presented, and the case against him was still going on in 1639. Of Colonel Forster's war service we know next to nothing, except for a definite allusion in his composition papers to his rank as colonel. He was fined £273 in 1649, and died in 1673. His wife was a Recusant in 1629, but he himself appears to have conformed.²⁴⁰

(It has to be stressed that the whole question of the Forster pedigree raises several questions, most particularly that which links Thomas Forster of the composition papers with Mathew Forster, holding the same property, presumably son succeeding father. Watts and Watts have argued that the heirs of Mathew Forster were Recusants, possibly Church Papists, whilst the same cannot be said of the heirs of Thomas, and the composition papers convey no inkling of suspected Catholicism).²⁴¹

Lt. Colonel John Forster: Cited in the List, according to one pedigree, brother to his colonel, being second of the four sons of Thomas Forster of Adderstone who died in 1637. Styled of Crookletch, he must be the John Forster of Adderstone who was presented as a Catholic Recusant in 1649, and styled in his composition as of Adderstone, Gentleman, when fined £32. The curious thing here is that if these links are valid, his Catholicism seems to have been no bar to his compounding, which suggests either that he concealed his military service successfully, as part of a family conspiracy, or that there is something wrong with the identification. He was a Gentleman Volunteer in 1661, and died in 1681, to be buried at Bamburgh, "a very worthy and upright Gent".²⁴²

Captain John Forster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, conceivably the John Forster Junior of Adderstone who compounded as a delinquent on a fine of £83.19.4d., implying that

he was Lt. Colonel Forster's son. He does not appear at all in the pedigree which links the colonel and lt. colonel as brothers. Probably he of Cornhill listed as a Gentleman Volunteer in 1661.²⁴³

Captain John Orde: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, perhaps John Orde of Weetwood, fined £304 in 1649. If so, he was first of the sons of William Ord(e) of Weetwood, High Sheriff in 1638/9, by the father's second marriage. According to the pedigree, however, he died before 1661 and so, perhaps, had not time to file a claim. Also against this identification is the lack of prestige attaching to Forster's regiment, whereas the son of William Orde might be expected to appear, at the least, in a cavalry force.²⁴⁴

Ensign Mathew Forster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Here again, the problem of identification appears insurmountable. Mathew Forster of Cornhill, son of Mathew Forster of the same, gives us a possible territorial link with Captain John Forster but not much else. Alternatively, Mathew, seventh of the seven sons of Mathew Forster of Fleetham (the eldest son was born in 1591) would seem equally as propitious, and he of Fleetham was listed as a Gentleman Volunteer in 1661.²⁴⁵

Ensign Thomas Forster: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was sixth of the seven sons of Mathew Forster of Fleetham, which makes for some link with the ensign above, were it not for the fact that the Forsters were conservative in their use of Christian names.²⁴⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant George Forster, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Ensign Thomas Forster, claimed in the List from Newcastle, Lt. Colonel Forster's company (conceivably the same as Ensign Thomas Forster already cited; if not, additional evidence of the difficulty of resolving the Forster pedigree in relation to war service).

Colonel Sir Gilbert GERARD'S Regiment of Foot.

A relatively well documented regiment, as is often the case with regiments which left the north to serve much of the war with the Oxford army. Raised in Lancashire in the summer of 1642, it saw service against Manchester in September (see Vol. 1)²⁴⁷ before going to join the main army prior to Edgehill. Young has written a brief summary of the regiment's history,²⁴⁸ showing that the regiment went on to take part in the fighting at Brentford before going successfully into garrison at Brill on the Hill where Gerard was appointed governor in December. Sergeant Richard Evans and Captain Edward Paynton signed for supplies of powder, shot and match on November 4th 1642,²⁴⁹ and on December 9th large quantities of ammunition were ordered to be sent with Gerard to Brill.²⁵⁰ The regiment held Brill against a storm on January 27th 1643 and was still in garrison there in March when Gerard signed for further supplies.²⁵¹ In camp at Abingdon in June, the regiment returned a quantity of pikes and muskets to the main stores when men fell too sick to use them.²⁵² It also seems to have been present in the May muster at Culham Camp.²⁵³ One of six regiments in the first Tertia of Foot in the storm of Bristol,²⁵⁴ it appears again with Lord Byron at Winchenden near Aylesbury in October 1643.²⁵⁵ Thereafter its career becomes less certain, and more will be gleaned from the officer lists below. It certainly fought at Naseby, though hardly up to half strength (Young gave it as only 560 strong at Edgehill). One of the problems attached to distinguishing this regiment from others, is its proneness to being mistaken for that of Colonel Charles (Lord) Gerard, whilst at least two, perhaps three, other Sir Gilbert Gerard's were active at the same time, one of them a Parliamentarian. This, of course, is more serious when considering Colonel Gerard's own career.

Colonel Sir Gilbert Gerard:

As has been said, there is a problem in always distinguishing this man from others of the same name. Our colonel was the fourth (or third?)

son of Radcliffe Gerard of Halsall, Lancashire, and consequently the uncle of Colonel Sir Charles Gerard (later Lord Gerard of Brandon, see Sir Thomas Glemham Appendix 1). The Gerards had a Recusant strain in the family, but there is no evidence to support a contention that Gilbert was a Catholic. Governor of Brill (see above), by December 25th 1643 he had replaced Sir William Russell of Strensham as Governor of Worcester. In that capacity he took Stone Castle, Staffordshire, in March 1644. Although according to one source, he handed the regiment over to his brother (see below) in January 1645, he was apparently commanding it still in a Tertia at Naseby, and the date may be an error for 1646. At Naseby, Gerard lost nine officers, and 100 men killed, which must mean that his regiment suffered relatively heavily. Apparently a prisoner in Warwick Castle from 1646 to 1648, he died obscurely before the restoration.²⁵⁶

Colonel Ratcliffe Gerard:

Cited as a field commander in the List, curiously, by Welsh claimants only. He began his career as

lt. colonel of the regiment, which seems strange in view of the pedigrees which make him his colonel's elder brother. A Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642, suspected as a Catholic, he secured command of the regiment in 1646, the year in which he laid down his arms. Styled of Barton in Lancashire, his family was heavily committed to the Royalist cause; his son John was killed in arms, and his son Ratcliffe, born in 1623, was a prisoner in Wigan in 1649. He was in arms in 1650/1 when his property was re-sequestered, and was captured at Wigan Lane. (Symonds, in a curiously uncharacteristic mental lapse, forgot Gerard's name when compiling a list of officers in Worcester in June 1644).²⁵⁷

Lt. Colonel Richard Bishop: Major at Edgehill, and until Ratcliffe assumed the colonelcy, whereupon Bishop was promoted. Not a Lancashire man, but probably of Cholsey in Berkshire, Sergeant at Arms to Charles I. He was at Culham Camp in May 1643, and in June was acting Tertia Major to Lord Grandison. Captured at Naseby, he petitioned to compound in 1646 and his delinquency was cleared two years later. He is not to be confused with (Sir) Richard Bishop of Alveston, Warwickshire).²⁵⁸

Major Gilbert Houghton: Originally a captain in the regiment, he was made major on January 7th 1646 under "Ratlpeh Gerard", his commission signed by Prince Maurice. Fourth of the five sons of Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton of Houghton (q.v., Appendix 3) and was himself styled as of Brinscolls in Wheelton, Lancashire, Gentleman. Probably the Captain Halton putting muskets in store at Oxford in January 1643 from the regiment, and the same man at Culham Camp in May receiving equipment for his company. He petitioned to compound in 1649, and a fine of £45 was reduced to £19.14.2d. but he does not appear to have settled it. Probably implicated in the 1650/1 rising, his property was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652 and after it had been surveyed in January 1653, he had to pay £104 to clear the sequestration. Captain-lieutenant of the earl of Derby's troop of Horse in 1660, he was appointed Carver Extraordinary in the following year, and died not long afterwards.²⁵⁹

Captain [] Assheton: Noticed by Young in the claim of a soldier called John Bikerdyke, Assheton's position in this regiment confirmed by the support given to his statements by John Bryon, easily identifiable as John Byrom of this regiment (q.v.). Assheton's forename appears variously as Edward or Edmund, and he is clearly Edmund Assheton of Chaterton, Lancashire, son of Edmund Assheton of the same, who was dismissed as a JP in 1642. Second of five sons, all were Foreign Burgesses of Preston, and Edmund (or his father) seems to have been in arms in Lancashire well into the spring of 1643, but that does not make his position in this regiment invalid. The father was a Commissioner of Array and died in 1649, Captain Edmund finishing the war in Oxford garrison.²⁶⁰

Captain William Booth: Mentioned by rank and regiment at Culham Camp, May 1643, and probably taken at Naseby in 1645. Such a man of Reditch in Manchester died before 1658 when his will was administered, but that is probably too tenuous a link with what is a relatively common name.²⁶¹

Captain John Byrom: Cited in the List, and see also, Captain Assheton, above. Of Salford, Gentleman, he admitted having been captain of a foot company in Worcester garrison, and appears to have been promoted since a witness stated that he had been a lieutenant. The third son and ultimate heir of Adam Byrom of Salford, he was born in 1620 and in 1664 was a major in the Lancashire Militia.²⁶²

Captain John Gerard: Cited by rank and regiment at Culham, May 1643, he was the second son of Colonel Ratcliffe Gerard, probably aged about 18 in 1642. Young suggests he fought at Edgehill. He died a mysterious death during the Interregnum, for in 1660 his father petitioned that John had been done to death, "tyrannically murdered" for his loyalty and "obedience to His Maty", and asked that the persons concerned should be exempted from indemnity. Such requests were usually unsuccessful, which in view of the Parliamentarian record in Lancashire, was probably just as well.²⁶³

Captain Ratcliffe Gerard: Confused by Young as 'Patrick' Gerard, but clearly Ratcliffe, first of the sons of Colonel Ratcliffe Gerard, with his company at Culham in 1643, and captured at Naseby in 1645. Styled of Halsall, Gentleman, he was born c. 1622/3 and had matriculated at Brasenose College in 1639, acquiring his M.A. in 1642. In 1649 he was a prisoner in Wigan.²⁶⁴

Captain Edward Paynton: The only reference to him is in November 1642 when he counter-signed for supplies at Oxford. He can not be traced.²⁶⁵

Captain William Stanly: Claimed in the List from Middlesex, but clearly a Lancashire man, perhaps the brother of Sir Edward Stanley of Bickerstaffe. William Stanley of Woodhall, Gentleman, in arms against Parliament petitioned in 1647/8 and was fined £46.13.4d. He was apparently a leaseholder. He was re-sequestered in 1650 for failure to pay the first half of his fine.²⁶⁶

Captain William Warberton: Claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, almost certainly eldest of the three sons of William Warburton of Rolles in that county who died in 1653. Captain Warberton was born in 1623 and living at the visitation of 1663.²⁶⁷

- Captain Gabriel Young: Claimed in the List from Surrey, styled of Cobham in that county, Gentleman. He 'discovered' himself in 1649, fearing sequestration for something "said or done" in the first war. Fined £14.²⁶⁸
- Captain William Young: Cited in the List, and setting aside the possibility that this is an error for Gabriel, William ought to be a connection of his. A William Young petitioned in 1641 that although promised £120 from the King for a 'service' he had been given only £80 in light gold, for which he had had to pay a fee. He sought redress, but the Lords dismissed the complaint.²⁶⁹
- Lieutenant William Waldron: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Potters's company. A Royalist of this name, resident in Somerset, paid a £630 fine.
- Ensign [] Bland: Cited as a prisoner at Naseby, possibly Tertia rather than regimental rank. (This also applies to an Ensign Perrin).²⁷⁰
- Ensign Francis Dormer: Claimed in the List from Warwickshire, Captain Stanly's company. Probably a son, or a younger brother, of Robert Dormer of Grove Park, Buckinghamshire, and of Norton Curlew Warwickshire. Robert, son of Anthony Dormer of the same, was never in arms, but was, like his father, a sequestered Recusant.²⁷¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Hugh Floyd, claimed in the List from Carmathen under Ratcliffe Gerard as colonel.

Captain John Mozey, claimed in the List from Worcestershire.

Captain John Potter(s), cited in the List.

Lieutenant Rowland Floyd, claimed in the List from Carmarthen, Captain Floyd's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Pilkington, claimed in the List from Worcestershire, Captain Byrom's company.

Lieutenant William Powell, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Lieutenant Henry Whittingham, claimed in the List from Wiltshire.

Ensign Maurice Floyd, claimed in the List from Carmarthen, Captain Floyd's company.

Ensign Robert Holt, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain William Young's company (see above, possibly Gabriel Young).

Colonel Sir John GERLINGTON'S Foot.

This probably never approached the status of a full regiment, and we may be dealing merely with forces levied by Gerlington (who is dealt with elsewhere as a colonel of horse) to garrison Thurland Castle. The siege of Thurland in October 1643 (see Vol. 1) was hard pressed, and the officers claiming in the List can only be a handful of a larger number.²⁷² Young maintained that this was, in fact, a regiment, and that as such it fought on Marston Moor.²⁷³ His assertion was based upon a misreading of Slingsby's Diary, Slingsby referring to one colour of Gerlington's leaving York at the rendition.²⁷⁴ However, this observation of Sir Henry's has to be related to what preceded it, where he clearly alluded to "those Troops of our Guard". In other words, we are here dealing not with foot, but with Gerlington's cavalry (q.v., Appendix 1). The only suggestion that there was, in fact, a regiment of foot under Gerlington, comes in Mercurius Aulicus for March 28th, 1643, but the allusion is vague and cannot be taken to contradict the impression of the List.

Captain Thomas Danson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, but without specifying regiment. He was, in 1642, under-Sheriff to Gerlington and by definition I have placed him in this force. He may even have commanded in Thurland. Styled of Russcoat, Gentleman, and a Commissioner of Array, he petitioned to compound in 1649 and admitted having served in garrisons.²⁷⁵

Captain Thomas Greene: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Such a man of Newton died before 1669 when his will was proved.²⁷⁶

Ensign Bryan Burton: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. In December 1642 this man, an 'agent' of Gerlington's, was busy seizing the property of Parliamentarians on orders from his colonel. In the composition papers of Colonel the Lord Morley (q.v., Appendix 1) Thomas Baines deposed that in September 1645 Bryan Burton, acting as agent for Morley, demanded £50 from Baines to procure the latter's release from Skipton where he had been confined. But where Burton lived, or whom it was that he ordinarily served, is unknown.²⁷⁷

Colonel Sir Thomas GLEMHAM'S Regiment of Foot.

As with the Foot of John Belasyse (q.v.), we are dealing here with at least two and perhaps three, separate periods of recruiting by Glemham, and we have the problem of assigning periods of service to the various officers identified. The regiment was first raised in Yorkshire in 1642, and companies fought at Leeds in October of that year.²⁷⁸ Attached chiefly to York as a garrison force, since Glemham was governor until late 1643, it nonetheless appears to have seen field action during that year to judge from certain officers. It is doubtful that it marched to Newcastle with Glemham in the winter of 1643/4, for it ^{was} in garrison in York still during the siege and whilst Marston Moor was fought.²⁷⁹ Part at least accompanied Glemham to Carlisle after York fell, but the regiment must have been depleted and undergoing changes in personnel as Reformado officers were incorporated during the defence of Carlisle. When that city was surrendered in 1645, Glemham went down to Oxford. His regiment was called on August 6th, the "King's Lifeguard, who had marched [from] Carlisle to Cardiff" and then "Sir Thomas Glemham's Foot were made Dragoons in Brecknockshire".²⁸⁰ The regiment ended up in Oxford where Glemham, as governor, showed again his capacity for last ditch stands, and here again the regiment must have undergone changes, finally disbanding when the city capitulated in 1646.

Colonel Sir Thomas Glemham: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel [] Vaughan: Cited by Peacock, who suggests that this was Sir George Vaughan of Pembrey, Carmarthenshire, who compounded as a delinquent in 1649 on a fine of £2,857. A 'Coll. Vawhan' was in Pontefract garrison in 1644, and a George Vaughan of Whitby, not the same as he of Pembrey, died before 1685/6. All of these are extremely tenuous, and the problem of the Peacock source has been examined before.²⁸¹

(Lt. Colonel) Henry Waite: A tentative suggestion, for a fuller discussion of which see (Colonel) Henry Waite's (Regiment of) Foot.

Major Lewis Lewins: Rank and regiment are given in the composition papers. Lewis, of Eske and Heslington, was born in 1616, first of the two sons of Thomas Lewins of Rusholme who died in 1626. He transferred to Glemham's Foot regiment in 1642 from that of Colonel Sir Thomas Metham (q.v.). Lewins surrendered in November 1644, and compounded in 1646 on a fine of £316.13.4d., which he had paid by April 1647. He died, styled of Eske, Gentleman, in 1671.²⁸²

Major [] Wagstaffe: Cited by Peacock, perhaps the same as appears in the List cited as a field commander with a major and others below him. Unidentified.

Captain Jacob Blenkinsop: Claimed in the List from Newcastle. He was brought to Thurloe's attention in 1655 in information from Tynemouth, when he was cited by rank and service to Charles I, and was suspected of plotting, "but nothing can be found".²⁸³

Captain [] Coney: Cited by Peacock, and accurately identified by him so far as can be judged. He was William Coney of Stoak, Lincolnshire, the son of Sir Sutton Coney of the same who was himself a Commissioner of Array in 1642. William styled Esquire, and a JP in 1641/2, ended his career as a major in the defence of Newark, and no doubt did not long remain with Glemham. In 1651 the Council of State notified the Lincolnshire sequestrators that Coney "has held correspondence with the enemies...we desire you forthwith to seize and secure his real and personal estate, in order to sequestration, and to use all possible diligence that the commonwealth have the utmost benefit of their estates who endeavour to raise disturbance amongst us". His property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652, but William himself was safely in Europe, for in June 1654 he petitioned the Protector and Council that although he had resided at Utrecht for some years, he had neither seen nor corresponded with Charles Stuart or his party. He desired to return to live quietly at home, and was willing to give security.²⁸⁴

Captain Lewis Darcy: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, third of the six sons of Thomas Darcy of York, Gentleman, who was himself the second son by his father's second marriage, of Thomas Darcy of Hornby Esquire, the father of Conyers Lord Darcy (q.v.). Thomas the father was either a Parliamentarian, or extremely cautious. On February 12th 1645 he wrote to tell Lord Fairfax that he had heard from a malignant, who had had the news from three strangers, that his son Lewis was in Carlisle garrison "in great account there, at which I did not much rejoice". In 1660, Lewis was informing against York city councillors and officers who had been in arms against the King. He died in the city in 1664.²⁸⁵

Captain Robert Gosnold: Cited in the List, and conceivably a rank enjoyed between the fall of York and the regiment's arrival in the south after Carlisle fell. He was, however, of Otley in Suffolk and may have had earlier associations with Glemham. Cited as a Reformado at Carlisle by Tullie, he may have risen to the rank of major; and by December 18th 1645, when Charles I appointed him as commander of a position in Oxford garrison, he was a colonel in his own right. He petitioned to compound in 1646 as of Otley, Esquire, and was fined £600, a fine which he had paid by 1648. He was taxed at £10 in the decimation levy in 1656, and died sometime before 1658.²⁸⁶

Captain William Hodgeson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. He was probably the second or third son of Robert Hodge-

son of Hebburn, Esquire, and the son in law of Colonel Sir Thomas Haggerston (q.v.), dying in 1662. He was, according to Rushworth, a Catholic and the Haggerston marriage implies as much. Apparently styled of Winlaton, Northumberland.²⁸⁷

Captain [] Jackson: Cited by Peacock, possibly George Jackson of York, Gentleman, in arms in the first war. The York line may be significant (see Captain Darcy).²⁸⁸

Captain [] Long: Cited by Peacock, probably Robert Long of Gualtres or Galtres, his estate sold in 1651 for his delinquency. He petitioned in 1660 for its recovery in view of the exemption from pardon of the new owner. Listed in 1664 as a commissioner for the Regulating of Corporations.²⁸⁹

Captain George Loup(e): Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but appears to claim under Colonel Sir Francis Mackworth with whom we are not concerned. Evidently a transfer, and probably from Mackworth to Glemham, since in his petition to compound he referred to having been shot "into the reins of his back" whilst in Oxford garrison. Of Boroughbridge, Gentleman.²⁹⁰

Captain Darly Mackerly: Cited in the List, probably an Irish professional. He may well be the Captain Macarte mentioned by Tullie in Carlisle.²⁹¹

Captain William Stokeld: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, perhaps a promotion, since an Ensign Stockhald was taken at Wakefield in May 1643. Two such of this name signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Gainford and Hamsterley in Co. Durham.²⁹²

Captain Thomas Swinburn: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. In view of Glemham's connection with Newcastle in 1643/4, (see Vol. 1) almost certainly the same as Captain Thomas Swinburn cited in Marley's Foot (q.v.). He was Thomas Swinburn of Barmston and Butterby, Esquire, the son of John Swinburn of Wylam who died in 1604. The family was an illegitimate branch of the main Chopwell family, and Thomas was born in 1597, the sixth son but eventual heir. His property was sequestered at Butterby in September 1644 when he was viewed as a "leading delinquent" in Co. Durham. He compounded on a fine of £320, when he had claimed that the earl of Newcastle had forced him to loan the King £30 and to act as a Commissioner of Array. He was still alive in 1666.²⁹³

Captain William Thornton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, probably a second transfer to the regiment from Metham's Foot. Apparently at Adwalton Moor on June 30th 1643, where a soldier of his company, Daniel France, was buried.²⁹⁴

Lieutenant Hugh Hutchinson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Mackerly's company. Born in 1622, the eldest of the three sons of Hugh Hutchinson of Framwelgate, Co. Durham, who died in 1635. Hugh became a mercer in later life.²⁹⁵

Lieutenant John Pickering: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Loupe's company. We have probate granted for the wills of two such men, of Cramb in Yorkshire in 1677, and of Thorp Arch (close to York) in 1682. The John Pickering of Cramb, however, appears to have been a pretty extreme Puritan.²⁹⁶

Ensign Thomas Rudd: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man of Stainforth near Thorne in south Yorkshire was listed as a Recusant in 1666, and may be the Thomas Rudd of Hessle near Pontefract whose will was granted probate in 1683.²⁹⁷

Ensign Robert Taylor: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Hodgeson's company. Robert Taylor of Rareton, yeoman, was an undischarged delinquent in 1651, although he had been fined £25 in 1649 for delinquency which appears to have dated to 1648, though that does not debar his service in this regiment.²⁹⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Smart, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Starkeley, cited by Peacock.

Lieutenant Francis Chadderton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Gosnold's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Parr, claimed in the List from Middlesex, Captain Blenkinsop's company.

Lieutenant James Wilson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Darcy's company.

Ensign George Barlow, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Lewin's company.

Ensign Christopher Girdler, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Darcy's company.

Colonel Sir Thomas GOWER'S Foot.

The only clue to the existence of what cannot have been more than a company or less, of infantry under a colonel with his own Dragoon regiment (q.v., Appendix 3) comes in the List. There are two claimants, an Ensign Thomas Stockdale and a Quartermaster John Sympson, both from Yorkshire, neither of whom can be traced.

Colonel Edward GREY'S Foot.

Despite the presence of a major claiming under Grey's Foot in the List, this cannot have been a field regiment, as will be apparent. Grey was first and foremost a cavalry commander, both in 1643/5 and in 1648. Whilst it is possible that he recruited some infantry in 1648, this force with which we are dealing must bear some relation to Grey's Division in the defence of Pontefract from December to March 1644/5 (see Vol. 1 for an analysis of the garrison). The problem here is that the names of the officers as given by the List do not correspond with the officers as cited by Drake in his compilation of the Pontefract personnel. Further, the decidedly Northumbrian character of the claimants indicates that if we are not dealing with infantry raised by Grey in 1642/3, there is a strong likelihood that these are indeed, 1648 commissions, at least in specific instances if not overall.

Colonel Edward Grey: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, see Appendix 1.

Major Edward Huddleston: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. No doubt the same officer as he cited under Colonel William Huddleston's Foot (q.v.) and consequently we are dealing with a transfer. Major Huddleston is discussed in the context of his original regiment, since the Pontefract association with Grey, given by Drake, was not regimental.²⁹⁹

Captain Ralph Carre: Cited in the List, perhaps Ralph Carre of Cocken, deceased delinquent who was in arms in the 1642/6 war and whose younger brother Francis petitioned for the sequestration to be raised in 1650.³⁰⁰

Captain George Craister: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he was of Little Houghton, fourth of the four sons of John Craister of Craster, and a brother of Lt. Colonel William Craister (q.v., Sir William Widdrington's Foot).³⁰¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Thomas Thompson, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Ensign William Fenwick, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Carre's company.

Colonel Sir Henry GRIFFITHS'S Regiment of Foot.

Almost certainly a Trainband regiment which had all but disappeared by the end of 1642 (in this, it can be compared with that of Colonel Sir Thomas Metham q.v.). It is, however, more likely to have existed as a force than Griffiths's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1). Roy has suggested³⁰² that the regiment was commanded in the summer of 1642 by Sir Marmaduke Langdale (q.v.) but consideration of the main source for this statement³⁰³ shows that Langdale was merely acting on Griffiths's behalf in receiving pay, and not in any official rank.

Colonel Sir Henry Griffiths: Of Burton Agnes, the son of Sir Henry Griffiths of the same, and second baronet. The father was a deputy lieutenant but the son does not appear to have been active in public office. Appointed to the Commission of Array in Yorkshire in the summer of 1642, Colonel Griffiths as a Trainband commander must have raised his men early (see also Metham's and Robert Strickland's Foot regiments). He was not in Yorkshire in July 1642, but signed personally for the regiment's pay at the end of that month and again in August of that year. His signature was on the letters sent to induce the earl of Newcastle to come into the county in September, and according to Slingsby, Griffiths apparently missed a kidnap attempt made against him by Captain John Hotham from Hull. His disappearance from active service by the end of 1642 is hard to explain, unless he was ill. A fall from favour might, conceivably, have been understandable if Griffiths was closely associated with the earl of Cumberland, but there is no comparison with, for instance, Sir Francis Wortley (q.v.). He was viewed by the Parliament as a dangerous man, and was debarred from office and from court. In his petition to compound and the subsequent proceedings, he admitted his colonelcy but claimed that he was "enforced by the prevailing enemy in the parts where his whole estate lay...by their threats and menaces constrained to join himself with them". That was an untruth and Parliament, in levying the enormous fine of £7,457 in 1646 (later reduced to £5,877.13.9d) clearly thought as much. He had not paid the fine by January 1648, "Sir Henry Griffith doth not to Effect prosecute the said Composition", and it was determined that from the settlement, £1500 was to go to the widow of Colonel Sir William Fairfax and, until then, she was to appoint trustees to receive Griffiths's rents. (The size of Griffiths's fine may reflect a deliberate decision by the government to reward Fairfax's public service without actually touching public funds. In other words, he was being milked for the benefit of one man's widow). The business with the Committee at Goldsmiths Hall dragged on until 1651, when Sir Henry sought leave to remain in London for a further time, and he appears to have been temporarily restrained, since he was seeking bail in October. He died in 1656.³⁰⁴

Captain Robert Ellis: Cited in the List, and in view of the East Riding

association of the regiment, almost certainly not of the Royalist Ellis family of Kiddall. This is Captain Robert Ellis of Rudstone near Bridlington, whose property at Gt. Stainton and West Hartburn in Co. Durham was sequestered in September 1644. Robert Ellis, Senior, of Towthorp and Rudstone, was killed in the defence of Scarborough in 1645, and his son, Robert II, petitioned to compound for his father's property. He stated that he had himself been a minor in 1644, and that his father had died in debt to the sum of £1060. A fine of £268 was levied, but had not been paid by 1652 when the property was inserted in the Treason Act.³⁰⁵

Having dismissed the Kiddall family, with its West Riding seat, it has to be said that Ellis of Rudstone may have been fifth of the ten sons of John Ellis of Kiddall, Recusant, who died in 1636. The family was heavily committed to the Royalist party. Robert's elder brother (?) John, born in 1583 or so, and heir to the Kiddall property, was killed during the wars, as were two of his sons, Henry and Charles.³⁰⁶

Captain [] Gee: Cited as a captain in this regiment in July and August 1642, and receiving money for the company which he commanded. He was third of the three sons, by the father's second marriage, of Sir William Gee of Bishop Burton who was Secretary to the Council of the North and who died in 1611. Thomas Gee of Killinggrave, Gentleman, petitioned in 1650 as having been in arms, stating that he had debts of £250 and no personal estate. A fine of £90 was subsequently reduced to £70. 10s. He had fought at Beverley in 1643, in the defence of York, and in the garrisons of Scarborough and of Helmsley.³⁰⁷

Captain [] Taylor: Cited in the regiment in July and August 1642, receiving pay for his company on August 8th.³⁰⁸

Ensign John Anderson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Ellis's company, the only officer to claim for this regiment. He has not been identified.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas HAGGERSTON'S Regiment of Foot.

The evidence for this regiment rests solely upon the List, in apparent contradiction of two other sources which imply that Haggerston commanded horse or dragoon units. Firth alluded to a commission dated to April 1643 for Sir Thomas to raise 500 "Harquebusiers", and it may have been this commission which led Haggerston's captor, in May following, to refer to his "raising a regiment of horse for the Popish army"³⁰⁹. It would seem that Haggerston had already raised some infantry, and was working on a regimental structure, when he received the commission for dragoons that he was unable to fulfil, being apprehended immediately afterwards. However, his captor also added that when conveying Haggerston to his ship lying off the Northumbrian coast, he was pursued by some cavalry from seven troops lying nearby. These do not seem to have been Haggerston's own, but probably belonged to another regiment which was given the alarm.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas Haggerston: Born in 1594, son and heir of William Haggerston of Haggerston Castle, Northumberland, who died in 1595 (or 1606?). Colonel Haggerston and his wife compounded as Recusants in 1632, and the family was single-mindedly Catholic through the century. Haggerston did not figure in public office because of this, although his annual income was an asset to the royal army in 1642/3 and probably led to the baronetcy conferred in the latter year and coinciding with his dragoon commission. In May, he was seized in his home territory by Parliamentarian coastal raiders. His castle was attacked at night by 100 men, and Haggerston, taken off guard, attempted to escape through a postern door "but being espied by the soldiers, they fired four muskets at him, and his man dead on the place, shot his man through the boot top, but killed neither of them". He and his son (q.v., below) were said to be newly come from the earl of Newcastle with commissions. Carried eventually to London, Haggerston was gaoled and never exchanged. In his attempts to compound in which his religion proved an insurmountable obstacle, he claimed in 1651 that an attempt was being made by Captain and Mrs. Shaftoe of Holy Island to seize his property. They had, he claimed, fraudulently handled the income from his estates which had been intended by the Parliament to finance the Holy Island garrison, and was able to prove his point under examination at Durham. He petitioned for financial assistance for witnesses to what he said to come to Durham, since they lived "threescore long northern miles away" at Haggerston and in its environs. Sir Thomas was living at the 1666 visitation.³¹⁰

Lt. Colonel Thomas Haggerston: Cited in the List, third son but heir of his father Colonel Haggerston, he was born in 1623/4 (not in 1627/8 as some pedigrees have it). Like his father, a Foreign Burgess of Preston in Lancashire, in 1642,

he was commissioned in 1643 and captured when his father was captured in May. The (future) son in law of Colonel Sir Francis Howard of Corby (q.v., Appendix 1) he was a very active Catholic politician, implicated in the 1679 plots, so it was said, and appointed by James II to be Governor of Berwick. He was all but ruined by a fire which destroyed his house in 1687, and died in 1710, to be succeeded by his grandson.³¹¹

Captain Ralph Haggerston: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but he cannot be traced in the family genealogy. Ralph Haggerston of Fallowfield was buried at St. John Lee near Hexham in 1679, and such a man witnessed the will of Henry Gray of Kelloe, Co. Durham, in 1636. The Haggerstons had links with Kelloe, the seat of the Catholic Forcers (see Clavering's Horse, Appendix 1).³¹²

Ensign Robert Beadnell: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Lt. Colonel Haggerston's company. Robert, styled in 1674 as a Recusant of Lemington, Northumberland, Gentleman, was the son of George Beadnell of the same and was born in 1603. His father was still living in 1654, and had been a convicted Recusant between 1604 and 1615. Robert died in 1683 without a male heir.³¹³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Henry Fenwick, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Ensign John Smith, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Haggerston's company.

Colonel Ralph HEBBURN'S Regiment of Foot.

Little is known of this regiment, save that it must have been commissioned in 1643 after Hebburn had left his former commander Edward Grey (q.v., Appendix 1). Hebburn was quite resolutely loyal, and so we must suppose that unless he had orders to the contrary, this regiment fought alongside the main army in the northern campaigns.

Colonel Ralph Hebburn: First of the four sons of Arthur Hebburn of Hebburn, Co. Durham who died in 1636/7. Ralph was born in 1616, and was commissioned in 1642 as major of Colonel Grey's Regiment of Dragoons (q.v., Appendix 3). When this regiment was ruined at some time in December of that year, Hebburn clearly returned north (for the dragoons had been with the Oxford army) and recruited afresh. His signature had appeared on the articles for the surrender of Winchester Castle. He seems to be remarkable in that he never sought to compound, although he entered a bond at Goldsmith's Hall on behalf of his former colonel in 1646/7. In arms in the 1648 rising, he disappears from view in the Interregnum, re-emerging in 1660/1 as a JP and as Captain of the Barbadoes Dragoons in 1672; becoming in 1678 Lt. Colonel in Rupert's Dragoons. According to one pedigree he was a Trainband Foot colonel in 1662/4. His exact date of death is not known. Styled Esquire.³¹⁴

Lt. Colonel [] Roddam: Cited in the List. Probably John Roddam of Little Houghton, Northumberland, second of the five sons, but eventually heir, of Edmund Roddam of the same who died in 1631. John was an infant in 1615 and died himself in 1658. Styled Esquire and a freeholder in 1638/9, his sequestered property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652 even though his fine had been paid. The reason for the re-sequestration is not clear, but would seem to have a link with the 1650/1 rising. He had certainly been in arms in 1648.³¹⁵

Captain Martin Errington: Cited in the List. Such a man, of this rank, was noted as implicated in the 1655 plots against Newcastle, and may be the Martin Errington of Hexham whose will was granted probate in 1687.³¹⁶

Captain Richard Forster: Claimed in the List from Newcastle. Like Errington already mentioned, Forster was listed as a plotter in 1655. Probably the same donating £1 in January 1643 to the assessment levied on the Company of Merchant Adventurers in the city. In March 1663 a Richard Forster discovered an Anabaptist plot in the town, when he was described as captain and postmaster.³¹⁷

Lieutenant George Dryden: Claimed in the List from Northumberland in Captain Richardson's company. Such a man of Morpeth signed the 1641/2 Protestation³¹⁸

Lieutenant William Shaftoe: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Roddam's company. The name is relatively commonplace in Durham at this period. Two such signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Washington and Wickham respectively and one such refused at Tanfield. A William Shaftoe of Barmeston was sequestered in 1644.³¹⁹

Ensign Robert Smith: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Richardson's company. Such a man of Foxton, a Catholic delinquent, had his farm sequestered and rented out in 1644.³²⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Richardson, cited in the List.

Lieutenant George Nicholson, claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Errington's company.

Ensign Thomas Nicholson, claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Forster's company.

Colonel John HILTON'S Regiment of Foot.

Raised at least before March 1643,³²¹ probably late in 1642 for there exists a letter written by Colonel Hilton to Isaac Basire, Rector of Egglecliffe overlooking the Tees valley, dating to February.³²² In this letter, Hilton told the Royalist clergyman that he had been ordered to take his regiment to Hartlepool, but he wished Basire to ensure that the drawbridge over the Tees at Yarm would be raised every night "which will conduce very much to the countreyes and your safety". Hilton was to leave scouts at specific points between there and Hartlepool, so that any enemy movements could be notified to him rapidly. His movement to Hartlepool may have had to do with the fortifications being dug there in April.³²³ Incidental clues to the regiment and its whereabouts occur in various composition proceedings. Christopher Hall of Hartburn, a Royalist supporter whose name has cropped up time and again in relation to providing men and money, sent a man called Henry Lawson into Hilton's Foot with a pike.³²⁴ Sergeant Robert Turpin and soldier William Robinson of Sedgewick, Co. Durham, were buried in York on June 27th and July 1st 1644 respectively, which shows that the regiment was in garrison and must, consequently, have fought its way across Durham in April and May (see Vol. 1).³²⁵ A clear reference to the regiment being on Marston Moor occurs in the papers of George Lilburn.³²⁶ Thereafter it most probably disappeared.

Colonel John Hilton: The sixth son, but ultimate heir, of Thomas Hilton of Hilton Castle, Co. Durham, the father dying c. 1606.

John succeeded his eccentric elder brother in 1641/2 to find the estate in a perilous financial condition. The brother had granted the estate away, by will, to the Lord Mayor and four Aldermen of London in return for payments to 38 parishes in Durham. The will also provided for a £50 annuity for John. He fought the will in the courts, hampered by the widows of his brothers, who stood to benefit financially as well, and the matter was not settled by 1650, when Sir Arthur Haslerigg was accused of aiding and abetting Hilton in trying to deprive the poor of the very generous benefits of the original will. John was a Trainband major on the eve of the war, and seems to have delayed compounding in order to try to settle the problem of his estates. (It might be argued that he saw his Royalism as a means to secure his personal ends and, with his later association with Haslerigg, sought to use the winning side for the same purpose. Who could blame him?). In 1647 he was given a pass to go to Hartlepool having promised to do no mischief on the way to any Parliamentarian supporters. Trying to come to terms with the local committee in 1649, his fine was fixed at £484.12s. which he had not paid by 1652 when his property was inserted in the Treason Act. This implies either that he had won his case, or that the property sequestered was purely personal. He died in 1656.³²⁷

Lt. Colonel Lyndly Wren: Cited in the List. He was of Binchester, Co. Durham, eldest of the six sons of Sir Charles Wren who died in 1618. Lyndly was born in 1600 and died himself in 1655. His cousin was a Parliamentary colonel. Deputy Prize Master he was plaintiff in a case in 1636 concerning the import of wine into Newcastle by persons not licensed to do so, who were unwilling to pay the prescribed "prizage". In the same year, he was also giving evidence in a case brought against John Blakiston (the future Regicide) concerning abuse of an Anglican cleric. He petitioned to compound in 1645, claiming that he had only taken up arms because his estate - which included Binchester, held of the Bishopric of Durham for £8 a year - had been surrounded by Royalist activists. He also said that he had yielded in 1643, which seems improbable, and had thereafter sent horses and men to the Parliament, which seems less so. A fine of £400 was cut when debts amounting to £1500 were proved, and a fine of £300 fixed. A signatory of the 1641/2 Protestation, as from Auckland St. Andrew.³²⁸

Major Robert Eden: Cited in the List, second of the two sons of Robert Eden of Windelstone, and brother of Colonel John Eden (q.v., Appendix 1). He was born c. 1616 or thereabouts, and was styled as of Brancepeth, Gentleman. His father, a Trainband colonel before the war, was sequestered as a Royalist sympathiser.³²⁹

Captain Robert Follensby: Claimed in the List from Durham, second of the six sons of Thomas Follensby of Hamsterley, Gentleman, and mentioned in his father's will in 1630 when he received £3.6.8d. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Hamsterley, but such a man (perhaps the same?) signed at Brancepeth, which makes a link with Major Eden.³³⁰ (I see nothing against one man signing the Protestation twice, if he were perambulating and happened to find himself in a parish where the papers were being signed).

Captain John Hilton: Cited in the List, first of the three sons of his colonel, born in 1619 and living in 1666. Styled as of Hilton, Gentleman, he was in Pontefract garrison and in arms at Appleby in 1648.³³¹

Captain John Richardson: Claimed in the List from Durham, of Harraton and Barmeston. His property was sequestered there in 1644, and at Sunderland where he owned a windmill. Fined £100.³³²

Lieutenant John Cuthbert: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Carre's company. He appears in Wentworth's division in Pontefract garrison.³³³

Ensign Cuthbert Garret: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Follensby's

company. Two such, father and son (?), signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Monk Wearmouth.³³⁴

Ensign Francis Gascoigne: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Carre's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Birtley, and he is possibly fourth of the four sons of Sir John Gascoigne of Lasincroft who died in 1637.³³⁵

Ensign James Hackworth: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Forster's company. Two such, father and son (?), signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Houghton le Spring.³³⁶

Ensign Roger Harper: Claimed in the List from Durham. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Washington.³³⁷

Ensign William Leaver: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Wren's company. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Auckland St. Andrew.³³⁸

Ensign John Stobart: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Hilton's company. Such of St. Oswald signed the 1641/2 Protestation, and a John Stobart of the Westwood near Hexham had probate granted his will in 1681.³³⁹

Ensign Thomas Todd: Claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Wren's company. Todd is an extremely common name in Durham at this period. Lancelot Todd of Bishopton was a Recusant in 1630, and a Thomas Todd, conceivably his son, a Papist as well, was released from Durham gaol by a sympathetic Parliamentary JP and sequestrator, Thomas Shadforth.³⁴⁰

Quartermaster Arthur Crispe: Claimed in the List from Durham, almost certainly, in view of Hilton's proximity to Sunderland, he who signed the 1641/2 Protestation there.³⁴¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Robert Carre, cited in the List.

Captain Martin Forster, cited in the List.

Lieutenant John G_rigson, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Eden's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Pearson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Hilton's company.

Ensign Thomas Chipchase, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Eden's company.

Colonel (Sir) William HUDDLESTONE'S Regiment of Foot.

One of the few regiments, raised initially in Cumbria, which took an active and an honourable part in the fighting in the north from 1642 to the fall of York. This was no doubt partly due to the family interest of the Huddlestons (see also, Huddleston's Horse, Appendix 1). Operating initially in the north west (see Lyndale Close, Vol. 1) by October 17th 1643 the regiment was near to Halifax,³⁴² and in March was fighting with the earl of Newcastle against the Scots, in which campaigns it was noticed by Sir Philip Monckton playing a significant role at Bowden Hill (see Vol. 1). The regiment was probably on Marston Moor, and dispersed with the fall of York.

Colonel (Sir) William Huddleston: Son and heir of Ferdinando of Millom Castle, Cumberland, and styled of the same. When he was appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642 he was styled Esquire, and the date of his knighthood is obscure. He marched to York with some foot companies in 1643, apparently sent by Colonel Musgrave, and doubtless including his own regiment. He is credited by certain writers with retrieving the royal standard at Edgehill which seems to fly in the face of tradition, and there is no evidence he was present. Captured in the fight at Lyndale Close in October 1643, he was on his way, a prisoner, to London soon afterwards and was not with his regiment in 1644. Exchanged in October of this year for Dr. Bastwick, he returned to the north-west where he did not cease his activities. He contributed to the successful manoeuvres by which the wreck of the Northern Horse evaded actions in Cumbria in October 1645 after the Sherburn in Elmet disaster (see Vol. 1); and was in exile on the Isle of Man in the same year. In arms in 1648, he laid siege to Cocker mouth Castle and was later accused of plundering the estates of two of the inhabitants of Cocker mouth to the sum of £1,965. Captured at Appleby, he was at first given six months to go overseas, but the provision lapsed and he compounded on a fine of £2,212. Taxed for £55 in the 1656 decimation levy, in 1660 he was a prisoner in the Fleet, petitioning for release and for redress against a verdict obtained against him by one John Dale in respect of the estates left by William's father, Ferdinando. His petition survives, and seems to have been upheld. He was a JP in 1661, but the date of his death is not clear.³⁴³

Lt. Colonel Henry Clayton: Cited in the List as a field commander and not noted under Huddleston. Although cited as a colonel in the lists of officers taken at Sherburn in Elmet in 1645, the link with this regiment is tentatively established through Captain Thomas Bedborough or Bedborrow. Such an officer (unidentified at present) claimed under Huddleston's Horse (q.v.), whereas he was also cited under Clayton in the List. The link is, admittedly, extremely conjectural, but cases of officers serving both as horse and as foot commanders are not

unusual. As for Clayton himself, he may have been the fifth of the six sons of William Clayton of Okenshaws, Esquire, who died in 1627; or he may be the Henry Clayton of Fullwood, Lancashire, dead before 1660.³⁴⁴

((Major) Ralph Huddleston): Conjectured. Ralph, fifth of the eight sons of Ferdinando Huddleston, and brother of our colonel, was killed, in the defence of York, in 1644 and buried in York Minster on June 7th.³⁴⁵

Major Edward Huddleston: Cited in the List but probably a rank prior to service in Grey's Foot (q.v.). Edward may have succeeded Ralph in this rank. He was sixth of the sons of Ferdinando Huddleston, and is possibly the Edward Huddleston of Thwaites who abjured his Catholicism to compound. He had been dismissed from the army as a Catholic in 1640. In 1660 he petitioned for the office of Bow Bearer and Keeper of Teesdale Forest, stating that he had served in Ireland, and had lost an arm in the King's service.³⁴⁶

Captain Christopher Hanby: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. At Richmond Quarter Sessions, January 1668, Christopher Hanby Gentleman, expelled forcibly from a colliery claimed by Lord Wharton, surrendered his interests to Wharton. This was no doubt for money, for in July 1676 Hanby was awarded £10 as a gratuity at the Sessions, even though he was presented for a misdemeanour. He had gone above the JPs with a petition to the Lord Treasurer, hoping to obtain an improvement in his financial condition. The JPs, whilst admonishing him, in view of his indigence and /for his good service done in his late Majesty's wars, and also for his great losses and sufferings he then sustained" gave him the £10 and referred his case to the next Sessions.³⁴⁷

Captain Ingoldsby Huddleston: Cited in the List, he sought to compound in 1647 for having been in arms. Styled of Whitbeck, Cumberland. No order was made.³⁴⁸

Captain Joseph Huddleston: Cited in the List. Joseph, of Hutton John, Esquire, compounded as a Recusant in 1632.³⁴⁹

Captain Robert Huddleston: Conjectural. This rank according to the pedigrees, being seventh of the sons of Ferdinando of Millom.³⁵⁰

Captain Anthony Hunter: Claimed in the List from Cumberland. Such a man of Keswick deposed in July 1664 that a Durham man, drinking at his house, said that "he valued none of the King's officers". The remark probably upset Hunter if he is our captain.³⁵¹

Captain Roger Irton: Claimed in the List from Cumberland. Two such can be traced, although neither with a forename. Mr. Irton

Irton and another of Threlkeld had given £2 each to Carlisle defences.³⁵²

Captain John Lewthwaite: Rank and regiment according to family tradition, which also gives him as killed at Edgehill! Eldest of the two sons of Thomas Lewthwaite of Broad Gate, Cumberland, who died in 1667.³⁵³

Captain William Punchion: Cited in the List by Durham claimants. Such a man of Walrush, Chester Ward, signed the 1641/2 Protestation, and one of Pelton refused to do so. He may be William Punchion of Herrington, living c. 1615.³⁵⁴

Lieutenant William Latus: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Ingoldsby Huddleston's company. Mr. Latus of Millom gave £2 to Carlisle defences, perhaps the father of our man. William Latus of Catterall was claiming on the estate of the Recusant Anne Molineux during the Interregnum. Anthony Latus of Beck, Cumberland, delinquent in arms, petitioned to compound in 1651.³⁵⁵

Lieutenant Edward Metcalfe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under Clayton, perhaps third of the five sons of Francis Metcalfe of Bellerby.³⁵⁶

Lieutenant Roger Rames: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain 'John' Punchion's company. Of the family of Rames of Shortflatt, but the extant pedigrees terminate in 1605.³⁵⁷

Ensign Ambrose Bincks: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain William Punchion's company. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Barnard Castle.³⁵⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Bedborough, cited in the List (see Huddleston's Horse).

Captain John Punchion, cited in the List (an error for William?).

Captain Richard Studdurt, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Hugh Ayscough, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant John Bow, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Studdurt's company.

Ensign Christopher Bland, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Huddleston's company.

Ensign Hillary Bradley, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Joseph Huddleston's company.

Ensign Jeffrey Fox, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Ensign John Steele, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bedborough's company.

Quartermaster William Leech, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir Richard HUTTON'S Regiment of Foot.

The regiment was raised in Yorkshire prior to September 30th 1643, at which date, when 800 strong, it was put in as garrison at Knaresborough.³⁵⁹ According to Slingsby, this was a Trainband regiment at that time, but whether it underwent any changes during the ensuing years is hard to say. Like most, it no doubt did. The regiment evacuated Knaresborough when the Royalists lost the fight for Bradford on October 24th 1642 (see Vol. 1). In March 1644 it was apparently in service in Co. Durham, for Lambert alluded to a rumour which he had heard that "the reports goes by divers...that Sir Richard Hutton's Regiment is cut off".³⁶⁰ As has been explained (see Vol. 1), this is probably an error for Huddleston's Foot. In the defence of York, the regiment may well have finished its career on Marston Moor.

Colonel Sir Richard Hutton: Of Goldsborough near Knaresborough, of which town he was MP in 1624. The son of Sir Richard Hutton, Justice of Common Pleas, Colonel Hutton was active in county administration. Steward of Knaresborough to Charles I, a post for which his son petitioned in 1660, he was High Sheriff at the outbreak of war and a Commissioner of Array. Something of a puritan, he had been knighted in 1625, but he does not seem to have leaned towards Parliament; his defeat in the 1640 elections, however, prevents us from knowing how he might have voted. He was father-in-law of Colonel Anthony Byerley (q.v.). Governor of Knaresborough Castle in late 1642, he signed the propositions put to the earl of Newcastle to bring the latter into Yorkshire. He seems to have gone with Glemham to Newcastle late in 1643, since he was at Alnwick in January following. He fought with the army on the retreat from Durham in the spring, and was a commander in the York garrison and on Marston Moor. A divisional commander in Pontefract in 1644/5, he was killed in action at Sherburn in Elmet in October of the latter year. He left his estates entailed on his death. One has the impression of a stern, unyielding man. In 1643 he was ordered to send out warrants for the arrest of Lord Fairfax and other Parliamentarians, and had them proclaimed traitors: "A thing so much resented by the House of Commons, that some would presently have him sent for, others that order should be given to the Lord Fairfax to seize his person and estate; and some that an impeachment of high treason be drawn against him". When York fell, as he was riding north-west with the garrison, a Lieutenant Whalley, quartered at Goldsborough, attempted to persuade Hutton to relinquish his arms and to return home. Sir Richard, Slingsby noted, would have nothing to do with him.³⁶¹

Major (Sir) Richard Tancred: Cited in the List, apparently knighted in York in May 1642. The son of Charles Tancred of Whixley, Yorkshire, he was born in 1608 and succeeded his father in 1644. A Catholic, according to his composition he must

have abjured, for he was fined £346 as well as providing £40 yearly for a minister at Whixley church, and the fine was paid by 1647. He had been in York at its fall, and had taken a self-conduct from Lord Fairfax to return to his home, but had chosen to go into Skipton garrison. A Commissioner for regulating corporations in 1664, he was a colonel in the Trainband in 1666 and died two years later.³⁶²

Captain Thomas Dearelove: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, of Knaresborough, his sequestration records show that he was £700 in debt and had no personal estate of his own. A fine of £487 was arrived at, reduced to two moieties of £195 and £130. He paid the first, but was re-sequestered for failing to pay the second in 1652.³⁶³

Captain Peter Massie: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, styled as of Leeds, Gentleman, with an estate of less than £200. He was probably in Pontefract garrison in 1644 as a volunteer, and acted as a commissioner for the garrison in the exchange of prisoners. He surrendered at Newark. Peter Massie of York, Gentleman, was buried in Monk-gate before April 1680 when his will was granted probate.³⁶⁴

Captain John Skeldain: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. Captain Skeldon was captured at Selby in April 1644 (see Vol. 1), but this link would question the whereabouts of Hutton's regiment at that time (see above, regimental notation).³⁶⁵

Ensign Robert Cowling: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Skeldain's company and, interestingly, apparently taken at Selby too. He was of Hemblethorp (properly, Hambleton) near Selby and was fined £40 at his composition.³⁶⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Ralph Bannister, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Captain [] Harrison, cited in the List.

Ensign Thomas Dickenson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Harrison's company.

Ensign Edward Sheldon, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Tancred's company.

Ensign Nicholas Staining, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bannister's company.

Quartermaster William Hare, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Quartermaster Thomas Robinson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel James KING'S (Lord Eythin) Regiment of Foot.

Raised probably at the same time as King's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1) it does not appear as a distinguishable force in the history of the Royalist campaigns, but was evidently a prestigious field regiment. It may have seen its first action at Yarm Bridge in February 1643 (see Vol. 1), and evidently dispersed when King went into exile after Marston Moor.

Colonel James King: Dealt with as colonel of Horse, see Appendix 1.

Major James Gordon: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but see the same man (?), claiming again, as lt. colonel in Newcastle's Dragoons (Appendix 3).

Captain Thomas Cliberone: Cited in the List. Despite the unusual name, there are perhaps two possible identifications.

Thomas Clyburne of London, merchant, who died in 1686, may be the Thomas Cliborne of Newcastle, merchant, assessed for £2 in the £500 contributed by the Merchant Adventurers to the royal army in 1643. This Cliberone was mentioned in the will of Henry Maddison in 1634 who was in stock with him for £300. Alternatively, Thomas Cliberone of Hayclose in Cumberland, brother in law of the Catholic Royalist John Thwates of Long Marston near York, seems to have a link with the King's cause. Thirdly, less likely, we have Thomas Clibborne of Stepney, Middlesex, widower, whose will was administered in 1653/4.³⁶⁷

Captain William Freisal: Claimed in the List from Durham. William Frizell of Durham, Gentleman, a Catholic delinquent, was an undischarged delinquent in 1651 but eventually settled on a fine of £40. Born c. 1606, he was a leaseholder at Cornforth in 1632/3, gave evidence in a case of blasphemy in 1635, and signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Durham St. Margaret's. A King's Messenger in 1637, he may have been a relation of Francis Frissell of Marske, yeoman, a juror at Helmsley Quarter Sessions in January 1633. Wenham, in his study of the siege of York, came upon this officer in the Constables' account book for Holy Trinity, Goodramgate, in which Captain Fressell is described as "Commander and overseare of the mill" responsible for grinding corn for a regiment that can only be King's. Wenham suggested Fressell was Colonel John Frescheville, an officer who was not, anyway, in the garrison of York at any time. Freisal seems to be the man.³⁶⁸

Captain Thomas Redman: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. A Thomas Readman of Hutton le Hole died c. 1663. Such a man of Sinington, yeoman, had his will granted probate in 1681.³⁶⁹

Lieutenant Francis Anderson: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Cliberone's company (a claim which strengthens the view that the captain under whom he served

was a Newcastle merchant, see above). This may be Francis, eldest of the four sons of Henry Anderson of Bradley, born in 1615 and a cousin of Colonel Sir Francis Anderson (q.v., Appendix 1). Such a man was listed in 1642 as a Merchant Adventurer in connection with his apprentice's service under Monck, and was listed in the Hearth Tax returns of 1665 as of Stank Tower Ward.³⁷⁰

Lieutenant Charles Phillips: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. Such a man refused the 1641/2 Protestation as of Darlington. In 1661 Lieutenant Charles Philips petitioned that he had served under Charles I and had "spent or pawned all he had" in that service, his petition certified by the Marquess of Newcastle and Sir William Throckmorton.³⁷¹

Ensign William Davison: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Freisal's company. Such a man was taken at Wakefield in May 1643.³⁷²

Quartermaster Thomas Hinchcliffe: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, the probate records provide two such, of Hanwell (died c. 1676) and of Woolley (died c. 1663).³⁷³

Quartermaster John Machell: Claimed in the List from Westmorland. Second of the five sons of Hugh Machell of Crackenthorpe. The eldest son, Henry, was apparently killed in arms for the King in 1646 and had served in Ireland, as John was to do in 1664. However, the 1641/2 Protestation returns show three John Machells, one signing in Appleby St. Lawrence, and two in Appleby St. Michael.³⁷⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain William Brown, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain [] King, cited in the List.

Captain [] Peters, cited in the List.

Captain William Smith, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant George Hoginson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain King's company.

Lieutenant Robert Wilson, claimed in the List from Nottinghamshire, Captain Peter's company.

Colonel Richard KIRKBRIDE'S Regiment of Foot.

Young suggested that this regiment may have fought on Marston Moor³⁷⁵ but there is very little evidence to support this or, indeed, any other active service. Scantily documented, markedly so where the officers in the List are concerned, we must nevertheless accept the commission.

Colonel Richard Kirkbride: Of Ellerton, Cumberland, son and heir of Bernard Kirkbride of the same who died in 1622, Richard himself dying in 1659. Styled Esquire. He was in Carlisle in September 1644, noted by rank, and gave £2 towards the defences. Still in the city on October 15th, he claimed that he had yielded in that month, whereas a document of May 13th 1645 indicates that he was in the city still. He petitioned to compound in 1647 and was fined £66 but was in arms again in 1648. In 1656 he was taxed at £10 in the decimation levy.³⁷⁶

Lt. Colonel George Salkeld: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but he defies identification. Such an officer, wanting a forename in the sources, was taken at Rowton Heath in September 1645, and was apparently at Coquet Water in 1648 (in this context see, however, Captain John Salkeld, Edward Grey's Horse, Appendix 1). A George Salkeld was presented as a Recusant at Richmond in 1674.³⁷⁷

Major [] Milford: Cited in the List, this officer defies identification.

Captain William Huddlestone: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, such a man was taken at Appleby in 1648.³⁷⁸

Captain Henry White: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, such a man was captured at Rowton Heath in 1645. The link with Lt. Colonel Salkeld is, in all respects, strong.³⁷⁹

Ensign Thomas Edwards: Claimed in the List from Wiltshire. Best documented of the officers. Young gives a certificate signed by Sir Francis Mackworth and Colonel Sir William Mason (q.v., Appendix 1), from the Wiltshire Record Office. Edwards stated that he had served in Ireland under Ormond, and then in Kirkbride's regiment, losing the use of his left arm as a consequence of Marston Moor.³⁸⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Uriall, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Edward Brisby, claimed in the List (twice?) from Leicestershire and Cumberland, Major Milford's company (a printer's error?).

Lieutenant Edmund Ryly, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Lt. Colonel Salkeld's company.

Ensign Edward Humphrystone, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Uriall's company.

Ensign George Kenion, claimed in the List from Durham.

Colonel Sir William LAMBTON'S Regiment of Foot.

In terms of devotion to duty, this Durham regiment was the finest in the northern army. Thanks, however, to the vagaries of contemporary sources, the full nature of its loyalty was, until now, unnoticed. Yet there is no reason to doubt that, by a simple process of elimination, we must conclude that Lambton's Foot were the 'Whitecoats' slaughtered almost to a man in the famous last ditch fight on Marston Moor, in 1644. For long supposed to have been Newcastle's own Foot (q.v.), the 'Whitecoats', known also as 'Newcastle's Lambs' were the earl's only insofar as he commissioned the regiment. They took their nickname of 'Lambs' from their colonel's surname and from his shield of arms - Sable, a fesse between three lambs argent. The most cursory comparison of the earl's infantry officers with those known for this regiment indicates that something exceptional befell Lambton's Foot. A Parliamentarian officer who fought against the regiment on Marston Moor wrote: "he never in all the fights he was in, met with such resolute brave fellows"³⁸¹ The regiment was recruited in 1642, and George Lilburn, at his composition, protested that he had been apprehended and offered his release in return for a donation of £150 to this unit's funds. Lambton led his men at Piercebridge on December 1st 1642 (see Vol. 1) and showed marked determination when all was lost, at Wakefield in May 1643 (see Vol. 1). Engaged at Selby in April 1644, and probably in the defence of York, it was destroyed on Marston Moor.³⁸²

No lt. colonel or major have been identified for this regiment. In the circumstances, this supports my view of its fate.

Colonel Sir William Lambton: He was born in 1580, son and heir of Ralph Lambton of Lambton and was, like his father, a Catholic. A convicted Recusant in 1630, Sir William was listed as a papist by Rushworth in 1642. The date of his knighthood is not clear, but he may have purchased the honour at Charles I's coronation. He recruited 100 dragoons for the 1639 war, and in 1642 was appointed a Commissioner of Array in Durham and Northumberland. His income from Alum works was augmented during the war, by rents from the sequestered estates of Lord Howard of Escrick, a rebel peer. Sir William was killed at the head of his regiment on Marston Moor.³⁸³

Captain Robert Carre: Not in the List, but according to the pedigree, Robert Carre of Stackhouse, born in 1605, third of the three sons of James Carre of the same, died of wounds at Wakefield in May 1643, in this regiment.³⁸⁴

Captain Samuel Kennet: Family tradition gives the regiment, as likewise his fate. Second of the seven sons of William Kennet of Coxhow, Co. Durham, who died in 1663, and brother to

Major John Kennet (q.v., Tempest's Foot). A Catholic family, Samuel was probably the Lieutenant Kent taken prisoner at Wakefield in 1643. He was slain on Marston Moor.³⁸⁵

Captain Talbot Lisle: Claimed in the List from Durham, a printer's error has caused him to appear twice, the second time as Talbot Lesley. He was of Barmeston, Gentleman, his lands sequestered in 1644, a Catholic delinquent undischarged in 1651. He was the son of James Lisle of the same who had died in prison in 1616 as a Catholic, and Talbot was fined in 1636 for unlawfully baptising his children according to the Catholic rite. He was listed as a Catholic of Cockle Park, Gentleman, in 1655.³⁸⁶

Captain Thomas Nicholson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and probably the Lieutenant Nicholson taken at Wakefield in May 1643. Such a man of North Kilvington, in the North Riding catchment area for this regiment, died c. 1683.³⁸⁷

Captain John Pemberton: Cited in the List, the rank confirmed by his sequestration records. He was the third son of James Pemberton of Aislaby and Hilton who died in 1642/3. He is mentioned in his father's will, which he also witnessed, and he signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Eggescliff. Captured at Wakefield in May 1643, he was exchanged, only to die in arms on Adwalton Moor on June 30th and was buried in Leeds.³⁸⁸

Captain [] Williamson: Cited in the List. Thomas Williamson, styled "Liefetennant of a company of foote under the command of Coll. Sir Wm. La." made his will on May 23rd 1643, and was buried in York Minster on May 30th, probably mortally wounded at Wakefield.³⁸⁹

Lieutenant Edward Foster: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bensons company. Edward Foster, yeoman, of East Laiton in Gilling West, was presented as a Recusant in May 1641.³⁹⁰

Lieutenant John Watson: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Pemberton's company. Perhaps Ensign Watson taken at Wakefield in 1643 (but see here, Wentworth's Foot). John Watson of Easingwold was presented at Malton Quarter Sessions in 1652 "to be discharged from keeping an alehouse", admitting he was a Royalist officer.³⁹¹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Benson, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Richard Richardson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Benson's company.

Ensign Robert Lambton, claimed in the List from Durham.

Ensign Thomas Williamson, claimed in the List from Durham.

(Colonel) John LAMPLUGH'S (Regiment of) Foot.

Lamplugh's activities between 1642 and 1646 are shrouded in uncertainty (see Lamplugh's Horse, above, Appendix 1). Young contended that this force did exist in a regimental structure and may have fought as such on Marston Moor, but other evidences are not forthcoming.

(Colonel) John Lamplugh: That Lamplugh was a very active Royalist officer between 1642 and 1646, and again in 1648, is clear, but the precise nature of his role and rank is not clear. According to the pedigrees, which play an important part in arriving at his rank, he was born in 1619, eldest of the six sons of John Lamplugh of Lamplugh who died in 1636. He matriculated at Queen's College in the same year and entered Gray's Inn in 1642, but cannot have resided there for very long. It was, anyway, an unusual step to take for a man with responsibilities for the Lamplugh property. The family had a Recusant background, and John's uncle, Sir Thomas, compounded in 1632, but neither John nor his father appear to have been Catholics. According to the pedigrees, he commanded the "yellow colours" on Marston Moor, which cannot be taken as implying a single regiment, let alone his own. Nor can it be seen as evidence that he was a colonel either on the Moor, or prior to it, or afterwards. The only clear allusion to his colonelcy comes in 1648, when he was a cavalry commander. As will be seen from the officers claiming under him in the List, even had he possessed an infantry regiment it was nowhere near full strength, and no lt. colonel or major can be ascribed to it. The inference is that Lamplugh was a lt. colonel in some other regiment, but that cannot be substantiated at present. Whilst keeping these problems in mind, Lamplugh must nonetheless cautiously be put forward as a colonel, of infantry, at some time at least between 1642 and the end of the first war. He may be a case of promotion of which we know nothing. The freedom employed by pamphleteers in dropping the word 'lieutenant' from lt. colonel calls in question, but not decisively, the allusion to him as a colonel captured on Marston Moor. When he petitioned to compound in November 1645 he stated that he had "served compulsorily" under Newcastle, and that he had marched with Goring to York (which must mean, in Rupert's relief). In 1646 two men brought actions against him and Sir Christopher Lowther (q.v.), which accused them of procuring their imprisonment illegally and compelling them to pay £100 each for their freedom. After the 1648 rising, Lamplugh and a Mr. Skelton were accused of procuring the imprisonment of Charles Hudson of Bowtherbeck in Cumberland because Hudson's son, a captain in the Parliamentarian army, had given evidences against them to the local committee, concerning their malignancy. A fine of £380 had already been levied, but had apparently not been paid. In April 1651 he was in London seeking permission to remain a time longer, which the Council of State made dependent upon proof that he was active

in pursuit of his composition. A licence to remain for 28 days in the city was granted to enable him to complete his business. At the restoration he petitioned to be Receiver of Rents and Revenues in the North having been "ruined by his loyalty". He had been intended for the Order of the Royal Oak when his annual income was reckoned at £1000 a year. Appointed a JP in 1661, in the following year he was assiduously hunting Quakers.³⁹²

Captain Thomas Busfield: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, second of the three sons of William Busfield of Leeds, merchant, born in 1618 and still living in 1694 at Bordley in Craven.³⁹³

Ensign Christopher Wright: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Busfield's company. The link is tenuous, but in 1651 one Christopher Wright came into a house at Whitby in Yorkshire (a link with Busfield perhaps?) "and sate down att the table and called for drinke; and did declare that hee was a cavaleire, and that hee was for King Charles, and that hee would fight hartily for him soe long as hee did live, though hee were hanged att the doore cheeke for itt."³⁹⁴

The following officer has not been identified.

Captain William Dickenson, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir Marmaduke LANGDALE'S Regiment of Foot.

That this regiment existed at least in early 1643, we have Slingsby's word for: "[Langdale] rais'd his regiment of foot by y^e Commission of Array in y^e East riding, & had y^m immediately arm'd out of y^e ships, & in readiness to march wth y^e army to York" with the Queen.³⁹⁵ Beyond this we know next to nothing, and from the dearth of officers in the List when compared to Langdale's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1) or to other prominent infantry formations, I have supposed that at some date Langdale passed this regiment over to another colonel. In such circumstances, 'questionable' colonels, men like John Lamplugh (q.v.) suggest themselves, but in this case, no obvious successor is to hand.³⁹⁶

Colonel Sir Marmaduke Langdale: Dealt with as colonel of Horse (see Appendix 1).

Captain [] Monckton: Cited in the List, and possibly an early allusion to (Colonel) Sir Philip Monckton (q.v., Saville's Horse, Metham's Foot). There are, however, various stronger alternatives. John Monckton of Northcliffe, second of the four sons of John Monckton of Garton and Burland who died in 1625, compounded in 1648 as a delinquent in arms on a fine of £54.3.4d. According to the pedigrees, John was a major, and may have risen to that rank in this regiment, although he does not appear as such in the List. He died c. 1653. A cousin of Sir Philip Monckton, according to Clay he became, in December 1643, governor in Tickhill Castle. Less likely, perhaps, is Edmund Monckton of Howden, in arms in both wars and fined £8.6.8d. He was an officer in Pontefract garrison in 1648.³⁹⁷

Captain [] Skelton: Cited in the List, probably not the same as the Captain Skeldain of Richard Hutton's Foot (q.v.). William Skelton, born in 1608 the eldest son of Seth Skelton of Osmondthorpe, was, according to the pedigrees, a captain in the royal army. The father died c. 1648, and William died unmarried at an unspecified date. Interestingly, a William Skelton of Penrith, Gentleman, was charged in 1668 with the murder of Lancelot Skelton to whom he owed money.³⁹⁸

Captain Robert Squire: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Probably the Ensign taken at Wakefield in 1643 (though we must acknowledge that this might be William Squire of Foulbey in arms in the first war). Robert Squire of Great Harwood was a Catholic Recusant, compounding as such in 1632 with some property in the county of Lancashire.³⁹⁹

Lieutenant Richard Wright: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, perhaps fourth of the six sons of the Reverend Francis Wright of Bolton in Swaledale.⁴⁰⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Rogers, cited in the List.

Lieutenant James Banks, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Monckton's company.

Ensign Henry Thornborrow, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire, Captain Rogers's company.

Colonel Sir Christopher LOWTHER'S Foot.

Apart from his commission, the evidence for the regiment is scant. In November 1643 he was able to put 60 men into Carlisle garrison for a tour of duty that was probably a regular procedure, but beyond that we cannot go. Sir Christopher was the second of the sons of Sir John Lowther who died in 1635, and a younger brother of Colonel Sir John Lowther of Workington (q.v.). Styled of Whitehaven, a baronet in 1642, he was appointed to the Commission of Array and given a colonelcy. He contributed financially to the Carlisle garrison, but died in 1644 or 1645. His widow, who petitioned to compound, married (Colonel) John Lamplugh (q.v.).⁴⁰¹

Colonel Sir John LOWTHER'S Foot.

Very much the same remarks apply to this force as to that of his brother, Sir Christopher Lowther (q.v.), except for a specific allusion by Sir John in a letter in the Musgrave Mss., to the Brougham area where "yor Petitioners Regiment is raysed". Lowther was complaining about Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave (see Vol. 1 and Appendix 1), which was a perennial pastime of the majority of Royalist commanders in Cumberland and Westmorland. Lowther's regiment must not have reached anything like half strength, let alone full strength, despite his allusion to his regiment's recruiting area. He was born in 1605 and succeeded his father at Workington in 1635. Knight of the Shire in 1628, he was created a baronet of Nova Scotia in 1641. A Commissioner of Array, in May 1643 he pointedly refused to assist in finding money for the Royal cause, and at his composition denied that he had ever been in arms at all despite his commission. He had taken the Covenant as early as October 1644, having shortly before given £2, a miserable sum in his case, to the Carlisle defences, and was being mooted as a JP by the Parliamentarians in the same year. His delinquency was cleared in 1647 on a fine of £1500. One of the most 'reluctant' Royalists in the north, he died in 1675.⁴⁰²

Colonel Sir John MALLORY'S Foot (Skipton Garrison).

The point has been made that garrison forces tended to blur the normal distinctions between horse, foot and dragoons. For Mallory's infantry we have various evidences. On May 7th 1642 Sir John was ordered to raise 800 of the Trainband, 200 in the Wapentake of Claro and 600 in that of Stainecliffe and Ewecrosse. These forces were ordered, on the following day, by Sir Thomas Glemham, to go to Knaresborough provided that the earl of Cumberland was agreeable, which suggests that Mallory was even then connected with Skipton and its owner: unless Glemham was purely clearing his actions with his nominal superior. Whether these 800 men were ever intended to be a part of this garrison is, however, doubtful, though some may have become so. On January 29th 1644 the Skipton Foot were 128 strong, but the named officers - Hardcastle, Dawson and Lister - appear in Mallory's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1). The only officer claiming in the List for the Foot is Captain Thomas Stavely, who cannot be clearly identified. Thomas Stavely of Seaton Rose, yeoman, died before May 1673 when his will was granted probate. In terms of recruitment, Thomas Staveley of Thormanby and Ripon, Gentleman, would seem more likely, except that his will was dated to May 1660 and though it is not evident when he died, it may have been before claims entered in the List could be made. Colonel Mallory is dealt with as a colonel of horse.⁴⁰³

Colonel Charles Cavendish Viscount MANSFIELD'S Foot.

Very much the same remarks apply to Mansfield's Foot as to his Horse (q.v. Appendix 1). That is to say, in view of Mansfield's youth and the strong improbability of his actually commanding in the field, real command must have lain with the lt. colonel or major. Here again, we do not know either of these officers, and the picture given by the List is extremely inadequate, perhaps reflecting the lack of a truly regimental structure. In cases such as this (see also Langdale's Foot), the temptation is to look for a colonel whose rank and actual service are in doubt, in hopes of ascribing him to a regiment lacking a recognisable field officer. In the case of Mansfield's Foot, the actual control may have lain with, for example, Colonel Godfrey Floyd (q.v.,) or perhaps with John Lamplugh (q.v.). Such suggestions are, of course, merely possible guides in the event of subsequent evidential development and have no present bearing on the analysis.

Captain Thomas Crow: Cited in the List, the similarity between this man and Captain Crow of Floyd's Foot is pronounced. Such a man of St. Helen Auckland, and another of Lamesley, signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Co. Durham.⁴⁰⁴

Captain George Greaves: Claimed in the List from Derbyshire, probably second of the eight sons of John Greaves of Greaves in that county, a branch of the Greaves of Irlam, Lancashire, living c. 1634.⁴⁰⁵

Captain William Theobalds: Claimed in the List from Durham. Such a man, Officer of the Excise, Surveyor, Messenger and Guage, took the oaths of supremacy and allegiance at Thirsk Quarter Sessions in October 1668.⁴⁰⁶

Lieutenant John Withes: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Crow's company. Possibly a mistake for, or a connection of, Francis Withes of Skewsby, Gentleman, fined £18 for first war activities and discharged in 1651.⁴⁰⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Hall, claimed in the List from Shropshire.

Ensign John Holme, claimed in the List from Derbyshire, Captain Greaves's company.

Colonel Sir John MARLEY'S Regiment of Foot (Newcastle Garrison).

The history of this regiment is bound up with that of Newcastle as a Royalist garrison town from 1642 to its fall in October 1644. The incidents of this latter year have been dealt with extensively (see Vol. 1). There seems to be no point in repetition. The regiment is not cited as a unit distinct from other forces which combined to hold the city, which included volunteer bodies and the remnants of other regiments. Such incidental references to the regiment as there are, will be found below, in the study of the career of its colonel.

Colonel Sir John Marley: "Hated and abhorred of all" was the judgement of the Parliamentarians in considering the military career of Marley. The reason for their intense and, frankly, irrational bitterness toward him, have been fully examined (see Vol. 1). He was born in 1590, the son and heir of John Marley a Newcastle merchant, and became, in 1637, Sheriff of Newcastle and Governor of the Hostmen, being a large colliery owner. Mayor in the same year, and from 1641 to 1644, he headed what must properly be called, at least from 1639, the Royalist majority within the town council. Howell has shown him to have been an enemy of the Puritan-Presbyterian faction within the town, passing intelligence to Secretary Windbank, and was knighted by the King on the eve of the Bishops' War. He fled the town in 1640 when it fell to the Scots, but in 1642 was back as Mayor in a strongly Royalist council chamber, and as a deputy lieutenant with responsibility for the training of the Trainband forces in the city. In other words, at the critical moment for the King in the summer of 1642, no northern town of such importance was so solidly held by the Royalists. The port facilities and the coal supplies thrust Marley into prominence whether he willed it or no. In November, according to Marley, he summoned all from 20 to 60 from the town and suburbs and raised 1500 men, as well as 800 obliged to do duty under the Trainband system. If this is true, as it probably is, it indicates remarkably well just how powerful Marley and his fellows were. As Deputy Governor of the Merchant Adventurers in 1643, he instigated a substantial loan to which he gave £3, but it does seem that he was financially committed to the pay of the soldiers. The critical months of February to October 1644 saw him at his most defiant and resolute, which occasioned some of the hatred of him which manifested itself particularly in Scottish and London circles. Deputy Governor of the town briefly in the presence of Colonel Sir Thomas Glemham, he signed the refusal to yield in February, and became supreme by the end of the month, when Glemham departed for York with the main army. At the storm and capture of the town, a petition was presented to the Speaker of the Commons calling for Marley's detention until the measure of his wickedness had been taken by the Parliament. Sir John, however, escaped from custody. Barred from pardon,

disenfranchised in his native town and stripped of all his offices, his collieries seized and let out, he made his way to Scotland, and appeared in October 1648 at Rotterdam after the failure of the rising of that year. His property was in the third Treason Act, but his experiences in exile were far from agreeable. Excluded from most of the plots contrived there, and regarded by Hyde with suspicion - "I am sure I shall not desyre...you manage any designe with him" - he eventually returned home. His son, Robert, had been apprehended off the Northumbrian coast in 1655 suspected of involvement in conspiracies, but to no purpose. Sir John himself returned to England in 1658, where it was said that he passed on information to Thurloe, but as in many such cases, if this was true, it was probably spurious and used by him as a means to seek favour. He compounded, but in 1659 was in gaol and petitioning for bail. In 1660 he came back into eminence, becoming Mayor of Newcastle again in 1664, and MP for the town from 1661 to his death in 1673.⁴⁰⁸

Lt. Colonel Thomas Davison: This is conjectured, based upon an interpretation of the evidence. In the sequestration and composition proceedings, he is referred to by rank, and in the List appears as a lt. colonel of Foot cited by a claimant who gave no regimental designation. First of the four sons of Sir Alexander Davison (who was killed defending the city as a volunteer) and from a family thoroughly Royalist, he was born in 1608 and was styled of Blakeston. He admitted his rank, and stated that he had held it from April 1643 to October 1644, which clearly coincides with the fall of the town. He compounded in London in 1645, taking the oath and covenant in the Gray's Inn Chapel, and in the same year was Warden of the Merchant Adventurers. His fine of £1116 was relatively steep. Knighted in 1660 at the return of Charles II, he was High Sheriff of Durham in that year, was listed in the 1665 Hearth Tax returns as dwelling in Newcastle, and became Governor of the Company and an Alderman, dying in 1675.⁴⁰⁹

Lt. Colonel Alexander Forbes: Claimed in the List from Newcastle. He also appears under Fane's Foot (q.v.), to which I suspect he transferred in April 1643. The only clue to Forbes' identity comes in a petition from a colonel of this name captured at Worcester in 1651, and referred to the Committee for Examinations, who declared that his case lay in the prerogative of the Scottish Parliament.⁴¹⁰

Captain John Blackburn: The regiment is conjectured. Such a man signed the letters of defiance in the garrison in October 1644. A John Blackburn of Richmond, captain during the first war, is mentioned in the proceedings of the Committee for Advance of Money.⁴¹¹

Captain Cuthbert Carre: This is conjectured from sound evidence. He was Sheriff of Newcastle at the start of the siege and in his composition proceedings is alluded to as a captain of foot in the garrison, where he commanded at the Newgate (see Vol. 1). Of Auckland St. Helen, Co. Durham, he was born in 1619, the eldest son of James Carre of Newcastle who had been Sheriff in 1630 and had died in 1638. Carre signed the letters of defiance, and was a hostage for surrender talks. He compounded on a fine of £130, but was suspected of complicity in subsequent plots. In 1656 Colonel Robert Lilburn told Thurloe that he had yet no evidence against "that daingerous man mr. Cuth. Carr". A JP and an Alderman after 1660, he died, apprently, in 1696.⁴¹²

Captain Ralph Davison: The rank is certain from the sources and the evidence supports the regiment. Ralph was the second son of Sir Alexander Davison and thus a brother of Lt. Colonel Thomas Davison (q.v., above). Born in 1611, styled in later life as of Thornley Co. Durham, he held property at Blakeston which was sequestered in 1644. He compounded in London with his brother in 1645. A licence was issued to him to go to London in 1657/8. After the restoration, he became a JP, and investigated the Kaber-Rigg*plot of 1664.⁴¹³

(*The Kaber-Rigg plot was an alleged Quaker conspiracy so named from a meeting place).

Captain Joseph Davison: Fourth of the four sons of Sir Alexander Davison, and cited in the List, he was killed with his father in the storm of the town. On his father's monument is the following inscription: "Josephum Centurion cordatum (in hujus oppidi contra Scotos Rebelles propugnacione strenue Ad mortem usque dimicantum heic juxtim defunctum".⁴¹⁴

Captain George Errington: Claimed in the List from Newcastle. In his composition he admitted to having been a Trainband captain in the garrison, something he "dared not refuse". He was second of the two sons of Mark Errington of West Denton who died in 1654, and in later life was styled as of Darras Hall. A merchant, he compounded on a fine of £45 which does not suggest that he was long established. Apprehended again in 1655 for suspected conspiracy, in a ship off the North-umbrian coast, he may have been with Marley's son. He was listed for six chimneys in the 1665 Hearth Tax returns for West Spital Tower Ward.⁴¹⁵

Captain Eleazar Hodgeson: Cited in the List. Such a man, a doctor of physic from London in 1632, is mentioned in the composition papers of Henry Lilburn. Eleazar Hodgeson was a Warden of the Company of Merchant Adventurers in January 1643 and had been ousted in May 1645. The doctor may have been a son.⁴¹⁶

Captain John Lake: Cited in the List. Captain Edward Copley (q.v., earl of Newcastle's Horse, Appendix 1), signed a certificate in 1660 that John Lake, sometime Vicar of Leeds, had been in arms in several actions for the King and had been wounded. He supported Lake's application to take his BD and to be a Prebendary at Durham. This may, possibly, be a wrong identification, since one John Lake, a merchant, died overseas before 1652 and could be our officer.⁴¹⁷

Captain Sir Thomas Liddell: Rank and regiment are easily arrived at from the available, extremely comprehensive, evidence. The puzzling thing is that a man of Liddell's eminence, and born in 1578, should have held such a rank. The answer lies in the fact that he, a Trainband captain, commissioned in August 1642, was in fact holding a military rank that any civilian might hold as an additional honour. There is no doubt that he held on to it until 1644. Of Ravensworth Castle, he was Sheriff of Newcastle in 1609 and Mayor in 1625 and 1634, as well as MP for the town in 1640. The long and detailed composition records reveal his activities minutely, and can be summarised. He was accused of combining with Marley for his own private gain: of obstructing the earl of Northumberland when the earl was appointed Deputy Lieutenant by Parliament: of levying war in conspiracy with the earl of Newcastle, Marley and Sir William Widdrington: that he delivered the town, arms and ammunition to the Royalist party: that he raised £1000 to prosecute the war: that he, as a Commissioner of Array, imprisoned named persons in the town: that he accepted a commission as a Trainband captain: that he declared the earl of Essex a rebel and a traitor: that he attempted to disenfranchise Parliamentary sympathisers amongst the Aldermen and merchant class: that he exposed Newcastle to the dangers of a storm. In 1646, a prisoner in London, Liddell petitioned to compound, and was fined the relatively enormous sum of £4000. By 1652 the time allowed for payment had elapsed, and the Committee was not prepared to accept Liddell's claim that he had already paid £1500 of the sum. He was dead before the end of the year, to be succeeded by his grandson, Thomas, and this Thomas was a Colonel of Foot for the Parliament in the 1659 emergency.⁴¹⁸

Captain John Marley: Cited in the List. Possibly a reference to Sir John as company commander.

Captain Henry Pemberton: This is implied from the evidence. Henry, fourth of the four sons of John Pemberton of Aislaby, from a thoroughly Royalist family, was killed in arms as a captain. Since he was buried in Newcastle on April 25th 1644 the location in this regiment is probably valid.⁴¹⁹

Captain Metcalfe Rippon: The evidence places him in this regiment. He was a Newcastle merchant, donating £4 to the defences

in January 1643, and in late 1644 a prisoner in the Peterhouse, London. He was a creditor to several persons, judging from George Lilburn's composition papers, and in 1650 his wife stated that one George Grey had offered to repay £100 of £160 owing Metcalfe. His wife accepted, since otherwise Grey threatened to pay it all to the government. Metcalfe, apparently still gaoled in 1650, died before 1654 when his will was administered.⁴²⁰

Captain Ninian Shaftoe: Cited in the List. Fifth of the five sons of Robert Shaftoe of Benwell who died in 1623. Ninian was born in 1604, and apprenticed to the Drapers' Company in London in 1622. He was in Newcastle in 1636 when he was a witness against John Blakiston the regicide, and was then styled Gentleman. He died in 1647 and his will was administered in 1651.⁴²¹

Captain Edward Stote: Also given as Stott or Scot(t). First of three sons of Richard Stott of Newcastle, he was born in 1597, and his own third son, Robert, was a cavalry lieutenant in the King's army (regiment unidentified). Listed in 1638/9 as of Wallsend, Gentleman, and a freeholder in Castle Ward, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Co. Durham. In 1643 he contributed to the garrison funds. His signature is on the refusal to surrender in October 1644, and after his capture he was gaoled in Winchester House, London, dying in 1648.⁴²²

Captain Thomas Swinburn: Cited in the List, but see Glemham's Foot.

Lieutenant Bertram Anderson: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain White's company. Second of the four sons of Henry Anderson of Newcastle, and born before 1622. A Merchant at the time of the siege, he donated £5 to royal funds in 1643. In his composition, he admitted that he was "unhappily drawn on to be a lieutenant in one of the trained bands of Newcastle". He took the covenant, to strengthen his denial that he was a Catholic, and was fined £75 in 1646. The Parliamentarian Mayor of Newcastle reported that Bertram's "losses and sufferings have been very great, amounting to [£1,600] and more by £500 at the least". His sequestration was lifted in 1647, and in 1655 he was Quaymaster. Listed in the 1665 Hearth Tax returns as of Gunner Tower Ward with six chimneys, date of death unknown.⁴²³

Lieutenant Ralph Heron: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Marley's company. Fifth of the five sons of John Heron of Chipchase Castle who died in 1618. On December 10th 1645 a Ralph Heron, apprentice (which may rule out the initial identification) petitioned for his freedom, but it was denied to him because "he was an officer in military affairs in this towne before it was reduced".⁴²⁴

Lieutenant William Robinson: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain

Errington's company. Such a man is mentioned as an officer in October 1644, and Terry suggested that he was the Parish Clerk dismissed in October of that year, gaoled in London House, and restored in 1660. Such a man was sequestered in August 1644.⁴²⁵

Lieutenant Edward Surtees: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Wright's company. Probably the grandson of Edward Surtees of Broad Oak, Gentleman, who died in 1654. He may be the copyholder listed at Whickham.⁴²⁶

Ensign Robert Archibald: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Shaftoes company. Two such, although the name is not uncommon, signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Berwick.⁴²⁷

Ensign Robert Rutter: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Joseph Davison's company. A Merchant Draper (or perhaps his son), he gave £3 to funds in January 1643; was disbursing relief for the benefit of a brother of the Merchant Adventurers' in 1647; named to supervise foreign trade in the town in the following year; and was having apprentice trouble in 1654.⁴²⁸

Ensign Thomas Swan: Not in the List, but apparently a commander in the last defence in October 1644. In 1650 Thomas Swan, a brother of the Merchant Adventurers, was accused of "ierying some of the apprentices, whose haire was cutt according to the Companye's acte, calling them the Companye's coved tuppis...". These sound like cavalier sentiments. In 1660, however, a Thomas Swan, possibly this merchant's son, petitioned for the post of Postmaster which his father had held (and to whom £674 was owing) but now held by Captain Robert Foster. (Thomas Swan of Beverley, Yorkshire, must also be mentioned, in the defence of Scarborough, but the link is too tenuous).⁴²⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Robert White, cited in the List.

Captain Thomas Wright, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Henry Archibald, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Shaftoe's company.

Lieutenant Francis Read, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Hodgson's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Wright, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Lake's company. (Is he one and the same as Captain Thomas Wright?).

Ensign John Boulton, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Lt. Colonel Davison's company.

Ensign George Rickaby, claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Swinburn's company.

Colonel Sir Thomas METHAM'S Regiment of Foot.

Although Young suggested that this regiment was engaged at Marston Moor in 1644,⁴³⁰ it probably did not survive into the spring of 1643, for Metham appears nowhere in the List, whilst certain of his officers appear in other regiments. We are dealing, therefore, with a Trainband formation that only just comes into the period with which we are concerned. It was reported in London on July 7th 1642 that Metham had been ordered to raise a regiment.⁴³¹ Metham's commission of array was published fully in the capital as well.⁴³²

By vertue of a Warrant from the Right Honourable, the Earl of Linsey, Generall of His Majesties forces for the compleating of the Regiment of the Trained Bands now under my command, and for that you have neglected this service, in sending ignorant and untrained men, and sparing (without any command or direction) such as formerly have been trained and served under me; These are therefore by vertue of the said warrant, straitly in His Majesties Name to command you, that upon sight hereof, you summon and bring all such persons that be able of body, as well private as common, formerly set in my Muster Rolls, now inhabiting and residing in your several townships; And also such as upon the Summons for this Service, have either fled or absented themselves, and them with their arms that are wanting in your severall Constableries, personally upon sight hereof to bring to me to Newbury near Cottingham, where I am with my Regiment, for His Majesties Special Service; as also some of the ablest men of body in your Townships, to be in the places of divers impotent, lame and unfit for service....

This document was directed to the constables of Ouse and Derwent, and to the petty constables of Elvington, Dunnington, Grimston, Heslington, Foulfurth cum Foulfurth Nayburn, Stillingfleet and Dighton. This gives a very clear idea of the recruitment area, and the document quoted strongly implies that Metham had been a Trainband commander for some time before 1642, an unusual role for a Catholic, but by no means unique (see Colonel Robert Strickland's Foot).

Another London tract alluded to this "broken regiment" going coldly to the siege of Hull in the same month, so evidently Metham's angry circular had little effect.⁴³³ The lack of cohesion probably led to the complete dispersal of the regiment, for had it survived, it could properly have claimed to be the oldest regiment in the King's service, an honour usually applied to Sir William Pennyman's Foot (q.v.) but perhaps better justified by Robert Strickland's.

Pay warrants and receipts for the regiment have survived, as well as an undated document listing the lt. colonel, major and four captains, with 681 men.⁴³⁴ At the date of compilation of this document, the regimental strength included a chaplain, a surgeon and his mate, a provost marshal, a quartermaster and a waggon-master, so evidently it was well organised. Metham's signature on pay receipts gives an impression, moreover, that as July wore on, the regimental strength did increase, although whether the quality of the rank and file improved we cannot know. On July 10th the regiment took £220.8.10d. On

the 27th, £232.6s. On August 1st £250.5.6d.⁴³⁵ Precisely when the regiment disbanded, we cannot know, and the date of Spring 1643 is probably too late, for by then some of the officers must already have transferred to other forces, as will become apparent.

Colonel Sir Thomas Metham: The son of Thomas Metham of Metham who died in 1610, Sir Thomas was born in 1575 and was by far the oldest field officer in the northern army. From the reign of James I, when he was the King's Equerry, into that of Charles I, to whom he was a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber, Metham was solidly a court man, steadily loyal to the King and to Strafford. He had been knighted in 1603. In 1626 he was named in a petition of the House of Commons against Emmanuel Scrope, Lord Lieutenant of Yorkshire, who was accused of favouring Catholics. It was stated that Metham was employed, although a known Catholic, in examining the gunpowder at Hull and in impressing soldiery. In 1628 Metham was again cited as a Catholic, but only suspect, at which time he was a Trainband colonel and a deputy lieutenant. Strafford maintained him in the position partly, it was felt, because "Sir John Hotham distasts him". At the outbreak of war in 1639, Metham commanded 867 Foot, the force in which the 1642 regiment was rooted. He stood as the court candidate at Beverley in the 1640 elections but was beaten. A Commissioner of Array in 1642, it was reported in April that "Sir Thomas Mettam is raising Forces for the King in Yorkeshire, in the Harts adjoining to Hull, most of them being Papists that come in to him..." Apart from the propaganda element in the report, Metham was evidently one of those early "swordsmen", closely associated with Colonel Sir Francis Wortley (q.v., Appendix 1). Cliffe has, however, shown that Metham was heavily in debt in 1642, and this may have been no small factor in his relinquishing of an active field command. His nephew George was wounded in arms at Winceby in 1643, but Sir Thomas himself did not take the field, so far as is known, until Marston Moor when he commanded the Marquess of Newcastle's Lifeguard. Previous to this, he had been associated with Belasyse in the administration in York and Yorkshire during Newcastle's absence in the north. He was by now 69 years old and probably rode to Marston Moor out of a sense of duty. He was killed in action there. John Constable, the son of Lt. Colonel Henry Viscount Dunbar wrote on July 25th from Amsterdam to his brother Mathew, and added as a post-script: "When you write let me know what is become of Sir Thomas Metham and the rest of my friends".⁴³⁶

Lt. Colonel Jordan Metham: This is conjectural, and is based upon the scant available evidences recording him by rank and name as killed at Pontefract in 1644 or 1645. He was Sir Thomas's nephew, first of the eight sons of Sir Jordan Metham of Terrington, and was born in 1615. Sir Jordan, the father, had been knighted at York in 1642 and died in October 1642, having refused knighthood at the

King's coronation. Lt. Colonel Metham was probably a Catholic, since his father and sister had a tradition of Recusancy behind them.⁴³⁷

Lt. Colonel [] Vaughan: Cited in the summer of 1642, no forename given. Probably a transfer to Glemham's Foot (q.v.), but if so, this would have to call in question the identification of Glemham's lt. colonel as being of Pembrey in Wales. Vaughan's company had 112 men.⁴³⁸

Major [] Portington: Cited in the summer of 1642, and whilst this may conceivably represent a man transferred to Glemham's Horse (q.v.), it is more likely to be Michael Portington of Estrington. Thomas Wentworth, the guardian of his infant son, petitioned in 1651, the father having died in arms before he had been sequestered. A fine of £140 was promptly paid.⁴³⁹

Captain Lewis Lewin: Cited in the summer of 1642 with a company of 95 men. He transferred to Glemham's Foot (q.v.).

Captain (Sir) Philip Monckton: By his own evidence, and listed in the summer of 1642 with a company 100 strong. See him, conjectured colonel, Saville's Horse (Appendix 1).

Captain Ralph Normaville: Cited in a list of regimental officers with 192 men under him, almost two full companies. He has not been identified.

Captain William Thornton: Listed as a company commander with 82 men in the summer of 1642, he is probably the same as of Glemham's Foot.

Captain John Vaughan: Cited under Lt. Colonel Vaughan in the summer of 1642, but he has not been identified.

Lieutenant Nicholas Butler: Listed in Lt. Colonel Vaughan's company in the summer of 1642.

Whilst it would be easy to regard this regiment as the basis upon which Glemham built his own, and as providing a link with the Peacock lists, further proof would be necessary before such an assumption could be made. Individual officer transfers may be purely coincidental, i.e., Metham's disbanding as Glemham's was recruiting.

Colonel William MIDDLETON'S (Regiment of) Foot.

The evidence for this rests upon the List, upon the Middleton pedigree and family tradition, as well as upon references to Colonel Middleton. Whether it was ever a regiment in the true sense is open to doubt.

Colonel William Middleton: The eldest of the six sons of Sir Peter Middleton of Stockheld who died in 1644. He is not to be confused with the lt. colonel of the same name in Gerlington's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1). On October 18th 1645 Colonel William Middleton's name was in a list compiled by Lord Digby for a commission to govern Skipton during Colonel Mallory's illness. He was also, evidently, in arms in 1648 when captured at Appleby. The son-in-law of Henry Constable Viscount Dunbar (q.v., E. Widdrington's Horse, Appendix 1). William's aunt, the second wife of Colonel Sir Edward Osborne (q.v., Appendix 1), laid claim to the estate in William's composition, for an allowance due to her. Other details are scant. Colonel Middleton appears to have died in 1658.⁴⁴⁰

Major Mathew Middleton: This designation rests solely upon the pedigree. Fourth of the sons of Sir Peter of Stockheld, Mathew was, apparently, major of the regiment in 1642. No further details are known, although he was conceivably one of the sons of Sir Peter killed on Marston Moor.⁴⁴¹

Captain Peter Burgoyn: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. First of the three sons of George Burgoyn(e), and styled as of Addlethorp near Spofforth. Born in 1620, he succeeded his father in 1657 and died in 1669.⁴⁴²

Lieutenant Thomas Middleton: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. Such a man was fifth of the sons of Sir Peter of Stockheld and seems a strong probability for the rank.⁴⁴³

Quartermaster Francis Steele: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. He may be the son of Michael Steele of Plumpton, living in 1666.⁴⁴⁴

Colonel Richard Viscount MOLYNEUX'S Regiment of Foot.

Recruited in Lancashire, but not at full strength by the time of Edgehill where it fought, 320 strong.⁴⁴⁵ On November 5th it was drawing powder, bullets and match from stores in Oxford, and on the 24th a sum of £116.2s. was handed over for regimental pay.⁴⁴⁶ It was at Brill on the Hill with Gerard in December but for how long we do not know. Although the regiment was at Culham in May 1643⁴⁴⁷ Colonel the Lord Molyneux was by this time in Lancashire to recruit further (see him, colonel of Horse, Appendix 1). At the muster a lt. colonel, a major and four captains were listed which indicates that the regiment had somewhat increased in strength since Edgehill. In the first Tertia of foot at the storm of Bristol,⁴⁴⁸ and at Abingdon in June, it fought at the first battle of Newbury, after which, Young suggested, it returned to Lancashire. At this time its colonel, with Tyldesley and others, went back to assist Lord Byron and to attend the Irish forces at Chester (see Vol. 1, and Molyneux's Horse, Appendix 1). Thereafter it was employed with Rupert's army in Lancashire and may well have fought on Marston Moor.

Colonel the Lord Molyneux: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel Roger Nowell: Born in 1605, first of the five sons of Roger Nowell of Read Hall in Lancashire. He succeeded his father in 1624, but whether he was a Catholic in a family with some Recusant tradition is doubtful. A captain in 1642, prominent at the 'siege' of Manchester in September, he was to be a commissioner for the truce talks in October, but went south with the regiment before these came to anything. Probably lt. colonel from the time of Edgehill, if not before, he remained in that rank until 1646, contrary to some family pedigrees which claim that he was a colonel in his own right. He was at Culham in May 1643, and was a commissioner for the surrender of Lathom in 1645. He petitioned to compound in 1649 and a fine of £736.4.6d. was levied. Listed in 1660 for the Order of the Royal Oak, in 1664 a Trainband colonel, he died in 1695.⁴⁴⁹

Major Henry Byrom: Cited in the List as Captain 'Byron', but evidently the same man killed as major at Edgehill. Son and heir of John Byrom of Byrom who died in 1614, he was himself born c. 1609. At the siege of Manchester in September 1642, he was apparently briefly held by the Parliamentarians. Little else is known.⁴⁵⁰

Major Francis Saunders: He replaced Byrom, perhaps as a promotion from below, but more likely, since he was almost certainly not a Lancashire man, by commission or transfer. Signing for supplies on November 5th 1642 as major, and still in that rank at Culham in May 1643 and at the siege of Bristol, what became of him is not known. Roy could not identify him, but two possibilities present themselves (unless it be the same man on both occasions). Francis Saunders was

the second son of William Saunders of Welford in Northamptonshire, in 1615 of the Middle Temple. In Henry Liddell's composition papers is a reference to a London merchant of this name who, a feoffee in 1634 of Liddell's, was dead in 1651. It may be the Northamptonshire designation is correct, if we accept that Saunders was promoted after Edgehill, and had not come with it from Lancashire. Various northern regiments picked up field officers from elsewhere (see Edward Grey's Horse, Appendix 1). If Saunders is the man dead by 1651, this would explain his anonymity. The matter is debateable. Saunders signed an undated petition to Charles I concerning pay and discipline, which looks as if it may belong to 1644.⁴⁵¹

Captain John Ashton: Of Penketh (so distinguished at Culham in May 1643) he was eldest of the two sons of Thomas Ashton of Penketh, and his younger brother Thomas was born in 1616. John at least seems to have been with Molyneux in Lancashire in 1643, and was wounded at Bolton in February. Little else is known, and he was probably killed in the war. His brother was an officer in arms in an unknown regiment.⁴⁵²

Captain John Ashton: Of Cuerdall, at Culham in May 1643. Son of Radcliffe Ashton of Great Lever, who was Collector for Blackburn Hundred in 1642: John was born c. 1602/3. Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642, he was killed^{ed} outright at Bristol, July 1643.⁴⁵³

[Captain Robert Hesketh] Tentatively suggested by Young, but see Chisenall's Foot.⁴⁵⁴

Captain Richard Latham: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, but the name relatively common. Such a man was killed at Lichfield, but cannot be this man. Possibly of Allerton and Perbold, Esquire, born in 1623, son of Thomas Latham of the same. Richard was apparently with the earl of Derby at Lancaster in March 1643, and his land was in the 1652 Treason Act. He petitioned in 1653 and was fined £1770.4s. Living, styled Esquire, in 1664.⁴⁵⁵

Captain Richard Nowell: The regiment is conjectural but probable. Fifth of the six sons of Roger Nowell of Read, and a brother of the lt. colonel. One of 19 killed in a charge at Bristol in July 1643.⁴⁵⁶

Ensign William Turner: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Byrom's company. Such a man, styled husbandman, of Alston, was sequestered in 1647 and an undischarged Recusant in 1655.⁴⁵⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Ogle, at Culham Camp, May 1643.

Captain [] Prestridge, at Culham Camp May 1643.

Colonel Sir George MUSCHAMP'S Regiment of Foot.

"Sir George Muschampe, Knt., who has a commission from the Earl of Newcastle to raise a regiment of foot in the north parts by beating of a drum, wishes to beat his drum in this borough [Berwick] which is included in his commission. Order, that he shall not have the liberty"⁴⁵⁸ This, and a reference to his commission in the composition papers, is the only additional evidence to support the List. Nonetheless, it is very much to the point and indicates that whatever Muschamp was able to do, or inclined to do, a regiment was envisaged.

Colonel Sir George Muschamp: Born in 1611, son and heir of Sir William Muschamp of Barmoor, Northumberland, who died in 1631, the year of his Shrievalty. A Commissioner of Array, Sir George was ordered in March 1643 by the earl of Newcastle to disarm and, if need be, to apprehend certain Parliamentarian sympathisers in Northumberland. His unhappy experience in February of the same year, given above, cannot have encouraged him. At his composition he denied that he had ever been in arms at all, and stated that he had never left the county. He was, however, certainly at Aldwark with Glemham in January 1644. A fine of £1600 was levied at which he bitterly complained. Prevented from going to London to compound by ill health, he died in 1648 or the following year. The brother in law of Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton (q.v., Appendix 3), when he was knighted is not altogether clear, since his father was not, apparently, a baronet and so did not pass on the title.⁴⁵⁹ (It must be noted that in 1638/9 when George was noted as a freeholder, he was styled Esquire. Perhaps Muschamp was knighted by Newcastle).

Captain Robert Muschamp: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, he may be Robert Muschamp of Burton and Acklington who died in 1669, but any relationship with his colonel cannot be traced. Colonel Muschamp's uncle Robert, fifth of the seven sons of George Muschamp, Sheriff of Northumberland in 1597, must be dismissed.⁴⁶⁰

Colonel Sir Edward MUSGRAVE'S Regiment of Foot.

The regimental designation is based upon the List, an apparent allusion to recruitment in July 1643⁴⁶¹ and a reference by Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave in a private letter in the Musgrave Mss. In November 1643 he was to put 60 men into Carlisle garrison.

Colonel Sir Edward Musgrave: Something of a mystery surrounds him. He was, according to one source, born in 1621, the first son of William Musgrave of Hayton or Hatton, Cumberland. He matriculated at Queen's College in 1636 and entered Gray's Inn in 1638, the same year that he was made a baronet of Nova Scotia. However, in 1648 one Isabel Vaux petitioned the House that Sir Edward Musgrave had misappropriated her property, being her cousin and the son of her uncle Sir Edward Musgrave and, significantly, that Sir Edward had been three times in arms against the Parliament. Colonel Musgrave, who admitted his rank when he compounded, contributed to Carlisle garrison funds in 1644 and kept a garrison in Scaleby Castle during the siege, at which time he was the Royalist Sheriff of Cumberland, as well as a Commissioner of Array. A Trainband major in 1666, Sir Edward was dead by 1679 when probate was granted his will. Styled also of Clayton and Scaleby.⁴⁶²

Lt. Colonel [] Tirwhyt: The unusual nature of the name does not help in arriving at an identification. Attention must also be directed to a Captain Tirwhytt in the Earl of Newcastle's Foot (q.v.). What follows applies to both of these men, although, let it be added, that is not to say that they were one and the same. Lt. Colonel Tirwhyt, like Captain Tirwhytt, however, is merely cited in the List. Sir Philip Tirwhitt of Stansfield, Lincolnshire, was a prisoner in Lincoln in November 1645 having been in arms for the King. He had been commissioned in August 1642 to raise 80 horse, however, and this must initially rule him out. Robert Terwhit, second of the seven sons of Robert Terwhit who died in 1651, was a delinquent who had compounded by 1648. This latter family produced several Royalist officers, one of whom, Francis, the fifth son of Robert I, was killed in Ireland in 1643. A William Terwhitt of Laneham in Nottinghamshire, papist in arms, was dead by 1648, and may have been killed in 1643/4. To complicate matters further, a Lt. Colonel Tirwhitt of Mathew Appleyard's Foot was captured at Naseby in 1645. The problem seems beyond solution, since no common link emerges.⁴⁶³

Captain [] Chambers: Cited in the List. The surname is extremely common in Cumberland at this period. A Mr. Chambers gave £1 to the Carlisle defences in 1644, but that is no guide.⁴⁶⁴

Lieutenant Thomas Fisher: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, he was third of the four sons of Edward Fisher of Kendall who died in 1640. His eldest brother, Robert, compounded in 1648 as having been in arms for the King in 1642/4, and Thomas was an alderman of Kendal in 1664.⁴⁶⁵

Quartermaster Roger Webster: Claimed in the List from Cumberland. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Thrimby and Little Strickland, Westmorland.⁴⁶⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Francis Lyndsey, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant William Chambers, claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Chamber's company.

Ensign Martin Gower, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire in Lt. Colonel Tirwhyt's company.

Ensign William Grave, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Colonel Sir Philip MUSGRAVE'S (Regiment of) Foot.

As with Sir Philip's Horse regiment, we cannot be sure whether we are dealing with officers commissioned in 1642/4, or in 1648, or, in certain cases in both wars. No lt. colonel or major can be identified.

Captain Sir Richard Musgrave: Cited in the List, and an unusually humble rank for a knight. Richard, Musgrave's eldest son was born in 1625 which would tend to rule him out, even apart from the fact that he was not knighted in his father's lifetime. This may be Sir Richard, son and heir of Christopher Musgrave of Hartley, and a Commissioner of Array in 1642. Sir Richard was the son in law of the Parliamentarian Lord Wharton. A Richard Musgrave of Botton, Cumberland, yielded in September 1644 and was fined £2, but there is no reference to a knighthood in the (brief) proceedings.⁴⁶⁷

Captain [] Wilson: Cited in the List. Thomas Wilson of Heversham Hall, Westmorland, Gentleman, stated in his 1646 petition to compound that he was a Trainband captain from July 1643 to February 1645 under Colonel Sir Philip Musgrave, and had held the commission for seven years before that. This same man was raising money for the Royalists in 1648.⁴⁶⁸

Ensign Thomas Hutchinson: Claimed in the List from Westmorland. Such a man of Crosby Garret signed the 1641/2 Protestation, the son (?) of Thomas Hutchinson Snr. of the same.⁴⁶⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Mathew Dowling, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Richard Barker, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant John Baynes, claimed in the List from Cumberland.

Lieutenant Mathew Robinson, claimed in the List from Westmorland.

Ensign William Fothergill, claimed in the List from Westmorland. No fewer than five such signed the 1641/2 Protestation in that county.

Ensign Christopher Harling, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Wilson's company.

Ensign John Smith, claimed in the List from Westmorland, Captain Sir Richard Musgrave's company.

The Earl of NEWCASTLE'S Regiment of Foot.

Raised originally in Northumberland and Durham in the autumn of 1642, it was greatly increased in size in subsequent months and must have been a regiment of some prestige. Although a list of officers for this regiment given by Peacock is given below, clearly, the earl raised two regiments, Peacock's being that which was consigned the King to do with as he wished. The second foot regiment, over which Newcastle exercised titular authority, since he appointed a colonel for field command, is that with which we are concerned. The regiment was apparently at full strength in Newcastle upon Tyne in mid 1642⁴⁷⁰ but that seems unlikely, and this may be a composite reference to other forces then being raised by the earl, for not long after he put 500 men into the city garrison.⁴⁷¹ The regiment was engaged at Tadcaster fight in December 1642 (see Vol. 1) and, particularly, at Adwalton Moor, where Newcastle fought pike in hand with his men (see Vol. 1). The regiment has been considered to have been the famous Whitecoats butchered on Marston Moor, but even allowing for other factors (see Lambton's Foot) the extant officer lists argue against that. Under its colonel, the regiment served in the defence of Newcastle upon Tyne in February 1644 having marched rapidly up from Yorkshire. It fought its way back to York, where it distinguished itself in the siege, fighting in the defence of King's Manor,⁴⁷² and fought on Marston Moor after which it was disbanded.

In what follows, I have included in the officer lists those who claimed specifically under Bassett, the colonel, although I am conscious that most if not all may have served under him in Cornwall in 1645 and never in the north.

Colonel Sir Arthur Bassett: A Cornishman, and a professional soldier. He was third of the five sons of James Basset(t) of Tehidy in that county, and was styled as of Undersleigh, Co. Devon, when he compounded on a fine of £1321.6.6d. Born in 1602, he achieved his BA at Exeter College in 1615/16, entered the Inner Temple in 1617, and sat as MP for Fowey in 1625/6 and for Bangor, Co. Down, in 1634. A Commissioner of Array in Devon in 1642, he had previously been appointed colonel of Sir Samuel Rolle's Trainband regiment specifically to supervise their disbanding. When he came north is not clear, but he was knighted on the outbreak of war and probably when he assumed command of the regiment. He is mentioned particularly, and indeed for the only time, in January 1644 as entering Newcastle upon Tyne with the regiment just ahead of the appearance of the Scots. After the battle of Marston Moor, he accompanied Newcastle into exile, but returned to the West Country where he replaced his deceased brother as the governor of St. Michael's Mount in 1645, which he held for 15 days under attack before surrendering. He was the the Prince of Wales in the Scilly Islands in 1646, and was in arms again in 1648, captured and gaoled. He was fully discharged from sequestration in 1654. Colonel of a foot regiment briefly in 1667, he died in 1673.⁴⁷³

Lt. Colonel [] Rich: Cited by Peacock. The possibilities are limited as to identification. Sir Edward Rich of Hartlepool was a convicted Recusant in 1639. Richard Rich of the Royd, a younger brother of Aymer Rich, was Constable of Staincross in 1624, but his son William was a Parliamentary officer in 1644. A Richard Rich of Ottringham was dead by 1683 when probate was granted.⁴⁷⁴

Major [] Babthorpe: Cited by Peacock. The Babthorpes were a prominent Recusant family in Yorkshire. The two sons of Sir William Babthorpe of Hemingborough were priests. Ralph Babthorpe, eldest son of Richard Babthorpe who died in 1610, died in 1666 and may be our major, whilst there was a Bryan Babthorpe married into the Royalist Ellis family of Kiddall. There were branches of the Babthorpes at Osgodby and Menthorpe.⁴⁷⁵

Captain [] Andrews: Cited by Peacock. It is remotely possible that this is an early allusion to (Colonel) Eusebius Andrews, whose trial and execution for Royalist conspiracy in 1650 is worth remarking upon. Andrews was tried by the High Court of Justice, which procedure was condemned by the Leveller pamphleteers who compared the court to those of High Commission and of Star Chamber. They demanded that the sentence of death be waived and a new trial, by jury, should take place. Not unnaturally, their criticisms and demands went unheeded. Andrews was granted the right to be beheaded, and was executed on August 22nd.⁴⁷⁶

Captain Cuthbert Bates: The rank and regiment are deduced from the available evidence. Second of the three sons of Cuthbert Bates, Esquire, who died in 1602, from Halliwell in Northumberland, Cuthbert was killed defending York in 1644.⁴⁷⁷

Captain Ralph Bates: Rank and regiment is conjectured from a simple allusion to him as an officer under Newcastle which has been tentatively taken as literally true. Nephew of the above Cuthbert Bates, Ralph was born in 1613 the eldest of the two sons of Thomas Bates of Halliwell, Northumberland. He succeeded his father in 1638 and was styled Esquire. At his composition he claimed that he had been coerced and had deserted his command in Yorkshire. He was fined £200 in 1646 and his sequestration was cleared two years later. His wife was a Recusant in 1682 and in 1684.⁴⁷⁸

Captain George Berridge: Cited in the List as a major, which rank most probably dates to 1648 or even later, since he was captured on Marston Moor as a captain. In March 1655 intelligence reached Colonel Worsley from Newcastle that Major 'Birridge' had arrived in Northumberland with commissions from Charles II and had been

entertained at Seaton Delaval Hall for over a fortnight. Beyond this, identification has proved impossible.⁴⁷⁹

Captain Nicholas Errington: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Two such enter the composition records, one of Theddlethorp, Gentleman, who compounded on a fine of £2; the other, and more probable, of Ponteland who surrendered when Newcastle fell, and whose property was in the 1652 Treason Act.⁴⁸⁰

Captain Ralph Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. He may be Ralph Fenwick of Gt. Babington in Kirkwhelpington, noted as a Recusant from 1655 to 1683. In 1650 information was laid against him and his case referred to the Committee for sequestrations.⁴⁸¹

Captain William Gower: Cited in the List, such a man of Hutton upon Derwent was fined £36 for delinquency in the first war and died c. 1679. He may be the Major William Gower who petitioned in 1660 to be Customer of Hull and stated that he had served as an officer throughout the war, being captured finally at Wigan in 1651. I cannot tell if this is (Colonel) Sir Thomas Gower's brother: "my brother Wm. Gower was but newly returned out of France with my son, and wishes himself there again", this in March 1657. On January 5th 1660 he was present in arms with Thomas Lord Fairfax in an armed demonstration against Lambert at York.⁴⁸²

Captain William Hedworth: Claimed in the List from Durham, second son of Henry Hedworth of Ryton Woodside, born in 1596, dying c. 1676. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Lumley in Co. Durham.⁴⁸³

Captain Nicholas Lanyon: Cited in the List and identified by Tullie in the defence of Carlisle (which forms a link with Basset) as a Cornishman. Perhaps the son of Philip Lanyon of Penzance, Gentleman, and delinquent.⁴⁸⁴

Captain William Pennyman: Cited in the List under Basset. Of Gray's Inn, Gentleman, second son of James Pennyman of Ormesby, Yorkshire, but the eldest son by the father's second marriage. Born in 1624 he died in 1659, at his death styled of Stanton or Tanton.⁴⁸⁵

Captain John Rutter: Cited in the List, the son and heir of Robert Rutter of Amotherby, Yorkshire, who died in 1622. John, styled of New Malton, Gentleman, died in 1690. His uncle, of Kingsley Cheshire, who was dead by 1649, was also named John and served in Chester garrison. Two of Captain Rutter's men were buried in York on May 26th 1644. Interestingly, a John Rutter of New Malton, tanner, died sometime around

1652, his will dated in June of that year.⁴⁸⁶

Captain Ralph Selby: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, and also cited under Basset. Possibly second son of the four (but heir by his elder brother William's death) of Sir Ralph Selby of Twissel who died in 1646. However, this Ralph, styled Esquire, died apparently in 1660, although he may have had time to insert his claim first. There is another possibility in Ralph, third of the three sons of Thomas Selby of Biddlestone by the father's second marriage, but this Ralph came of age c. 1603/4 which may make him too old.⁴⁸⁷

Captain Thomas Sharper: Cited in the List, of Newcastle, he petitioned to compound in 1646 having been in Tynemouth Castle when it fell in October 1644. A fine of £63 was imposed, but Thomas died in 1649 and his son Rowland had to complete the payments.⁴⁸⁸

Captain James Swinhoe: Cited in the List, perhaps the same as I have designated colonel of Clavering's Foot (q.v.).

Captain [] Tirwhytt: For this man, see Sir Edward Musgrave's Foot.

Captain [] Walters: Cited by Peacock. In view of the remarks made concerning dispersal of the regiments given by this source, we may be dealing here with Robert Walters of Ouseburn Parva, officer in arms 1642/3, and Governor of Wallingford for the King. Depositions by Royalist troopers indicate that he rose to the rank of major and was taken prisoner in 1644. In Colchester in 1648, he was High Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1660 and was styled Esquire.⁴⁸⁹

Lieutenant Robert Nalson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such of Altoftes, yeoman, was buried at Normanton in 1679.⁴⁹⁰

Ensign William Hedworth: Claimed in the List, Captain Selby's company, under Basset. Very probably the son of Captain William Hedworth, this regiment, and born in 1626.⁴⁹¹

Ensign Richard Sewell: Claimed in the List from Staffordshire. Henry Sewell of Corley, Warwickshire, had an elder brother Richard who, according to Henry, yielded at Truro in 1644 (!) with his "horse, arms and surgeons tools" and became Cromwell's own regimental surgeon. If this is the same man, and the link with Truro could be sustained through Basset, and for 1644 we read 1645, it was a remarkable about face.⁴⁹²

Ensign Richard Taylor: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, possibly of Hay Park, who "did assist the king", not worth £200 and discharged.⁴⁹³

Ensign Samuel Wiseman: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Lanyon's company. He may well be the Sergeant Wiseman of Dort garrison cited on August 12th 1642 in A List of Such English and Scotch commanders &c., as have left their command under the P. of Orange. To this list is added, in a contemporary hand, "These are for the King's service".⁴⁹⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Acton, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Fisher, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Fleetwood, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Frost, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Giles, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Hemmings, cited by Peacock.

Captain Ingram Marshal, claimed in the List from Durham.

Lieutenant Robert Baker, claimed in the List under Major Berridge, which may rule out service in 1642/6.

Lieutenant Nicholas Barnes, claimed in the List from Cornwall under Basset.

Lieutenant Joseph Bray, claimed in the List from Cornwall under Basset.

Lieutenant Edward Corpes, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Pennyman's company.

Lieutenant William Snary, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Rutter's company.

Ensign Henry Bull, claimed in the List from Hertfordshire, Captain Sharper's company.

Ensign John Ripley, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Gower's company.

Ensign Robert Thomson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Swinhoe's company.

Quartermaster David Whitfield, claimed in the List from Devon under Basset.

Colonel William PENNINGTON'S Regiment of Foot.

Another of the Cumberland/Westmorland paper regiments, although this officer with, presumably, his foot or what existed of them, was in battle at Lyndale Close in October 1643 (see Vol. 1). Pennington's name on a list of commissions has survived in the Musgrave Mss. He was of Muncaster, Esquire, son and heir of Joseph Pennington of the same who died in 1640. William was a Trainband captain in that year, and a deputy lieutenant. A Commissioner of Array in 1642, he contributed £10 to a fund for the defence of Cumberland. His composition papers are fragmentary. He died c. 1652/3. I suspect his 'regiment' was raised of raw recruits specifically for the relief attempt on Thurland Castle which led to Lyndale Close and the regiment's dispersal.⁴⁹⁵

Colonel Sir William PENNYMAN'S Regiment of Foot.

Claimed by Young, on a free interpretation of Symonds' diary, to be the oldest regiment in the royal army.⁴⁹⁶ It is possible that so far as the Oxford army is concerned, with which Pennyman's fought throughout the war, this may be accurate. For the whole of England, however, the honour must go either to the Foot regiment of Sir Thomas Metham in the East Riding of Yorkshire (q.v.), or, more probably, to that of Sir Robert Strickland (q.v.) raised in the North Riding. The sources for Pennyman's Foot are fairly extensive, and additional information can be gleaned by inference from the officer list.

The regiment fought at Edgehill, being 685 strong, in the Tertia of Foot commanded by John Belasyse, and had been quartered on the eve of the battle at Wicken.⁴⁹⁷ In November the regiment is noticed at Oxford drawing ammunition on the 4th, and, on the 24th, £246.9s. for pay with £4.4s. for recruits.⁴⁹⁸ From this point on it formed part of the Oxford garrison, when its colonel was appointed governor there in December 1642.⁴⁹⁹ It does seem, however, to have seen action at Marlborough in December (5th and 6th) where Sir William Pennyman commanded.⁵⁰⁰ The Ordnance Papers are replete with allusions to the regiment, receiving equipment from December to June 1642/3, for action at Cirencester in February and further afield in March.⁵⁰¹ The regiment fought at the first battle of Newbury, and was in garrison briefly at Reading when it was 479 strong a marked drop.⁵⁰² This number included 11 captains, 10 lieutenants, 11 ensigns, 11 gentlemen at arms, 23 sergeants, 33 corporals and 20 drums. The regiment was noticed by Luke at Stow on the Wold in February 1644 but was wrongly named as Sir William Pennington's. Colonel Sir William Pennyman was, anyway, dead by this date.⁵⁰³ Symonds noticed that the regiment was at Banbury in June 1644, where "An ensigne taken at the farthest passe, and three prisoners by one foot man of Colonel Penniman's regiment".⁵⁰⁴ For the officer list of the regiment we are also indebted to Symonds who had a detailed description in November 1644 from Colonel James Pennyman, Sir William's successor, much of which is incorporated below.⁵⁰⁵ Under James Pennyman, and then under its third and last colonel, Richard Page, the regiment fought at Cropredy, Lostwithiel, Second Newbury, and was broken up at Naseby, as will be gathered from the officer analysis.⁵⁰⁶ It looks as if the regiment underwent a crisis of confidence when Page was appointed colonel, as will be seen.

Colonel Sir William Pennyman: The son and heir of William Pennyman, Clerk in Chancery, who died in 1628 and who was himself the bastard son of James Pennyman Esquire of Ormesby, Yorkshire. Sir William, styled ordinarily of Marske, was born in 1607, matriculated at Christ Church Oxford in 1623 and was admitted to the Inner Temple, to become a bencher of Gray's Inn in 1639. Pennyman's political career in the 1630's was somewhat mixed. His Alum mine interests kept him

much of the time in Yorkshire, where he was a JP until dismissed in 1634 for criticising Wentworth. Nonetheless, he was later to be closely identified with the Strafford and court party. As Sheriff in 1635/6 he collected Ship Money without protest, and became in 1639 a deputy lieutenant. In that same year he commanded a Trainband regiment which was sent to Berwick to guard the town against a suspected Scottish attack. His other interests included the Chancellorship of the Diocese of York, which he had secured in 1630/1, and, until he was displaced in 1641, he was a Clerk of Star Chamber. He also shared the Treasurership of the Navy with Sir William Russell, in reversion. It is certainly true that no other northern colonel, with the exception of the earl of Newcastle, enjoyed so many offices or was so prominent in the national and local government milieu as Pennyman. MP for Richmond from 1640 to 1642, he voted against the attainder of Strafford, and was, in the latter year, made a Commissioner of Array for Yorkshire. With his regiment, he fought at Edgehill, Marlborough and Cirencester, but ended his life late in 1643 as Governor of Oxford, dying, it is supposed, of consumption. In view of his origins, his story is singularly remarkable. He was created a baronet in 1628.⁵⁰⁷

Colonel Sir James Pennyman: Originally lt. colonel in the regiment, he was born in 1608, eldest of the two sons of James Pennyman of Ormesby who died in 1655. Sir James was knighted in York in 1642, although his father had pointedly refused the honour at the coronation of Charles I. In 1642 the father was appointed a Commissioner of Array, and actively raised forces for the King, perhaps in this regiment. James succeeded to the colonelcy on August 22nd 1643, inheriting not only the rank of the deceased Sir William, but also his property in Yorkshire. He is noticed, still as a lt. colonel, quartered with his company in Oxford in April 1643 prior to the march to Reading, and again, as colonel, in October of that year. His period of command was unremarkable, save that he spent some few minutes talking to Symonds, which has proved invaluable. He laid down his arms in July or August 1644 and went into self-imposed exile in Europe for seven months from August. Upon his return, he compounded on a fine of £537. His knighthood at York was not recognised, and in his composition he was always referred to as Esquire, which may cause some confusion with his father. Quiet during the Interregnum, so far as is known, he became a JP in 1660, a deputy lieutenant in 1663 and a baronet in 1665. He also served on the commission for regulating corporations in Yorkshire in 1664, and died in 1679.⁵⁰⁸

Colonel (Sir) Richard Page: Third and last colonel of the regiment, but who he was, or where he came from, is unknown. Symonds noticed him as lt. colonel in November 1644, when Colonel Sir James Pennyman divulged regimental history to him (and this would tend to call in question the idea that Page was not from Yorkshire), having previously been a captain under Sir William. There is a suggestion that

Page ousted Pennyman as colonel, for Sir Edward Walker, alluding to Page in August 1644, wrote, concerning actions around Foy in the west country, that Page with 200 men seized two forts which served to overawe the earl of Essex: "since deservedly made Colonell of that Regiment for his singular Vigilance and Valour". Page was certainly colonel by the end of November, and so the transition from Pennyman to Page must have been in hand when Pennyman had his talk with Symonds, but no hint comes through. It is possible, then, to carry the matter a little further, that Sir James Pennyman threw over his service with the King in disgust (see above). Of Page before his promotion, we have few glimpses. He was in Oxford in April 1643 returning equipment to the stores, and was noticed, as has been shown, by Walker and Symonds in 1644. At the storm of Leicester which preceded Naseby, in May 1645, he commanded the regiment on foot and was knighted for his bravery on that day "at Countess of Devon's house near Leicester". His disregard for his personal safety had also been noted at Newbury in October 1644, when he was wounded in heavy fighting. At Naseby, commanding the regiment in person, he was finally taken prisoner. Eventually exchanged, Page went into exile with the court where he was prominent enough. He was at Breda in 1650, and was in debt to Sir Edward Walker for the sum of 100 Guilders. On another occasion he received £200. In December 1654 he had disappeared, and Sir Edward Nicholas in Cologne was writing with anxiety to know if anything had been heard of him, and what his wife had to say on the matter. One of Thurloe's agents noted him in Holland in the following year, and he died in the Hague before 1656.⁵⁰⁹

Lt. Colonel Francis Lawson: Cited in the List as a captain under Colonel Sir William Pennyman, and by Symonds in that rank under Page. He was captured at Naseby as lt. colonel, to which rank he had risen when Page was promoted, by-passing Major Wyvell (q.v.). Symonds gave Lawson as from Lincolnshire, but he was probably fourth of the four sons of Henry Lawson of Brough in Yorkshire.⁵¹⁰

Lt. Colonel George Symms: Cited by rank under Colonel Sir James, and noted by Symonds, who added that Symms (or Symonds) was the original major of the regiment. He had clearly been promoted on Colonel Sir William's death, and may have been brought into the regiment by him since Symms came from Marske in Yorkshire. He claimed at his composition, however, that he had yielded in October 1644, which is palpably untrue if Symonds is accurate, but he may have resigned his commission when Page was promoted, in which case, taken all in all and with what can be said of Major Wyvell, it really does seem that the entire field officer cadre left the regiment with Sir James Pennyman. Whether this had anything to do with Page's humble origins is hard to say, but it looks extremely likely. It may be that Page was a Catholic. Symms is noted in May 1643 at Oxford. After leaving the regiment, he returned to Yorkshire, and gave himself up to the

authorities when the King marched toward Doncaster in 1645 looking for recruits. He was fined £22, though he claimed that he had no estate, real or personal, since 1642.⁵¹¹ (Symms appears to be a case of a man undergoing a thorough change of heart during the war, as his composition papers strongly hint. It is interesting to note that included in a list of debtors which he drew up, was Colonel Cuthbert Conyers, q.v.).

Major (Sir) William Bridges: Noted by Symonds in November 1644 as a captain and called a "scrivener in Chancery Lane".

Some original link with Sir William Pennyman is argued here. He became major when Page was promoted, replacing Wyvell. Knighted for his bravery in the storm of Leicester, he was taken at Naseby. A William Bridges of Weston, Cambridgeshire, was fined £148.10s. for his part in the war, but whether this is the same man is questionable. Sir William Bridges certainly died abroad, probably at the exiled court in 1651.⁵¹²

Major William Wyvell: Given by Symonds in this rank in November 1644, and as a Yorkshireman. With Colonel Sir James and Lt. Colonel Symms he left the regiment at Page's promotion.

Wyvell's exact identification is extremely complex. If this is William Wyvell of Osgodby, eldest son of Roger of the same who died in 1657, then he claimed to have surrendered in December 1643 when compounding, which was either untrue, or a clerical error for December 1644 which would fit with events in the regiment. This William was fined £300 in 1646. William of Osgodby died in 1662. However, one of Thurloe's agents noted a William Wyvell in Cologne in 1655, and alluded to him as a lt. colonel, which calls in question the initial identification, unless Wyvell went into exile after compounding, which was unusual but not unknown. Military reference to Wyvell is slim, and confined to prior to and after the outbreak of war. In 1642 for example, a Captain Wyvell, also lt. colonel in the Trained Band regiment of Sir Henry Belasyse, was receiving pay for his company. On July 10th he signed for £35; he listed his company as 116 men strong; he signed as lt. colonel subsequently; and his name appears again on August 1st and August 8th. In Oxford, Wyvell of Pennyman's is noted in May 1643 and, as has been seen, by Symonds in November 1644. Now, the possibility that Wyvell the Trainband lt. colonel and Wyvell of Pennyman's as major, are one and the same, is strong. The problem lies in relating what we know of William Wyvell of Osgodby, to the Wyvell in exile in 1655, and the matter must remain open. A second William Wyvell of Sedbergh compounded on a fine of £8.6.8d for "adhering", and a third (possibly) of Low Burton near Masham was a Recusant in 1623.⁵¹³

Captain Francis Bateson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire under James Pennyman, and confirmed by Symonds. Bateson is unidentified, but may be the Captain Bemson captured at Naseby with Page.⁵¹⁴

Captain Thomas Beverley: Noticed by Young as being buried in Oxford on June 24th 1644. We have no details concerning Thomas, second of the two sons of Vincent Beverley of Great Smeaton, save that he was living in 1614. His brother was a Royalist officer (see Belasyse's Foot).⁵¹⁵

Captain George Blakiston: Cited in the List, he is noticed in April 1643 handing in a musket for repair, and some tools to the stores. Probably of Hayton, Yorkshire, who yielded at Bristol and was fined £20. A pass signed by Sir William Brereton refers to him by rank.⁵¹⁶

Captain Robert Carrington: Given by Symonds as from Yorkshire. He is probably third of the four sons of William Carrington of Spawnton (Spanton?). The eldest son was born in 1585, the second in 1593 so the age is feasible.⁵¹⁷

Captain Humphrey Elmes: Cited in the List, on April 24th 1643 a large stock of equipment was put into store by him, and it was noted that "The captaine saith that Captain Curson tooke away a Sword without his Consent before it came into the stores". In May he put five muskets into store which he had seized locally. He may be the Gentleman of the Privy Chamber from Bolney, Oxfordshire (the Oxford garrison regiment surely must have attracted local Royalists).⁵¹⁸

Captain George Etherington: Given by Symonds, probably an ensign at Edgehill. Such a man of Helsington, yeoman, died before 1683 when his will was granted probate. The Captain Edrington captured at Naseby in 1645.⁵¹⁹

Captain Robert Howes: Of Sherburn, Yorkshire, he was commissioned to raise a company of volunteers in this regiment and "did his best to complete it". In August 1660 he was seeking the post of Thames Water Bailiff, and stated that he had been a lieutenant and then a captain, and often imprisoned "and yet lately further impoverished himself by buying arms and necessaries by royal orders".⁵²⁰

Captain John Jackson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and confirmed by Symonds. There is a possible reference to him on April 11 1644 returning arms to the magazine at Oxford. There was, however, an officer of this name in Lord Percy's regiment.⁵²¹

Captain (Sir) William Mallory: Cited in the List, he fought at Edgehill and was knighted at Oxford on February 1st 1643 and was buried in July of the same year. I cannot discover who he was, or from whence he came.⁵²²

Captain Robert Maude: Noticed in the Ordnance Papers, receiving three repaired muskets in April 1643, mentioned on June 9th and 11th, and again on July 3rd and 4th receiving repaired muskets with his sergeant, Cotton. Such a man of Ripon compounded after yielding at Newark, and was styled Gentleman. He was fined £320. This is not, however, a conclusive identification, since the name is relatively common at this period. There is Robert Maude, son and heir of Anthony Maude of Helthwaite Hall near Harewood, Gentleman: and there is Robert Maude, second of the three sons of Robert Maude of Helthwaite who was born in 1616 and succeeded his father in 1632, the eldest son having died in 1631. He is probably the Robert Maude who was MP for Innishage, Ireland, in 1639, and who was later a colonel in Ireland, dying in 1685. In topographical terms, either of these could be the Maude of Ripon alluded to earlier.⁵²³

Captain Anthony Norton: Claimed in the List and cited under Page. Symonds gave him as a Yorkshire officer. He signed at Oxford stores in April 1643. Probably second of the five sons of Anthony Norton of Kettelthorpe, in October 1661 at Thirsk Quarter Sessions it was agreed he was to receive £10 per year for his wartime sufferings and there was a mention of his rank. Prisoner at Naseby in 1645.⁵²⁴

Captain John Simpson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he had been an ensign at Edgehill. He was born in 1605, fifth son but heir of Robert Simpson of Great Edston, Yorkshire, who died in 1610, and was living in 1665 as a Trainband captain. He may well be the Ensign Simpson noted under Wyvell in Henry Belasyse's Trainband Foot in 1642 (see Wyvell, above). Captured at Naseby, 'Captain Limson'.⁵²⁵

Captain Henry Skipwith: Listed in the Ordnance Papers at Oxford 1642/3, but no further details remain. Possibly the son of Sir Henry Skipwith, baronet, of Cotes in Leicestershire, both of whom compounded for their first war activities on a fine of £1,400. Such a man, a bachelor, died overseas in 1656.⁵²⁶

Lieutenant [] Ballard: Captured at Naseby under Page.⁵²⁷

Lieutenant John Eggleston: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mallory's company. Captured at Naseby.⁵²⁸

Ensign Thomas Anderson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man of Aldwark was a juror at Helmsley Quarter Sessions in 1638, but the name must be common. Such a man was licensed to go on a fishing trip from Hull in 1649.⁵²⁹

Ensign Andrew Lengo: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Norton's company under Page. Captured with Page at Naseby.⁵³⁰

Quartermaster William Bates: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and probably a printer's error for the Quartermaster William Baty mentioned in the Ordnance Papers between December 1642 and June 1643. The name is common as Baty or Batey, as the following will show. Such a man of Almondbury, dated his will in July 1663; one of Thorpe near Burnsall, yeoman, had probate granted in 1679: two of Ripon (or the same twice) probate in 1674: and one from Scarborough in 1680. A William Battie of Horbury, yeoman, probate 1665.⁵³¹

The following officers have not been identified, although let it be noted that those officers under Page captured at Naseby (see Lieutenant Ballard, above) may be from other regiments and nominally listed under him. Yet there is a shortage of lieutenants for this regiment.

Captain [] Henson, listed under Page at Naseby.

Captain [] Kerrington, listed under Page at Naseby.

Captain [] Walker, cited by Young, no source.⁵³²

Lieutenant [] Fleynee, listed under Page at Naseby.

Lieutenant [] Hilkingson (Wilkinson?) listed under Page at Naseby.

Lieutenant Thomas Homewood, cited by Young, no source.

Lieutenant [] Roberts, listed under Page at Naseby.

Lieutenant [] Rowndtree, listed under Page at Naseby.

Lieutenant Allen Sartan, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant James Storre, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Blakiston's company.

Lieutenant Anthony Tatham, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Elmes' company.

Lieutenant Robert Towers, cited by Young, no source.

Ensign James Corps, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Symms' company.

Ensign [] Edrington, listed under Page at Naseby.

Ensign James Read, claimed in the List from Shropshire, Captain Lawson's company.

Ensign [] Scot, listed under Page at Naseby.

Colonel Henry (Lord) PERCY'S Regiment of Foot.

An Oxford based force, drawn together from various companies which came to that town from the earl of Newcastle in 1643, as escorts for an ammunition train.⁵³³ On July 8th Percy wrote to Rupert from Oxford: "I doe humbly desire you that you will commaund your Secretary to give those officers of mine Commissions that have none, that soe they may not be taken out of my regiment nor your Brigade by others that perhaps may pretend to them by gift from my L^d Newcastle..."⁵³⁴ The regiment was paid in Oxford in June 1643⁵³⁵ and on July 26th Luke appears to have noticed it, with Percy's Horse (with which we are not concerned) on its way to Maidenhead.⁵³⁶ It was receiving repaired equipment on July 28th/29th at Oxford,⁵³⁷ and was issued with ammunition for the Newbury campaign on August 24th.⁵³⁸ Young suggested that the regiment remained as guard of the artillery during the first battle of Newbury, its colonel being general thereof, and this would seem sound.⁵³⁹ The regiment was in the muster at New Parks, Wadham College, on February 13th 1644,⁵⁴⁰ and marched in the army into Cornwall in November, long after Lord Percy had himself been disgraced (see below), when Symonds noticed it still by its old title.⁵⁴¹ This may tend to call in question Young's suggestion that Lord Hopton, who replaced Percy in his offices, also took over the regiment. But what became of it thereafter is not known.

Colonel Henry (Lord) Percy: According to Clarendon, Percy was a man who had few friends beyond the Queen, who favoured him. He had been made General of the Ordnance "upon very partial and not enough deliberated considerations", for Percy had none "of those faculties for securing men to him" and was "generally unloved as a proud and supercilious person, yet he had always 3 or 4 persons of good credit and reputation, who were esteemed by him, with whom he loved very well: and though he did not draw the good fellows to him by drinking, yet he eat well...". Virtually all of the Queen's favourites have attracted the criticism of writers then and now, so that it is hard to arrive at any fair estimation of them. Henry Jermyn is a case in point (see the Queen's Lifeguard of Horse, Appendix 1). Percy was born in 1605, youngest son of the 13th earl of Northumberland and sat as MP for Northumberland and then for Portsmouth until expelled for his part in the Army Plot in 1641. In 1639 he commanded a regiment against the Scots. A noted Straffordian. In February 1643 he was given a cavalry command, and Luke noted at the end of the month that Percy was recruiting in Lancashire and Cheshire, although his cavalry regimental lists give no indication of officers from the former county in any number. In April he was conveying ammunition from York to Oxford via Leicester. Appointed General of the Ordnance in May 1643, he was created a Baron on June 28th. Roy has pointed out that he may have left much of the routine administration to Sir John

Heydon, who had been acting general after the disgrace of the earl of Newport in December 1642 (see Newport as a staff officer of Newcastle's, Vol. 1). There was general resentment against Percy in Oxford, and Luke reported a rumour that he heard Mass daily in his lodgings. He gave his opponents ample opportunity to remove him when, in August 1644, he signed the letter to the earl of Essex seeking some kind of accomodation (see in this context, Pell and Gilby of Belasyse's Foot). Dismissed as general later in that month, he went into exile in 1645 to join the Queen, and became associated with the 'Louvre' group favouring a Presbyterian alliance, which group included Jermyn. He died on the eve of the restoration in 1659.⁵⁴²

Lt. Colonel (Sir) Henry Bard: See him as a colonel in his own right, Thomas Pinchbeck's Foot.

Lt. Colonel Anthony Wharton: A captain in the regiment in June 1643 when he signed for ammunition at Oxford, and a major on October 21st of the same year, he was evidently promoted when Bard left the regiment. Anthony was second son of Humphrey Wharton of Eppleby, Yorkshire, who died in 1635, and was a witness to the will in which he was also a legatee. A Catholic, his property was in the third Treason Act of 1652, but what became of him is not known.⁵⁴³

Major Henry C(r)ompton: Cited in the List, and suggested by Young as present at Cropredy Bridge in 1644 which would mean that he had followed Wharton in the rank. There is not sufficient evidence upon which to base an identification.⁵⁴⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Andrew Forrester, cited in the List.

Captain David Whitford, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant John Steley, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Forrester's company.

Lieutenant Thomas Theobald, claimed in the List from Suffolk, Major C(r)ompton's company.

Colonel Thomas PINCHBECK'S Regiment of Foot.

The origins of this regiment are identical to those of Percy's Foot (q.v.) and later in its career the regiment came to be named after its second colonel, Henry Bard. Recruited from the northern forces which escorted ammunition to Oxford in May 1643,⁵⁴⁵ this must be the regiment of Yorkshire infantry which Luke noticed on June 29th as being in Oxford.⁵⁴⁶ Until Bard assumed command, and there was some gap between the colonelcy falling vacant and his appointment, we know little of the regiment's activities, although evidently they were engaged at Newbury in September 1643 where Pinchbeck was killed (see below). Bard commanded the regiment when it mustered at Wadham College Oxford on February 13th 1644⁵⁴⁷ and led it into action at Cheriton in March, writing before the battle of his "Northern musqueteeirs" and of their prowess.⁵⁴⁸ It was 176 strong at the Aldbourne Chase muster in April,⁵⁴⁹ and according to Symonds, fought in the Cornish campaign at the end of the year.⁵⁵⁰ Its strength had increased to 300, again according to Symonds, by May 1645 when it was at Evesham on the 9th, and on the 10th suffered loss of its pack animals when a stable was burned.⁵⁵¹ Bard himself had been governor of Campden House for some time, but had evacuated the place and burned it before joining his regiment for the storm of Leicester and the battle of Naseby.⁵⁵² The regiment fought alongside Pennyman's (q.v.) in the storm of Leicester, their section of the town being "carried wth better success as it proved, some wth ladders gets over their works, others break y^e chain & letts down y^e Drawbridge & fells down y^e works in 2 or 3 several places y^t our horse may enter..."⁵⁵³ It fought, 300 strong, at Naseby where it was virtually destroyed.⁵⁵⁴ There exists an undated order to Charles Gerard to take charge of any infantry Bard may have had which he had mounts for, and this may belong to 1645 when Bard was governor of Campden.⁵⁵⁵

Colonel Thomas Pinchbeck: Pinchbeck remains a mystery. Roy could not identify him, and suggested that he was a professional soldier from London. Such a man attended Eton School and King's, Cambridge. The first reference to him comes in 1640/1. In September 1640 Sir William Le Neve, writing of the fight at Newburn, alluded to "Captain Pinchbecke" who, with others, "did all very valiantly, and retired not until retreat sounded" into Newcastle. In October 1641 there is a reference at Doncaster Quarter Sessions to "one Master Mason, lewetenante to Thomas Pinchbacke, captain of the aforesaid band of horsemen". On June 9th 1643 Pinchbeck received ammunition for his regiment which was on guard at the East Gate of Oxford, a role in which it was employed until August 23rd. On the following day it was issued with supplies for the campaign which led to Newbury, and Pinchbeck's death in action. He was buried in Oxford on January 23rd 1644, which implies a lingering death.⁵⁵⁶

Colonel (Sir) Henry Bard: Born in 1604, second of the two sons of George Bard Vicar of Staines in Middlesex. "A true specimen of a stern, profane and rapacious Cavalier" was the opinion of one later writer. An example of his way with obstructive officials is to be found in an undated order issued by him: "Know that unless you bring me on () day to my house in Worcester, the monthly contribution for six months, that you are to expect a troop of unsanctified horse without mercy among you; from whom, if you hide yourselves, they shall fire your houses, hang up your bodies and scare your ghosts". Bard's career was really quite exceptional. From a professional soldier in Ireland in 1642, he rose to become Lt. colonel to Percy (q.v.), colonel in his own right, a baronet in October 1644, Lord of Drombay in Ireland in 1645 and died as Viscount Bellomont, choked to death in a sand storm in Arabia in 1660 whilst acting as an envoy of Charles II. He was also the father of Prince Rupert's mistress. On March 2nd 1644 he was promised the governorship of Guernsey Castle and the Captaincy of Cornett Castle, after the deaths of Peter Osborne and Lord Percy. He commanded his regiment at Cheriton at the end of the month where he was wounded and taken prisoner, where he "fought so bravely" but seems to have advanced his forces too far without support and to have suffered heavy losses. In February 1645 he took delivery of 60 snaphaunces in Oxford for his men (or for Campden House garrison). In April he interceded for the life of Colonel Windebank, Governor of Bletchingdon House, who was to be shot for dereliction of duty, writing to Rupert that he had witnessed Windebank's courage at Cheriton. Nonetheless, the officer was shot on May 3rd. In action at the storm of Leicester in May (see regimental notation), he commanded a Tertia of Foot at Naseby where his own regiment was probably ruined. On August 11th he was captured by a Parliamentarian ship whilst sailing for France with a commission to recruit a horse regiment there, and was gaoled in Plymouth, eventually released from custody in December 1647 whereupon it seems he promptly went abroad.⁵⁵⁷

Captain John Errington: Cited in the List, and something of a problem, in view of the numerous persons of this name in the north at this time (he was cited by a Durham claimant). This may well be the Major Errington listed under Lt. Colonel Atkins in the List. Atkins has not been assigned to any known regiment, but it may be that Errington left Atkins' service to go south with the convoy of ammunition in 1643 and so found his way into Pinchbeck's regiment. This is, of course, extremely conjectural, since Atkins certainly never left the north himself (see Appendix 4).⁵⁵⁸

Captain John Lawson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Probably of St. Anthony's, Byker, Co. Durham, whose lands were inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. The matter is, however, open to some doubt. This John was second of the sons of Henry

Lawson of Byker, the eldest son of whom, named Henry, was killed as a colonel in action at Melton Mowbray in February 1644. As a consequence, the son John became heir, and was to become a baronet, seated at Brough Hall, Yorkshire. The problem is that this John, finding his property so inserted as a Catholic delinquent, gave evidence that he had only ridden in a troop when he was 15 (!) and admitted his Recusancy. The lands were then withdrawn from sale. Clay in his edition of Dugdale's visitation seems to have had access to unknown sources, for whilst confirming the age of John Lawson by giving him as born in 1627, he nevertheless said that he was a Royalist captain, which rank would have been incompatible with his age. The matter is open to dispute, but it has to be said that no other John Lawson, either in Durham or Northumberland, can be identified to make an alternative possibility for this rank and regiment. Captain Lawson was taken at Naseby.⁵⁵⁹

The following officers have not been identified. Those noted as captured at Naseby under Bard may be Tertia officers, rather than regimental, officers.

Major Henry Goodrich, given by Young at Cropredy Bridge 1644.⁵⁶⁰

Captain [] Devossett, captured at Naseby.⁵⁶¹

Captain Thomas Goodrich, claimed in the List from Suffolk.

Captain [] Lesley, captured at Naseby.

Lieutenant [] Fowler, captured at Naseby.

Lieutenant [] Twifield, captured at Naseby.

Lieutenant [] Windsor, captured at Naseby.

Ensign [] Dolison, captured at Naseby.

Ensign [] Fairebrother, captured at Naseby.

Ensign Henry Richardson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Errington's company.

The QUEEN'S Regiment of Foot (The Lifeguard).

Virtually identical in origin to the Queen's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1), in that it was raised primarily in Lancashire, largely Catholic officered, and served throughout the war with the Oxford army. Certainly, a regiment to which much prestige was attached, it was recruited in 1643 and was at full strength on April 24th.⁵⁶² It came south to Oxford with the Queen in June and July, and Luke noticed it in Oxford on the 27th of the latter month where it remained, in garrison (with Pennyman's Foot, q.v.) until the end of the year at least. Luke noticed the 'Redcoats' in October and November.⁵⁶³ The regiment received pay at Oxford on the 11th and 19th of September,⁵⁶⁴ and must have fought at Newbury since it was equipped for the field in August.⁵⁶⁵ From November, it was quartered partly at Wheatley,⁵⁶⁶ and on November 19th was 'plundering' (as Luke put it) around Aylesbury when it was attacked and lost six or seven prisoners as it reached Thame. The regiment paid a second visit to Thame in December in the hope of surprising some enemy, but found none.⁵⁶⁷ The regiment mustered at Wadham College, Oxford, in February 1644,⁵⁶⁸ but was still in quarters at Wheatley in March receiving additional recruits from North Wales.⁵⁶⁹ On April 14th Luke learned that the regiment had evacuated its quarters in Oxford to make room for 2000 cavalry which had arrived in the town.⁵⁷⁰ On June 1st Luke learned that the Queen's Foot, with some townsmen in arms, was the only garrison force in Oxford, the Queen's only 500 strong but reinforced by the 19th.⁵⁷¹ On the 21st the regiment was at the rendezvous on Woodstock Plain, noted by Symonds, but returned to the city and did not fight at Cropredy.⁵⁷² Hence the observation by Sir Edward Walker to Lord Ruthven written at Oxford on June 26th, "The Lords will by no means part with the Queen's regiment of foot from hence".⁵⁷³ Nonetheless, it was marching towards Banbury, or was supposed to do so, on the 28th, when it was to be issued with bread and cheese.⁵⁷⁴ In September Colonel Henry Gage (not dealt with in the analysis) commanded 500 of the regiment to the relief of Basing House, and these "gallant Muskeittiers of the Queen's Life-guard" distinguished themselves at the second battle of Newbury in October.⁵⁷⁵ From this point they cease to be noticed, but were probably back in Oxford garrison.⁵⁷⁶

Colonel Henry (Lord) Jermyn: Dealt with as colonel of the Queen's Horse, Appendix 1).

Lt. Colonel Richard Gerard: Probably the active commander of the regiment, since Jermyn was preoccupied with the Horse. Second son of Sir Thomas Gerard of the Bryn, Lancashire, and styled himself of Garswood, Esquire, he was born in 1613 and saw military service in Spain from 1638 to 1640. Suspected of Catholic Recusancy, it was not proved, and he eventually compounded on a fine of £100 having no personal estate, in 1646. He is noticed in Oxford on July 20/1

receiving a "skeane" of match for the "Queen's Garde" at Merton College: and again, on May 31st 1644, handing in nine muskets and six pikes for repair. Gerard had been commander of the Queen's bodyguard on her voyage from the Hague to Bridlington in 1643, and was also her cup-bearer. He attended King Charles during his imprisonment at Hurst Castle, and died at Ince in 1686. His career implies that although Recusancy could not be proved against him, he may well have been a Catholic.⁵⁷⁷

Major William Blunt: Cited in the List, his rank a promotion. He was a captain on March 20th 1644 when he received 102 muskets and equipment at Oxford: and he may well be the ensign discharged from the army in 1640 as a Catholic. He was third of the seven sons of Sir George Blunt of Sodington, Worcestershire, Bart., and the two older sons were both in arms.⁵⁷⁸

Major John Hughes: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, he ought reasonably to have preceded Blunt in the rank, but if so, what became of him we do not know. It may be that the Major Hue, captured at Naseby, is the same man, in which case Blunt's promotion would be extraordinarily late indeed, but not impossibly so. Hughes has not been identified.⁵⁷⁹

Major Rhys Thomas: Alluded to between December 1642 and June 1643 in Oxford garrison receiving materials from the stores. "Reece Thomas" was receiving spades and picks in August 1643 as well: Roy identifies him as the fifth son of Sir William Thomas of Aber, Caernarvonshire, and he was eventually killed, at Naseby, as a colonel. Rhys Thomas appears as a field commander in his own right in the List with two Glamorganshire claimants. They are not included in the analysis because there yet remains to be found a link between Major Thomas of the Queen's Foot and Colonel Thomas, although Roy assumed that he replaced Gerard as colonel.⁵⁸⁰

Captain John Buttery: Claimed in the List from Durham. He was of Nesbitt, Gentleman, an undischarged delinquent in 1651. He petitioned to compound in 1650 and eventually paid a fine of £165. To do this, he had to abjure his Catholicism, which is evidenced by his mother's Recusancy in 1630 and his own in 1624 when he was harboured by Thomas Craithorne of Craithorne.⁵⁸¹

Captain [] Hilliard: He received match, powder and shot for the regiment on January 18th 1644 when it was quartered at Wheatley. There is a specific reference to his own company.⁵⁸²

Captain Sydrack Jorey: Claimed in the List from Kent, his rank must have been given him sometime after 1644, since in a petition which he presented in 1660 he said that he had

been clerk to the earl of Cumberland's Council of War, and then Commissary to the Queen on her march south in the summer of 1643. The crucial point is his claim that he was captured at Marston Moor, which must mean either that he was not then with the Queen's Foot, or, that he (perhaps with a detachment from the regiment) marched with Rupert to the relief of York in May and June 1644. If this is the case, there is no other evidence for any of the Lifeguard on Marston Moor: but the case of Colonel Sir John Mayney (q.v., Appendix 1) does indicate that we know a good deal less about the composition of the Royalist army at Marston Moor than Young supposed.⁵⁸³

Captain Francis Poore: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, perhaps a Frenchman. Walker noted that at the relief of Basing by this regiment when commanded by Colonel Gage in September 1644, Poore commanded a rearguard of 60 to 70 muskets which covered the withdrawal after a successful provisioning of the house. Of this body, 20 commanded by a sergeant were left behind to make good the retreat of the rest. Poore cannot be identified.⁵⁸⁴

Captain [] (St.) Michael: Cited in the List, and conceivably the same as (but not assumed to be) Captain Anthony de St. Mark (q.v., below). A French Catholic professional, St. Michael, although defying identification, figures notably in two sources. He is clearly the Captayne St. Mesehall receiving two halberts at Oxford on November 9th 1643. He was captured at Rowton Heath in 1645 as "Captain of the Queen's [own] troop, and with him a Scarfe taken, which the Queen took from about her necke and gave him to weare as Colours for her". In Paris on January 4th 1647:

Last Wednesday about three o'clock in the afternoon a bloody duel was fought on horseback...upon the way of Pont de Neuilly in the forest of Boulogne between four officers who formerly followed the King of England's party, viz. Colonel Sir Thomas Sandys, Monsieur de St. Michel, Frenchman borne, heretofore Captain of Horse, for his Majesty, Colonel Ambrose Jennings second to the said Sandys, and Mr. Wittfield, a Scotchman, gentleman of the horse to Prince Rupert, second to the said St. Michel. Their quarrel was because St. Michel won some sixty pistoles to Sandys who refused to pay, yea and give him a bill in writing, alleging in derision that he could not write. Thereupon the said St. Michel did challenge him, and being come to the rendezvous with their seconds, having charged their pistols one before the other, at the first discharge Colonel Sandys received five bullets in his arm, St. Michel hurt and fallen down by fear of his horse, in raising himself struck with his sword the same Colonel in the arm...

Both seconds were killed.⁵⁸⁵

Captain [] Sturges: "A gallant, daring young man" who served at the relief of Boarstall House on June 12th 1644 and was killed before Basing in September.⁵⁸⁶

Lieutenant Ralph Brown: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. In view of the Lancashire origin of the regiment, this is possibly Ralph Brown of Aspall near Wigan, yeoman, Constable and Assessment Collector to the earl of Derby, who was fined £11.⁵⁸⁷

Lieutenant Nicholas Porter: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, seventh of the seven sons of Joseph Porter of Wery-Hall, Cumberland, who died in 1649, and had been presented as a Recusant in September 1629. A Nicholas Porter of Shield Row, Co. Durham, the son of Nicholas Porter of the same, was married by a Catholic priest in 1628.⁵⁸⁸

Lieutenant Richard Robinson: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. Perhaps a Lancashire man. Such a man was the eldest son of John Robinson of Crosthwaite: or the second son of Richard Robinson of Buckshow in Euxton, born in 1614 and living in 1665.⁵⁸⁹

Ensign [] La Route: Evidently a Frenchman, signing on November 9th 1643 for two halberts at Oxford for Captain St. Michel's company.⁵⁹⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Butler (? Buttery), cited in the List.

Captain Thomas Cooke, cited in the List.

Captain James Crompton, cited in the List.

Captain Anthony de St. Mark, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Captain [] Tallowcarne, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Edmund Garnet, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Poore's company.

Lieutenant William Hopkins, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Lieutenant John Livermore, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain St. Michel's company.

Ensign Christopher Buttery, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Butler's company (this implies Butler may well be an error for Buttery, see above).

Ensign Henry Earle, claimed in the List from Oxfordshire, Major Blunt's company.

Ensign John FitzJames, claimed in the List from Dorset.

Ensign Thomas Hazard, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Tallowcarne's company.

Ensign John Knight, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Cooke's company.

Ensign Robert Moore, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Buttery's company.

Colonel Sir John RAMSDEN'S Regiment of Foot.

Raised in Yorkshire, perhaps from a Trainband force (see Major Wilson, below); beyond its presence at Selby in April 1644 where it was very probably ruined, we know next to nothing of its activities. One "John Digles of Hutherfield a souldier under S^r John Ramsden" was buried in Leeds on December 8th 1643.⁵⁹¹

Colonel Sir John Ramsden: Second of the three sons, but heir, of William Ramsden of Longley, Esquire, who died in 1623. Sir John was born in 1594, knighted in 1619, served as High Sheriff in 1636 and as MP for Pontefract in 1628 and 1640. He was also a JP. A landowner with substantial coal interests, he was appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642 and was one of those active in bringing the earl of Newcastle into Yorkshire. He waited upon the Queen at Bridlington in the following year, and in January 1644 was commanded to raise Trainband forces (additional to his own regiment) to serve in the campaign against the Scots. He remained in Yorkshire with Belasyse, and was captured at the battle of Selby on April 11th. Imprisoned in the Tower until the end of May, he was then exchanged, and became a divisional commander in Pontefract from 1644 to its surrender in 1645. Going thereupon into Newark garrison, he died in March 1646 still in arms. His estates being entailed, the family avoided ruinous composition proceedings.⁵⁹²

Lt. Colonel Leonard Tyndal: Rank and regiment are conjectured from the evidence. Second of the five sons of Francis Tyndal(1) of Brotherton near Leeds, and was noted in 1643 as a Catholic commissioned by Newcastle. He served in Pontefract garrison under Ramsden, and was apparently killed in action early in 1645.⁵⁹³

Major Marmaduke Wilson: Of Monk Fryston and Deighton, Yorkshire, and styled Gentleman. He admitted to the rank and regiment in his composition, and stated that he had been a Trainband major which may suggest such an origin for the entire regiment. In York at its surrender, Wilson compounded on a fine of £320 in 1646. In July 1653 he was fined £1 at Malton Quarter Sessions for (with others) "makeing scandalous proclamations, to the disturbance of the publique peace". Thurloe was informed in 1656 that Charles II had issued a commission to a 'Major Wilson'.⁵⁹⁴

Captain Henry Grice: Cited in the List, and a prisoner at Selby (see Vol. 1). Unless he died of wounds, Henry may be an error for Francis Grice of Sandal, Gentleman, who yielded upon the fall of York and compounded in 1648 on a fine of £75. He was dead by March 1666.⁵⁹⁵

Captain [] Pilkington: Cited in the List. Probably Richard Pilkington of Longley whose wife, in 1646, petitioned to compound on her husband's behalf, he being too unwell to do so. She alluded to his service in Pontefract. He must also be the Richard Pilkington of Kirkheaton and of Crigglestone, who compounded in 1649 on a fine of £258.6.8d. Pilkington of Longley died in 1653, Pilkington of Kirkheaton's will was dated July 1652 and proved in June 1653. Styled Esquire.⁵⁹⁶

Ensign Hugh Ramsden: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Grice's company. Captured at Selby (see Vol. 1). Probably Hugh Ramsden of Skirehouse mills, Huddersfield, yeoman, probate granted October 1678.⁵⁹⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Thomas Meux, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant Henry Snowdale, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Pilkington's company.

Quartermaster Robert Wright, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir John REDMAN'S (Regiment of) Foot (Pontefract Garrison).

A force of which we know little, but in view of its duties, this is not surprising. Like Redman's Dragoons (q.v., Appendix 3), it played little or no part in the campaigns of 1643, and by that time that Pontefract assumed importance as a garrison, in December 1644, Redman had ceased to command there and his regiment must have been broken up, its officers dispersed to other units. From what details we have concerning Redman himself, however, it would appear that this regiment was either a Parliamentary force initially (in 1642) or else, a force serving in Ireland which came across early in 1643 well ahead of the more general influx in the autumn and winter of that year. The wording of this evidence is ambiguous, as will be seen, but if this was a Parliamentary unit (or even a wavering Trainband force) then it probably changed sides in March 1643 when the Queen arrived from Holland.

Colonel Sir John Redman: Extremely little is known of him. The son of William Redman of Thornton in Lonsdale, he was himself styled of Wrayton in Lancashire. According to Burke, writing of Sir John Otway, who was Redman's brother in law (by Redman's first marriage), Otway was instrumental in "bringing over" Redman's regiment to the King. Saville noticed Redman as governor of Pontefract in a letter in September 1643. He relinquished his command there in October or November 1644 when his consumptive condition became worse, and died in 1645. His daughter petitioned to compound in 1646 for the Wrayton property, on a fine of £40, doubtless fixed at one tenth because she was the widow of a Parliamentary commander. In 1649 she also petitioned to compound for the Thornton lands. In 1660 Hugh Redman, one of Sir John's six children by his second marriage, petitioned the King for a place in the Royal Life Guard or as Page of the Back Stairs, stating that his father's death had left the family destitute.⁵⁹⁸

Captain [] Cartwright: Cited in the List. Robert Cartwright of Hull, draper, at his composition, was accused of taking a commission as a captain after having been put out of Hull by the Hothams. It was said that he raised a foot company by this commission, and that he had served in the siege of Hull (presumably in 1643). He "did ordinarily ride in the Earl of Newcastle's army being armed with sword and pistols". It was said that although he had gone to Holland thereafter, he voluntarily came back to Newcastle and assisted with supplies of war materials. Cartwright claimed that he had been turned out of Hull and gaoled when he tried to return, being freed to depart on pain of death if he came back again (how influential or dangerous was he?). He then went to Holland, and upon the return in 1644 after the fall of the Hothams, had been obliged to dwell temporarily in York, which fact had occasioned the belief that he was a delinquent and his property in Hull so treated that he was now impover-

ished. The committee seems to have accepted Cartwright's plea, and a fine of £47, taking into account that he had goods valued at £20 and £300 worth of debts was assessed. This may have been a piece of successful concealment by Cartwright, and the case is interesting in this sense. After all, if he had been unable to get into Hull in 1644, he might have gone to a West Riding town rather than to York if he wished to avoid being thought of as a delinquent. Whether he is Redman's captain is conjectural, but seems not improbable.⁵⁹⁹

Captain William Redman: Regiment is conjectural, but likely. The eldest son of Colonel Redman, he was killed in action on March 21st 1645 in the defence of Pontefract.⁶⁰⁰

Lieutenant Thomas Ogden: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Cartwright's company. Such a man of York died before 1678 when his will was granted probate.⁶⁰¹

Colonel Sir Thomas RIDDELL'S Foot (Tynemouth Garrison).

As has been pointed out in the case of Riddell's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1), this was probably never a real regiment as such. We know virtually nothing of its activities, for until the siege of Newcastle and the change of military control in Northumberland in 1644, its task must have been to guard the mouth of the Tyne and to keep watch on craft coming and going on the coast. Soldiers from the garrison were in action in March 1644 (see Vol. 1) but briefly and unspectacularly.

Colonel Sir Thomas Riddell: "The Riddells of Gateshead and Fenham were the most prominent Catholic family in the immediate area" of Newcastle. Styled of Fenham, Sir Thomas was second of the five sons of Sir Thomas Riddell of Fenham and Gateshead who died in 1650, and brother of George Riddell, Advocate General to the earl of Newcastle's army (see Vol. 1). A Commissioner of Array in Co. Durham, and of Oyer and Terminer, in 1642, he was appointed governor in Tynemouth much to the disgust of Colonel Sir John Marley in Newcastle (q.v., his Foot). Marley long after considered this appointment to have been a major error on Newcastle's part, but there remains no evidence to support that view. He seems to have been in Newcastle in October 1644 (see Vol. 1). After surrendering Tynemouth in the same month, he went into exile, his property sequestered, and died in Antwerp in 1652.⁶⁰²

Major [] Clarke: Cited in the List. It would appear that whilst the presence of a Charles Clarke in Newcastle in October 1644 would lend support to the contention that Riddell was also, briefly, there, this major is very probably the Lt. Colonel Robert Clarke of Lumley and Sligborne, Co. Durham, whose property and coal and mineral interests were sequestered in December 1644. Robert Clarke had a pass from the King in 1646 to journey abroad, and in 1649 was bound over on sureties of £1000 to be of good behaviour and to keep the peace. Although inclining to Robert Clarke as our major, and in consequence accepting that he may have been promoted to lt. colonel by Riddell, the linking evidence is not extant.⁶⁰³

Captain Thomas Paul: Cited in the List, and evidently the same as Captain Thomas Paul who claimed in the List under Riddell's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1). This is an example of the lack of any real distinctions between the mounted and the foot. Paul may be the Catholic captain that the Parliamentarian sequestrator, Thomas Shadforth, was accused of protecting in 1647, even going to the lengths of intimidating witnesses.⁶⁰⁴

Lieutenant Christopher Errington: Claimed in the List from Newcastle in Captain Paul's company. Such a man of Newcastle was a Recusant in 1665.⁶⁰⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain George Partridge, claimed in the List from Suffolk.

Captain [] Proctor, cited in the List.

Ensign Robert Hanworth, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Proctor's company.

Ensign Robert Marshal, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Paul's company.

Ensign Robert Pinckard, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Clarke's company.

Colonel Sir William ROBINSON'S (Regiment of) Foot.

A force which does not seem ever to have arrived at a full regimental structure, neither lt. colonel or major being identified, or even alluded to in the List. That Robinson had some Foot at Selby in April 1644 seems evident (see Vol. 1 and below), but beyond that, particularly in the case of Young's suggestion that the 'regiment' may have served at Marston Moor, it does not seem possible to go.

Colonel Sir William Robinson: According to Dugdale, and to Clay his editor, Sir William was born in 1580, and died in 1658. Foster, however, whilst accepting the latter date, gave the date of birth as 1601. He was the son and heir of William Robinson of York, merchant, who was mayor of the town in 1618, and was himself styled of Newby or of Roecliffe, although his principle property was in Clifton. Knighted at Edinburgh in 1634, he was Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1639 and a Commissioner of Array in 1642. He may have fought at Selby in April 1644, and was certainly in York when it surrendered in July. In his composition Sir William stated that from the fall of York he had lived quietly at home, and had taken the covenant in 1645. A fine of £1,377 was imposed, reduced from £2,175. A "Colonel Robinson" was at Warrington during the 1651 rising, but is probably not the same man. Sir William may, at most, have put in a token presence.⁶⁰⁶

Captain Thomas Mascall: Cited in the List, of the family of Mascall of Eppleton, Co. Durham, Thomas was settled in York. Second of the two sons of Richard Mascall of Ricall. He died in 1662, and his will was granted a further probate in 1682.⁶⁰⁷

Captain Thomas Scudamore: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. He was born in 1596, fifth of the seven sons of Thomas Scudamore of Overton who died in 1621. He is probably the Thomas Scudamore of Kilnsey in Holderness who died in 1662.⁶⁰⁸

Lieutenant Jonas Mascall: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mascall's company, and perhaps the Ensign Maskew captured at Wakefield in May 1643. He was born in 1620, the son and heir of his captain, and died in 1676 as a citizen of York.⁶⁰⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Taylor, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Ensign Henry Scudamore, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Edward ROSTERN'S Regiment of Foot (Lathom Garrison).

(See also Rostern's Horse). The exploits of this regiment are tied up with the events of the siege of Lathom, which are covered in detail elsewhere (see Vol. 1).

Colonel Edward Rostern: A complicated pedigree, in that we are dealing with three generations of the name of Edward. Colonel Rostern appears to have been the eldest son of Edward Rostern, Esquire, of New Hall, Lancashire, and Colonel Rostern's son, also called Edward, was in arms at Manchester in September 1642 where he is referred to as "Master Rosterne of Newhall jnr". Edward the patriarch died c. 1622, but when Colonel Rostern was born is not clear, although to have had a son of military age in 1642 would mean that our colonel had to be born in or before 1605. Colonel Rostern must have begun his military career as a captain under the earl of Derby, hence his association with Lathom, for he was promoted to a colonelcy when Rupert relieved the garrison in June 1644. As captain, Rostern took part in the storm of Lancaster and the recapture of Preston in March 1643. Whilst commanding in Lathom, he led a raid to Ormskirk "expos(ing) himself to more hazard and danger than he ought to have done as chief commander". Colonel Rostern died c. 1650/1. He had been, on the eve of the war, a JP and a Foreign Burgess of Preston.⁶¹⁰

Captain Henry No(w)el(l): Referred to by rank in the defence of Lathom. The seventh son of Roger Nowell of Rede, Esquire, in 1664 he was deputy governor of the Isle of Man. A Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642 and 1662.⁶¹¹

Captain Charles Ratcliffe: Cited in the List. Probably son and heir of Saville Radcliffe of Todmorden who died in 1652. Such a man was styled Esquire when, in 1632, he was in arrears for his composition as a Recusant in the North Riding of Yorkshire.⁶¹²

Captain Molyneux Ratcliffe: Cited in the List, and one of the heroes of the defence (his exploits are dealt with extensively in Vol. 1). Unfortunately, all attempts to identify him have proved fruitless, but there may be a clue in his name. If the identification of Captain Charles Ratcliffe is accurate, then in view of Charles's father's forename of Saville, Molyneux Ratcliffe may have been this Saville's brother. Molyneux was killed in action.

Lieutenant Reginald Bennet: Claimed in the List in Molyneux Ratcliffe's company. Perhaps one of the seven sons of George Bennet of Thornton le Moors and Gresby. This Reginald was living in 1613 and had a son and heir alive then named George.⁶¹³

Lieutenant Edward Dickensen: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Charles Ratcliffe's company. Perhaps first of the seven sons of William Dickensen of Eccleston Gentleman. William and his son were all Foreign Burgesses of Preston in 1642.⁶¹⁴

Lieutenant Richard Heape: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Molyneux Ratcliffe's company. This must be Mr. Hepe, "an officer and Tenant to the said Earle of Derby" who was plundered in 1642 of 20 cows at his house near Pilkington. Derby's bailiff, he was actively recruiting in 1643 when one James Lewis was given a halbert and said "he would kill all the Roundheads".⁶¹⁵

Ensign Thomas Askew: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. A relatively common name in Lancashire at this time, but interestingly such a man of St. Dunstan in the Fields, Distiller, had probate granted his will in 1683.⁶¹⁶

Ensign Thomas Ballard: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Penkeath's company. Possibly a son of William Ballard of Speke, Gentleman, a Catholic delinquent dead by 1655, elsewhere alluded to as a yeoman.⁶¹⁷

Ensign James Greenhall: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was the seventh of the seven sons of John Greenhalgh (or Greenhall) of Brandlesome.⁶¹⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Penkeath, cited in the List.

Captain [] Roby, apparently in the garrison, see Vol. 1.

Colonel Sir Thomas SANDFORD'S (Regiment of) Foot.

Evidenced by Sandford's name on a list of commissions, and by the List itself, but this regiment is another of those 'paper' Cumbrian formations which, if it did anything, did it discreetly.

Colonel Sir Thomas Sandford: Of Howgill Castle, Westmorland, created a baronet in 1641 and returned as MP for Cockermouth in a disputed election in 1640. Sandford was disabled before the dispute was settled, and is not dealt with by Keeler. Commissioned in 1643, at his composition he petitioned that he had never left the county and had probably never exercised his rank beyond a company or two. In October 1644 he had already conformed and taken the covenant, having yielded in September. Taxed in 1656 for £20, he was dead by May 1665.⁶¹⁹

Captain Henry Ward: Claimed in the List from Westmorland. Of Rignadon, he petitioned in 1647 for having assisted the King, and again in 1650 (does this mean a 1648 delinquency as well as the earlier one?). He compounded on a fine of £105 in 1652.⁶²⁰

Ensign Christopher Dobson: Claimed in the List from Westmorland. The son of Christopher Dobson of Dufton, signing, with his father, the 1641/2 Protestation. In 1651 the local sequestration committee delivered evidence against him, but there is no trace of any judgement.⁶²¹

Captain John Ector, claiming in the List from Westmorland, has not been identified.

Colonel Sir William SAVILLE'S Regiment of Foot.

Based on a Trainband regiment commanded by Saville before the war. On July 20th 1642 the King ordered him to select 20 musketeers from each company to go to York by July 30th under a chosen captain,⁶²² perhaps as a Royal body-guard. The King probably remembered the regiment, for on May 9th 1639 "Sir William Savill's regiment, being Yorke-shire men, beeing 900 very able fellows, passed through Newcastle upon Tyne, and the King came downe to the court gate to see them march".⁶²³ The regiment fought at Leeds in January 1643 (see Vol. 1), but by July part at least had gone into garrison at Sheffield with the regimental major, Thomas Beaumont (q.v., below). On July 8th Saville ordered Beaumont to send to^{him} his own company and that of Captain Maude. These were to go to Halifax for further orders, and the dragoons (presumably Saville's own, q.v., Appendix 3) were to act as escort as to bring in those who had not paid their assessments.⁶²⁴ In action at Winceby in October 1643 (see Vol. 1), where it may have disgraced itself, the regiment was stationed in the Isle of Axholm during the winter of 1642/3 under the nominal control of Colonel Sir John Mayney (q.v., Appendix 1).⁶²⁵ What became of it thereafter is hard to say. Saville died in January 1644, and the regiment may either have dispersed or gone into Sheffield under Beaumont. See, however, Colonel Thomas Wheatley's Foot.

Colonel Sir William Saville: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Major Thomas Beaumont: Born in 1605, son and heir of Richard Beaumont of Lascelles Hall, Esquire, who died in 1656, and cousin to Sir Richard Beaumont of Whitley. A Trainband captain prior to the war, he was commissioned as major by Newcastle in December 1642. Reported to have drowned in the flight of the regiment from Leeds in January 1643, he soon after was put into the governorship of Sheffield as Sir William's deputy: "Your commission is as mine: which is to do what you have a mind to, for the good service". At what point, if at all, Beaumont ceased to serve as regimental major is not apparent. In the extant correspondence between him and his colonel, and with other officers, is a badly mutilated letter written by Saville on January 3rd 1644. In this, Saville alluded to his own company of foot, to Beaumont's and to the major's company. This may mean either that Beaumont had become lt. colonel (who is unidentified for this regiment) or that he had left the regiment when the duties of Sheffield garrison made it impossible for him to continue to exercise a field command. But if he left or was promoted, we do not know who replaced him, or who he may have replaced. After the surrender of Sheffield, he went into Pontefract garrison and petitioned to compound in 1645 when his wife informed the Goldsmith's Hall committee that her husband was too sick to travel by virtue of wounds sustained at Sheffield and at Pontefract, which is the only allusion which exists to his

having been wounded. He compounded on a fine of £700 by 1648, and thereafter remained quiet. Knighted at the restoration, he became a lt. colonel in the Trainband and died, a very rich man, seated at Whitley, in 1668.⁶²⁶

Captain John Audsley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, he is not to be confused with John Audley of Horbury, yeoman, who compounded on a fine of £100 as a cornet. This officer was John Audley or Audsley of Bentley in Emley, Gentleman, fined at Wakefield Quarter Sessions in 1642 for breaking and entering and for assault. A lieutenant in January 1643 when captured at Leeds, he is noted in April 1646 as a former captain under the earl of Newcastle serving with the Scots. In July 1660 he denounced Christopher Alured for seditious and treasonous words. Alured was the son of a Parliamentary colonel.⁶²⁷

Captain [] Batts: Cited in the List. Probably John Batts, first of the four sons of Robert Batts of Okewell who died in 1617. John, styled Esquire, is said in the pedigrees to have been a captain and to have fought at Adwalton Moor. He signed the articles arranged to bring Newcastle in the county in 1642. His company is mentioned at Bradford in December 1642, and at his composition he was styled of Birstal, Gentleman. It was said that he had surrendered in August 1644, and a fine of £546 was reduced to £346. On September 26th 1651 an order went out to the JPs of Middlesex to apprehend Captain John Batts and to bring him before the council for unspecified reasons. John Batte of Birstal and Okewell died in 1652.⁶²⁸

Captain [] Binns: Unidentified, and placed in this regiment because of the evidence which tends to imply his having served alongside Captain Batts. Binns was accused of murdering some Parliamentarian prisoners at Pontefract between October 25th and November 1st 1642. He was mortally wounded at Bradford on December 17th, and died within two days. (See Vol. 1).

Captain Charles Jackson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, rank and regiment also confirmed by the pedigrees. First of the two sons of Charles Jackson of Darrington and born in 1603. He may be the Charles Jackson of Carlton fined £133.6s. in 1646, who admitted having been in Pontefract garrison. Styled gentleman at his composition.⁶²⁹

Captain [] Maud(e): Cited by Saville himself in a letter to Beaumont mentioned above (regimental notation). The letter is dated July 8th 1643, and a Captain Maude was buried in York on October 27th, a date which might suggest a man mortally wounded at Winceby where this regiment was. He was Henry Maude of Helthwaite Hall, third son of Robert Maude of that place, Esquire, who died in 1632. Henry died sometime before 1649 according to the pedigrees.⁶³⁰

Captain [] Waterhouse: Cited by Saville in a letter to Beaumont on May 30th 1643, he was Robert Waterhouse of Netherton, Gentleman, a Catholic who had refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I. He appears as a juror at Wakefield Quarter Sessions in 1638, and as a Catholic prisoner taken at Leeds in January 1643. Perhaps taken again at Selby in April 1644, he was killed in the defence of Pontefract in December of the same year.⁶³¹

Lieutenant John Oxley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Beaumont's company. He must be the Cornet Oxley alluded to by Saville in a letter of May 29th 1643 as having run away (presumably at Wakefield) "his soldiers [as a consequence] would have stayed him, and he offered to pistoll them". Perhaps demoted to the Foot, he may have risen to a lieutenantancy by the end of the war. Perhaps a connection of the Oxleys of Morpeth, who had established a branch of the family at Ripon at this time, and who were all Royalists.⁶³²

Ensign Matthew Waterhouse: Son of the above Captain Waterhouse, styled as of Netherton, Gentleman, he petitioned in July 1646 and alluded to his father's rank and death. He returned home when his father was killed, and had lived peaceably to October 1646. A fine of £320 was reduced to £83 when this was proved, since it was accepted, so it would appear, that Matthew had been coerced by his father.⁶³³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Woodrow, cited in the List.

Ensign William Dawson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Batts's company.

Ensign Joseph Woodrow, claimed in the List, Captain Woodrow's company.

(Colonel) John SCROPE'S (Regiment of) Foot (Bolton Garrison).

This force is inserted tentatively into the analysis, since the only evidence for Scrope's colonelcy rests upon the List where a claimant cited a lt. colonel. Such evidence as there is concerning the siege of Bolton Castle has been dealt with (see Vol. 1), and it concerns also Colonel Henry Chaytor (q.v., Foot). John Scrope was the bastard son of Emmanuel Scrope earl of Sunderland, the eldest of four such children by Sunderland's mistress, Martha Janes. Bolton was technically, according to the composition papers, her house, and her son was claiming merely to have defended it. He yielded in November 1645 and came to London where he petitioned:

He has unhappily fallen within the notion of a delinquent for being in his own house, Bolton Castle, when it was defended against the Parliament's forces: but about the beginning of November last he surrendered the castle, and coming to town to take the benefit of the ordinance in favour of delinquents, presented himself before the Committee at Goldsmiths Hall, where his case was so far proceeded in that his fine had been cast up, and composition ready to be made for his estate: but now he hears that upon some misinformation it is proposed to except him from the benefit of the said ordinance; considering that he never stirred from his house, and committed no other crime but what, by his youth, he was misled into, he casts himself and his estate upon the mercy of Parliament, and prays that he may not be excluded from the benefit of the ordinance".

What this new "misinformation" may have been is not too hard to guess. Either proof of Scrope's commission had been found, or, even more importantly, some evidence that he was a Catholic (his father's Roman leanings had been quite notorious). Whatever the truth, a vicious and penal fine of £7000 was levied in May and he was ordered to sell his property to pay it. He died, apparently of the plague, in July in Covent Garden. He would seem rather to have been the victim of the Parliament as much as of disease.⁶³⁴

Of his officers, none can be identified. Lt. Colonel James is altogether too elusive, although a Mr. James of Billingham, Co. Durham, was a sequestered delinquent.⁶³⁵ Lieutenant John Walker of Yorkshire who claimed under Lt. Colonel James cannot be identified, and neither can Cornet John Smith who claimed to have served under Scrope in a troop of horse. If Scrope had any real command at all, his officers must have doubled as infantry or cavalry, and no separate horse listing has been given for Scrope.

Colonel Sir Guilford SLINGSBY'S Regiment of Foot.

So brief an existence did this regiment have, that what is known of it is inextricably bound up with its colonel's own career.

Colonel Sir Guilford Slingsby: Born in 1610, the son of Sir Guilford Slingsby of Bifrons, Kent, of a junior line of the Slingsbys of Scriven in Yorkshire. The eldest of his father's eight sons, Guilford rose to some prominence partly due to his father's influence (who was Comptroller of the Navy and died in 1620) and partly due to his own abilities. Admiral of Munster and Lieutenant of the Ordnance to Strafford in Ireland, he secured his MA at St. Andrew's, and sat as MP for Carysfort in Ireland in 1634. In January 1643 he was secretary to the Queen, although not then with her in Holland, but in Pontefract. On May 17th 1641, in the wake of Strafford's attainder, Slingsby was in some anxiety. He petitioned the Lords that in his capacity as Lieutenant of the Ordnance, he had to provide a magazine and artillery to be paid for by a tally on the company of soapfarmers set at £14,000. The tally not being fully paid, nonetheless, Slingsby had been obliged to carry the cost of equipment himself and Strafford had guaranteed that should the tally fail, he would recover the outlay. With Strafford's impeachment and attainder, Slingsby stood to be ruined for merely doing his duty. What came of this we do not know, but he seems to have recovered and was granted some of his old master's forfeited property. Seated at Hemlington, Yorkshire, Guilford was commissioned by Newcastle to raise a Foot regiment early in 1643, and an exchange of letters between them has been given elsewhere (see Vol. 1). Attacked by Sir Hugh Cholmeley at Guisborough in January, he was captured mortally wounded and died after surgery, being sent back to York for burial in the Minster. In 1649 his son Robert petitioned to compound and was fined £200. In 1651 he was able to secure his right to a debt of £5,880 owing to his father from pre-war services (the tally?).⁶³⁶

(Lt. Colonel Charles Slingsby): Conjectured, see him as colonel of foot in his own right.

Captain John Ogle: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, but only as under 'Slingsby' which may mean Guilford or (Colonel) Charles Slingsby, q.v. Unidentified.

(Colonel) Charles SLINGSBY'S (Regiment of) Foot.

Young accepted the existence of this regiment⁶³⁷ but it must be open to grave doubts. There are various possibilities. Firstly, that such a regiment was commissioned, but did not reach anything like full strength, as the List suggests. Secondly, that Charles may have been lt. colonel to Guilford Slingsby (q.v.) and have assumed command on the latter's death, of a regiment broken in its initial recruitment period. Thirdly, that Charles Slingsby was lt. colonel in another regiment (perhaps Glemham's Foot, q.v.) and had no independent command of his own, which is suggested in part by the report of Slingsby in the defence of Newcastle in February 1644.⁶³⁸ For want of any conclusive evidence, however, it has to be said that the matter is open.

(Colonel) Charles Slingsby: First of the two sons of Sir Arthur Slingsby of Bifrons, Kent, and styled thereof, which he sold in 1677. The father was created a baronet in 1657 in France, but there is no evidence beyond Sir Henry Slingsby that Charles was ever so honoured. After distinguishing himself at Newcastle in February 1644, "gave y^m such a repulse, y^t they forbore after to make any more attempts", he was killed in action on Marston Moor and buried in York Minster.⁶³⁹

Captain [] Marley: It is upon this officer, whether identified or not, that the link with Glemham turns. Cited in the List, the name Marley is sufficiently marked in Newcastle at this period to imply that if Slingsby held any real field command, it was in that garrison. He was not there, however, prior to February 1644, so far as can be ascertained, and of course, he was back in Yorkshire in July when he was killed. It is conceivable that he accompanied Glemham into the northern county in November and December 1643 (see Glemham, Appendix 1). As for Marley's identity, he is possibly Henry Marley of Hilton, yeoman, who served in the Newcastle garrison.⁶⁴⁰

Ensign Robert Pryor: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Marley's company. Unidentified.

Colonel Sir Henry SLINGSBY'S Regiment of Foot (City of York Regiment).

Based upon the Trainband regiment commanded by Slingsby before the war, and newly commissioned in May 1642 by the King.⁶⁴¹ He was to provide at once 20 men to serve as a guard for the King's person whilst he was in the city. Even so, Slingsby found in the Trainband "a great backwardness" and "few or none appear'd".⁶⁴² He seems to have entertained the idea of seeking a new commission for a volunteer regiment, and to have enlisted the held of Lord Crawford, but it was stipulated that he had to arm and pay such a regiment himself, which he could not. His Trainband regiment was fortunate in securing the services of two Scottish professionals, given to Slingsby by Patrick Ruthven, Lord Forth,⁶⁴³ one of whom was intended to become Lt. colonel, but the earl of Cumberland would not consent and instead withdrew 200 men from the regiment for his own purposes "[which] made y^e regiment little worth".⁶⁴⁴ On December 5th the earl of Newcastle issued Slingsby with a commission to raise a regiment of volunteers "by beating a drumme within the Northerne or any other parts of this kingdome".⁶⁴⁵ Slingsby received it on the 13th and he wrote, "I caus'd my drum to be beaten up in York, & other places, & those that came to be listed I caus'd to be billet'd amongst my Tenants, & when I had gotten them up to the number of 200, I had them mustred and afterwards receiv'd their pay of the treasurer...".⁶⁴⁶ The regiment was temporarily garrisoned in Stamford Bridge, and was with the army that marched to welcome the Queen ashore at Bridlington in March 1643. Thereafter, with occasional references to officers elsewhere, the regiment remained in garrison in York, Slingsby himself referring to it as present in the city whilst Marston Moor was fought and lost.⁶⁴⁷

Colonel Sir Henry Slingsby: Born in 1602, second of the three sons, but eventual heir, of Sir Henry Slingsby of Scriven, High Sheriff of Yorkshire and Vice President of the Council of the North, who died in 1634. Henry was MP for Knaresborough in 1625 and from 1640 to 1642, being defeated for the seat in 1628. He was also, for a time, deputy steward of the town. A Strafford man, created a baronet of Nova Scotia in 1638, Sir Henry voted against Strafford's attainder, although in 1658 someone who had known him alluded to him as "a melancholy man, and, as I knew him in Parliament, reserved and inactive...". A Commissioner of Array in 1642, he signed the letters to the earl of Newcastle which probably resulted in his commission, for the earl of Cumberland had not employed him and had, on the contrary, markedly avoided doing so. This may have been a reflection upon Slingsby's Straffordian associations, or can be taken as a hint to suggest that the scantily evidenced idea that Slingsby was a Church Papist may have some truth in it. Whilst this view has been strongly criticized, I find two points in its favour which can be touched upon here. Firstly, in a post-restoration broadsheet to which reference has frequently been made, the Catalogue, Sir

Henry is named as a Catholic. In the majority of other cases examined, taken from the Catalogue, definite evidence to support the contentions has been found. Thus, by this process of reasoning, the accuracy of the Catalogue is in itself an argument for Slingsby's Catholicism. Moreover, the omission of the earl of Derby from its tables of names, he was rumoured to have been converted, must support the authenticity argument. Secondly, Slingsby never sought to compound and his property was eventually purchased by Parliamentary relations. Seen as a signal example of Royalist defiance, it would have made more sense had he fled into exile, but he did not. Was he unwilling to publicly abjure a secret faith? He fought on Marston Moor, and after the battle, rode with Sir John Mayney's brigade, the exploits of which have been fully related (see Vol. 1). He ended the war in Newark garrison. Very much a fugitive figure for most of the Interregnum, he was arrested on suspicion in 1656 and gaoled in Hull. Upon his release he was rumoured to be in Hertfordshire but this was found to be untrue. A letter from Charles II to him was intercepted by Thurloe's agents and copied before being sent on, a sentence of which is worth quoting: "I cannot forbear to let you know, that I shall never forget the care of your sufferings". Slingsby was inveigled into a spurious conspiracy in 1658 - "I doubt he has been drawn in" wrote the man whose memory of Slingsby was quoted earlier - and he was executed in London in 1658.⁶⁴⁸

Lt. Colonel [] Metcalfe: Despite the similarity with the ranks in Colonel Thomas Slingsby's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1) it can be argued that this is a reference to Scroop Metcalfe, second son of Sir Thomas Metcalfe of Nappa who died in 1655. Scroop was born in 1608, and ended his career as major in Colonel William Legge's Horse at Oxford, where he was killed near Henley on Thames in September 1645. Legge's regiment was a Reformado force to judge from the List, and we know that Slingsby and some at least of his officers must have reached Oxford eventually after the end of the northern war. Such a transfer is compatible with other cases. Scroop was buried in St. Peter's Church, Oxford, on September 14th.⁶⁴⁹

Major [] Grey: Cited in the List, but see Thomas Slingsby's Horse, Appendix 1.

Captain Cuthbert Harrison: Cited in the List, he was of Acaster Malbis, first of the three sons of Thomas Harrison of the same who died in 1634. Cuthbert, born c. 1625, gave himself up to the Parliament in July 1645 and compounded for his estate on a fine of £350. Having surrendered, he turned informer, and was shot and wounded for his pains by a Royalist marksman during siege operations at High Erccall. He died in 1699.⁶⁵⁰

Captain Richard Mason: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, perhaps the man

wounded at Adwalton Moor in June 1643. In 1660 a Richard Mason petitioned for the Comptrollership at Hull, having been a captain, and before that a merchant, losing everything for his loyalty. He presumably secured the post, for in 1668 when described as "the exciseman" and a rogue, he was giving evidence for the prosecution in a case of seditious words. John Lee told Richard and William Mason that there was never so ill-favoured a face as the King's, and there had been no grace in the land since he returned.⁶⁵¹

Captain [] Waterton: Cited in the List, probably the Thomas Waterton, third son of Thomas Waterton of Walton Hall, Esquire, who died in 1641. Lord Fairfax cited Thomas as a Catholic commissioned by Newcastle, and his name was in the third Treason Act in respect of property at Carraw in Northumberland. Slingsby's brother in law, he was probably a Catholic Recusant as his father and mother had been.⁶⁵²

Lieutenant Thomas Fothergill: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Greys company. In view of the regiment's origin, probably Thomas Fothergill of York, dyer, probate granted December 1680.⁶⁵³

Lieutenant Thomas Lutton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Metcalfe's company. Second of the five sons of Ralph Lutton of Osgodby who died in 1623 and whose fifth son, William, was a Parliamentary officer. Thomas, styled captain in the pedigrees, was found murdered in a wood near Thirkleby in the years after 1660 "his mouth stuffed with moss". The senior Lutton line at Knapton had a Royalist compounder in William Lutton.⁶⁵⁴

Ensign Richard Atkinson: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Waterton's company. Richard Atkinson of Whixley admitted the rank when compounding. His father had also served as a gentleman volunteer at Adwalton Moor and in Pontefract. In 1650 a Richard Atkinson (father or son?) was charged that, in Castle Yard York, he had said "that all sequestrators were villaines, and, though he himself was lame, yet if hee was on horsebacke hee could beate five such Round-heads".⁶⁵⁵

Ensign George Heseltine: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, probably of Bilton, yeoman, who compounded in 1650 on a fine of £10 for adhering. Perhaps taken at Selby.⁶⁵⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Ensign Samuel Bales, claimed in the List from London/Westminster.

Ensign Walter Holmes, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Harrison's company.

Quartermaster Henry Wright, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir Robert STRICKLAND'S Regiment of Foot.

Although not the first regiment called to its colours by the King in the north, in that Colonel Sir Henry Slingsby's was raised some days earlier, and the same may be true of Metham's Foot, Strickland's was, in 1644, certainly the oldest regiment of northern foot; perhaps the oldest Royalist regiment in the country. Slingsby's underwent a transformation in December 1642, and Metham's had all but disappeared, whilst Strickland's, like Darcy's (q.v.) kept its fundamental Trainband shape. This regiment certainly has a better claim to the distinction of senior Foot regiment than has Sir William Pennyman's (q.v.). Much of the detail concerning the regiment's pre-war history is inextricably bound up with its colonel, and will be found below. It should also be seen in conjunction with the notes on (Colonel) Thomas Strickland's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1).

On May 16th 1642 Lord Howard of Escrick wrote a letter to Lord Keeper Littleton⁶⁵⁷ in which he noted that there was some doubt whether Strickland's regiment was to be raised or not, which implies that it had been rumoured some-time before, probably about the time that Slingsby's Foot, the City of York regiment, was commissioned. Strickland's warrant, to the Constables of Newton and Benningborough, survives:

By vertue of a warrant from his Maty to mee directed, his will and comaund is to give order to all the severall petty Constables within this division or hundred to cause all the Trayned Band souldiers of Sr Robert Strickland's Regimt with their officers and armes to meet att Sutton in the Fforest on Tuesday next the 17th of this instant May by Eight a clocke in the morninge where they shall receive further Comaunds and directions by the Colonell or S^reant Maior of y^e said Regiment. (658)

On May 23rd King Charles' order had been obeyed, and Lord Howard reported:

[The regiment] being met together, their officers have drawn them hither to this City [York], and billeted here, where, by Course, divers are called to attend at the Court, as a Guard for His Majesty's person. We do not hear that there is any Colonel, or Lieutenant Colonel; but one Captain Duncombe [see below], who was Serjeant Major (and one who was sent for as a Delinquent touching the petitioning to stay the Magazine), is the active man, that both raised them and commands in chief..(659).

The regiment was certainly attending the King on May 24th.⁶⁶⁰ Howard's uncertainty as to the colonel of the regiment suggests only that Strickland had not himself put in an appearance. It is also clear that this regiment, in providing a guard for the King, was capable of doing what Slingsby's was unable to do (q.v.). Records of payment to the regiment survive from July and August, as well as the name of its provost marshal, William Coleman.⁶⁶¹ In action at the futile 'siege' of Hull, part of it was beaten up at Anlaby by Meldrum in early August, when it was commanded by Lt. Colonel Duncombe (a promotion). According to family tradition, the regiment fought at Edgehill where it was

commanded by Thomas Strickland, whilst Sir Robert is said to have commanded a cavalry force (a troop?). Young, however, did not mention this at all in his study of the battle.⁶⁶² It must clearly have returned north immediately afterwards, for Slingsby noted that it was in garrison at Stamford Bridge in the late spring of 1643.⁶⁶³ On November 3rd 1643 100 muskets and bandoliers were issued to it from the York magazine, and on the 14th 62 muskets, whilst the regiment was apparently, at Scarborough.⁶⁶⁴ It would appear to have fought at Selby in April 1644, and to have taken part in the defence of York (see Vol. 1), whilst Young suggested, with good reason, that the regiment fought on Marston Moor as well,⁶⁶⁵ although he erroneously termed it 'Sir Richard Strickland's'. That it dispersed with the fall of York is most probable.

Colonel Sir Robert Strickland: First of the three sons of Sir Thomas Strickland of Sizergh, KB, who had died before 1619, Sir Robert was himself styled of Thornton Bridge and Kilnsea in Yorkshire. Although his wife was listed as a Recusant in 1623 and 1629, Sir Robert himself was never indicted, but was viewed by his contemporaries as a Church Papist, and his son was a decided Catholic. Knight of the Shire for Westmorland in 1624, MP for Aldborough in 1640/2, by the outbreak of war Sir Robert was bankrupt. A Commissioner of Array, his military experience, at least in the administration and organising sense, was relatively wide. The Strickland Mss. contain a good deal of Trainband material which can be summarised here. On September 18th 1638 Strafford commissioned him as a Trainband colonel (it was Strafford's influence, apparently, which secured him the Aldborough seat in 1640); on April 6th 1640, he was appointed a deputy lieutenant in the North Riding (which post entailed control of the Trained Bands); and he was ordered to march with his regiment to Newcastle on Tyne against the Scots. On August 29th his regiment was to be mustered at Northallerton, and instructions went out on September 3rd to (Colonel) Sir Edward Osborne (q.v., Appendix 1) for the apprehension of deserters from the regiment. His appointment as a deputy lieutenant was confirmed in July 1641, and on the same day the earl of Essex confirmed his Trainband colonelcy. In July and August 1642 he received £56 as colonel. There is some evidence to contradict the family tradition that Strickland or his regiment served at Edgehill. On October 20th the earl of Cumberland ordered Strickland to bring his regiment to York there to receive further orders in defending the county against 'marauders' acting without royal authority, a nice way of referring to Hotham and his Hull raiders. Moreover, a letter survives written by Strickland on October 5th to a lady in Cumberland (perhaps a Curwen relation of his mother) which, although no place of origin is set down, clearly recounts news rather than first-hand experience of what the main royal army was doing. In the letter, Strickland gave a lot of rumour, gossip and fact, some of which is certainly worth relating here. He noted, for example, the general view that Goring had done his best

at Portsmouth and would be well received by the King, which tends to contradict the view generally held of that episode. Goring would add to the royal army which was already 10,000 strong in foot, with 40 troops of horse and no less than 3000 dragoons (this is clearly an over-estimate). There then followed a lengthy, detailed, almost eye-witness account, of a cavalry action at Worcester in which Prince Rupert and his brother Maurice played an important part, but were both wounded. He ended "Thus I have given you an account of all I know and I shall doe hereafter when I meete with anythinge that I think comes not to your knowledge". Clearly, he was still in Yorkshire. Strickland's signature appeared on the letters designed to bring Newcastle into Yorkshire, and in May 1643 he was Governor of Stamford Bridge. Possibly at Adwalton Moor in June 1643 (see Vol. 1 for a discussion of this), he was certainly in York on July 16th when it surrendered. A safe conduct for himself and for his family was issued to him by the Earl of Leven, who on April 9th 1646 complained that Sir Robert had been sequestered contrary to the articles agreed upon for the surrender of York, although he had lived quietly since then. In arms in 1648, and captured at Appleby, he seems to have remained well in retirement until Monck's march south at the Restoration, in which he played his part. After 1660 he withdrew from public life, although he was named in 1664 as a commissioner for regulating corporations in Yorkshire. He died in 1670. His political philosophy is admirably summed up, we may suppose, in advice to Charles II which he gave to his son, Sir Thomas. The King, he said, should "play Rex to God's glory, his own preservation, and the Kingdom's good".⁶⁶⁶

Lt. Colonel [] Duncombe: Cited in this rank in this regiment in July and August 1642, previously a captain and major (see regimental notation). Strickland's original lt. colonel cannot have fallen in with the events of the summer of 1642, hence Duncombe's promotion. See Colonel Sir Edmund Duncombe, Appendix 1.

Major Anthony Frankland: Cited in the List, evidently a pre-war and war time officer, rising to become major when Duncombe was promoted. Of Ellerton, Esquire, the only son of Sir Henry Frankland of the Aldwark, York, who had died in 1624. He refused knighthood at Charles I's coronation, and was presented as a Recusant in 1636, and 1638, his wife in 1626 and 1641, although he may have conformed since his composition records make no allusion to any Papist leanings. He signed the April 1642 petition of the Yorkshire gentry as a captain, and appears as major in July and August, in the latter month paying over money to Captain Gee of Griffiths's Foot (q.v.). Fined £198.5s. at his composition, he had petitioned in 1649 and may have been in arms in 1648 as well. A Recusant in 1674.⁶⁶⁷

Major Dymock Sadlington: Cited in the List. His mere presence may mean that Frankland succeeded Duncombe as lt. colonel.

Yet before that can be anything more than conjecture, attention must be paid to the case of Captain Thomas Strickland (see below). Sadlington was captured at Selby in April 1644, and is clearly the 'Demick Saddleton' who signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Norton and Stockton in Co. Durham. The Norton and Stockton origin forms a link with Duncombe, (q.v.).⁶⁶⁸

Captain Thomas Denton: Conjectured. Vicars reported a Denton Strickland killed before Hull in October 1643, and Vicars drew his information from a letter from Meldrum in which Denton and Strickland are separated by a comma. Evidently, we are dealing with some short-hand form of 'Denton of Strickland's Foot'. Thomas Denton, son and heir of Henry Denton of Warnell-Denton who died in 1636, was killed as a captain of foot before Hull in 1643.⁶⁶⁹

Captain [] Jones: Possibly Lieutenant Robert Jones, cited in Henry Belasyse's Trainband Foot in July 1642, which regiment was dispersed before the outbreak of war. On November 9th his company was not yet fully equipped (1643) and was to have 100 muskets. He received 62 on November 14th. Cited in the List.⁶⁷⁰

Captain Matthias Nevil: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster. He was at the Bradford fight on December 17th 1642, which provides an additional clue to the regiment's whereabouts, and was captured at Selby (see Vol. 1). Unidentified.

Captain Walter Slingsby: Trainband rank in July and August 1642, and on June 5th 1644 a colonel in his own right at Oxford. Probably fourth son of Guilford Slingsby and a brother of Colonel Guilford Slingsby (q.v.). Rupert called him a 'rogue' in a letter to Will Legge in March 1645. Styled Esquire, he surrendered on Pendennis articles and petitioned in 1647.⁶⁷¹

Captain Thomas Strickland: Conjectured, see (Colonel) Sir Thomas Strickland, Appendix 1.

Captain [] Strickland: Cited in the List, and whilst possibly an allusion to Thomas Strickland, quite probably this is Walter Strickland, second of the three sons of Colonel Sir Robert. He was commissioned in the regiment in March 1643, and came to possess Sizergh after his father's death. He may be the Walter Strickland mentioned in the composition papers alluding to George Preston of Nateby (q.v., Preston's Horse, Appendix 1). In that, Walter is described as of Rydale, and of Nateby, Gentleman. Probably the Recusant, of Thorntonⁿ Bridge presented in 1623 at Quarter Sessions. Walter was a die-hard Royalist, deeply implicated in the plots of the Interregnum years. In 1655 he was present at the Marston Moor rendezvous which was intended to lead to the seizure of York,

and was responsible for dispersing the conspirators when success became impossible. In 1656 he petitioned Robert Lilburne for more time to make arrangements for his banishment overseas as the Council of State gave him until April 1657. On the 7th of that month a further three weeks was allowed to him. Awarded a £200 yearly pension in 1662, he was by then a JP and sat on the commission for regulating corporations in Yorkshire.⁶⁷²

Captain Thomas Thomlinson: Rank and regiment cited in his composition, but he apparently laid down his arms in the summer of 1643 and was fined £58 in 1646. He was eldest of the four sons of George Thomlinson of Birdforth who died in 1624 and was himself born in 1608, dying in 1669.⁶⁷³

Lieutenant Richard Dagget: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Clough's company. Captured at Selby. Richard Dagget of Howe, yeoman, was a juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions and at Thirsk in 1635, styled also of Ainderby Whenhow(e), but these seem to be two distinct men. Such a man was Chief Constable of Hallikeld in 1668. Perhaps a case of father and son, the father being Treasurer for Lane Soldiers, noted at Richmond in 1627.⁶⁷⁴

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Byrom (Byron?) listed in July and August 1642.

Captain George Clough, cited in the List.

Captain [] Jackson, listed in July and August 1642.

Captain [] Terwhitt, listed in July and August 1642 (see also Newcastle's Foot and Edward Musgrave's Foot).

Captain [] Wharton, listed as such in July and August 1642.

Lieutenant Francis Carter, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Jones's company.

Lieutenant Arthur Harper, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Strickland's company (perhaps taken at Selby, see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant William Pitchard, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Frankland's company.

Lieutenant John Skipwith, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Sadlington's company.

Ensign Thomas Hopps, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Clough's company.

Quartermaster Robert Bell, listed in July and August 1642.

Quartermaster Stephen Slater, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

(Colonel) Gilbert SWINHOE'S Foot.

The only evidence for any such force rests upon the List, and upon a source dated to 1645. There may be some military connection with (Colonel) James Swinhoe (q.v., Clavering's Foot).

(Colonel) Gilbert Swinhoe: Cited in the List as a field commander. He was the son of William Swinhoe of Berwick who died c. 1603, and was styled as of Chatton, Esquire, in 1638 when presented before the Court of High Commission for failing to execute orders coming from the court. The earl of Northumberland's bailiff for Chatton although himself a freeholder, he was also married to a Catholic. She was descended from a Spanish mercenary family, the Guevara, which had settled in Berwick in the reign of Mary I. His wife was the central figure in a witchcraft case in 1650. Whether Gilbert was himself a Catholic, for he was not a Recusant, in the light of the available evidence, is hard to say. High Sheriff of Northumberland at the outbreak of war, he was appointed a Commissioner of Array and to the commission of Oyer and Terminer in that county. Captured in 1644 or early in 1645, he was released on bond, and used the opportunity in September of the latter year to try to reach Montrose in Scotland with raiders recruited in Tynedale and Redesdale, "Moss troopers or thieves" as Sir Henry Vane chose to call them. Apprehended on the border, Swinhoe was sent by sea from Berwick to London where he died in the Tower in 1646.⁶⁷⁵

Captain Robert Pemberton: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Lumley, Co. Durham, and may be the same who witnessed the will of Ralph Collingwood of Ditchburn, Northumberland, in March 1648. Robert Pemberton was listed as a gentleman volunteer in Alnwick in 1661.⁶⁷⁶

Ensign George Hoodspeth: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. He probably signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Berwick, but is unidentified.⁶⁷⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Muschamp, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Michael Muschamp, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Muschamp's company.

(Colonel) John TALBOT'S Foot (Helmsley Garrison).

The designation as Helmsley Garrison Foot is based upon documentary evidence concerning Talbot (see below) and upon the lack of a lt. colonel or a major. That Talbot was himself a colonel is beyond question, in that he was so commissioned, but his position in Helmsley is ambiguous. Of the regiment, if such it ever was, we know nothing beyond such officers as can be identified.

(Colonel) John Talbot: First of the two sons of John Talbot of Thornton le Street, Esquire, who died in 1643. John II was born in 1598 and died in 1659. His cousin, Thomas, was a Parliamentarian officer. "Of a now very minimally Catholic family" as Aveling wrote, John was a JP in 1624 and a Commissioner of Array in 1642. He appears to have replaced his father as active head of the family, the father having refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I. In the composition records are references to John II's colonelcy and to his having been deputy governor in Helmsley, and there is a note in Dugdale's list of Commissioners of Array to the effect that Talbot was commissioned to raise 1200 foot in 1643. John compounded in 1646 on a fine of £574, having been gaoled in York in the previous year. The local committee stated, interestingly, that Talbot had been made deputy governor by Belasyse, which may mean that his forces did not actually enter Helmsley until the reorganisation of the county under Belasyse in 1644. Perhaps Talbot's regiment was taken away from him and given to some other officer, with whom it possibly served against the Scots in Durham.⁶⁷⁸

Captain Roger Talbot: Conjectured regimental designation, but Roger was the eldest son of Colonel Talbot who was killed in arms during the war.⁶⁷⁹

Captain John Talbot: Conjectured on much the same grounds as Roger, above, John was second of the colonel's two sons and was, according to Dugdale, "Capitaneus ex parte Regis (in nuperrima Rebellione) jam vivens et ainnuptus a* D'ni 1666". Perhaps taken at Hunslett in March 1644 (see Vol. 1).⁶⁸⁰

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Blakeston, cited in the List.

Captain [] Taylor, cited in the List (perhaps a printer's error for Talbot?).

Lieutenant Robert Crosby, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Blakeston's company.

Lieutenant Michael Winterscale, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Taylor's (Talbot's?) company.

(Colonel) John TEMPEST'S (Regiment of) Foot.

The evidence is based upon the List, which, however, gives neither lt. colonel nor major, so that whereas Tempest's own rank is almost certain, the existence of a recognisable regimental structure is open to debate. To add to the problem, in a way, I have assigned a lt. colonel who seems to defy insertion anywhere else, and the matter is gone into in more detail below. As in most cases where the existence of a regiment seems probable, but is in some doubt, it is the want of evidence, rather than the ambiguity of what there is, that is to be blamed.

(Colonel) John Tempest: Cited in the List. Of Old Durham, Esquire, the son and heir of Sir Thomas Tempest of the Isle, Co. Durham, from a Catholic family, John appearing to have been a discreet Catholic. He was sequestered in 1644, which is evidence of some delinquency at that time, although the extant composition records refer to the 1648 rising. A fine of £305.9s. was imposed, but had not been paid in 1651 when he was listed as undischarged. He had been in the garrison of Skipton at its surrender. Thurloe was told that Colonel John Tempest had been eminent in the 1654/5 conspiracy, and he was listed in 1656 as a reliable Royalist in the north. Intended for the Order of the Royal Oak in 1660 with an estate worth £1000 yearly, he was listed to supply horse and rider in the Lord Lieutenant's muster in November of that year. Apparently implicated in Catholic plots in 1664, when he was a JP, his exact date of death is unknown.⁶⁸¹

Lt. Colonel Gerard Salvin: According to Foster, using a source which he did not quote, Salvin was lt. colonel in John Tempest's Foot. Of Salvin's rank there can be no doubt (even though other, earlier writers, record him as a major) and John Tempest's is as likely a regiment as any other, territorially speaking. Gerard was the son of Gerard Salvin of Croxdale, Co. Durham, who died in 1663. Styled Esquire in his own right, his property in Elswick and Croxdale was sequestered in the autumn of 1644, but whether it is he or his father appointed to the Commission of Array in 1642 is hard to say. The family was heavily involved with the King's party, but the head may have been less openly so. The father was certainly a Recusant, and family tradition ascribes Catholic leanings to the son. Lt. Colonel Salvin was killed in a rearguard action against the Scots near Northallerton in April 1644 on the retreat to York.⁶⁸²

Captain Ralph Allenson: Cited in the List. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation as from Hurworth, Co. Durham, and may be the Durham mercer who died c. 1657. Ralph Allenson of Wharrington, Gentleman, was sequestered in September 1644 and was also styled as of Durham city. He compounded in 1645 on a fine of £150 but was in arms again in 1648, for in 1651 he petitioned Parliament for pardon and

received it in November of that year. He compounded directly with the local committee, and not with Goldsmith's Hall. He was named in charges laid against Thomas Shadforth, a sequestrator accused of favouring papists and certain delinquents.⁶⁸³

Captain Robert Blakeston: Claimed in the List from Durham. In the will of Tobias Blakeston of Newton near Durham, written in April 1642, is a reference to his son Robert a leaseholder in Newton, one of several sons. Tobias wrote "I doe race out All that I did intend my sonne Robert was to have by this my will". Robert, born in 1623 and dying in 1688 in the city, was a pensioner at Peterhouse, Cambridge in 1638, signing the 1641/2 Protestation with his father as of Durham. It looks here as if a Parliamentarian sympathiser, the father, was expressing in his will his discontentment with his son's leanings, and the identification would seem sound.⁶⁸⁴

Captain Henry Conyers: Claimed in the List from Durham. Probably the third of the six sons of Nicholas Conyers of Whitby, a Royalist family. The Durham connection lay through an elder son's marriage into the family of Conyers of Layton.⁶⁸⁵

Lieutenant Mathew Gargrave: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Conyers' company. Such a man of Elemor Hall, Pittington, Co. Durham, signed the 1641/2 Protestation.⁶⁸⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain John Halsall, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Captain Thomas Poore, claimed in the List from Durham (see also, Captain Francis Poore, Queen's Foot).

Ensign John Robinson, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Blakeston's company.

Ensign George Sheeres, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Allenson's company.

Ensign John Smith, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Conyers' company.

Colonel Richard TEMPEST'S Foot.

The only allusion comes in the List, from a single claimant, Quartermaster William Liddell of Durham. This may be an error, either on the part of the printer, or on Liddell's part in making an unclear petition. We cannot be sure, but it is likely that Liddell should appear under Colonel Sir Richard Tempest of Stella, and not under Colonel Richard Tempest of Bracewell (q.v., Appendix 1).⁶⁸⁷

Colonel Sir Richard TEMPEST'S Regiment of Foot.

As with Sir Richard's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1) this regiment must contain commissioned officers belonging properly to 1648, but they are hard to determine. Nothing is known of this force as a distinctive unit.

Colonel Sir Richard Tempest: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel [] Lambton: Cited in the List, conceivably, but not certainly, a rank from the 1648 war (see Lt. Colonel Salvin, below). Henry Lambton, first of the three sons of (Colonel) Sir William Lambton (q.v.) by the father's first marriage, was born in 1612 and was alive at the 1666 visitation. Styled of Biddick and Pensher, and of Chester le Street, Esquire, he was a leaseholder in the latter parish, he was described during the Interregnum as the "last survivor of Sir William Lambton". He died c. 1693. He surrendered at Hartlepool on July 24th 1644, and at his composition reference was made to his colliery interests (inherited from his father?) and to his Catholicism. A fine of £960 was reduced to £730 which must mean that he abjured his faith. He admitted his rank. In 1663 he was a JP and concerned in the investigation of the Kaber-Rigg plot.⁶⁸⁸

Lt. Colonel (Francis) Salvin: Almost certainly a rank dating to 1642/5, and no doubt the Major Salvin cited in the List for this regiment. Of Hurworth, Gentleman, a convicted Recusant, he was fourth of the sons of Gerard Salvin of Croxdale who died in 1603, and uncle of Lt. Colonel Gerard Salvin of John Tempest's Foot (q.v.). Salvin, "most notorious" of Durham delinquents, was killed in action on Marston Moor. His widow petitioned for maintenance in December 1644, when her possessions were valued at £8.12s.⁶⁸⁹

Major [] Kennet: Cited in the List. John Kennet of Coxhoe, Co. Durham, was first of the eight sons of William Kennet of the same, and was born in 1621. William rode as a gentleman volunteer on Marston Moor. John was sequestered as a Catholic delinquent in 1644, but was admitted to compound in 1645 by abjuring his faith, although the fine of £300 (later reduced to £250) was not set until 1649. He died in 1679.⁶⁹⁰

Major [] Salvin: See Lt. Colonel Salvin, above.

Captain John Briggneil: Cited in the List, two such (father and son?) signed the 1641/2 Protestation in Co. Durham from Lumley and Lanchester. A John Briggneil of Ravensworth, Yorkshire, died c. 1655.⁶⁹¹

Captain Henry Wren: Claimed in the List from Durham. Fifth of the six sons of Sir Charles Wren of Bishop Auckland. In February

1656 he was described by Lilburne as one of the chief conspirators in Durham "very poore, and a great papist...a seminary priest did first ingage him". In April 1655 Wren with three companions had ridden to Durham, armed, and had stayed there overnight.⁶⁹²

Lieutenant Arthur Phillips: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Salvin's company. Such a man of Durham city, Gentleman, was an undischarged delinquent in 1651. Probably the bailiff of the manor and borough of Bishop Auckland (a link with Wren) in 1642, he signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Durham St. Mary le Bow and was buried in the Cathedral in 1680.⁶⁹³

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant William Potter, claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Lambton's company.

Ensign Humphrey Holden, claimed in the List from Durham, Major Kennet's company.

(Colonel) Charles TOWNELEY'S (Regiment of Foot).

Young accepted that this regiment existed⁶⁹⁴ but the evidence tends to indicate firstly, that Towneley was not a colonel, and secondly, that he did not command a regiment in the field. Young's evidence was little more than family tradition, not in itself invalid if supported, however slightly, by other sources, but to be treated with caution when lacking corroboration. Charles Towneley was third of the seven sons, and eventual heir, of Richard Towneley Esquire of Towneley near Burnley, Lancashire, who died in 1628. Charles, born in 1600, was, like all the family, a Catholic Recusant. He saw action at Manchester in September 1642, but not as an officer, and may have been in the defence of Preston in February 1643 where his wife fell into enemy hands. He was most certainly killed, and buried, on Marston Moor.⁶⁹⁵

According to one contemporary tract, England's Iliad in a Nut-Shell,⁶⁹⁶ he was indeed a colonel, but according to the Catalogue merely a gentleman volunteer. Since the one contradicts the other, the evidence would seem to have come to an impasse. However, it has to be said that in virtually all other cases, the details given by the Catalogue, where verifiable, have been found to be accurate, whilst the statements of contemporary pamphleteers working often at second or third hand, can often be found to have been wild and unfounded. Secondly, there is the negative evidence of the List, for Towneley does not appear anywhere in it, and no claimant can be remotely connected with him. Thirdly, no record of any commission appears to exist, nor was he a Commissioner of Array. Taken on its face value, the evidence is against Young. Whilst it has been necessary to allude to the problem, Towneley is not included in the officer analysis.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas TYLDESLEY'S Regiment of Foot.

As with Tyldesley's Horse, it must be pointed out that here we are dealing with a unit which existed in 1642/6, 1648 and in 1651: and it must be said again, that it is not always possible to distinguish officers belonging properly to the first civil war, from those commissioned later. It may also be that promotions blur the picture somewhat. Of the regiment itself, although a part of the Oxford army for much of the time, we know very little. Raised in the winter of 1642/3 in Lancashire, it served with the earl of Derby in March, April and May of the latter year (see Vol. 1) before going into Yorkshire. Presumably, it accompanied the Queen south to Oxford. There is a reference to it being in need of ammunition on August 21st 1643 "nowe destitute", and it had been part of a Tertia at the siege of Bristol.⁶⁹⁷ It probably went into Cheshire at the end of the year, with Tyldesley, and was caught up in Rupert's army on its way to the relief of York. It fought at Bolton in May 1644 (see Vol. 1) and at Marston Moor, what remained of it being involved in the disastrous action at Ormskirk in August. Beyond this, it has not been possible to go.

Colonel (Sir) Thomas Tyldesley: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel Hugh Anderton: Combined his ranks. Dealt with in Tyldesley's Horse.

Lt. Colonel Thomas Salvin: Not evidenced by the List, but by a reference to him in the composition proceedings of John Brackenbury who alluded to him as major under Tyldesley c. August 1644 at the latest (before the death of Colonel Sir John Redman, q.v.). According to the Catalogue, Salvin was killed in action as a lt. colonel, and he may have come into the rank when Anderton's cavalry duties necessitated it. Third of the four sons of Thomas Salvin of Thornton and Heworth, who died in 1609. Lt. Colonel Salvin's mother was a Recusant, and Thomas himself was very probably a Catholic in view of the regiment in which he served. According to Thomas's brother, Robert, petitioning the House of Lords in 1660, Thomas was governor of Hartlepool in 1644 (see also Lt. Colonel Henry Lambton, Sir Richard Tempest's Foot). If this is true, then Salvin may have left the regiment after Marston Moor, or have been cut off and forced to make his own way homeward. That is speculative, however, and he may have been detached for the duty, supposing his brother's evidence to have been accurate. When and where he was killed is unknown, so it cannot be ruled out that he was a 1648 or 1651 casualty.⁶⁹⁸

Major [] Harling: Cited in the List. In July 1660 Major John Harling petitioned for a place for making Strangers Bills in the London Customs House. He said that he had

served in England, Ireland and Scotland and that he had been taken prisoner in 1651. He was gaoled in Coventry, and had been out in Booth's rising of 1659. If he is the Captain John Harling taken at Appleby in October 1648, then the major's rank in this regiment must belong to 1651. On these grounds, although noted in case of future evidence, he is not included in the analysis.⁶⁹⁹

Major [] Ord: Cited in the List and probably connected (in view of his surname and its geographical distribution) with Lt. Colonel Salvin (see above), but he is unidentified.

Captain Nicholas Anderton: Cited in the List, second of the six sons of James Anderton of Euxton who died in 1658. Born in 1613, he was a Foreign Burgess of Preston, and was killed in arms near Greenhalgh Castle c. 1645. Probably a Catholic.⁷⁰⁰

Captain [] Brabant: Cited in the List. A Thomas Brabin of Whittingham, Gentleman, was fined £122.17s. in 1649. Captain Henry Brabin was captured at Appleby in 1648. He may be either, probably the latter.⁷⁰¹

Captain [] Bradkirk: Cited in the List. Cuthbert Bradkirk of Wray, "a man of small account and no good caring" to quote a Parliamentary writer, was appointed by Rupert to be Governor of Clitheroe Castle in June 1644.⁷⁰²

Captain James Bradley: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Of Bryning, Gentleman, son and heir of Captain Edward Bradley who was killed on Marston Moor in Tyldesley's Horse. His property was in the 1652 Treason Act.⁷⁰³

Captain [] Butler: Cited in the List. William Butler of Myerscough a Catholic, third of the ten sons of Henry Butler, Esquire, of Rawcliffe, by the father's second marriage. Listed as an undischarged Catholic delinquent in 1655, he had been killed in arms at Newbury in 1643.⁷⁰⁴

Captain James Collier: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Of Rainford, Gentleman, he petitioned to compound for the first war and was fined £36.8s. in July 1649. He was a tenant of the earl of Derby for property at Newton.⁷⁰⁵

Captain John Draycott: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, he was taken at Appleby in 1648.⁷⁰⁶

Captain Thomas Singleton: Cited by rank and regiment in contemporary sources. Eldest of the sons of Thomas Singleton of Steyning, Lancashire, and a Catholic Recusant, he was present at the attack on Lancaster in March 1643. Killed at Newbury in the same year.⁷⁰⁷

Captain Robert Westby: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Probably third of the five sons of Thomas Westby of Rawcliffe, and styled of Killington in Westmorland. The family was solidly Royalist, the father a compounding Recusant, and Robert himself married to a Recusant. The composition records are scant, chiefly concerning the wife's Recusancy. Robert was taken at Appleby in 1648.⁷⁰⁸

Captain Thomas Whittingham: Rank and regiment are according to a contemporary source. The son of Richard Whittingham of Claughton, Lancashire, who was also a Royalist activist. Thomas, styled also of Goosenargh, compounded as a Recusant in 1632, and was a Foreign Burgess of Preston in 1642. He was at the taking of Lancaster town and of Preston in March 1643, and was killed at Newbury in the same year.⁷⁰⁹

Lieutenant Wilfred Carus: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Brabant's company. Youngest of the five sons of Thomas Carus of Halton who died in 1656, Wilfred given as a citizen of London in 1666. He is mentioned in the composition of his elder brother, Thomas (see George Middleton's Horse, Appendix 1).⁷¹⁰

Lieutenant Edward Cripling: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Major Ord's company. Such a man of Wilberfosse, Gentleman, petitioned in 1645 and admitted assisting the King. A fine of £53 was assessed in 1646, which in 1649 was cut to £37. If Cripling was not in arms in 1648 or 1651, as seems probable, then Major Ord enjoyed his rank during the first war.⁷¹¹

Lieutenant John Fletcher: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Anderton's company. Of Burscough, yeoman, a Catholic delinquent undischarged in 1655, his property in the 1652 Treason Act.⁷¹²

Lieutenant Oliver Tootall: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Anderton's company. He is listed as a Catholic undischarged in 1655, and had been sequestered in 1648. Styled as of Chorley, yeoman. His father, William, was a convicted Recusant in 1630.⁷¹³

Lieutenant William Werden: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Swinglehurst's company. Of Penwortham, yeoman, Catholic undischarged in 1655.⁷¹⁴

Lieutenant John Whiteside: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. The name is relatively common. Such of Marton, Senior, dated his will in 1667. Others of Eston, Marton Parva and of Norbeck were dated 1671, 1671 and 1665 respectively. A Lieutenant

Whiteside was taken at Appleby in 1648.⁷¹⁵

Ensign William Aynsworth: A single reference to him dated May 1st 1650 when the keeper of Newgate was ordered to receive:
"Wm. Aynsworth, alias Jno. Jenkins, for being a Papist, travelling under a false name, and for having served against Parliament as an ensign under Sir Thos. Tyldesley". Since Aynsworth did not petition as a claimant, perhaps he died in gaol, or before the Restoration.⁷¹⁶

Ensign Edward Corney: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Martin's company. Such of Lyth had his will granted probate in 1685.⁷¹⁷

Ensign Henry Harling: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Major Harling's company. Conceivably a son. Taken captive at Appleby in 1648, and in view of this, and the case of Major Harling (q.v., above) is excluded from the analysis.

Ensign Thomas Walmsly: Claimed in the List from Lancashire. Such a man of Claughton, yeoman and Catholic, was undischarged in 1655. He is also described as a husbandman in 1648. His social status rules against his being of the Walmsley family of Dunkenhalgh, but he may have been a connection of the Walmsleys of Showley.⁷¹⁸

Ensign Thomas Whittingham: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, Lt. Colonel Anderton's company. Probably second of the three sons of Captain Thomas Whittingham (q.v., above). Listed in 1642 as a Foreign Burgess of Preston.⁷¹⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Haughton, claimed in the List from Lancashire.

Captain [] Martin, cited in the List.

Captain [] Swinglehurst, cited in the List.

Captain [] Tyldesley, cited in a contemporary source.⁷²⁰

Lieutenant John Dawson, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Captain Bradkirk's company.

Ensign Thomas Yates, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Butler's company.

Colonel Henry WAITE'S (Regiment of) Foot.

Not noticed by Young nor, surprisingly, by Wenham in his study of the siege of York, the evidence is, nonetheless, incontrovertible. It rests, however, and apart from the List, on the identity and career of its somewhat mysterious colonel, with whom we deal.

Colonel Henry Waite: Cited in the List as a field commander, the rank suggested by such evidence as there is concerning him. A Lt. Colonel Waite is noted in Wentworth's Foot in 1640. Early in September 1642, there was a report in London that York was being garrisoned by Sir Thomas Glemham, and "Wayst and Meim (strangers to us)". The presence of Wayst or Waite in York is confirmed by the colonel himself, who in 1660 petitioned for the post of Muster-master in Yorkshire. In his petition, Waite stated that he had held such an office at the outbreak of war, that he had seen service under Count Mansfeld in Europe, and had been sub-governor of York until its surrender. Taken literally, this means that Waite served as second in command to Glemham, Saville and Belasyse, and consequently, this regiment, if such it was, was a garrison force. Waite is described as a "stranger" by a Parliamentary writer, but that need not mean that he was completely unknown in the area of the city, even if this was the case with the surrounding countryside. It could merely mean that he came from outside the county, and he must be the Colonel Henry Waite mentioned in 1647 holding property in Oxfordshire, Gloucestershire and Herefordshire, centered upon Westbury and Michel Dean. His wife, Frances, was dead by that date, and had been a Recusant. It does seem that we have to accept Waite as a colonel in his own right, and as holding a command, in York garrison, and this implies we must accept the existence of this 'regiment'. Against these conclusions must be placed the difficulties. Firstly, that 'colonel' may merely represent 'lt. colonel'. Secondly, that we cannot be sure when precisely Waite was sub-governor, despite the September 1642 allusion and his undoubted presence in 1644. Lastly, that he may have served as a field commander in another regiment. However, none of his officers can be made to link up, however tentatively, with the two strongest possible regiments, Glemham's Foot and Sir Henry Slingsby's Foot (q.v.). Hence he is inserted as a colonel in his own right but with reservations.⁷²¹

[Lt. Colonel Samuel Brearey]: Tentatively inserted under Waite, Brearey was, according to the available evidence, lt. colonel of the York City volunteers composed (it is supposed) of citizens. No such regiment is evidenced elsewhere, whereas the existence of Waite's is highly probable. Perhaps it was formed at the start of the siege in 1644, recruiting men who had taken shelter in the city as well as citizens. Brearey, Sheriff of York in 1642, was third of the five sons of William Brearey, Lord Mayor of York who died in 1637. Samuel was

killed in action during the siege after he "performed many amazing feats as he charged all alone into their midst". His will was dated June 21st 1644.⁷²²

Captain Thomas Bilborough: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man of Scarborough had his will granted probate in 1685.⁷²³

Captain Edmund Craithorne: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Second of the three sons of Thomas Craithorne of Craithorne who died c. 1637, and styled himself as of Hollens in Blakamore. Born sometime after 1604, he was presented as a Recusant at Thirsk in 1634 when styled Gentleman, but date of death is unknown.⁷²⁴

Captain [] Mennel: Cited in the List. Almost certainly of the Meynels of Dalton and North Kilvington, notably Recusant. This Mennel was probably Thomas eldest of the six sons of Anthony Meynel of North Kilvington who died in 1669. Although Thomas was born in 1615, he did not succeed his father, the inheritance going instead to Roger, Thomas's son and heir. It would seem that Thomas was therefore killed or died during the civil war period. Others of the family were in arms. His brother James was serving under Colonel Sir Walter Vavasour (q.v.) in a Horse regiment. We must suppose that Thomas, like his father, grandfather and son, was a Catholic.⁷²⁵

Captain Henry Storkey: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, but he was probably a Lancashire man. Henry Starkey of Lancashire was of military age at this time, and this may form a tenuous link with Ensign Barton (q.v., below). Henry Starkey of Darley, Cheshire, compounded in 1649 for words supposedly spoken against the Parliament, and was fined £617.3s. He does not look too promising.⁷²⁶

Ensign Robert Barton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mennel's company. Conceivably, Robert Barton of Skelmersdale, Lancashire, an undischarged Catholic delinquent in 1655. The identification is, however, extremely tentative.⁷²⁷

Ensign Anthony Teasdale: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man, yeoman, of Ainderby Steeple was fined £15 in 1651 for adhering in the first war. He probably appears as a juror at Richmond in 1636.⁷²⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Thomas Merrick, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant John Pasket, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Mennel's company.

Colonel Sir George WENTWORTH'S Regiment of Foot.

On July 14th 1660 Sir Marmaduke Langdale wrote to Colonel Wentworth:

it were an injustice in us to dispose of the regiment where-
with you have in the late warres so faithfully served his
late Maty.

This tribute clearly suggests that Wentworth's was a Trainband force in 1642, otherwise its survival in 1660 would have been improbable. The point is of importance, as will appear. Langdale also noted that the regiment was recruited in Strafford and Tickhill, and that it was now intended that Thomas Wentworth should assume command. To this, Sir George agreed, and added Gagreess and Osgaldcrosse to the recruiting area.⁷²⁹ The regiment was in garrison in Wakefield in January 1643, which place it evacuated after the fall of Leeds,⁷³⁰ and a soldier of the regiment was buried in Leeds on July 7th 1643, probably a casualty of Adwalton (see Vol. 1).⁷³¹ Interestingly, the regimental colour hung from the wall of Woolley church into the 19th century, when it finally decayed.⁷³²

This appears to be the only regiment, whether of horse or of foot, for which a muster roll survives, or rather, survived, since its whereabouts are unknown despite attempts to trace it. The roll, set out below, is given in full by a 19th century writer on the family.⁷³³ The first curious thing to note is that the muster roll names are divided into three groupings known as Rankes, and such a grouping is correct for a Horse regiment of full strength, although in such a regiment would be properly called divisions. We have to do with 72 names, and since no cavalry command can be traced for Wentworth, we must suppose that this is indeed, an infantry roll. The matter, however, is more complex. The writer already mentioned, gave no source, nor did he add any further details to what would have been a document of primary importance. Moreover, with the exception of one or two names, none can be identified with certainty, and none were officers so far as thorough analysis can take us where the List and composition proceedings are concerned. Consequently, we seem to be dealing with non-commissioned officers and rank and file. Here the matter takes a curious turn, and it must be admitted that what next follows is extremely hypothetical at present. Indeed, may remain so, since evidence for or against does not seem to be forthcoming.

The first name in the first rank is that of John GOODRICKE Esquire. This is probably an allusion to Captain (Sir) John Goodricke (q.v., Sir William Saville's Horse, Appendix 1). This identification, if accurate, raises a number of complex problems. Goodrick was created a baronet in August 1642, so technically any list alluding to him as Esquire must date before then. This would mean that the muster roll is a pre-war Trainband or Militia document. On the other hand, if the roll had been compiled by someone who made a mistake in styling Goodricke as Esquire, then the document would date to the early

summer of 1643, when Goodricke was taken prisoner. As has been said, Sir John served in Saville's Horse, and no connection with Wentworth's war-time Foot can be arrived at. We are thus obliged to ask whether the roll applies to Wentworth's Foot at all, and whether it is not more likely to be connected with Saville's regiment. Moreover, that the 71 names apart from Goodricke's, represent the paper strength of Goodricke's own troop. If this is so, the question as to how the document came into the Wentworth archives has to be answered. The interesting link here lies in the person of (Colonel) Thomas Wheatley (q.v., his Foot). Wheatley was of Woolley, the village where Sir George Wentworth was ordinarily resident. Wheatley had been, in 1642-4, captain in the Horse regiment of Colonel Saville.

Thus far the evidence and reasoning take us, but no further. On the one hand we have the historian of the Wentworths accepting the document as pertaining to Wentworth's civil war regiment (although he gave no date), and on the other we have the process of elimination by which doubt is cast upon this idea. What we do not possess, apparently, is the document, or anything like it. It must, as a consequence, remain an insoluble mystery until a key is discovered. That it is included here under Wentworth, rather than under Saville, is because whilst we can question its right to be here, we cannot assume as much without more evidence. None of the following names, with the exception of Goodricke's are included in the analysis.

1st Ranke

John Goodricke esq.
John Hams esq.
John Hilton
Robert Leeke gent.
Robert Leeke gent.
John Longley gent.
Thomas Wallis gent.
Mathew Meager
Richard Norfolk
Mr. Watkinson
Francis Maude
George Cooper
William Watson
Mr. Bretton
Mr. Wainwright
Mr. Spencer
Eleazar Issatt
Robert Richardson
John Smith gent.
Joseph Wadsworth
William Freckman
Mr. Wm. Naylor
Henry Siddell
Thomas Haigh
Barnabus Thompson

2nd Ranke

Richard Fretwell
John Bingley
Edmond Wood
James Rimmington
Richard Eastwood
Francis Wood
Edward Turner
William Horne
Abram Beaver
Zachary Moore
Jeremy Spincke
John Taylor
John Ditham
John Totty
John Robinson
Richard Laycocke
Chas. Hewden
John Gellit
John Derden
John Holsworth
John Harrison
John Sion
Wm. Stringer
John Burton

3rd Ranke

John Totty of Bretton
Mr. Nicholas Burkley of Barnsley
Tho. English de eadem
Joseph Issott de Woolley
John Oxley of Barnsley
John Godley
Timothy Marshal
Mr. Raynor
Joseph Shaw of Maplewell
Mr. Henry Carrington of Barnsley
Thomas Roberts de Hickleton
William Thomley de Woolley
James Kay
Robert Oxley of Notton
Ant. Crawshaw de Woolley
Wm. Totty de Knotten
Chr. Roades de Hollingthorpe
Robert Roe de eadem
Wm. Clarke de Wakefield
Mt. Hargreaves de eadem
John Pearson de Chapelthorpe
Thomas Cawthorne de Harbury

Perhaps the persons for whom no place of origin is given, were tenants of Sir George.

Colonel Sir George Wentworth: Born in 1600, third son but heir of Michael Wentworth of Woolley. The parents were Recusants, and the eldest son, Michael, was cut out of the inheritance presumably for apostasy. George entered the Inner Temple in 1617 and was knighted in 1630. JP in the West Riding, he was MP for Pontefract 1640/2 when he voted against Strafford's attainder. His Trainband colonelcy may have dated to 1639, and his regiment was certainly on foot in 1640

when he was also a deputy lieutenant. In 1642 he was appointed Receiver of Revenues in Yorkshire with specific instructions to gather in the compositions and fines from Recusants and to convert them to the King's immediate use. He was also a Commissioner of Array. At the outbreak of war, he must have been early in the field with his regiment. He signed the letters to bring Newcastle into Yorkshire, and in January 1643 was with his regiment at Wakefield (see Vol. 1). On May 3rd he signed an order for the seizure of weapons in the Knottingley area. Probably in the garrison of York during the siege, and perhaps on Marston Moor (it is extremely probable) he was a divisional commander in Pontefract 1644/5 (see Vol. 1), surrendering with that castle in the latter year. At his composition it was stated that he was "sometime a member of the Honble House of Commons this present Parliament and deserted the Parliament and was in arms, went to Oxford and sat in that assembly, and went from garrison to garrison held against the Parliament...". Wentworth's Oxford duties may account for the lack of allusion to him, clearly an important figure, in Yorkshire in later 1643. The fine of £4,302 was "the greatest that hath been set upon any beyond Trent", (but see Colonel John Scrope, and Colonel Sir William Dalston), and was eventually cut to £3,188, although if realistic, it indicates Wentworth was comfortably off. Even so, in June 1646 he was offering his property at Ouston for sale to Lord Fairfax who could have it cheaply if he would buy it. In 1648 he was in danger of being sequestered again for failure to pay his assessments. He died late in 1660.⁷³⁴

Lt. Colonel Thomas Bland: First baronet (created August 1642) of Kippax, son and heir of Sir Thomas Bland Knt., who had died in 1612. Lt. Colonel Bland was born in 1607. In the war, he served in Wakefield in May 1643, and in the Pontefract garrison. At his composition he claimed he had never been in arms, which statement is now, and probably was then, contradicted by the evidence. A fine of £405.6.8d. was levied. Bland died in 1657.⁷³⁵

Captain John Bretton: Claimed in the List from Middlesex (note the 'Mr. Bretton' in the muster roll, above). John Bretton of Bretton, Gentleman, was an ensign in 1640 in this same regiment, when he was implicated in an assault involving John Reresby, Esquire. He was described as wearing "a cloth sute mingled culler" which may have been a uniform. A Catholic, Lord Fairfax listed him as a commissioned officer in 1643, but clearly his religious persuasion could not be verified, for he compounded in 1647 on a fine of £200. In his petition he admitted his rank and claimed that he had laid down his arms in December 1644, about the time, therefore, that his colonel went into Pontefract garrison.⁷³⁶

Captain William Empson: Claimed in the List from Lincolnshire. He was involved in some litigation concerning the Empson property in 1647, if the same man. The details are

intricate, and it is not possible to be sure of the persons concerned. Thomas Empson of Goole, Yorkshire, yeoman, compounded as an aged Royalist adherent in 1647, presumably after abjuring his Catholicism. His brother, George or Gregory Empson, petitioned as his heir. In 1653, William Empson petitioned that Thomas was by then dead, and denied George's right to compound as heir. William claimed that although only Thomas's cousin, he was nonetheless his heir male, and this kinship is confirmed by an indenture of 1647. However, in another source, William is alluded to as Thomas's nephew. If this is not an error, then it hints that we may be concerned with two Williams, either of whom (or, admittedly, neither), may be this captain. The pedigree is restricted, and we can only be sure that George (or Gregory) died c. 1677. Now, a George Empson of Sandal, son and heir of Richard Empson of Goole and born in 1620, compounded as a delinquent in 1646 on a fine of £100 which further adds to the complexities of the problem.⁷³⁷

Captain Marmaduke Monckton: Pedigree and family tradition give both rank and regiment. Fourth of the sons of Marmaduke Monckton of Hodroyd, nephew of Colonel Sir Philip Monckton (q.v., Saville's Horse, Appendix 1). Marmaduke II was born in 1623, a year before his father's death, and at his marriage changed his name to that of Berrie. He compounded on a fine of £1.13.4d., stating that his sole possessions were a horse worth £10, in 1650.⁷³⁸

Captain Nicholas Morris: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Of Empsall, Gentleman, he compounded on a fine of £33 in 1649. Second of the six sons of Matthias Morris of Emsall who died in 1658, and brother to Colonel John Morris, Royalist governor of Pontefract who was beheaded in 1649. Nicholas was born in 1621 and died in 1688.⁷³⁹

Captain William Wentworth: Rank and regiment given in the pedigree. First of the five sons of Thomas Wentworth of Kirkby who died in 1654.⁷⁴⁰

Captain Thomas Wheatley: Not to be confused with Colonel Thomas Wheatley. Of White Cross, Emley, yeoman, Captain Wheatley was the eldest son of Richard of the same, and was associated with Captain Bretton in the Reresby assault case of 1640. At that date he was a lieutenant in Wentworth's regiment. He still held that rank when captured at Wakefield in May 1643. Probably the officer in Pontefract 1644/5, he compounded in 1650 on a fine of £45.9.4d. He claimed in the List. (In 1640 he was said to have been wearing a red coat, whereas Bretton, see above, wore one of mingled colours. Either Wheatley was indulging in luxury as an officer, or else Bretton's was specially designed for an ensign, who must be instantly recognisable in action. This would mean a redcoat regiment.)⁷⁴¹

Captain John Wil(d)bore: Rank and regiment given in the pedigree. He was first son by the first marriage of Thomas Wil(d)bore of Warton, Lincolnshire, and was himself styled of Gray's Inn and Knottingley. On May 3rd 1643 Colonel Wentworth ordered all weapons in Knottingley to be handed over to this officer. Taken at Wakefield in the same month. A 'Wilbore' was in custody in 1650.⁷⁴²

Lieutenant Francis Day: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Bland's company. Such a man of Upton in the West Riding failed to appear at Dugdale's visitation.⁷⁴³

Ensign Thomas Killingbeck: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. This is a mystery. Thomas Killingbeck of Chapel Allerton compounded in respect of his father Edward's delinquency, Edward having been an ensign. Dugdale in his visitation noticed no such Edward, and the matter is further confused by an Edward Killingbeck buried in Skipton in September 1644 after being killed near Leeds: whilst Drake noticed such a man in Pontefract garrison in May 1645! Thomas Killingbeck, the compounder, was also in arms, and compounded in 1649 on a fine of £246.13.4d. Either the composition records are at fault, recording the ensign rank for Edward whereas it belonged to Thomas, or else we must look elsewhere. It is surely inconceivable that father and son could have held identical ranks. Clay, in his edition of Dugdale's visitation, has helped to solve the problem. Thomas Killingbeck, also of Chapel Allerton, appears as born in 1615 the son and heir of William Killingbeck who died in 1650. This Thomas, distinguished as Thomas II, died himself in 1677. It would appear that the two Thomas's could be cousins, and Thomas II the ensign, Thomas I perhaps a volunteer or only a soldier since his father was an ensign. The fine would be heavy for Thomas I since he compounded in respect of his own and his father's delinquency, and because when he compounded he was head of the family. Thomas II, on the other hand, might have avoided composition if his father, William, remained quiet during the war. None of this tells us, however, who the Edward Killingbeck in Pontefract in 1645 was, nor whom the Edward Killingbeck listed as a Recusant in 1632 may have been.⁷⁴⁴

Ensign George Liddell: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. We must, I think, dismiss any direct (or even remote) connection with the Durham Liddells, and look nearer to Woolley for our man. One George Liddell was the victim of assault in 1640, and appeared as a prosecution witness at Quarter Sessions at Pontefract. Described as a labourer. In 1662 'Lieutenant' George Liddell, who had lost a leg in the war, petitioned for a sum in lieu of his pension to clear his debts, which tarnished "the honour of his commission". He was given £50. Whether this is the same man on both occasions is hard to say, and the incompatibility of the two ranks argues there may have been a little fraud going on.⁷⁴⁵

Quartermaster Richard Bullock: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. The son of Nicholas Bullock of Nesse in Rydale was presented with his parents as a Recusant at Helmsley in 1627. That Wentworth should have brought in his regimental quartermaster from the North Riding seems improbable, but if so, must be taken as suggesting that Ensign George Liddell may have had the Durham origin which I have rejected. On the other hand, the role of regimental quartermaster was exacting and important, and it may well be that Wentworth secured the best man for the rank by casting about. We cannot be sure, and little is known of Richard Bullock of Nesse.⁷⁴⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain Henry Woolrich, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant Thomas Bradbury, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Woolrich's company.

Ensign Thomas Jackson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Wheatley's company.

Colonel Thomas WHEATLEY'S (Regiment of) Foot.

Almost as mysterious a formation as that alleged for Charles Towneley (q.v. above), but one for which there is sufficient evidence, all of it pointing in no very definite direction. Wheatley is cited as a field officer in the List and since the evidence for this 'regiment' is inextricably bound up with the colonel himself, we must turn to him.

Colonel Thomas Wheatley: Not to be confused with Captain Thomas Wheatley of Wentworth's Foot (q.v.). Colonel Wheatley was of Woolley, and was born in 1610, eldest of the sons of Thomas Wheatley of the same who died in 1629. Styled Esquire, he was heavily in debt when war broke out and was virtually landless according to Cliffe. In October 1641 he had borrowed £100 from Colonel Sir George Wentworth, £50 of which (with £4 interest) was due on the "feast of St. Andrew next coming". Wheatley's link with Colonel Sir William Saville (in whose Horse regiment he is tentatively given as lt. colonel, see Appendix 1) relies upon the identification of Captain Hemsworth of this regiment (see below). The question is not so much whether Wheatley was indeed in such a rank, since it is probable that he was. It is rather one of when he became a colonel, and how he came by his Foot 'regiment'. Young made the suggestion that he assumed command of Saville's Foot and this seems to be possible were it not for the fact that between Saville's death in January 1644 and Wheatley's first known appearance as a colonel in Newark at the end of 1645 lies a good 12 months and more during which time Saville's Foot must have dispersed. Any similarity between Wheatley's 'regiment' therefore, and that of Saville, would be coincidental and the result of Reformado officers coming together under him in Newark. This would, of course, technically make Wheatley's a northern Foot regiment commissioned and recruited extremely late, but there is also the problem that Wheatley was a colonel in 1648 in the defence of Pontefract and some of the officers claiming under him in the List may have had no connection with him earlier, at least in a military sense.

Wheatley's military career can, fortunately, be pieced together fairly accurately. Evidently the captain of that name accused in November of murdering Parliamentary prisoners in Pontefract. By the time that he next appears, in December 1644 in Pontefract garrison, he was a lt. colonel, which promotion may be tentatively assigned to Saville's Horse. He was still a lt. colonel on July 16th 1645, but appears in Newark as a colonel under Belasyse at the end of the year, when there is also a reference to his regiment. He did not compound until 1649 when he was fined £20, an indication of his financial problems. He had, after all, held a command in Pontefract in 1648. Wheatley died in 1673, but whether he was as poorly off as in his earlier years is not apparent. Perhaps from pride, he did not claim in the List.

In brief, the conclusion is that Wheatley was commissioned as a colonel, probably by Belasyse, in the autumn of 1645 in Newark. He commanded there a regiment made up from the remnants of other, older formations, probably northern in origin. In 1648 as a colonel, he again commanded forces which may have had some regimental structure (see below) although he saw no field service in that year, and his rank may have been purely titular. In considering all the officers below, all these factors have to be remembered.⁷⁴⁷

Lt. Colonel [] Ashton: Cited in the List, and from the evidence almost certainly a 1648 rank. He is cited in Pontefract in that year, confined to his quarters for acting as a second in a duel, and was in action at Willoughby field from which fight he escaped. On May 3rd 1650 the Sheriff of London was ordered to deliver Lt. Colonel R. Ashton, prisoner in the Compter for debt, to the Serjeant at Arms to be brought before the council on a charge of high treason, "he being informed against as a very dangerous person". On September 13th, styled Esquire, he was bound over on £1000 in two sureties to appear when required, and on December 12th the Keeper of Newgate was ordered by the Council of State to set him at liberty if his detention was only on their warrant, so clearly he had run into trouble again. Later in the month Ashton petitioned that whilst he had been so detained, a creditor had brought an action against him improperly and he sought redress. The question is, who was he? Even a tentative suggestion is impossible, even from amongst the many Royalist Ashtons in Lancashire at this time. He is not included in the analysis.⁷⁴⁸

Lt. Colonel Collin Monro: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, and certainly in this rank in 1645/6. Young gave him as of Assint, presumably a Scottish professional. He went over to the Scots before Newark yielded. Previously a captain in Redman's Dragoons (Appendix 3).⁷⁴⁹

Captain [] Hemsworth: Cited in the List, and it is upon this officer that a tentative Saville-Wheatley link is made. On June 7th 1643 Colonel Saville wrote from Pontefract to Major Beaumont in Sheffield and alluded to a Captain Hemsworth as if he were his officer. Hemsworth was sent for by Saville to come to him on September 27th. The captain was evidently in Sheffield between those dates, and was a commissioner for the surrender talks there in August 1644. This was Gabriel Hemsworth of Briggate, Leeds, merchant, son and heir of Gabriel of Garforth. Captain Hemsworth died before 1665; he does not appear to have compounded, or to have been sequestered. His rank under Wheatley must indicate, if it is the same man, service in 1645/6 or in 1648.⁷⁵⁰

Captain [] Kitchen: Cited in the List. A Captain John Kitchen of Lancashire also claimed as an infantry officer but gave no regiment. He may be the officer mentioned

in Pontefract in June 1645. Interestingly, if the Lancashire claimant is the same as the captain cited in this regiment by another Lancashire claimant (see Carnes, below) we may have in Lt. Colonel Ashton, a Lancashire man.⁷⁵¹

Captain Edward Wheatley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, a younger brother of his colonel. Styled of Woolley, Gentleman, he was fined £8.6.8d. in 1649 and was discharged three years later.⁷⁵²

Captain Francis Wheatley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, possibly his colonel's second son, the only identifiable man of this name.⁷⁵³

Lieutenant William Barton: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Hemsworth's company. Such a man of Scawton, yeoman, died c. 1680. He was third of the three sons of John Barton of Cawton who died in 1657.⁷⁵⁴

Lieutenant John Favill: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, and such a man served under Captain Hemsworth in the Pontefract garrison in 1644/5. Probably third of the three sons of James Favill of Kirkby Overblow who died in 1653. A John Favill of Tunstal, yeoman, was a juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1623 and 1637, but may not be the same man.⁷⁵⁵

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant Bryan Carnes, claimed in the List from Lancashire, Captain Kitchen's company.

Lieutenant James Portworthy, claimed in the List from London/Westminster, Lt. Colonel Ashton's company (excluded from analysis, see Ashton).

Quartermaster Nicholas Bradbury, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel Sir William (Lord) WIDDRINGTON'S Regiment of Foot.

Recruited, we must suppose, primarily in Northumberland in late 1642 and gathering recruits in Durham and Yorkshire in 1643. It was in action at Leeds in January 1643 some 750 strong (see Vol. 1), and was in the Isle of Axholm in the winter of 1643/4.⁷⁵⁶ Conceivably with Widdrington at Winceby in October 1643 (see Vol. 1) and on Marston Moor, it must have broken up when Widdrington went into exile after the battle.

Colonel Sir William (Lord) Widdrington: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel William Craster: Rank and regiment according to other sources than the List. Third of the four sons of John Craster of Craster, Northumberland. His elder brother James was killed at Lutzen in Swedish service, and another brother, George, was a cavalry captain under Edward Grey (see Appendix 1). The father died in 1638, William in 1650. The estates were heavily mortgaged by the outbreak of war. On July 31st 1645 one Mungo Moody petitioned that on August 8th 1643 as guard of Fen Island off the Holy Isle, he had fired upon soldiers of the Royalist party who turned out to be men under 'Major Craster' and the latter, having since come over to the Parliament (changed sides?), proposed to bring Moody to trial at the Assizes.⁷⁵⁷

Major James Ogle: A tentative designation based upon interpretation of the composition records. Second of the two sons by the father's second marriage, of John Ogle of Causey Park who died in 1636. James was wounded in the defence of Newcastle upon Tyne in 1644, and petitioned in 1646 when he was fined £324. Listed as a reliable Royalist in 1656 by Hyde, he became after the Restoration, a deputy lieutenant for Northumberland and a militia captain, dying in 1664.⁷⁵⁸

Major Henry Widdrington: The period of service specified by Widdrington is so precise, that Major Ogle (above) may have held his rank as late as 1650/1. Henry was second of the five sons of Lewis Widdrington of Cheeseburn who died in 1630 and was the brother of the Parliamentarian Sir Thomas Widdrington. Perhaps a secret Catholic, Henry was a Trainband major from 1642 to March 1644, finally surrendering to Fairfax in August of the latter year. He was fined £200. He went over to the Parliament, and in 1656 was a commissioner "for trial of offenders against the State". He was desiring the benefit of Cromwell's favour extended to those who had wholly thrown off their old views. Nonetheless, as heir to his eminent brother, he was knighted in 1661 and died in 1665.⁷⁵⁹

Captain Henry Birbeck: Such an officer of this regiment was buried in York on May 15th 1644. Second of the two sons of Richard

Birbeck of Morton Tynemouth and of Hedlam Co. Durham. The father died in 1622, and Henry was born in 1612. He was mentioned in the will of Margaret Rawlinson of Hedlam in 1633 and was listed as a Recusant in 1637.⁷⁶⁰

Captain John Carre: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, the ward of his colonel. Styled of Lesbury and West Ditchburn, he surrendered in York and was fined £54.6.8d. in 1647.

Listed as a Catholic Recusant in 1649.⁷⁶¹

Captain Lancelot Errington: Cited in the List. The frequency with which this name is met has already been stressed but even so, a reasonable sequence of sources can be found to fit. This is very probably the eldest of the three sons of Anthony Errington of Denton who died in 1631. Lancelot, born in 1600, was apprenticed to a merchant in 1616 and entered Lincoln's Inn in 1618/19. Called a 'lt. colonel' at his surrender in 1644, he was dead by 1649 and his property was inserted in the 1652 Treason Act. He was a Catholic Recusant presented from 1637 to 1647 (with a break for the period of hostilities) and was styled Esquire of Denton when listed as a Freeholder in 1638/9. From his widow's petition, in 1651, it would appear that he also had colliery interests.⁷⁶²

Captain Thomas Metcalfe: Cited in the List (see also, Darcy's Foot, an officer of the same name). The name is not, of course, all that unusual, although the available possibilities are few. Thomas Metcalfe of Bellarby, Yorkshire, claimed that he had surrendered in September 1643. He had been a Trainband captain in 1642 "beyond York". Trainband status would apply equally as well to Darcy's or to Widdrington's, whilst "beyond York" might mean away to the north, or away to the south at Oxford where Darcy's regiment was. On the whole, however, the Widdrington designation seems most likely if it must be either. Thomas was second of the five sons of Francis Metcalfe of Bellarby, but his heir, and was also styled as of Laith in Lincolnshire, Esquire, when he compounded on a fine of £266.13.4d. in 1647. The claim to have surrendered in September 1643 looks close enough to the Winceby fight in October to suggest Metcalfe was captured there or used it as an opportunity to lay down his commission. The other identified Thomas Metcalfe, most probably belonging to Darcy's Foot, but here again by no means certainly, is the son and heir of Michael Metcalfe of Ottrington in Yorkshire, Gentleman. Thomas of Ottrington was a Catholic, and his property was purchased during the Interregnum by Colonel Anthony Byerley (q.v., above).⁷⁶³

Ensign Richard Allgood: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Lancelot Errington's company. A Lancelot Allgood of Hexham Gentleman, was fined £70.4s. for 'adhering', and was a Catholic listed in 1649. Perhaps a son of his.⁷⁶⁴

Ensign Henry Challoner: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Cowle's company. Possibly grandson of Sir Thomas Challoner of Gisborough, Yorkshire, the poet and naturalist who died c. 1615. Sir Thomas's eldest son, Henry, is unlikely to have been our ensign.⁷⁶⁵

Ensign Anthony Errington: Claimed in the List from Newcastle, Captain Errington's company. The only clue to who he may have been is in the Newcastle origin of his claim. Anthony Errington of that town, distinguished from his son as "Senior" was a brother of the Merchant Adventurers' company in 1642 and gave £2 to the defence. This Errington, in the 1620's, had been a noted Puritan and opponent of the corporation, but he may well have changed his views, and they were no bar to his son's activism anyway.⁷⁶⁶

Ensign Gregory Grange: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Carre's company. Of East Harsley, Gentleman, is such a man sequestered as a Catholic delinquent, the son of Thomas of the same, a Recusant, although the grandfather had conformed. Lord Fairfax noted his commission and religion in 1643. The question is, whether this is the Gregory Grange of North Kilvington, Gentleman, fined the enormous sum of £802.14s. cut to £586.11.9d. If this is our ensign, the fine must mean two things. Firstly that he had come into his father's inheritance, and secondly that he had abjured his faith. He was listed as a Recusant again in 1674. On the other hand, Ensign Grange may be the son of this delinquent.⁷⁶⁷

Quartermaster John Hudson: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, such a man was listed in 1638/9 as a freeholder at Hauxley in Morpeth, in which ward, Colonel Widdrington had large interests.⁷⁶⁸

Quartermaster Robert Mitford: Claimed in the List from Durham. Perhaps second of the four sons of Henry Mit(t)ford of Heulam, Durham, but details are lacking. Robert Mitford of Durham, Gentleman, was, in 1633, beaten up whilst trying to execute an order of the Court of High Commission on Robert Lumsden. Lumsden and his associates pleaded that Mitford had drawn his sword and left them no choice. The business concerned an adultery case, and Mitford was a messenger of the court. He may be one of the defendants in 1638 against whom a distress was levied by the Sheriff of Northumberland.⁷⁶⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Carnaby, cited in the List.

Captain Henry Cowle, cited in the List.

Captain Anthony Garnett, cited in the List from Newcastle.*

*read 'claimed' for cited.

Lieutenant Richard Errington, claimed in the List from Essex, Captain Errington's company.

Lieutenant Frederick Errington, claimed in the List from Northumberland.

Lieutenant Ralph Tayler, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Carnaby's company.

Colonel Sir Francis WORTLEY'S Regiment of Foot.

Another regiment for which the only real evidence is that given by Peacock. There are only three claimants in the List, none of whom can be identified, and the officers given by Peacock defy identification. Colonel Wortley has been dealt with as colonel of horse (Appendix 1) and the possible reasons for so poorly evidenced a regiment, will be found there.

Lt. Colonel [] Russell, cited by Peacock.⁷⁷⁰

Major [] Waller, cited by Peacock.

Captain Bryan Newton, claimed in the List⁷⁷¹ from London/Westminster.

Captain [] Shelton, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Stafford, cited by Peacock.

Captain [] Tukes, cited by Peacock (see Sir Samuel Tuke, Duke of York's Horse, Appendix 1).

Quartermaster Thomas Barnes, claimed in the List from Staffordshire.

Quartermaster James Rimmington, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

NOTES

1. Young, Edgehill, p. 192.
2. Moone, J., A Brief Relation of the Life and Memoirs of John Lord Belasyse, HMC, Ormond Mss., N.S. II, p. 379 and passim.
3. Ibid. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 211
4. Add. Ms. 34713, f. 1.
5. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 158/9. Young, Edgehill, p. 184.
6. Young, Edgehill, p. 188. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 382.
7. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 236/7. Harl. Ms. 6804, f. 55.
8. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 383. Warburton, II, p. 236f.
9. Harl. Ms. 986. Young and Toynbee, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142.
10. Ibid. Ibid.
11. Tibbutt, Luke Letter Books, p. 667.
12. Young, Marston Moor, p. 59.
13. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 386.
14. List, col. 55. Clay, Minorum Gentium, IV, p. 1228. Young, Edgehill, pp. 152, 218, 188. Harl. Ms. 6804, f. 55. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 237, 273. LJ, VI, p. 671. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 60. Young and Toynbee, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142. Harl. Ms. 6804, ff. 92/3. LJ, VII, p. 434. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 390. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. Mercurius Politicus, 21.3.51, p. 675. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 614. Gardiner, Charles II and Scotland, p. 125. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 132, 428, 216. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 276. CSPD 1661/2, pp. 15, 21.
15. T.T. E 244 (2). List, col. 37. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 358. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. Bruce, J. ed: Verney Papers, Notes of Proceedings in the Long Parliament, Camden Society, p. 58. Brunton and Pennington, Members of the Long Parliament, p. 203. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 192/3. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 86/7. It is not clear how the fine was assessed.
16. List, col. 9. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 80/1 : III, p. 180. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 162. CSPD 1655/6, pp. 218/9. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 614. Worsfoled, J.N., History of Haddlesey, p. 180. CSPD 1660/1, p. 496.
17. CCC, p. 116. PRO SP 16/475, ff. 52/3. Young, Edgehill, p. 218. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. LJ, VI, p. 671 : VII, p. 435. Young and Toynbee, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142. Catalogue.
18. Peacock, p. 12.
19. List, col. 55. Young, Edgehill, p. 149. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 156/7, 237, 260/1. CJ, IV, p. 315. Sprigge, J., Anglia Rediviva, Table of Events. LJ, VI, p. 671. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 61.
20. List, col. 55. Boothroyd, History of Pontefract, p. 254. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 398. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 120. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 60. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 693. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 352.
21. List, col. 10. CCC, p. 1332. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. Ainsworth Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 49. Young, Edgehill, p. 218.
22. List, col. 10. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Poulson, History of Holderness, II, p. 427. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. Ainsworth Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 178.
23. RCHM, Newark Siege Works, p. 81.
24. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. Young, Edgehill, p. 218. Lucas, J., Historical Genealogy of the Family of Bayne of Nidderdale, pp. 278/9, 280, 300/1, 304.
25. T.T. E 244 (2). Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 9.
26. List, col. 9. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 182. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 95.
27. List, col. 45. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 162.
28. List, col. 10. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 624. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 375. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 318. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 50. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 185.

- Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xxi. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, pp. 89/90.
29. List, col. 9. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 187. Barlow, The Complete English Peerage, II, p. 42.
30. Peacock, p. 12. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 272.
31. Peacock, p. 12. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
32. List, col. 9. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 62.
33. List, col. 10. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237.
34. List, col. 10. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 211. Aveling, Recusancy in York, pp. 349/50. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 270.
35. List, col. 9. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 175. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, pp. xviii, xxi.
36. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. CCC, p. 1134. CJ, IV, p. 315.
37. List, col. 9. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 237. T.T. E 244 (2).
38. List, col. 55. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 82.
39. List, col. 9. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 62.
40. List, col. 10. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 65.
41. List, col. 10. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 18.
42. List, col. 55. CCC, pp. 1715/16.
43. List, col. 10. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 408/9.
44. Phillips, Cumberland and Westmorland 1642/60, p. 39.
45. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 205. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 55. Venn, Alumni Cantabrigienses, I, p. 130. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 105/6. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Pedigrees, p. 9. Musgrave Mss. LJ, VI, p. 168. Brunton and Pennington, Members of the Long Parliament, p. 200. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 186. CCC, pp. 1136/8. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 125 f.n.
46. List, col. 10. CCC, p. 1568. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, pp. 60/1. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673-80, p. 164.
47. List, col. 10. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
48. List, col. 10. CCC, p. 1867.
49. List, col. 10. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
50. List, col. 10. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 563.
51. List, col. 10. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 27.
52. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 351. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40. Watts and Watts, Border to Middle Shire, pp. 199, 247. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 171. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 132/5. CCC, p. 1401. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 204. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 22.
53. List, col. 15. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360 : XIII, p. 351. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 22.
54. List, col. 15. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 524. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 46.
55. List, col. 15. History of Northumberland, II, p. 429.
56. List, col. 15. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 204, 206. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 87, 325. CCC, p. 2604. Dickinson, History and Antiquities of Newark, p. 112. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 192. Wood, Durham Protestations p. 77.
57. List, col. 15. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 189.
58. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 139/41.
59. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 61. Aveling, Northern Catholics p. 311. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 310. Venn, Alumni Cantabrigienses, I, p. 277. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 94. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 139/41. CCC, p. 875. CSPD 1661/2, p. 328. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 186. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 360. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 99. Hodgson,

- Correspondence of Miles Stapleton, pp. 137/8. See also, HMC, Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116.
60. List, col. 18. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, pp. 145, 149. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 44. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 225. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xix. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
61. List, col. 18. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 122, 179, 182. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 198.
62. List, col. 18. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 80. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 227/8.
63. Young, Marston Moor, p. 54.
64. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 354. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 141. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 145. Longstaffe, W.H., Richmondshire: Its Ancient Lords and Edifices, p. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 21. CSPD 1655, p. 213. Jackson, C. ed: The Autobiography of Mrs. Alice Thornton of East Newton, Co. York, Surtees Society, LXII, p. 293.
65. List, col. 26. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 13.
66. List, col. 26. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 50. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 185. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
67. Young, Marston Moor, p. 4.
68. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 84.
69. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 79. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 35/8 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 95 pp. 16, 37. Baines, History of Lancaster, II, p. 162. Beamont, p. 36. Sieges and Battles in Northern England, p. 121. Seacomb, House of Stanley, p. 203. CCC, p. 1860. Beamont, pp. 124/5. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275.
70. List, col. 26. Seacomb, House of Stanley, p. 265. See also, Vol. 1.
71. List, col. 26. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, pp. 11/12. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24 p. 96f : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 406. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 88. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 324. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
72. List, col. 26. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 114. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 84, 200/8 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 410. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 135. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. CSPD 1650, p. 518.
73. List, col. 26. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 244.
74. List, col. 26. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 11. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, II, p. 107.
75. List, col. 26. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 84, 86 f.n.
76. List, col. 26. Raines, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, pp. 195/6. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 75f. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 193.
77. List, col. 26. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 410. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 115. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 155.
78. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 572. M.A., 25/6.3.43, pp. 152/3.
79. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 573.
80. Temple Newsam Mss., 2 AI/20.
81. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 575.
82. List, cols. 26, 153. Venn, Alumni Cantabrigienses, I, p. 162. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 50/1.
83. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 144. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 928.
84. List, col. 26. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 402. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 7. Rushworth, III, II, p. 268. CSPD 1661/2, p. 24. See also, Vol. 1.

85. List, col. 26. CCC, p. 1726. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 153/4. Vicars, II, p. 299. CSPD 1651, pp. 194, 244 : 1660/1, p. 376.
86. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 274/5. RCHM, Newark Siege Works, p. 82. See also, battle of Selby, April 1644, Vol. 1.
87. List, col. 26. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 40/1.
88. List, col. 26. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 43. See also, Vol. 1.
89. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 98. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 277.
90. List, col. 26. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 90. Rushworth III, II, p. 271.
91. Firth, Cholmeley's Siege of Scarborough, p. 582. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 140.
92. List, col. 26. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 180. CCC, p. 1763.
93. List, col. 26. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 89.
94. List, col. 26. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 44. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 504.
95. List, cols. 27, 127. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 353. History of Northumberland, V, p. 458 f.n. 8 : VII, p. 360. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, p. 44. Raine, North Durham, p. 184. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 187/9.
96. List, cols. 28, 127. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 67, 304/5. CCC, p. 1739.
97. List, col. 28. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 318. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, p. 5. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
98. List, col. 27. History of Northumberland, V, p. 313. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 325.
99. List, col. 27. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 236 f.n.
100. List, col. 27. CCC, p. 1400. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 61.
101. List, col. 27. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 193.
102. List, col. 27. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 163. Hutchinson, History of Durham, II, p. 43. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 66. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Survey, I, p. 133. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
103. List, col. 27. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 193.
104. List, col. 28. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 100.
105. List, col. 27. CSPD 1650, p. 410.
106. List, col. 27. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 42.
107. List, col. 28. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers' Records, pp. 158, 161. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 12.
108. List, col. 28. Rushworth III, II, p. 271.
109. List, col. 27. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 121.
110. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 52.
111. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 95.
112. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 56. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, pp. 86/8. Catalogue. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 89. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 326. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, pp. 129, 136. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26 pp. 43/5 ; ibid., Vol. 29, p. 43.
113. List, col. 28. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 323. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 599. Fishwick, H., The History of the Parish of Kirkham, Chetham Society, Vol. XCII, p. 174. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 118.
114. List, col. 28. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 330.
115. Vicars, III, p. 16.
116. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 83. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 356. Catalogue. Welford, Royalist Composition in

- Durham and Northumberland, pp. 5, 11, 12, 65, 175.
117. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 227. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 258. Wood, Durham Protestations p. 159. CSPD 1655/6, p. 322. HMC, Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 921. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1673/80, p. 91. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 167.
118. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 7, 67, 212, 227. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 71. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 251. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 167. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 298/301. CAM, p. 1082. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 92.
119. List, col. 31. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 164.
120. List, col. 31. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 199. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 295/7. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 7, 61, 260. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 355.
121. List, col. 31. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 11, 36, 67, 340/1. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 40.
122. List, col. 31. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 68, 385. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 158. Crossley, York Registry Wills, p. 135.
123. List, col. 31. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 169.
124. List, col. 35. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 65.
125. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 379.
126. CSPD 1641/3, p. 515.
127. Musgrave Mss.
128. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 545. Venn, Alumni Cantabrigienses, I, p. 435. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 148/9. Brunton and Pennington, Members of the Long Parliament, p. 200. Musgrave Mss. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. HMC 10th Report, Muncaster Mss., p. 274. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. CCC, pp. 985/6. LJ, IX, p. 10. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. CSPD 1660/1, p. 313. Anon, The Curwens of Workington, The Ancestor, IX, p. 227.
129. CAM, p. 1238. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 196. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. LJ, VIII, p. 30 : VII, pp. 453/4. Phillips, Cumberland and Westmorland, passim.
130. CCC, pp. 1160/1. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 14. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
131. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 59. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. List, col. 35. CCC, p. 1240.
132. List, col. 35. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
133. List, col. 35. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 98.
134. List, col. 35. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9.
135. Young, Marston Moor, pl. 5.
136. Musgrave Mss.
137. List, cols. 36, 38. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, II, p. 318. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 37. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 58. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. CCC, p. 1694. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 97.
138. List, col. 36. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 371.
139. List, col. 36. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
140. List, col. 36. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 146.
141. List, col. 38. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 42. LJ, X, p. 78. CCC, p. 1668.
142. List, col. 38. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 14.
143. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 145.
144. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 204.
145. M.A., 28.5.43.
146. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 268.

147. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 81. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 305. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 190. LJ, V, p. 274. Rushworth III, II, p. 563.
148. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 358. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 82. Gooder, A. ed: The Parliamentary Representation of the County of York 1258-1832, YASRS, Vol. XCVI, p. 87. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 145. M.A., 21.9.43, p. 528. Philips, Luke Journal, p. 155. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 260. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 7/8. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 140.
149. List, col. 37. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 7/8. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 80/1. Clay, Extinct Northern Peerages, p. 46. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 372. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 390. LJ, VIII, p. 296. CSPD 1655, p. 216. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 141. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 78, 343. CSPD 1657/8, pp. 201, 292. Carlisle, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, p. 163. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 54.
150. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 913. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 529. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 329. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 209, 322. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 182. List, col. 37.
151. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 397. Aveling, Recusancy in York, p. 237. List, col. 37.
152. List, col. 37. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 56.
153. List, col. 37. Rushworth III, II, p. 271. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 209. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 228, 280 : IV, p. 201. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 100.
154. List, col. 37. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 80/1.
155. List, col. 37. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 275. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 26.
156. List, col. 37. Plantagenet-Harrison, Major General, The History of Yorkshire. Wapentake of Gilling West, p. 66. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 268. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 195/200.
157. List, col. 37. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 33/4. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 628.
158. List, col. 37. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 221.
159. List, col. 37. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 101.
160. Stanley Papers, I, p. 71.
161. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352.
162. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 56, 64, 111 : Vol. 95, p. 250.
163. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 96/111 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 405. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 348.
164. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 27, 43. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition p. 322. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, II, pp. 204/5.
165. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19.
166. List, col. 38. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 213/4.
167. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, p. 29. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 110. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 51. See also, Ffarington, Farington Papers, p. 79.
168. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 107. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 111. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, passim. Ffarington, Farington Papers, passim. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 778. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 287/95. CCC, p. 2025.
169. De Houghton of Houghton Mss., DDHo 352. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 306. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 75. Catalogue. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 112.

170. List, col. 100. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 53/5. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 172.
171. List, col. 38. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 201. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43.
172. De Hoghton of Hoghton Mss., DDHo 352. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 220. VCH Lancashire, III, p. 136. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 89. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 327. HMC Fourth Report, Beamont Mss., p. 368. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, pp. 115, 119 f.n. 66. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 41.
173. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 236. CCC, p. 1094. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 223. LJ, IX, p. 656.
174. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 56/64.
175. List, col. 38. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 26, 68. A Catholic.
176. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 47. Ffarington, The Farington Papers, p. 79. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 347/8.
177. List, col. 38. CCC, p. 3083. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 692.
178. List, col. 38. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 155. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 285/90. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 112.
179. De Hoghton of Hoghton Mss., DDHo 352.
180. List, col. 42. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 111. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 44/8. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 117.
181. List, col. 42. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 146. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 142. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 186. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 91. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 355. Vicars, II, p. 299. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 30, 60, 153. HMC Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116.
182. List, col. 42. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 60, 95. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 61/2. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 77. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 116.
183. List, col. 42. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 82. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 22, 34, 44, 56, 105.
184. List, col. 42. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/88, p. 3. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 67. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 139.
185. List, col. 42. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 197. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 355.
186. List, col. 42. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 84. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 269.
187. List, col. 42. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 64.
188. List, col. 42. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 73.
189. Young and Toynbee, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142.
190. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 275.
191. Roy, The Royalist Army, pp. 182, 216.
192. List, col. 44. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, IV, p. 1228. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 35. Black, Docquets, pp. 60/1. Philips Luke Journal, pp. 252, 260. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 38.
193. List, col. 44. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 102. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 338 : IV, pp. 193, 210. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 19.
194. List, col. 44. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 395. Catalogue. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 137. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 320/1, 399. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Collyer, R., Horsfall Turner, J., Ilkley: Ancient and Modern, p. 123. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 371. Peacock, Index of

- Royalists, p. 49. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636-52, p. 191.
195. List, col. 44. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 376. Clay Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 82. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 211.
196. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 125.
197. List, col. 44. See Vol. 1.
198. List, col. 44. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 276.
199. List, col. 44. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 92.
200. DNB. HMC 10th Report, Westmorland Mss., p. 20. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 186. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360. Finch Hatton Ms. 133 Leeds City Library, Mexborough Archives, Reresby Letters ff. 1/9. Warburton, I, p. 500. Whitelock Memoirs, p. 83. CSPD 1655/6, p. 583. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 117.
201. List, col. 45. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, I, p. 405. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CCC, p. 1000. LJ, IX, p. 459.
202. List, col. 45. LJ, VI, p. 522. CCC, p. 1772. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 512. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations, p. 313.
203. List, col. 45. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, p. 564. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 35. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/88, p. 170.
204. List, col. 45. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 175. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 68.
205. List, col. 45. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, pp. 54/5.
206. List, col. 45. Burke, Commoners, II, pp. 668/9.
207. List, col. 45. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 430.
208. List, col. 45. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 94.
209. List, col. 45. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 114. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/88, p. 129.
210. List, col. 46. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 119. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 162. University of Durham, Department of Palaeography, The Weardale Chest, No. 83. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 66, 200/1.
211. List, col. 46. Hutchinson, History of Durham, II, pp. 201/2. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 3, 63, 284. Mathews, Walker Revised, p. 143.
212. List, col. 46. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 392. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, p. 101.
213. List, col. 46. CCC, p. 2680. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 39. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 60, 69, 283.
214. List, col. 46. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 125.
215. List, col. 46. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 76.
216. Stanley Papers, II, p. 342. Fetherston, Mrs., & Haswell, F., The College of Kirkoswald and the Family of Featherstonhaugh, CWAS, Trans., N.S., Vol. XIV, p. 212.
217. HMC, Le Fleming Mss., p. 185.
218. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, II, p. 425. Jefferson, History of Cumberland, I, p. 472. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses I, p. 494. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 777. Fetherston and Haswell, Kirkoswald College, pp. 205/15. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 188. Stanley Papers, II, pp. 202, 342. Musgrave Mss. Burton, Musgrave Life, p. 7. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, pp. 58/9. CCC, pp. 1669/70. CSPD 1651, pp. 422, 423/4. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 31. CSPD 1661/2, p. 1.
219. List, col. 47. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 176. Aveling, Northern Catholics, pp. 269/70. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/65, p. 108.
220. List, col. 47. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 407.

221. List, col. 47. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 209/11. Jackson Howard, J., 'Genealogy of the Heskaythes of Ruffourd in Lancashire...from the original', Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica, Part XII, p. 146. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 136. Fishwick, History of Kirkham, p. 197.
222. List, col. 47. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 183.
223. HMC Le Fleming Mss., p. 185. M.A., 29.7.43, p. 405.
224. Musgrave Mss.
225. Burn and Nicolson, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 163 : II, p. 390. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 49. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 202. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 298. Ferguson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 107. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Musgrave Mss. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, pp. 183/5. CCC, pp. 1662/3. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 128. CSPD 1660/1, p. 285.
226. List, cols. 21, 48. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 163. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, pp. 58/9. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. CCC, pp. 2982, 2316. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
227. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 163. List, cols. 21, 48, 153. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26 p. 349. CCC, pp. 1652, 1695/9. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. Phillips, Cumberland and Westmorland, p. 47. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 48. See also, Colonel Jordan Crossland.
228. List, col. 21. CCC, p. 2996. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 48. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
229. List, col. 21. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39.
230. List, col. 48. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 17.
231. List, col. 21. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 210. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 7.
232. List, col. 48. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 20.
233. List, col. 49. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 135. LJ, VIII, p. 348.
234. List, col. 49. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 97. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 244/51, 251 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 72, p. 180. CCC, p. 2014. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 102.
235. List, col. 49. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 179. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 186. HMC Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 2, 10, 24, 254. See also, John Jackson of Liverpool in CAM, pp. 1220/1.
236. List, col. 49. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 141. CCC, p. 2550. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 200 : IV, p. 14.
237. List, col. 49. CCC, p. 2815. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 212. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 196/9. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 94.
238. List, col. 49. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 2/4 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 95, p. 16. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42.
239. List, col. 49. Aveling, York Recusancy, p. 241.
240. List, col. 50. Raine, North Durham, p. 307. Foster, Northumberland Visitations, p. 57. History of Northumberland, I, pp. 225, 229 : VII, p. 360. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 210. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 124/5. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 93.
241. Watts and Watts, Border to Middle Shire, p. 83 and passim.
242. List, col. 50. Raine, North Durham, p. 307. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 93. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 209. History of Northumberland, I, p. 229 : VII, p. 360.
243. List, col. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 210. Raine, North Durham, p. 307.

244. List, col. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 79, 304. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 252.
245. List, col. 50. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360. Raine, North Durham, p. 307. Foster, Northumberland Visitations, p. 58.
246. List, col. 50. Foster, Northumberland Visitations, p. 59.
247. Young, Edgehill, pp. 15/16.
248. Ibid., pp. 226/7.
249. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 159.
250. Ibid., p. 177. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 237/237b.
251. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 214.
252. Ibid., p. 104.
253. ibid., p. 238.
254. Warburton, II, p. 236f.
255. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 174.
256. Burke, Extinct Peerages, p. 229. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 122, 443 f.n. 70. Warburton, II, p. 403. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 87. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 215, 219. Carte, Original Letters, I, p. 25. Lumby, J.H., A Calendar of the Deeds and Papers in the possession of Sir James de Hoghton, Bart., LCRS, Vol. lxxxviii, p. 257. Harl. Ms. 6804, ff. 162/3. CCC, p. 1609. CAM, p. 954.
257. List, col. 54. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 112. Lumby, De Hoghton Calendar, p. 257. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 23/5 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 420. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 92. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 303. Mercurius Politicus, 30.8.51, p. 1039. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 13. Young, Edgehill, pp. 176, 226.
258. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 13. CCC, p. 1471. Harl. Ms. 6804, f. 55. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 238, 247. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. LJ, VII, p. 435. Rylands, W.H. ed: Grantees of Arms Named in Docquets and Patents to the End of the Seventeenth Century, Harleian Society, Vol. 66, p. 24.
259. Lumby, De Hoghton Calendar, pp. 257/8. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 154. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 66, 238. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 264/6.
260. Young, Edgehill, p. 227. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 18. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, pp. 105, 139. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 91 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, pp. 401/2. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 51, 60, 79. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenantcy, p. 280 f.n. 23.
261. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 238. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. LJ, VII, p. 435. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 49.
262. List, col. 54. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 114, 267/8. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 68.
263. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 238. Young, Edgehill, p. 227. LJ, XI, p. 77. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees.
264. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 238. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 558. HMC 10th Report, Stewart Mss., p. 92.
265. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 159.
266. List, col. 54. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 40. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 284.
267. List, col. 54. Train, K.S.S. ed: Nottinghamshire Visitation 1662/4, Thoroton Society, Record Series, Vol. XIII, p. 49.
268. List, col. 54. CCC, p. 2090.
269. List, col. 54. HMC Fourth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 57.
270. Rushworth IV, I, pp. 46/7. LJ, VII, p. 435.
271. List, col. 54. CCC, pp. 1784/7, 3120/1.
272. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 148.
273. Young, Marston Moor, p. 54.
274. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 122/3.
275. List, col. 152. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 16. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 19. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 118.

276. List, col. 56. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 127.
277. List, col. 56. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, pp. 21, 108 f.n. 41. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 185/6.
278. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 78/9. See also, Vol. 1.
279. Ibid., p. 112.
280. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 219, 223. See also, Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 43.
281. Peacock, p. 11. CCC, pp. 2036/7. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1681/8, p. 135.
282. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 126. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 15. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 366. List, col. 57.
283. List, col. 56. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 208.
284. Peacock, p. 12. RCHM, Newark Siege Works, p. 80. Vicars, III, p. 251. CAM, p. 805. CCC, p. 1612. LJ, V, p. 82. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 45. CSPD 1651, p. 181 : 1654, p. 230.
285. List, col. 56. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, pp. 175/6. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 80/1. CSPD 1660/1, p. 426. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 115.
286. List, col. 57. CCC, p. 1467. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 28. Harl. Ms. 6852, f. 322. LJ, IX, p. 626. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 427. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 252.
287. List, col. 56. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 30. History of Northumberland, V, p. 298. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50.
288. Peacock, p. 12. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 208.
289. Peacock, p. 12. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 122. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss. p. 275.
290. List, cols. 57, 90. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 99/100. CCC, p. 1674.
291. List, col. 57. Tullies Carlisle, p. 17.
292. List, col. 56. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Wood, Durham Protestations pp. 87, 89.
293. List, cols. 56, 92. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 297. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 164. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 172. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 18, 21, 348/9. LJ, IX, p. 213.
294. List, col. 56. Lumb, Leeds Parish Registers, p. 164.
295. List, col. 57. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. vi.
296. List, col. 57. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 187 : ibid., 1681/8, p. 119. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 65/6.
297. List, col. 57. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 138. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 125.
298. List, col. 57. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 68, 353/4.
299. List, cols. 61, 74. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 5.
300. List, col. 61. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 147.
301. List, col. 61. History of Northumberland, II, p. 178. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 260.
302. Roy, The Royalist Army, p. 32.
303. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 152.
304. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 229. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 295. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 176, 182, 198. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 79. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 18. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 65/6. CCC, pp. 1375/8. LJ, IX, p. 670. CSPD 1651, pp. 63, 57, 497/8.
305. List, col. 61. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 15, 33/5. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 70/2. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39.
306. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 279. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 775. Colman, F.S., A History of the Parish of Barwick

- in Elmet in the County of York, Thoresby Society, Vol. XVII, p. 260.
307. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 152, 192, 201. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation III, p. 22. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 50. CAM, p. 1357.
308. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 152, 200.
309. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 194. Powell and Timings, Documents 1642/8, p. 79.
310. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 141. Raine, North Durham, p. 225. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 366. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 107. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 356. Watts and Watts, Border to Middle Shire, p. 83. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Powell and Timings, Documents 1642/8, pp. 79/80. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 221/4. CCC, pp. 902/3. Add. Ms. 19678, f. 18. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 114.
311. List, col. 153. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 141. Raine, North Durham, p. 225. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 114. Powell and Timings, Documents 1642/8, p. 80. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 245. Hungerford Pollen, J., and Burton, E., John Kirk's Biographies of English Catholics in the Eighteenth Century, p. 109.
312. List, col. 62. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 133. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 267. Watts and Watts, Border to Middle Shire, p. 62.
313. List, col. 153. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 171. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 207. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 247. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, pp. 15/16.
314. List, col. 65. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 353. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 269/70. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 79. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 237. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 165. Young, Edgehill, p. 152. Childs, J., Army of Charles II, p. 251.
315. List, col. 65. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 286. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 325. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 323. Peacock, Index of Royalists p. 46.
316. List, col. 65. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 208. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 188 f.n. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 180.
317. List, col. 65. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 208. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers' Records, p. 136. Longstaffe, Barnes Memoirs, p. 393.
318. List, col. 65. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 193.
319. List, col. 65. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 46, 51. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 10.
320. List, col. 65. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 12/13.
321. CCC, p. 1917.
322. Hunter Mss., 9, p. 48.
323. M.A., 29.4.43, p. 219.
324. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 227.
325. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 226.
326. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 277.
327. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 169. Surtees, History of Durham (Sunderland), pp. 89/91. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 44, 65, 237/41 (the case is extensively discussed here). Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 39.
328. List, col. 69. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 161. Dendy, F.W., Exchequer Commissions and Depositions relating to Northumberland, Arch. Ael., 3rd Series, Vol. IV, pp. 31/2. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 159. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 396/9. CCC, pp. 923/4. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 16. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 60. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 412. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, p. 123.

329. List, col. 68. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 111. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 48. HMC Various Collections, Wombwell Mss., p. 116. For his father, see Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 13, 60, 69, 185.
330. List, col. 68. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 222/3. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 76, 89.
331. List, col. 68. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 169. Longstaffe Drake's Pontefract, p. 5. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 237. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275.
332. List, col. 68. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 10, 18, 61, 318.
333. List, col. 68. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, pp. 4, 6.
334. List, col. 68. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 33.
335. List, col. 68. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 14. Colman, Barwick in Elmet, p. 162.
336. List, col. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 137.
337. List, col. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 46.
338. List, col. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 62.
339. List, col. 68. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 145. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 61.
340. List, col. 69. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition, p. 339. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 334.
341. List, col. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 150.
342. Vicars, III, p. 80.
343. Finch Hatton Mss., 133. Burton, Musgrave Life, p. 7. Cowper, H.S., Millom Castle and the Huddlestons, CWAS, Transactions, N.S., Vol. XXIV, p. 214. Musgrave Mss. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 192. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 80. Vicars, II, p. 80 : III, pp. 45, 308/9. Rushworth IV, I, p. 128. CSPD 1645/7, p. 242 : 1654, p. 352. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. CCC, pp. 1699/1700. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. Hunter Mss., 7, f. 13.
344. List, col. 28. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 254. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 395. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, I, p. 86.
345. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 104. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 10.
346. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 171/2. List, col. 74. PRO SP 16/475, ff. 52/3. CSPD 1660/1, p. 241.
347. List, col. 73. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, pp. 121/2, 254, 259.
348. List, col. 74. CCC, p. 1745.
349. List, col. 74. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 359.
350. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 104.
351. List, col. 72. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 94 f.n.
352. List, col. 73. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40.
353. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 93.
354. List, col. 74. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 12/13. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 265.
355. List, col. 74. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 140. CCC, p. 2686.
356. List, col. 28. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
357. List, col. 74. Hedley, W.P., The Riddleys of Ridley and Willimontswick Arch. Ael., 4th Series, Vol. XXXII, p. 148.
358. List, col. 74. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 74.
359. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 63. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 81.
360. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 95.
361. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 143. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 364. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, passim. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CSPD 1660/1, p. 239. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation, pp. 115, 297. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 185. LJ, V, pp. 15, 274. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. Vicars, II, p. 299. M.A., 19.2.43, p. 92. Hargrove, E., The History

- of the Castle, Town and Forest of Knaresborough, p. 207. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 377. Young, Marston Moor, passim. Wenham, Siege of York, passim.
362. List, col. 75. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 376. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 209. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 73. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 65/72. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 198. LJ, IX, p. 78. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275.
363. List, col. 75. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 60.
364. List, col. 75. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 100. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, pp. 5, 50. Crossley, York Registry Will 1673/80, p. 77.
365. List, col. 75. Rushworth III, II, p. 619.
366. List, col. 75. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 215/6.
367. List, col. 78. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 135. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers' Records, p. 135. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 257. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 27. Ainsworth Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 74.
368. List, col. 78. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 33, 44, 57, 66, 211. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Survey, II, pp. 204/5. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 145, 182. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 123. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 343. Wenham, Siege of York, pp. 183, 213 f.n. 28.
369. List, col. 78. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 134: ibid., 1681/8, p. 52.
370. List, col. 78. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 166. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 206. Welford, Newcastle Hearth Tax 1665, p. 61.
371. List, col. 78. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 84. CSPD 1661/2, p. 228
372. List, col. 78. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271.
373. List, col. 78. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 171 : ibid., 1660/65, p. 123.
374. List, col. 78. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 1468. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 87. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, pp. 3, 5.
375. Young, Marston Moor, p. 59.
376. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, II, p. 344. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 70. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, pp. 58/9, 61/2. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. CCC, p. 1700. Ferguson, Sandford's Cursory Relation, p. 42. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
377. List, col. 79. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 185. Stephens, Seven Civil War Tracts, p. 22. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 201.
378. List, col. 79. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
379. List, col. 79. Hall, Malbon's Memorials, p. 185.
380. List, col. 79. Young, Marston Moor, p. 164 and facing p. 209.
381. William Lilly's History of his Life and Times, 1826 reprint of 1715 edition, pp. 78/9. Captain Camby spoke these words to Lilly. I do not claim to have discovered any startling evidence which leads me to the view that Lambton's Foot and the Whitecoats were one and the same. On the contrary, from a reconsideration of evidence widely known and long available, it seems to me that for the truth to have been so long hidden was purely a result of it being so obvious. The matter is further dealt with in my forthcoming paper, Marston Moor - The Sources and the Site, to be published by the Borthwick Institute in March 1978.
382. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 276. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 14. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 83.
383. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 522. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 207. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 356, 401. Rushworth III, II, p. 50. Nalson, Impartial Collection, p. 207. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Mickleton and Spearman Ms., 9, f. 259. Turton, R.B., The Alum Farm, pp. 116, 160. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham

- and Northumberland, pp. 10, 263. LJ, VI, p. 383.
384. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 162. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
385. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 197. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 157. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 259.
386. List, col. 81. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 10, 57, 67. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 178. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 237. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 259. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 170/1. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition, p. 356. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index p.146.
387. List, col. 81. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 46.
388. List, col. 81. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 212 f.n. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 251. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 71. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 167. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 298/301. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 161. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Lumb, Leeds Registers, p. 164.
389. List, col. 81. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 107. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 7.
390. List, col. 153. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 199.
391. List, col. 81. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, p. 110.
392. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, pp. 72/3. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 688 : III, p. 162. Nicolson and Burn, I, p. 163 : II p. 38. Talbot, Northern Book of Composition, p. 359. T.T. E 54 (8) A Particular List of the Officers taken prisoner at Marston Moor. CCC, pp. 968/9. LJ, VIII, p. 384. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 28. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 872. CSPD 1651, pp. 182, 526: 1660/1, p. 63: 1661/2, p. 263. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562.
393. List, col. 81. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 771.
394. List, col. 81. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 46.
395. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 93.
396. Lamplugh is not suggested because of any 'obvious' link, but as an example. Godfrey Floyd, perhaps even Henry Wait, might be likely candidates.
397. List, col. 82. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 183/4 : III, p. 30. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 362, 368. Lumb, Thoresby Papers, p. 435.
398. List, col. 82. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 222. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 159/60.
399. List, col. 82. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 111/12. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 205/6. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 93. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 122/3. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 350.
400. List, col. 82. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 679.
401. Fetherston, J., Richard St. George's Visitation of the County of Cumberland, Harleian Society, Vol. 7, p. 3. Musgrave Mss. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 328. CCC, p. 2725. LJ, VIII, p. 384.
402. Musgrave Mss. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 328. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 187. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. CCC, pp. 1024, 2725. LJ, IX, p. 24.
403. Vyner Mss., 5806 T/32/48 : 5816 T/32/47 : 5810 T/32/46. List, col. 90. Crossley, York Registry Wills, 1660/5, p. 85 : ibid., 1673/80, p. 111.
404. List, col. 91. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 26, 67.
405. List, col. 91. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 106.
406. List, col. 91. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 126.
407. List, col. 91. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 52.

408. T.T. E 16 (5) A Particular Relation of the taking of Newcastle. Welford, Newcastle Hearth Tax 1665, p. 58. Hunter Blair, Mayors and Sheriffs of Newcastle, p. 57. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 283/4 and f.n. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, passim. CSPD 1640/1, p. 35 : 1659/60, p. 228. Bodleian Library, Clarendon State Papers, 26 f. 119. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, pp. 133, 135/6, 204. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, passim. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 167. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 32. LJ, VII, p. 43. Carte, Original Letters, I, p. 179. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, pp. 157, 271. HMC Various Collections, II, Harford Mss., p. 360. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 80, 207. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 618, 650, 652.
409. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 7, 13, 39, 179. List, col. 154. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 95. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 221. Marshal, G.W. ed: Le Neve's Pedigrees...., Harleian Society, Vol. 8. p. 101. CSPD 1660/1, p. 50. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 204. Welford, Newcastle Hearth Tax 1665, p. 62. LJ, IX, p. 48. CSPD 1658/9, p. 89.
410. List, col. 91. CSPD 1651/2, pp. 485, 494, 508.
411. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 202, 239. CCC, p. 828.
412. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 68, 145/6. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 65. Hunter Blair, Mayors and Sheriffs of Newcastle, p. 67. Rushworth, III, II, p. 613. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 202. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 462. Hodgson, Stapleton Correspondence, pp. 137/8. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 106. HMC Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 170.
413. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 15, 39, 180. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 95. LJ, IX, p. 47. CSPD 1658/9, p. 579. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 106.
414. List, col. 92. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 235. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 95. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 97.
415. List, col. 91. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 188/190. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 463, 492. CCC, p. 1270. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, pp. 135, 202. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 208. Welford, Newcastle Hearth Tax 1665, p. 60.
416. List, col. 92. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 269. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 136.
417. List, col. 92. CSPD 1661/2, p. 121. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 215.
418. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 270/4. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 98. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 190, 238. CSPD 1659/60, p. 119.
419. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 167. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 71. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 251.
420. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 238/9. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, pp. 135, 155. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 278/9. CCC, p. 1920. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 309.
421. List, col. 91. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 223. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 159/60. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 329.
422. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 202, 238/9. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 383. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders p. 322. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 125. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 135. Marshal, Le Neve's Pedigrees, p. 274.
423. List, col. 92. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 166. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 146. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 135. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 96/101. Welford, Newcastle Hearth Tax 1665, p. 61.
424. List, col. 92. History of Northumberland, IV, p. 341. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 139.

425. List, col. 91. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, pp. 220, 239. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 10.
426. List, col. 92. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 303. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, II, p. 99.
427. List, col. 91. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 188/90.
428. List, col. 92. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, pp. 136, 144/6, 182, 189.
429. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 220. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, p. 158. CSPD 1660/1, p. 520. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 23/30.
430. Young, Marston Moor, p. 59.
431. T.T. 669 (6) 52, Truths from Hull, York and other places.
432. T.T. 669 (6) 51, Remarkable Passages from Hull.
433. T.T. E 107 (30) Advertisements from York and Beverley.
434. Harl. Ms. 6804, ff. 188/9.
435. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 169, 175, 181, 199.
436. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 85. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 367. HMC Sixth Report, Graham Mss., p. 324. Carlisle, Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber, p. 134. HMC Fourth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 6 : 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 1. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 243, 311, 325. Nalson, Impartial Collections, I, p. 206. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. LJ, V, pp. 15, 20. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 270. Hildyard, Antiquities of York, p. 108. Vyner Mss., 5809 T/32/50. CSPD 1644, p. 379.
437. Catalogue. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 307. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 86. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 198. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 100. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 360: IV, p. 121. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 346.
438. Harl. Ms. 6804, ff. 188/9, as for all officers listed in this regiment.
439. Ibid., and Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 47.
440. List, col. 94. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 171/2. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 368. Vyner Ms., 5815 T/32/42. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 109/10. CCC, pp. 1834/5.
441. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 171/2.
442. List, col. 94. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 214.
443. List, col. 94. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 171.
444. List, col. 94. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 129.
445. Young, Edgehill, pp. 55, 85/90, 230.
446. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 157/60. Add. Ms. 34713, f. 1.
447. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 240. Harl. Ms. 6804, f. 55.
448. Warburton, II, p. 236f.
449. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 221. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 556. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, III, p. 428. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 116. Ffarington, Farington Papers, pp. 81/3. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 51. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 56. Young, Edgehill, p. 230. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenantcy, p. 28 f.n. 23. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 240, 102. Stanley Papers, I, p. 125. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, p. 233. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689.
450. List, col. 95. Young, Edgehill, p. 230. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 66. Rylands, Lancashire Inquisitions, I, p. 275. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 44, 51.
451. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 157/60. Harl. Ms. 6804 ff. 55, 92/3. Warburton, II, p. 248. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1314. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 269.
452. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 240. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 113/4. Young, Edgehill, p. 230.
453. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 240. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 10. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 105. Young, Edgehill, pp. 12, 230.
454. Young, Edgehill, p. 230.

455. List, col. 95. Catalogue. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 176. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 68/70; Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 95, p. 16. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 43. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 115.
456. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 556. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 56. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 221. Warburton, II, p. 248.
457. List, col. 95. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 418.
458. Raine, North Durham, p. 267.
459. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, p. 43. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 113. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 325. Spalding, Memorials of the Trubles, II, p. 317. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 237. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 297/9. CCC, p. 884.
460. List, col. 98. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, pp. 46/7.
461. M.A., 29.7.43, p. 405.
462. List, col. 98. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1046. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 41. CCC, pp. 968/9. Jefferson, Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 562. CSPD 1651, p. 526. Hunter Mss. 7, f. 14. CSPD 1660/1, p. 313. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 82.
463. List, cols. 98, 100. CCC, pp. 954/5, 1290, 1854/5. LJ, V, p. 193. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 586. LJ, X, p. 493. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 45. Adair, Cheriton, p. 109.
464. List, col. 98. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40.
465. List, col. 98. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 48. CCC, p. 1881.
466. List, col. 98. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 56.
467. List, col. 98. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 91. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CCC, pp. 1670/1.
468. List, col. 98. CCC, p. 1123.
469. List, col. 98. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 10.
470. T.T. E 153 (15) True Newes from York &c.
471. T.T. E 154 (5) Lamentable and Sad Newes from the North.
472. Hildyard, York, p. 107.
473. Burke, Extinct Peerages, p. 28. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 114. Mahaffy, CSP Ireland 1633/47, p. 64. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 82. Burke and Burke, Extinct Baronetcies, p. 44. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. CCC, pp. 1878/9. Coate, M., Cornwall in the Great Civil War and Interregnum, p. 189. Sprigge, Anglia Rediviva, p. 313. Coate, ibid., pp. 205, 238. Childs, Army of Charles II, p. 234.
474. Peacock, p. 10. PRO SP 16/495, A List of Recusants. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, I, p. 41. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 122.
475. Peacock, p. 10. Anstruther, Seminary Priests, II, p. 10. Burton, T., History of Heminborough, p. 311. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 775. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 176, 206.
476. Mercurius Politicus 19.8.50 : 23.8.50 : 22.2.50/1, pp. 174, 182, 183/5.
477. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 264. Foster, Northumberland Visitations. History of Northumberland, IX, p. 87. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 113 f.n.
478. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 624. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 82. History of Northumberland, IX, pp. 86/7. Foster, Northumberland Visitations. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 113/4. LJ, X, p. 493. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 13.
479. List, col. 7. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 186.
480. List, col. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 18. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxii 196. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 30.
481. List, col. 100. CSPD 1650, p. 167. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 86.

482. List, col. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 202. Crossley, York Registry Wills, pp. 45, 164. CSPD 1660/1, p. 448. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 193.
483. List, col. 100. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead) p. 154. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 9.
484. List, col. 100. Tullie's Carlisle, pp. 24, 36.
485. List, col. 7. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 191 : III, p. 31. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, pp. 72/3. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 465.
486. List, col. 100. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 226. CCC, p. 2121. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 38. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 200.
487. List, cols. 7, 100. Raine, North Durham, pp. 261, 315.
488. List, col. 100. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 338/9. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 238.
489. Peacock, p. 10. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 165/6. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 26.
490. List, col. 100. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 82.
491. List, col. 7. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p. 154.
492. List, col. 100. CCC, p. 2965.
493. List, col. 100. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 103.
494. List, col. 100. T.T. E 669 (6) 66, op cit.
495. Musgrave Mss. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 231. HMC Third Report, Devonshire Mss., p. 40. HMC 10th Report, Muncaster Mss., pp. 274/5. Ferguson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 107. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Jefferson, History of Cumberland, II, p. 158. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 39. CCC, p. 2675. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 282.
496. Young, Edgehill, p. 52. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 160/1.
497. Young, Edgehill, p. 89. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 211.
498. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 157/60. Add. Ms. 34713, f.1.
499. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 237/237b.
500. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 82/3.
501. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 97, 128, 184, 188/9, 204/5, 216, 279.
502. Harl. Ms. 986. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 25. Toynbee and Young, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142.
503. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 248.
504. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 23.
505. Ibid., pp. 160/1.
506. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 25.
507. DNB. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 71. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, pp. 1143. Turton, Alum Farm, p. 162. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 302/3. Hodgson, J.C. ed: The Journal of John Aston, 1639, North Country Diaries I, Surtees Society, Vol. CXVIII, p. 20. HMC Ninth Report, p. 349. Nalson, Impartial Collections, I, p. 206. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 317, 324, 326. Finch Hatton Ms. 133.
508. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 370. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 74. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 103. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 187/95. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 160/1. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 380. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 80, 113, 139. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 28. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 110. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 187.
509. Young, Edgehill, p. 160. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Walker, Historical Discourses, pp. 63, 113, 115, 128. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 78. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 203. M.A., 31.5.45, p. 1610. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 147. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. LJ, VII, p. 434. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 600. Harl. Ms. 6804, ff. 246, 309. CSPD 1654, p. 408 : 1655, p. 193.

510. List, col. 104. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 319. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. LJ, VII, pp. 434/5.
511. List, col. 104. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 18/19. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 78.
512. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 161, 185. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 128. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 203. M.A., 31.5.45, p. 1610. Rushworth, IV, I, pp. 46/7. LJ, VII, p. 434.
513. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 35. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 381. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 91. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 147. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 87. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 170/1, 173, 177/8. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 187. See also, Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 362 and Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 32.
514. List, col. 104. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. LJ, VII, p. 435.
515. Young, Edgehill, p. 233. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 398.
516. List, col. 104. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 75, 78. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 88.
517. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 427.
518. List, col. 104. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 91, 101. CCC, p. 1510.
519. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Young, Edgehill, p. 233. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 22. LJ, VII, p. 435.
520. CAM, p. 1047. CSPD 1660/1, p. 241.
521. List, col. 104. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 128/9.
522. List, col. 104. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 200. Young, Edgehill p. 233.
523. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 75, 103, 250. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 33/4. LJ, IX, p. 56. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 85. Comber, J., The Maudes of Riddleden and Ilkley, YAJ, Vol. XXIV, p. 61. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 8. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, pp. 619/20. Paley Baildon, W., The Maudes of Ilkley, Hollinghall, Brandon, Helthwaite Hill &c., Thoresby Society, Miscellanea, Vol. XXIV, pp. 176, 178/9.
524. List, cols. 102, 104. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 161. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 85. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 910. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 44. LJ, VII, p. 435.
525. List, col. 104. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 260. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 171. Young, Edgehill, p. 150. LJ, VII, p. 435.
526. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 186. CCC, p. 2016. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, p. 38.
527. LJ, VII, p. 435. See on for further such unidentified officers who are included even though, possibly, merely Tertia officers.
528. List, col. 104. LJ, VII, p. 435.
529. List, col. 104. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 87. CSPD 1649/50, p. 531.
530. List, col. 102. LJ, VII, p. 435.
531. List, col. 104. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 186. Crossley, York Registry Wills; pp. 6, 107: ibid., 1673/80, pp. 8, 142. (*Read, 1660/5).
532. Young, Edgehill, p. 233.
533. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 88.
534. Day, W.A. ed: The Pythouse Papers, pp. 63/4.
535. Add. Ms. 5752, f. 215.
536. Philips, Luke Journal, p. 125.
537. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 263.
538. Ibid., p. 279.
539. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 26.
540. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 75.
541. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 160.

542. DNB. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 303/4. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1146. Nalson, Impartial Collections, I, p. 207. Coates, Journal of Simond D'Ewes, p. 29. Roy, Ordnance Papers, passim. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 17, 52. Brunton and Pennington, Long Parliament, p. 201. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 219. Black, Docquets, pp. 40, 52. M.A., 13.5.43, p. 249 : 14.4.43, pp. 252/3. Walker, Historical Discourses, pp. 60, 65. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 10 and passim.
543. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 245/6, 299, 300. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 264/5. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 143. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 49.
544. List, col. 105. Toynbee and Young, Cropredy Bridge, p. 142.
545. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 82. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 26.
546. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 108.
547. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 75.
548. Harl. Ms. 5712, f. 204. See also, Philip, Luke Journal, p. 265.
549. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 88.
550. Long, Symonds Diary, pp. 159/60.
551. Ibid., p. 166.
552. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 143/4.
553. Ibid., see also Long, Symonds Diary, p. 182.
554. Warburton, III, p. 105.
555. Harl. Ms. 6804, f. 52.
556. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 69. HMC Various Collections, II, Buxton Mss., p. 257. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 332. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 245 and f.n., 279, 288. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 26.
557. DNB. Webb, J., Memorials of the Civil War...as it affected Herefordshire and the Adjacent Counties, II, p. 127. Warburton, III, pp. 221, 104. Adair, Cheriton, pp. 103/4, 130. Black, Docquets, pp. 155, 238, 273. M.A., 1.4.44, p. 917. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 356. CSPD 1644/45, p. 438. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 164. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 147. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 128. Rushworth, IV, I, p. 35. LJ, IX, p. 573.
558. List, col. 6.
559. List, col. 6. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 30. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 265/7. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 319. LJ, VII, p. 435.
560. Toynbee and Young, Cropredy Bridge, p. 141.
561. LJ, VII, p. 435.
562. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, p. 193.
563. Philip, Luke Journal, pp. 123, 164, 196.
564. Add. Ms. 5752, ff. 213/4.
565. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 279.
566. Ibid., p. 499.
567. Green, Letters of Henrietta Maria, pp. 196, 207.
568. Harl. Ms. 986, f. 75. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 411.
569. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 340, 501 f.n. 308.
570. Tibbut, Luke Letter Books, p. 644.
571. Ibid., pp. 660, 667.
572. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 18.
573. CSPD 1644, p. 278.
574. Toynbee, M., ed: The Papers of Captain Henry Stevens, Waggon-Master General to King Charles I, Oxfordshire Record Society, p. 28.
575. Walker, Historical Discourses, pp. 90/1. Long, Symonds Diary, p. 147. M.A., 12.9.44, p. 1161.
576. See also, Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, pp. 26/7.*
577. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, pp. 25/7. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 116. DNB. List, col. 54. Sanderson, W., A Compleat History of the Life and Raigne of King Charles, p. 730. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 137, 259. CCC, p. 1556.

578. List, col. 113. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 338. PRO SP 16/475 ff. 52/3.
Wotton, Baronets, I, p. 561.
579. List, col. 54. LJ, VII, p. 434.
580. List, col. 128. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 187, 281, 469 f.n. 79.
Roy, The Royalist Army, p. 205.
581. List, col. 113. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumber-
land, pp. xxxiii, 44, 65, 139. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions,
p. 356. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 207.
582. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 325/6.
583. List, col. 113. CSPD 1660/1, p. 157.
584. List, col. 113. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 93.
585. List, col. 113. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 307. Hall, Malbon's
Memorials, p. 185. T.T. E 303 (18) The King's Forces Totally Routed...
HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., III, pp. 149/50.
586. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 26. Walker, Historical
Discourses, p. 95.
587. List, col. 113. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p.
255.
588. List, col. 113. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 108.
Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 341. Longstaffe, Durham High
Commission, p. 14.
589. List, col. 113. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 630. Raine,
Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 247.
590. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 307.
591. Lumb, Leeds Registers, p. 173.
592. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 371. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 33. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Represent-
ation, p. 156. LJ, V, p. 274. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Lister, West
Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 346. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 334,
356. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90. Longstaffe, Drake's Ponte-
fract, passim. Vyner Ms. 5809 T/32/50. LJ, VI, p. 522.
593. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 14. Clay, Yorkshire
Gentry, p. 377. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Longstaffe, Drake's
Pontefract, passim. LJ, V, p. 580 : VI, p. 522. Vicars, II, p. 206.
594. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 51/2. CCC, p. 1219.
Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, V, p. 136. Thurloe State
Papers, V, p. 572.
595. List, col. 109. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 105.
Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 37.
596. List, col. 109. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 213 : III,
p. 96. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 371. Longstaffe, Drake's Ponte-
fract, p. 4. Clay, Abstracts of Wills, pp. 50/1.
597. List, col. 109. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 93.
598. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 372. Burke, Commoners, IV, p. 387 f.n.
Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 139. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 131.
Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 130/1. Clay,
Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 103/5. CSPD 1660/1, p. 445.
599. List, col. 109. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 5/6.
600. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 372. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 19.
601. List, col. 109. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 185.
602. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, p. 262 f.n. 4. Burke,
Commoners, III, pp. 208/9. Surtees, History of Durham (Gateshead), p.
82. Foster, Northumberland Pedigrees, p. 101. History of Northumber-
land, IV, p. 285 : VIII, p. 183. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Mickleton and
Spearman Mss., 9, f. 259. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 202. Welford,
Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 320 f.n. Add. Ms.
19678, f. 17b. Walker, Historical Discourses, p. 18.
603. List, col. 109. Rushworth, III, II, p. 613. Terry, Siege of Newcastle
p. 202. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland,
p. 24. HMC Third Report, Sneyd Mss., p. 287. CSPD 1649/50, p. 524.
604. List, col. 109. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumb-
erland, p. 334.
605. List, col. 109. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 71.

606. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 362. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Metcalf, Book of Knights, p. 192. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 313. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 115/6. CCC, p. 977. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 614. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 511.
607. List, col. 110. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 216. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 317. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 313.
608. List, col. 110. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 55. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 78.
609. List, col. 110. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 216. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 317.
610. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 248. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 51. Seacomb, House of Stanley, pp. 203, 258. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 123/30. CCC, pp. 2652/3. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire p. 129. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenantcy, p. 280 f.n. 23. LJ, V, p. 450. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 303. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 117.
611. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 221. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 149. See also, Vol. 1.
612. List, col. 153. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 240. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 343.
613. List, col. 153. Armitage and Rylands, Cheshire Visitations, pp. 22/3.
614. List, col. 153. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 110.
615. List, col. 153. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 10. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 30.
616. List, col. 111. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, p. 9.
617. List, col. 111. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 119/20 : Brownbill, ibid., Vol. 96, p. 406.
618. List, col. 109. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 125.
619. Musgrave Mss. Wotton, Baronets, III, p. 299. CCC, pp. 1460/1. Brunton and Pennington, Long Parliament, p. 201. Thurloe State Papers, IV, p. 563. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 136. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 185.
620. List, col. 115. CCC, p. 1754.
621. List, col. 115. Faraday, Westmorland Protestations, p. 12. CCC, p. 2688.
622. Hunter, South Yorkshire, I, p. 24.
623. Hodgson, Aston's Journal, p. 9.
624. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 139.
625. Alnwick Mss., Mayney Services, f. 181.
626. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 223. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 321. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 352. Huddersfield City Library, Whitley-Beaumont Mss., WBA 5/6, 5/10, 5/12. Rushworth, III, II, p. 126. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, pp. 138/40. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 147/51. LJ, IX, p. 637. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 372. Boothroyd, History of Pontefract, p. 290. CAM, p. 662.
627. List, col. 117. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 147. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 349. LJ, VIII, p. 349. CSPD 1660/1, p. 124.
628. List, col. 117. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 351. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 354. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 190. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 192. T.T. E 88 (23) The Rider of the White Horse. CSPD 1651, p. 534.
629. List, col. 117. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 1071. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 128. LJ, IX, p. 632. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim.

630. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 8. Pailey Baildon, The Maudes of Ilkley, p. 177.
631. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 138. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 84. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 95. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 45. T.T. E 88 (19) A True and Plenary Relation.... Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 6.
632. List, col. 117. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 137. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 1733.
633. List, col. 117. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 84.
634. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 373/4. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 53. LJ, VIII, pp. 142, 318.
635. List, col. 118. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 33. However, in the proceedings concerning Scrope already quoted (f.n. 634, above) is a curious allusion which may be a clue to this officer's identity. John Brown, clerk to the Parliament, noted on January 15th 1645/6 "John James als [John] Scrope als Sanford shall be putt into the first quallificacon for the 15 proposicons amongst those psons who expect not pdon", (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 56). Is it too great a stretch of the imagination to suppose that Lt. Colonel James was none other than Scrope himself, and that Scrope held that rank, as opposed to that of full colonel, under Henry Chaytor (q.v.).
636. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 374. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, II, p. 1365. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 74. HMC Fourth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 64. Mahaffy, CSP Ireland, p. 293. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 406. Skaife, York Minster Burials, pp. 6/7. HMC Sixth Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 1.
637. Young, Marston Moor, p. 59.
638. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 102.
639. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, pp. 102, 114. Hildyard, York, p. 108. Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 11.
640. List, col. 120. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 67. Terry, Siege of Newcastle, p. 239. CJ, III, p. 700.
641. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 76. Leeds, York Arckaeological Society Ms. DD 56 L3.
642. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 76.
643. Ibid., p. 82.
644. For a consideration of Cumberland's actions, see Vol. 1. and my forthcoming paper in York Historian, 'Two York City Regiments 1642-4'.
645. Leeds, Y.A.S. Ms. DD 56 L3.
646. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 87.
647. Ibid., pp. 93, 112.
648. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 374. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 69. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, passim. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 95/6. Catalogue. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation, p. 116. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 327. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90 LJ, V, p. 274. HMC Various Collections, Harford Mss., pp. 353, 355/6. CSPD 1658/9, p. 21. Thurloe State Papers, IV, pp. 614, 680. Bruce, Verney Papers, p. 58. Brunton and Pennington, Long Parliament, p. 203. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Keeler, Long Parliament, p. 340.
649. List, col. 120. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 123. Holiday, Yorkshire Fines and Land Sales, p. 378. Toynbee and Young, Strangers in Oxford, p. 30. Morant, Whitaker's Craven, p. 514.
650. List, col. 120. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 81. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 362. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 103. LJ, IX, p. 656.
651. List, col. 120. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 216. CSPD 1660/1, p. 156. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 158.
652. List, col. 120. Walker, J.W., The Watertons of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, YAJ, Vol. XXX, p. 410. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. xxxiii. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 309.

653. List, col. 120. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 41.
654. List, col. 120. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 948. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 232. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 18.
655. List, col. 120. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 78. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 70 f.n.
656. List, col. 120. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 33.
657. York Public Library, Civil War Tracts and Mss., M 63. LJ, V, p. 74.
658. York Public Library, op. cit., M 66.
659. LJ, V, p. 79.
660. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 148.
661. Harl. Ms. 6851 ff. 150/1.
662. Young, Edgehill. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, I, p. 101.
663. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 95.
664. Temple Newsam Mss., 2AI/16 : 2AI/20.
665. Young, Marston Moor, p. 59.
666. Bellasis, E., Stricklands of Sizergh, CWAS, Transactions, 1889, passim. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 58. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 316. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 354/5. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 324, 333. HMC Fifth Report, Strickland Mss., pp. 330/1. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 150. Musgrave Mss. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 275. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, II, p. 155. HMC Eighth Report Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275.
667. List, col. 125. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 418. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 62, 105, 212 : VI, p. 204. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 11. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 360. LJ, V, p. 15. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 150/1. Atkinson, op. cit., III, p. 278. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 100.
668. List, col. 125. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 177.
669. Vicars, II, p. 41. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, II, p. 326. HMC 13th Report, Portland Mss., I, p. 138. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 38.
670. List, col. 125. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 171. HMC Various Collections, VIII, p. 59. Temple Newsam Mss., 2AI/16, 2AI/20.
671. Harl. Ms. 6851, f. 151. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 139, 454. Warburton III, p. 70. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 107. CCC, p. 1800.
672. List, col. 125. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 58. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., p. 331. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 72, pp. 70/1 : Vol. 95, pp. 141/6. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 174 : VI, p. 32. Thurloe State Papers, IV, pp. 393, 614. CSPD 1655, p. 216: 1656/7, pp. 36. 330 : 1661/2, p. 315. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 141.
673. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 126. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 201.
674. List, col. 125. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 222, 293 : IV, pp. 18, 29, 80 : VI, p. 127.
675. List, col. 127. Hedley, Northumberland Families, I, p. 44. Raine, North Durham, p. 184. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 193. James, M.E., ed: Estate Accounts of the Earls of Northumberland 1562-1637, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXIII, p. 202. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 91, 352/3. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Mickleton and Spearman Mss., 9, f. 259. CSPD 1650, pp. 273/4. Brocket Northumberland Freeholders, p. 325. History of Northumberland, V, p. 458.
676. List, col. 127. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 9. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 308. History of Northumberland, VII, p. 360.
677. List, col. 127. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 190.
678. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 375. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, pp. 10/11. Aveling, Northern

- Catholics, p. 309. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 183, 200. Baildon, Refusals of Knighthood, p. 103. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 74/5. CCC, p. 112. LJ, X, p. 31.
679. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 10.
680. Ibid. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 94.
681. List, col. 127. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 68, 355. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 689. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 876. Longstaffe, Barnes Memoirs, p. 397. HMC Various Collections, II, Wombwell Mss., p. 116 : ibid., Harford Mss., p. 353. CSPD 1655, p. 215. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 99.
682. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 535. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 275. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 13, 21, 327. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 356. Finch Hatton Ms. 133.
683. List, col. 127. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 171. Blagg, Canterbury Administrations 1657/60, p. 8. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 20/1, 28, 60, 96, 334/5.
684. List, col. 127. Wood, Durham Inventories, pp. 291/2. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 124.
685. List, col. 127. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 274.
686. List, col. 127. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 144.
687. List, col. 128.
688. List, col. 128. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 207. Hutchinson, History of Durham, III, p. 522. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, II, pp. 13/14. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 261/2, 39. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 106.
689. List, col. 128. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 535. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 275. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 355. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 18, 23.
690. List, col. 128. Hunter Blair, Durham Armorial, p. 163. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 153. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 197. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 17/18, 61, 259/60, 269.
691. List, col. 128. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 10. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 57.
692. List, col. 128. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 337. Thurloe State Papers, III, p. 353 : IV, p. 522.
693. List, col. 128. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 67. Kirby, Durham Parliamentary Surveys, I, p. 36. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 119 and f.n.
694. Young, Marston Moor, pp. 59, 271.
695. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 307. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 265. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 51, 75, 353. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 49/50. CCC, pp. 2222/5. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 204/9. Catalogue.
696. T.T. E 1182 (3).
697. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 275.
698. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 128/9. Catalogue. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 140. HMC Seventh Report, House of Lords Mss., p. 97.
699. List, col. 130. CSPD 1660/1, p. 154. Ormerod, p. 276.
700. List, col. 130. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 36. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 106. Catalogue.
701. List, col. 130. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 215. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
702. List, col. 130. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 53.
703. List, col. 130. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 216/7. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 49. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 41.

704. List, col. 130. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 64. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 259, 263/4 : Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 96, p. 406.
705. List, col. 130. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 72/3.
706. List, col. 130. Ormerod, p. 276.
707. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 275. Fishwick, H., The History of the Parish of Poulton le Fylde, Chetham Society, N.S., Vol. VIII, p. 188. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 91. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 348, 391. Catalogue. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 15.
708. List, col. 130. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 332. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 323. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, pp. 298/9. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
709. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 61 : Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 96, pp. 309/10. CCC, p. 2055. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 349. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 118.
710. List, col. 130. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 69. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, p. 5.
711. List, col. 130. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 86.
712. List, col. 130. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 409. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 42.
713. List, col. 130. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 417. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 331.
714. List, col. 130. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 419.
715. List, col. 130. Fishwick, Richmond Lancashire Wills, pp. 307, 308. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 276.
716. CSPD 1650, p. 539.
717. List, col. 130. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 89.
718. List, col. 130. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, pp. 275/6 : Vol. 96, p. 418. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, pp. 327/8.
719. List, col. 130. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 118.
720. Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 19.
721. List, col. 136. Nalson, Impartial Collection, I, p. 429. Johnson, Fairfax Correspondence, II, p. 413. CSPD 1660/1, p. 243. CAM, p. 839.
722. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 353. Hildyard, York, p. 107. York Public Library, City of York House Books, B 36 1637/50, f. 76b. Wenham, Siege of York, pp. 60, 130. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 272. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 108.
723. List, col. 136. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 80.
724. List, col. 136. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 300. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 299 : IV, p. 21.
725. Catalogue. List, col. 136. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 317. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 41, 82, 121, 189. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 310.
726. List, col. 136. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 295. CCC, p. 2035.
727. List, col. 136. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 406.
728. List, col. 136. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 53. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, p. 49.
729. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 247.
730. Rushworth, III, II, p. 126. See also, Vol. 1.
731. Lumb, Leeds Registers, p. 164.
732. Wentworth, C.E., History of the Wentworths of Woolley, YAJ, Vol. XII, p. 35. (The author's manuscript has been examined, Brotherton Library, Leeds, Wentworth-Woolley Hall Mss., Box 136).

733. Ibid., Appendix D.
734. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 322. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 92. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 379/80. Aveling, H., The Catholic Recusants of the West Riding of Yorkshire 1558-1790, Proceedings of the Leeds Philosophical Society, p. 244. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Keeler, Long Parliament, pp. 383/4. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 1/3. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation p. 156. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 392. Metcalfe, Book of Knights, p. 190. Brunton and Pennington, Long Parliament, p. 203. T.T. 669 (5) 29, A Letter from His Majesty (5.5.42). Finch Hatton Ms. 133. Firth, Newcastle Life, pp. 189/90. Rushworth, III, II, p. 126. Y.A.S. Mss., No. 447. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 154/5. CCC, p. 1326. Bell, Fairfax Correspondence, I, p. 298. CAM, p. 434.
735. List, col. 139. Burke, Commoners, III, p. 327. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 197. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 352. Wotton, Baronets, I, p. 548. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 76/7. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations 1649/54, p. 45.
736. List, col. 139. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 1. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 211. LJ, IX, p. 645.
737. List, col. 139. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 77/8. CCC, p. 1738. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 213. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, p. 214. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 359.
738. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 368. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 143. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 26. Peacock, The Monckton Papers, p. 5.
739. List, col. 139. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 206. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, pp. 323/4.
740. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 366. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
741. List, col. 139. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 25. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 599. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, pp. 2/3. CCC, p. 1594. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim.
742. Walker, Yorkshire Pedigrees, p. 453. Y.A.S. Mss., No. 447. Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. CAM, p. 1400.
743. List, col. 139. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. xvii.
744. List, col. 139. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 20. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 322. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 39. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 344.
745. List, col. 139. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, pp. 188/9. CSPD 1661/2, p. 240.
746. List, col. 139. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 294.
747. List, col. 139. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 597. Walker, J.W., The Manor and Church of Woolley, YAJ, Vol. XXVII, p. 263. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 386. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, p. 353. HMC Various Collections, II, Wentworth Mss., p. 373. T.T. E 126 (1) Special Passages and Certain Information. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. Moone, Life of Belasyse, p. 390. RCHM Newark Siege Works, pp. 56/7, 78. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 16. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., p. 436.
748. List, col. 140. Lumb, Thoresby Mss., pp. 435, 437. CSPD 1650, pp. 521, 539: 1651/2, pp. 70, 546.
749. List, col. 139. LJ, VIII, p. 348. Young, Marston Moor, p. 182.
750. List, col. 140. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, pp. 138, 140. Rushworth, III, II, p. 642. Burke, Landed Gentry, p. 1089.
751. List, cols. 140, 152. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 60.
752. List, col. 139. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 597. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 16.
753. List, col. 139. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, II, p. 597.

754. List, col. 140. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1660/5, p. 7. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 363.
755. List, col. 140. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 25. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, III, p. 391. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, p. 171 : IV, p. 78.
756. Rushworth, III, II, p. 126. Alnwick Castle Mss., Mayeney Services, f. 181.
757. Foster, Northumberland Pedigrees, p. 36. History of Northumberland, II, p. 178. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, p. 260. CJ, IV, pp.225/6
758. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, pp. 160, 163. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 301/2. HMC Various Collections, II, Harford Mss., p. 353.
759. History of Northumberland, XII, pp. 325, 328, 334. Hedley, Northumberland Families, II, pp. 131/2. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 373, 375. LJ, XI, p. 122. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 189.
760. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 134. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 184 f.n. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 253. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 197.
761. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 78, 146. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 33.
762. List, col. 141. Foster, Northumberland Pedigrees, p. 46. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 194. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 87, 192/4. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 321. Dendy, Northumberland Exchequer Commissions, p. 32. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 238. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 30. Ainsworth, Canterbury Administrations, p. 118.
763. List, col. 141. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 114. LJ, IX, p. 466. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. See also, Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 173/4.
764. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 94/5. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 3.
765. List, col. 141. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Ord, J.W., The History and Antiquities of Cleveland, p. 221.
766. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 19. Dendy, Merchant Adventurers Records, pp. 133, 135. Howell, Newcastle and the Puritan Revolution, pp. 32, 61, 116.
767. List, col. 141. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 67. Rushworth, III, II, p. 127. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 211. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 311.
768. List, col. 141. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 323.
769. List, col. 141. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 245. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 22/6. Dendy, Northumberland Exchequer Commissions, p. 32.
770. Peacock, p. 12.
771. List, col. 146

THE DRAGOONS

Colonel Francis CARNABY'S Dragoons.

The sole evidence for the existence of what cannot have been more than a troop, comes from two claimants in the List. Neither of them is identifiable. Captain Albany Bell may be the Captain Abraham Bell whose wife was buried in York on June 25th 1644. Cornet Thomas Fenwick, who claimed like Bell, from Northumberland, has too common a name to permit of even a tentative designation. Colonel Carnaby has been dealt with as colonel of horse (see Appendix 1).¹

Colonel Sir Robert CLAVERING'S (Regiment of) Dragoons.

For Clavering to have raised, in addition to his regiments of Horse and of Foot, another of Dragoons, would have meant an enormous financial outlay. The evidence for the existence of a regiment is, however, based solely upon the List and the citing there of a field officer under this arm. It may be that Clavering intended a regiment to develop, but that it did not get much beyond a troop or two by the time of the Scottish invasion.

Major [] Armorer: Cited in the List. The absence of a forename makes for problems, for three Armorers, at least, were prominent Northumbrian Royalists. Curiously, however, their eminence dates to the period of the Interregnum, whereas clearly, this rank under Clavering must have a date prior to the latter's death in the summer of 1644. John Armorer, Gentleman, of Norham and Cornhill, was fined £71.6.8d. for his part in the 1648 rising, but was an undischarged delinquent in 1652. On the other hand, we have Nicholas Armorer of Belford, active in the 1654/5 plots around Tynemouth, and who, in 1655 or 1656 was responsible for the shooting to death of one of Thurloe's agents on the continent. This Armorer was a close confidant of Edward Hyde, who used him as a go-between in his dealings with Ralph Hopton who was "unhappy", however, with Armorer's "intrigues". The only Armorer to whom any rank is attached, although it must be stressed, with evidence no earlier than 1649, is Major William Armorer, Esquerry to Charles II who was with the King in Cologne in May 1655, described as "eldest querre, but now waits as master of the horse".²

Lieutenant Anthony Gargrave: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Wilkinson's troop. Gargrave was listed as a Recusant in 1637/8, and refused the Protestation of 1641/2 at St. Helen Auckland.³

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Wilkinson, cited in the List (but almost certainly the same as Captain Wilkinson of Clavering's Horse).

Quartermaster Thomas Barletson, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Major Armorer's troop.

Colonel Sir Gamaliel DUDLEY'S Dragoons.

There is a single, unidentified claimant in the List, Captain Jeremy Leech, who petitioned from London and Westminster.⁴ The claimant may have been an officer in 1648, when Dudley (q.v., as colonel of horse, Appendix 1) was in the garrison of Maidstone, Kent.

Colonel (Sir) Edmund DUNCOMBE'S Regiment of Dragoons.

Of the existence of this regiment there can be no doubt at all, although it disappeared very early in the spring of 1643 and was superseded by a Horse regiment, raised by Duncombe, under which arm he is dealt with as colonel (see Appendix 1). The Dragoons were recruited extremely hurriedly, since Duncombe was still an officer of Robert Strickland's Trainband Foot (q.v., Appendix 2) in August 1642. It may be that the regiment was raised independently and then given to Duncombe to command. It fought at Edgehill, and according to A Most True Relation of the Present State of His Majesties Army⁵, was exactly 500 strong, at full strength in other words. If this was the case (although Young⁶ doubted it without giving reasons) it suggests that a lot of individual troop formations may have been brought together to provide one specific regiment, and part of the break-up of the force might be attributed to that factor. That is not, however, entirely in agreement with the evidence, such as it is. It was quartered at Faringdon on December 19th 1642, and went on to fight in the storm of Cirencester, February 2nd 1643⁷. There it may well have suffered severe losses, and the next glimpse which we have of it, as well as the last, is of crucial importance. On May 17th 1643 Luke wrote of "Collonell Duncombe whoe lay about Farrington with 500 men which hee had a long tyme maynteyned at his owne charge, for want of money to pay them both himselfe, and 40 of his officers and 80 of his soldiers are gone quite away, and the rest were eyther lost, kild or run away before"⁸. Firstly, we see from this that the regiment was at full strength, probably at the turn of the year, which suggests that it was kept up to such strength deliberately, bearing in mind the King's want of dragoons alluded to elsewhere (see Vol. 1). That aside, however, and secondly, it is clear that Duncombe (who was not, apparently, a rich man) was expected to maintain the regiment himself and was unable to do so, although that ought not to be seen as the real factor in its disappearance over and above the implicit allusion by Luke to losses. The existence of the regiment is also evidenced by the List.

Captain [] Alford: Young alludes to this man and places him in this regiment without specifying his source. A Major Alford was wounded at the second battle of Newbury, "a courageous good commander...was shot into the thigh". In view of the Yorkshire origin, this is possibly Lancelot Alford of Beverley who died c. 1681.⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain William Duncomb, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Lieutenant Humphrey Wharton, cited by Young.

Cornet Robert Thompson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel John ERRINGTON'S Dragoons.

Again, probably nothing more than a troop, but perhaps a very early one, and in action at Bradford in December 1642 (see Vol. 1). Colonel Errington is dealt with as a cavalry colonel (see Appendix 1).

Captain Craithorne Ashley: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. He was of Birdforth, presented as a Recusant at Thirsk with his wife in 1641, when he was styled Gentleman. His own and his wife's presentment went back some years. In 1626 and 1629 they were both cited, and in 1632 he compounded to avoid further fines. He was then a tenant of the duke of Buckingham and was styled as of Coldmore Cote, near Helmsley. Listed as a Recusant again in 1674.¹⁰

Quartermaster John Bartram: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. Two such men were listed as Recusants in Hexhamshire in 1676/81, styled as yeomen.¹¹

The following officer has not been identified.

Cornet William Garbut, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Colonel John FENWICK'S Dragoons.

Evidenced solely by the List, in which one claimant cited an unidentified troop commander. Lieutenant Robert Watson of Newcastle claimed to have served under a Captain [] Fenwick. Watson may have been third of the five sons of Hugh Watson of Holmes who died in 1674. Robert, mentioned in his father's will, was in 1660, a Quaker and was confined as such in Hexham gaol. The link (Hexham was Colonel Fenwick's place of residence) is somewhat tenuous, since the name is relatively common, and should be regarded as such.¹²

Colonel Sir Thomas GOWER'S Regiment of Dragoons.

According to True Proceedings from York, on August 22nd 1642, Gower was commissioned to raise 1000 dragoons,¹³ virtually two regiments. It may be that he did so, retaining one in his own hands, and sending the other with Colonel Duncombe (q.v., above and Appendix 1).¹⁴ What became of Gower's own regiment we do not know, but see also, his Horse, Appendix 1.

Colonel Sir Thomas Gower: Second baronet, of Stittenham, north of York, he was the son of Sir Thomas Gower who died in 1655.

The problem inherent in discussing Colonel Gower's career, lies in distinguishing him from his father. He was born in 1605, matriculated at Wadham College in 1617/18, and entered Grays Inn in 1621. He was knighted in 1630. It is almost certain that his father had relinquished public life by 1640, for his son was, in 1641/2, High Sheriff of Yorkshire with a reputation for hounding Recusants. Appointed a Commissioner of Array, there survive letters written by him in that year which have a direct bearing upon his military service. On August 5th he wrote of his commission for a thousand dragoons: and on October 5th stated that he alone was opposing Hotham's raids from Hull, "I have a mighty burden upon my shoulders being now to oppose orders of Parliament (for oath binds me to maintain the country in peace so far as I can) and this without money or means, but the bare assistance of the people which I cannot make a foundation upon". He contributed £2,250 to the royal war chest. It is possible that he joined the Oxford army at some stage in 1643, for he was certainly in Oxford when it fell, and had been at Rowton Heath at the end of 1645. By that time his regiment was gone, and he was described as a Reformado. Briefly imprisoned after the battle, he went back to Oxford. He compounded on a fine of £730. He conformed admirably to the change in government (witness his indecision in 1642), and in 1650 was freely giving information to the Council of State, which discharged him from attendance with "thanks given him for his intelligence". Nonetheless, he was confined to Stittenham in 1657 and had to obtain leave to go to London in the following year. A JP in 1660, MP for Malton in 1661, and a commissioner for regulating corporations in 1664, he died c. 1672.¹⁵

Quartermaster Philip Saltmarsh: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. The name is not common, but the identification is beset with difficulties. Philip, son of Robert Saltmarsh of Saltmarsh, Esquire, would be entitled to a higher rank than that of a mere troop quartermaster, as his father's heir. This Philip was, anyway, a Parliamentarian sympathiser. Since he was born in 1587, however, it may be that his son Philip, born in 1619 and who died in 1693, is the man we seek. The family had Recusant links with the Saltmarshes of North Kilvington, and a Philip Saltmarsh of New Malton (close to Stittenham) was presented as a

Recusant in 1680. Aveling noted such a man, presumably a Recusant also, in
York in 1671.¹⁶

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Andrews, cited in the List (presumably not the same as the
officer in Newcastle's Foot, q.v., Appendix 2).

Captain Edmund Gower, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Samuel Frickley, claimed in the List from Durham, Captain
Andrews's troop (see the same man, apparently, Hilton's Dragoons).

Cornet Thomas Leppington, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet John Odby, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Gower's
troop.

Colonel Edward GREY'S Regiment of Dragoons.

The regiment which preceded Grey's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1), and which, like that of Duncombe's, was raised early in the war and disappeared after only a few months. On July 20th 1642 this regiment was engaged in one of the first outbreaks of violence in Yorkshire, when it burned and plundered the outbuildings of the Great Houghton house of the Parliamentarian, Sir Edward Rhodes.¹⁷ At that time, it was 300 strong. It fought at Edgehill,¹⁸ and was involved in the storm of Marlborough on December 5th/6th,¹⁹ prior to which it had received equipment at Oxford: 21 bundles of match, 4 barrels of powder, and so on. Heydon, in charge of the stores, noted that the issue was improperly ordered, but that the business was pressing, and Grey "of much respect and worth". (see Grey's career, dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1).²⁰ Quartered at Faringdon in December after the storm of Marlborough,²¹ it was broken beyond repair at Winchester on the 12th.²²

Colonel Edward Grey: See Appendix 1.

Major Ralph Hebburn: Dealt with as colonel of foot, Appendix 2.

Captain [] Birkenhead: Captured at Winchester in December 1642, given by Young who gave no source. There is a reference to a Major Birkhead in the will of a Lieutenant Ralph Cook of Beeston (undated) but no such lieutenant can be attributed to this regiment.²³

Captain Robert Brandling: See him as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Captain John Fenwick: Claimed in the List from Northumberland. The name is extremely common. Such a man of Brenkley, Gentleman, was a Freeholder there in 1638/9, as was another of Dalton.²⁴

Captain Lancelot Holtby: Cited in the List. A Recusant, commissioned in 1642 and eventually killed, as a lt. colonel (in this regiment?) at Brentford. He was of Hovingham, the son of George Holtby of Scackleton, Yorkshire. His wife was a Recusant, and he himself refused the 1641/2 Protestation when resident at Kelloe (in this connection, see Colonel John Forcer, Clavering's Horse, Appendix 1), Co. Durham. In 1650 Arthur French, sub-sequestrator of Chester Ward, Co. Durham, petitioned that he had been taken captive by a 'Major Holtby' on a warrant from the earl of Newcastle, and this may be an early reference to Holtby of this regiment, but if so, it indicates that his citation in the List as captain may have been purely as troop commander, and that he held field officer rank from the regiment's inception. In this context, Major Hebburn (see above) may have succeeded him when Holtby was promoted to lt. colonel. However, the conjecture lacks source corroboration.²⁵

Captain John Wren: Given by Young as a prisoner at Winchester. Third of the six sons of Sir Charles Wren of Binchester, Durham. He signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Auckland St. Andrew, and was dead before 1660 when administration was granted to his will.²⁶

Lieutenant Edmund Roddam: Claimed in the List from Northumberland, third of the five sons of Edmund Roddam of Roddam who died in 1631. Lieutenant Roddam was under age in 1632. Captive at Winchester, 1642. Perhaps a nephew of the Lt. Colonel Roddam (q.v. Hebburn's Foot, Appendix 2).²⁷

Cornet Roger Brandling: Cited by Young, prisoner at Winchester 1642. Possibly second of the sons by the father's second marriage, of Robert Brandling of Felling, and so brother to (Colonel) Robert Brandling (see above). Roger was born in 1620 and was, according to the pedigree, killed as a captain of horse, which suggests a promotion, either into Grey's Horse or into his brother's. He had, in 1637, been apprenticed to a Boothman in Newcastle.²⁸

Quartermaster Ralph Hutton: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Holtby's troop. In the will of Ralph Hutton of Durham, dated 9.1.39, there is a reference to his eldest son and principal legatee, also named Ralph, who was not then 21 years old. The father had been born in 1590 and was an official of the Dean and Chapter.²⁹

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Booth, cited by Young, prisoner at Winchester.

Captain [] Woodhall, cited in the List.

Lieutenant Ralph Booth, cited by Young, prisoner at Winchester.

Cornet George White, claimed in the List from Shropshire, Captain Woodhall's troop.

Quartermaster John Bath, signed for supplies in Oxford 23.11.42.³⁰

Colonel (Sir) Thomas HAGGERSTON'S Dragoons.

That a commission for such a regiment was apparently issued, is clear. However, for a full representation of the evidence and my conclusions, see Haggerston's Foot, Appendix 2.

Colonel John HILTON'S Dragoons.

Evidenced solely by the List, Hilton being dealt with as colonel of Foot (q.v., Appendix 2). Captain [] Jackson, cited in the List, defies identification as does Lieutenant Samuel Frickly who claimed in the List from Yorkshire in Captain Jackson's troop (but see, in this connection, probably the same man claiming under Colonel Sir Thomas Gower's Dragoons).

Cornet Arthur Bambrigg: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Jackson's troop. Two such men (father and son?) signed the 1641/2 Protestation from Middleton in Teesdale.³¹

Colonel Sir Gilbert HOUGHTON'S (Regiment of) Dragoons.

Houghton's colonelcy may not depend upon the existence of a recognisable regiment, but may in fact date to a pre-war Trainband authority which he used at the outbreak of civil war as well. Dragoons under his command fought at Whalley in April 1643 (see Vol. 1).³² Ralph Shorrocks or Sharrock may have served in the dragoons under Houghton as a trooper, and was the son of Richard Shorrocks or Sharrock in Walton le Dale.³³

Colonel Sir Gilbert Houghton: Of Houghton Tower, Lancashire, eldest of the five sons of Sir Richard Houghton who died in 1630, he himself born in 1591. Gilbert was knighted in 1606/7 and was, at the outbreak of civil war, a baronet, deputy lieutenant and, from December 1642, Gerlington's successor as Sheriff of Lancashire. The leading Royalist figure in Blackburn Hundred, Houghton's military career was unremarkable (see Vol. 1). A court figure somewhat remote from his native county (although a JP), he was Carver in Ordinary to the King, and on April 1st 1639 was ordered to present himself at York with "a Horne and Russet Armes with Guilders, Vayles or studdes after the fashion of a Curassier for your selfe and white Armes as a Hargobusier for your serveant or servants...". Beaten at Hinfield Moor and Blackburn, he was Governor in Preston when it fell to the Parliamentarians in 1643. He fought at Whalley, and then made his way to Chester where in December of that year he was awaiting the arrival of the 'Irish'. He had been arrested in September by Sir Richard Byron for apparently withholding £800 of the assessment money raised in Lancashire, and he wrote to Rupert to clear himself of the charge. One of Rupert's commissioners in Liverpool in 1644 during its occupation, he died (the pedigrees dispute it) either in the same year, or in 1647.³⁴

Captain [] Kirby: Cited in the List, probably John Kirby or Kirkby of Kirby, second of the four sons of Roger Kirby of the same. John yielded in October 1644 and took the Covenant in 1645. There is an interesting case concerning John's nephew, Richard Kirby. Richard was sequestered for his presence at the burning of Lancaster in 1643, the year of his father Roger's death, and a fine of £750 was imposed. It is likely that Richard was paying for his father's delinquency since according to the local committee, he was only 16 in 1645 which would make his presence in arms in 1643 extremely improbable.³⁵

Lieutenant Joseph Senhouse: Claimed in the List from Cumberland, Captain Kirby's troop. The forename is common in the family, but probably this is the fifth of the five sons of John Senhouse of Seascale who died c. 1637/8.³⁶

Colonel Thomas HOWARD'S Dragoons.

Another short-lived formation. The problem attached to deciphering the information in the List where it applies to colonels of this name has already been dealt with (see this colonel's nephew, also Thomas Howard, Appendix 1). What became of this force (we cannot call it a regiment lacking, as we do, any evidence beyond that of the List which is fragmentary, and contemporary allusions to Howard's rank) is impossible to say. No hypothesis presents itself.

Colonel Thomas Howard: Fourth of the six sons of William Lord Howard of Naworth, brother to Colonel Sir Francis Howard and uncle to Colonel Thomas Howard (q.v., both of these men, Appendix 1). Styled Esquire, of Tursdale, Durham, he was born in 1596 and was killed outright at Piercebridge on December 1st 1642, leading his dragoons. His memorial is in Wetheral Church, Cumberland, but he was buried at Coniscliffe on the day following his death. A Catholic, like his wife (who was a Eure), he was listed as a commissioned officer in 1642 and in 1653 his son's guardian petitioned to compound for the lands sequestered as a result of Howard's delinquency.³⁷

The following officers have not been identified.

Captain [] Danby, cited in the List.

Cornet Henry Brown, claimed in the List from Northumberland, Captain Danby's troop.(38)

Colonel Sir Francis HOWARD'S Dragoons.

Evidenced solely by the List, but it is not impossible that Sir Francis (who is dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1) took over whatever was left of his brother's force (see Colonel Thomas Howard, above).

Major Thomas Ewer: Cited in the List, and probably the same man as the major of Eure's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1).

Quartermaster Robert Merryman: Claimed in the List from Durham, Major Ewer's troop. Merryman appears, variously, as of Featherstonehalgh, Trimdon and Croxdale, perhaps also of Bradley. He was presented as a Recusant in 1624/6, 1629 and 1637. The family produced a seminary priest named Michael who was ordained in 1631 and was active in England in 1641. Another Robert Merryman (if not the same) was convicted as a Recusant in 1606 and 1615. Possibly the father.³⁹

Colonel James KING'S Dragoons.

Evidenced by a single claimant in the List, Captain Robert Hory whose petition came from Yorkshire.⁴⁰ He has not been identified. Colonel King (Lord Eythin) has been dealt with as colonel of horse, see Appendix 1. I doubt that a regimental structure ever existed for this unit.

Colonel Sir Marmaduke LANGDALE'S Dragoons.

Evidenced solely by the List,⁴¹ probably no more than a troop or two. None of the officers have been identified.

Captain [] Gower: Cited in the List. He may be the same as of Gower's Dragoons (q.v.), or the officer in Belasyse's Foot (q.v., Appendix 2). A William Gower of Hutton was in arms in both wars and has not been otherwise classified.⁴²

Captain William Moody, claimed in the List from Berkshire.

Lieutenant Henry Penser, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Moody's troop.

Lieutenant John Wardropper, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Gower's troop.

Cornet George Baker, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Gower's troop.

Quartermaster William Harrison, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Moody's troop.

Colonel Sir John MALLORY'S (Regiment of) Dragoons (Skipton Garrison).

Evidenced by the List, but little is known of the force largely because of its garrison status. There is some indication, however, that it may have fought on Marston Moor (see Lt. Colonel Norton, below) and if so, was picked up by Rupert on his march to relieve York (see Vol. 1). The point has been made, particularly in connection with Mallory's Foot, that Skipton garrison had no settled regimental system. The dragoon officers here cited may, therefore, have doubled as officers of foot or of horse.

Colonel Sir John Mallory: Dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Lt. Colonel [] Norton: Cited in the List. Lt. Colonel Norton is mentioned in a contemporary document of January 19th 1644, and probably somewhat earlier, in November 1643, receiving pistols from York magazine. Slingsby alluded to a Lt. Colonel Norton involved in a single combat at Wetherby in 1642, probably in November, and alluded specifically to Norton as a dragoon officer. In view of Mallory's very early recruiting, this may well be one and the same man (see Mallory's Horse, Appendix 1). In the case of identification, there are two possible persons, William Norton of Sawley and Edmund Norton of Richmond. Norton of Sawley was the eldest of the four sons of William Norton who died in 1644. William II, born in 1608, died in 1645, his wife having perished in York during the siege which may, possibly, be a link with some military activity on William's part. The link is, however, tenuous, for a stronger claim can be made for Edmund. He was the son of Mauger Norton of Richmond, who was an assessor collecting money for the earl of Newcastle. Edmund surrendered at York in February 1645 (?1646), having been in arms, and died in 1646 after having been admitted to Grays Inn. The father died in 1673. A contemporary wrote of Edmund as "a religious young man, a faithful subject to his majestie, for whom he suffered much". According to this same source, he commanded a troop on Marston Moor.⁴³

Captain George Dawson: Cited in the List, and probably the officer of the same name in Belasyse's Horse (q.v., Appendix 1), which would mean a transfer sometime in 1644. He has already been identified as of Azerley, and was eldest of the two sons of William Dawson of the same place who died in 1640. George was born in 1614 and died himself in 1653, but according to the pedigree he was major under Mallory. There is no other evidence for that, but he may have succeeded Major Hughes (q.v., Mallory's Horse, Appendix 1).⁴⁴

Captain William Hardcastle: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Cited on January 29th 1644 as a captain of horse and foot in Skipton, even though he claimed as a dragoon.

William Hardcastle of Laverton, Gentleman, surrendered with Skipton and was fined £233 in 1646. He had not settled the fine when, in 1652, he was re-sequestered. What became of him is not known. He may have been the officer taken at Selby in April 1644, and if so, this would imply a detachment of Mallory's men at the battle.⁴⁵

Captain John Lister: Cited in the List, and probably a second time as Captain 'Leicester'. Perhaps second of the three sons of Samuel Lister of Shibden Hall who died in or around the year 1633. John, styled of Upperbrea Northowram, was born in 1602, refused knighthood at the coronation of Charles I and died in 1662. Alternatively, and in view of his place of residence (see Mallory's Horse) just as feasible, there is John Lister of Kirby Malzeard who yielded in 1644 to Lord Fairfax and was fined £327. Captain Lister was present in the garrison on January 29th of that year.⁴⁶

Captain Thomas Staveley: Cited in the List, see the same man, Mallory's Foot, Appendix 2.

Lieutenant Thomas Duffield: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Lister's troop. Probably of Gaughey, Yorkshire, son of Henry Duffield, who was a Catholic Recusant in 1630, and styled yeoman. Thomas's rank is referred to in contemporary proceedings. Fined £65.3.4d. in 1651.⁴⁷

Quartermaster Anthony Beck: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire. Such a man, of Melmerby, yeoman, was a juror at Richmond Quarter Sessions in 1639 and 1641.⁴⁸

The following officers have not been identified.

Lieutenant John Storzaker, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Lt. Colonel Norton's troop.

Lieutenant Samuel Waad, claimed in the List from Lincolnshire.

Lieutenant John Wise, claimed in the List from Yorkshire.

Cornet Thomas Richardson, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Staveley's troop.

Cornet William Steele, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain 'Leicester's' troop.

Quartermaster Robert Cuthbert, claimed in the List from Durham, Lt. Colonel Norton's troop (possibly taken at Selby, see Vol. 1).

Quartermaster John Linton, claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Lister's troop.

Colonel Sir John MARLEY'S Dragoons (Newcastle Garrison).

In the List, Lieutenant Thomas Randal claimed from Newcastle and cited a dragoon formation. His troop commander was Captain Thomas Jackson. Neither of these two officers can be identified.

The Earl of NEWCASTLE'S (Regiment of) Dragoons.

The existence of such a regiment is but one interpretation of the evidence of the List. Colonel Stuart (see below) claimed under the earl, but Lt. Colonel Gordon (see below) claimed under Stuart. In dealing with an officer of Stuart's eminence claiming under the earl, we have to consider whether such a claim means that Stuart actually commanded the earl's regiment or whether, as is equally plausible, Stuart was commissioned by Newcastle to raise a regiment of his own. In view of Newcastle's military and social standing, and for want of strong evidence concerning either Stuart or Gordon, it has been decided to assume the existence of a dragoon force (intended to be a full regiment) which, like Newcastle's Foot, was commanded in the field by a commissioned colonel. Ultimately it may prove necessary to revise this view, but it is presently most tenable.

Colonel William Stuart: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster, and cited elsewhere as a field commander of dragoons. He clearly cannot be the Colonel Steward who was buried on July 2nd 1644 in York, presumably a victim of Marston Moor: but which of them was the Colonel Stewart receiving 100 swords on November 26th 1643 for his 'regiment' is impossible to say. The most certain aspect of the problem is that we are dealing with a Scot, probably a professional like James King, but such persons are notoriously hard to trace. A Captain William Stuart was implicated in the 'Incident' in 1641, the attempt against the Marquis of Hamilton and the earl of Argyle. A William Stuart, settled at Littleborne, Northumberland, Esquire, was a Scottish (or Parliamentary officer) until the 1648 rising, which would seem to rule him out completely (although Newcastle had a military command in 1648 and in 1651 as well, which he did not exercise). A Colonel William Stuart was taken at Worcester in 1651, but he might easily be the same as of Littleborn, or quite another officer altogether (bearing in mind the Scottish presence at Worcester).⁴⁹

Lt. Colonel James Gordon: Claimed in the List from London/Westminster under Stuart. Clearly, the same man as claimed under James King's Foot as major (q.v., Appendix 2).

That fact alone provokes problems, not only because a dual claim was forbidden. If Gordon was major under King, then his reappearance as a dragoon lt. colonel implies a transfer. The question is whether such a transfer occurred in 1643 or 1644 before Marston Moor, or whether Gordpn was a lt. colonel in 1648 or 1651. The identification is made extremely difficult by conflicting evidence. A Lt. Colonel Gordon was captured in arms at Sherburn in Elmet in October 1645, whereas a Lt. Colonel Gordon was seeking arrears for service under the earl of Manchester in 1644 and 1645. In 1654 a Lt. Colonel Gordon was released on bail, having been arrested and imprisoned in Hull for his part

in the escape of Sir Robert Montgomery from custody. A James Gordon signed the 1641/2 Protestation as of Whickham, Co. Durham. Although both Gordon and his superior, Stuart, are included in the analysis, they must remain unidentified. Gordon is included only as a lt. colonel, his claim as major being disregarded.⁵⁰

Colonel Sir Thomas RIDDELL'S Dragoons (Tynemouth Garrison).

Evidenced only by the List, in which two claimants petitioned as dragoons. The usual lack of distinction within garrisons as to arm of service must be assumed.

Captain Gascoigne Eden: Cited in the List, see the same man in Riddell's Horse and Colonel Sir William Blakiston's Horse (both, Appendix 1).

Cornet Robert Allen: Claimed in the List from Durham, Captain Eden's troop. Several men of this name signed the 1641/2 Protestation in that county, but none from Sadberge, although a yeoman of this name from that parish was listed as a delinquent in 1651. In the will of Katherine Fortune of Gateshead, dated January 2nd 1632, is a reference to her son, Robert Allen, the chief legatee.⁵¹

Quartermaster Edward Urwin: Claimed in the List from Durham. Such a man signed the 1641/2 Protestation at Grinton, and another was listed in 1639 as a freeholder at

Morpeth.⁵²

Colonel Sir William SAVILLE'S Dragoons.

Evidenced by the List, and by a specific allusion in a document dated November 14th 1643, when 100 swords for Saville's dragoons were issued at York.⁵³ However, the date may mean that Saville, who was by now governor of York, had merely assumed command of a troop attached to that garrison, so that we cannot press the point too far. Saville himself is dealt with as colonel of horse, see Appendix 1.

Captain Henry Attey: On November 19th 1643 Saville requested that the magazine at York hand over twelve swords and as much powder and shot for muskets, as Captain Attey would ask for.⁵⁴

Captain [] Bromhead: Cited in the List. Possibly Henry Bromhead of Fullwood, Sheffield, yeoman, who died c. 1673.⁵⁵

Lieutenant James Child: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bromhead's troop. Such a man was witness to an assault appearing at Wakefield Quarter Sessions in January 1638. Jacobus Child of Nottingham had probate granted his will in 1683.⁵⁶

Lieutenant John Fayrbank: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Dixon's troop. In October 1639 three Bradford husbandmen, all named Jowett, attacked and robbed one John Fairebank, whilst Fairebank, yeoman, and some others, were accused of assaulting the Jowetts. In April 1646 reference was made to "One Fairbanck, late inhabitant of Wakefeild, and formerly with the Enemy" now serving with the Scots. The case involving assault was heard at Wakefield Quarter Sessions.⁵⁷

The following officer has not been identified.

Captain [] Dixon, cited in the List.

Colonel Sir Thomas TYLDESLEY'S Dragoons.

The sole evidence, but for all that, irrefutable, for the existence of any such force, comes from the memoir of the only identified officer to hold rank by commission as a dragoon under Tyldesley. Captain William Blundell of Crosby, a Recusant, and son and heir of Nicholas Blundell, who was also a convicted Recusant, was born in 1620. He was commissioned on December 22nd 1642 to raise a troop of dragoons (or, to be more precise, one hundred, or a fifth of a regiment), by Tyldesley himself. The commission has survived.

By virtue of his Mats commission under his signe manuell to me directed, I doe hereby constitute and appointe you...to bee Captaine of one companie of Dragoones in my Regiment. And I doe hereby give you full power and authoritie for his Matie in his name to raise, impresse and retaine the said companie, raised or to bee raised by sound of Drumme or anie other waie (and in anie of his Maties Dominions) for the defence of his Mats royall person, the 2 houses of Parliament, the Protestant Religion, the lawe of the land, the libertie and propertie of the subject and Priveledge of Parliament, and when soe raised to bringe together and employ in his Mats service as you shall from tyme to tyme receive directions for. And I doe hereby require all the inferiour officers and souldiers of y^e companie you to obey as their Capitane, you likewise obeying your superiour officers according to the discipline of warre.

Considering that the commission was issued by a Catholic to a Recusant, the wording is a clear indication not only that Tyldesley was covering himself, but that officially, at least at that date, Catholic participation was still unacknowledged. As Blundell later told a friend (in 1687) he was disabled "before I had mustered y^e 100 dragoons wch I was by commission raising...". Wounded at the storm of Lancaster in March 1643, and nick-named 'Halt-Will' as a consequence, Blundell died in 1698.⁵⁸

Colonel Sir William (Lord) WIDDRINGTON'S Dragoons.

Here again we have to consider that this force contained officers who were commissioned in 1648 or 1651, although they are often impossible to distinguish from those of 1642/4. It is unlikely that a full regiment ever existed, the evidence being based almost entirely upon the List which provides no field officers. Colonel Widdrington is dealt with as colonel of horse, Appendix 1.

Captain Anthony Bulmer: Cited in the List. Of Ketton, Co. Durham, Catholic delinquent. Commissioned in 1642, he was second of the eight sons of Sir Bertram Bulmer of Tursdale (see Colonel Thomas Howard, Dragoons). Styled of High Embleton, and later of Ketton, which he acquired by marriage, Anthony may have risen to be lt. colonel in another regiment, to judge from his son's statement in 1684/5 who was imprisoned for refusing the Oath of Allegiance.⁵⁹

Captain [] Chester: Cited in the List, the name is relatively common. Two Thomas Chesters (or one and the same) of Hutton Bushell, Yorkshire, yeoman, and of Muston, yeoman, had probate granted their wills in 1675 and 1679 respectively. A Major Chester was captured at Wigan Lane in 1651 (where Widdrington was killed).⁶⁰

Captain Henry Millborne: Claimed in the List from Durham. Probably of Bedlington, Gentleman, whose property was inserted in the Treason Act of 1652. He had been fined £27.19.8d. in 1649 for adhering to the King in 1648, but that does not rule out earlier service.⁶¹

Captain Sir Nicholas Thornton: Tentatively placed here, the List providing no support. First of the five sons of Nicholas Thornton of Netherwitton, a Catholic Recusant who died in 1633. Also a Recusant, Captain Thornton was listed as a freeholder, Esquire, in 1638/9, and as a commissioned officer in 1642. According to the pedigree, he was commissioned to raise 100 "Hargobduziers" on October 20th 1643, whereas another source speaks of a troop of horse which he handed over to his brother John (q.v., Blakiston's Horse, Appendix 1). The dragoon commission may well have been late, and Thornton himself may have been mortally wounded before 1645. His widow petitioned for a third of her husband's estate for maintenance, in 1650, and his property was inserted in the third Treason Act of 1652. Sir Nicholas was almost certainly one of those knighted by the earl of Newcastle for the Parliament refused to recognise the title.⁶²

Cornet Rowland Reevely: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Chester's troop. Another apparently insoluble problem of identification. Rowland Revell of Stannington in

Bradfield, yeoman, dated his will April 12th 1644, and it was proved in 1646/7. There is no way of knowing whether he was a civil war casualty, although the will was written on the day after the fight at Selby (see Vol. 1), when a wounded man might well attend to such matters. This Revell was a Recusant, compounding in 1632, and was presented again in 1641, but he cannot be the claimant. Either we have to do with an unknown son of the Revell who died in between 1644 and 1647, or we must seek another. A slender chance lies in Rowland Revel of Shiffnal, Shropshire, second of the four sons of Thomas Revel of that place, a Yorkshire connection (indeed, a Recusant connection) being established through this Rowland's aunt, a Yorkshire Vavasour. Perhaps a third Rowland Revell was made Clerk of the market for all Ireland at a fee of £5 a year, in 1633.⁶³

Quartermaster William Hildreth: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, Captain Bulmer's troop. A William Hildred was confined in York castle in 1684/5 for refusing the Oath of Allegiance. Styled Gentleman, it was said that he had been a "soldier sequestered [for] loyalty and service to his late Majestie".⁶⁴

Colonel Sir Francis WORTLEY'S Regiment of Dragoons.

We must tentatively accept a regimental structure was intended here, for a field officer is cited in the List. The only other evidence lies in an undated document, without source, given in a later work, in which reference is made to assessments to finance a garrison of 150 Dragoons with officers garrisoned at Tankersley.⁶⁵ Sir Francis is dealt with as colonel of horse, see Appendix 1.

Major Dudley Dudley: Cited in the List, but he probably did not hold this rank for long, perhaps not beyond the first months of 1643 at the latest. He was the bastard son of Edward Lord Dudley by Elizabeth Tomlinson of Dudley: he also used the alias of Sutton, and was styled as of Tipton, Staffordshire, and as of Greenlodge, with some additional property in Wiltshire. At Worcester when it fell in 1646, he was in arms again in 1648 but was captured near Boscobel House. He escaped, was recaptured, and sentenced to be shot to death on August 26th. He broke gaol again, and reached Bristol despite a leg wound. By 1650 he felt able to petition to compound, but was refused. His property was for sale in 1652, but he eventually compounded on a fine of £27 after his property was sold. In June 1660 he petitioned for restoration to his (pre-war) place as Serjeant at Arms, and sought the Mastership of Charterhouse, Smithfield. In his petition, he stated that he had been Lieutenant of the Artillery to Lord Astley, which is further evidence that he must have left the north fairly early: in his artillery rank, he "furnished artillery" at Coventry, Worcester and Stafford. Dudley went on to experiment in iron smelting processes, dying in 1684.⁶⁶

The following officers have not been identified. They are excluded from the analysis, however, since the probability is that they served under Dudley elsewhere rather than in the north. However, he may have brought them north with him in 1642, so they cannot be entirely omitted from consideration.

Cornet Jeffrey Dudley, claimed in the List from Staffordshire, Major Dudley's troop.

Cornet Robert Heaton, claimed in the List from Worcestershire, Major Dudley's troop.

NOTES

1. List, col. 22. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 136.
2. List, col. 28. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 44, 65, 105. Underdown, Royalist Conspiracy, p. 74. History of Northumberland, VIII, p. 194. CSPD 1655, pp. 174, 192, 212, 245, 390/1. Thurloe State Papers, III, pp. 137/8, 190, 458 : IV, pp. 293, 718. CSPD 1655/6, pp. 244, 263, 395 : 1656/7, p. 17 : 1657/8, pp. 165/6, 292, 425. Coate, M. ed: The Letter Book of John Viscount Mordaunt 1658/60, Camden Society, 3rd Series, Vol. LXIX, passim.
3. List, col. 28. Wood, Durham Protestations, pp. 65/8. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 163.
4. List, col. 40.
5. T.T. E 244 (2)
6. Young, Edgehill, p. 235.
7. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 237/237b. Young, Edgehill, pp. 85, 187.
8. Philip, Luke Journal, p. 77.
9. Young, Edgehill, pp. 188, 257. M.A., 28.10.44, p. 1240. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 138.
10. List, col. 44. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, III, pp. 273, 304 : IV, p. 190 : VI, p. 212. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 343.
11. List, col. 44. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 3.
12. List, col. 46. History of Northumberland, IV, pp. 105, 107.
13. T.T. E 114 (6).
14. Clarendon, p. 345.
15. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 361. Foster, Alumni Oxonienses, I, p. 592. Cliffe, The Yorkshire Gentry, pp. 330, 334/5. Finch Hatton Ms. 133. HMC Fifth Report, Sutherland Mss., pp. 191, 193. CSPD 1641/3, p. 365. Armitage and Rylands, King's Staffordshire Pedigrees, p. 109. Park, Yorkshire Parliamentary Representation, pp. 134, 297. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 129/30. Burton, Musgrave Life, p. 10. CSPD 1650, p. 452 : 1657/8, p. 554. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VI, p. 25. HMC Eighth Report, Corp. Pontefract Mss., p. 275.
16. List, col. 58. Burke, Commoners, I, p. 536. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, p. 468. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, VII, p. 36. Aveling, York Recusancy, p. 245.
17. Gatty, Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 130 (see also, Vol. 1).
18. Young, Edgehill, p. 85.
19. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 82/3.
20. Roy, Ordnance Papers, pp. 166/7.
21. Harl. Ms. 6851, ff. 237/237b.
22. According to HMC Ancaster Mss., p. 411 (a letter from Sir Edward Walker to the earl of Lindsey on December 12th) this victory was achieved by a flying column of Parliamentary horse and dragoons. Grey's regiment was then at full strength.
23. Young, Edgehill, p. 236. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 146.
24. List, col. 61. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 322.
25. List, col. 61. Rushworth, III, II, p. 28. Catalogue. Aveling, Northern Catholics, p. 308. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 171. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 139. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 49.
26. Young, Edgehill, p. 236. Foster, Durham Visitation Pedigrees, p. 337. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 61. Ridge, Canterbury Administrations 1655/60, p. 123.
27. List, col. 61. History of Northumberland, XIV, p. 286. Young, Edgehill p. 236.
28. Young, Edgehill, p. 236. History of Northumberland, XIII, p. 350. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 40.
29. List, col. 61. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 279. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, pp. 10/11.
30. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 167.

31. List, col. 69. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 98.
32. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 95.
33. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 95, p. 98. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 268.
34. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 154. Foster, Lancashire County Pedigrees. Baines, History of Lancashire, I, p. 59. Lumby, De Houghton Papers, pp. 256/7. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, passim. LJ, V, p. 449. Brownbill, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 96, p. 16. Stanning, *ibid.*, Vol. 29, pp. 291/3. Abram, Preston Guild Rolls, p. 112. Chisenall, Siege of Lathom, p. 6. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, pp. 29, 62. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenancy, pp. 280 f.n. 23, 311. Warburton, I, p. 520. Rushworth, III, II, p. 68.
35. List, col. 72. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 36, pp. 42/3. Brownbill, *ibid.*, Vol. 95, p. 16. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 169.
36. List, col. 72. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 121.
37. Foster, Cumberland and Westmorland Visitations, p. 63. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool) p. 166. Catalogue. Nicolson and Burn, History of Cumberland and Westmorland, II, p. 336. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 28, 50, 77. Firth, Newcastle Life, p. 14. Wood, H.M. ed: The Registers of Coniscliffe, Durham, Publications of the Durham and Northumberland Parish Registers Society, Vol. XVIII, p. 90. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 252/3.
38. List, col. 73.
39. List, col. 72. Longstaffe, Durham High Commission, p. 100. Forster, Durham Recusants, p. 185. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 338. Anstruther, Seminary Priests, II, p. 217.
40. List, col. 78.
41. List, col. 82.
42. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 202.
43. List, col. 90. Vyner Ms. 5810 T/32/46. Temple Newsam Ms. 2AI/20. Parsons, Slingsby Diary, p. 83. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, II, pp. 75, 93. Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 369. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 53. Jackson, Mrs. Thornton's Autobiography, pp. 55, 60. Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees.
44. List, col. 91. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 158/9. Vyner Ms. 5810 T/32/46. Walker, Yorkshire Pedigrees, p. 136.
45. List, col. 90. Vyner Ms. 5810 T/32/46. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 157. CCC, p. 1681. Rushworth III, II, p. 619.
46. List, col. 91. Clay, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, I, p. 115. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 170. CCC, p. 1718.
47. List, col. 91. CAM, p. 1007. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 156. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 318.
48. List, col. 91. Atkinson, North Riding Quarter Sessions, IV, pp. 111, 205.
49. List, cols. 100, 126. Temple Newsam Ms. 2AI/27. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 67, 346/7. CCC, pp. 6219/20. HMC Fourth Report, House of Lords Mss., pp. 163/7. CSPD 1651/2, p. 494.
50. List, col. 126. Vicars, II, p. 299. LJ, VII, p. 466. CSPD 1654, p. 257. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 49.
51. List, col. 110. Wood, Durham Protestations, passim. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 65. Wood, Durham Inventories, p. 238.
52. List, col. 110. Wood, Durham Protestations, p. 167. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 323.
53. Temple Newsam Ms. 2AI/20.
54. *Ibid.*, 2AI/26.
55. List, col. 117. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 16.
56. List, col. 117. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 50. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1681/8, p. 87.
57. List, col. 117. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 171. LJ, VIII p. 349.

58. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 203/7. Gibson, T.E. ed: William Blundell - A Cavalier's Note Book, pp. 19, 21, 23. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 529. VCH Lancashire, III, p. 89. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 347/8. Baines, History of Lancashire II, p. 397. Ford and Fuller Maitland, Lucas's History of Wharton, p. 92. Lancashire Record Office, Blundell of Little Crosby Mss., DDB1/ 2/1.
59. List, col. 141. Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 25, 65, 137, 157. Surtees, History of Durham (Hartlepool), p. 166. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 271.
60. List, col. 141. Crossley, York Registry Wills 1673/80, p. 22. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 303.
61. List, col. 141. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 67, 79, 291/2.
62. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 331. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, pp. 357, 401. Brockett, Northumberland Freeholders, p. 322. Rushworth, III, II, pp. 28, 50. Martin, Northumberland Entries Index, p. 227. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 361 f.n. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 46.
63. List, col. 141. Collins, York Registry Wills 1636/52, p. 138. Talbot, Northern Book of Compositions, p. 343. Lister, West Riding Quarter Sessions, p. 296. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, I, p. 391. Mahaffy, CSP Ireland 1633/47, p. 11.
64. List, col. 141. Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 271.
65. Pratt, C.T., A History of Cawthorne, p. 54.
66. List, col. 146. Roy, Ordnance Papers, p. 9 f.n. 1. Willis Bund, J.W., The Civil War in Worcestershire, pp. 202/4. CCC, p. 2611. CAM, p. 1418. Peacock, Index of Royalists, p. 47. CSPD 1660/1, pp. 45, 73/4. Armitage and Rylands, King's Staffordshire Pedigrees, p. 76.

UNCLASSIFIED OFFICERS

UNCLASSIFIED OFFICERS:

As would be expected, in compiling, or in attempting to compile, a regimental history of the northern Royalist army, certain officers must of necessity be omitted. They are, for the most part, briefly alluded to in contemporary documents: in, for example, Drake's narrative of the siege of Pontefract, or in Tullie's account of events in Carlisle. In most cases, the strong probability is that these officers properly belong in the regiments with which I have dealt, but in their case even the most tenuous of links is lacking. To ignore them, however, would be to ignore the strong possibility that subsequent research may permit of classification by regiment, or at least, by arm of service. The composition proceedings for the northern counties throw up, now and again, officers in arms as well: although in these cases it must always be remembered that such men could well have belonged to regiments raised outside the north. There were, for example, northern officers in the regiments of Prince Rupert, Charles Gerard, Lord Byron and various others who had the 'prestige' to draw volunteers from far off. Such officers have to be left out of the consideration in the analysis since, were they to be included, they would necessarily upset the strictly northern analysis which I have been primarily concerned with. Southern officers in northern regiments can be allowed for, however, since they by their presence indicate prestige, area of service, and other factors important in the study of any given regiment.

The officers that follow are dealt with by rank, alphabetically, with no distinction between arms of service. Often, that distinction is not possible to arrive at, but where evidence is available, it has been included in the survey. I have dispensed with footnotes, and included the sources after the statements of evidence, for in most cases there is merely a single allusion. Careful scrutiny of the unclassified officers, and a comparison with those placed in definite regimental structures, may lead to some connection in certain cases. For the most part, however, those officers that remain unclassified are those who defy even a tentative link with a regiment. It will have been noted that in some cases, references to officers in, for example, prisoner of war lists, that might conceivably be references to known officers in given regiments, have been acknowledged in the regimental analysis. Such persons do not, therefore, appear in this section. Nor is this section comprehensive. Every officer named in the north between 1642/6 has not been included. The problem is that after the fall of York and the dispersal of northern regiments, there were forces operating on the fringes of the north which quite clearly, had no northern origin whatsoever. An excellent example is that of the battle of Ormskirk in August 1644 (see Vol. 1) where prisoner lists include not only officers from northern regiments, but officers who must, by definition, have come north in Rupert's army to the relief of York and have no place in any northern analysis. For the most part, it is possible to distinguish this

latter group and to exclude them: but such a process is arbitrary, and whilst one or two may be found to have crept in to this section, by the same terms, one or two properly entitled to be included here, will have been omitted. For this reason, it has to be stressed, that the officers in this section have not been subject to analysis in any way, and are intended to be only a guide and an aid to any further research into the subject. It is not impossible that they may all, in time, be classified.

THE OFFICERS

- Colonel Richard Lowther: Lowther's case has already been dealt with in relation to the siege of Pontefract (see Vol. 1.). He has not been included in the overall analysis since whilst his rank and position are fairly well documented, he cannot be assigned to any specific arm of the service, nor can any officer be attached to him. He does not appear in the List. Lowther was the eighth son of Sir Richard Lowther, High Sheriff of Cumberland, and died of TB in Newark in 1645. (Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Vol. 1).
- Major [] Birbeck: Cited by Tullie as a Reformado from York in 1644, he may have been Thomas Birbeck of Morton Tynemouth in Northumberland, Gentleman, who compounded with the local committee in 1644 for £30. (Tullie's Carlisle, passim. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 60).
- Major Nicholas Burton: Unidentified. His son was baptised in York on July 4th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 137).
- Major [] Coppham: Possibly 'Topham'. Cited by Tullie as a Reformado from York in 1644.
- Major Richard Hartburn: Promoted from captain, he was killed at Malpas and buried at Kendal (which implies that he was dying from wounds). Possibly an error for Robert Hartburn a papist and delinquent, although Richard Hartburn of Stillington, Gentleman, Catholic delinquent, was dead in 1644 and his wife petitioning in 1651. (Catalogue) Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 13, 234/5. CCC, p. 2797).
- Major Roger Kir(k)by: Cited in the List as a field commander of foot, and alluded to as a lt. colonel in a contemporary source which may indicate a promotion. Of Kirby Lonsdale, Commissioner of Array and Collector for the earl of Derby in Lonsdale Hundred. Present at the attack on Lancaster March 1643, and at the battle of Lyndale Close (for these, see Vol. 1). A JP and (pre-war?) governor or captain of Cockermonth Castle. (List, col. 86. Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 30. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 60. Musgrave Mss. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 169).
- Major William Lutton: Of Horse. Styled of Knapton near York, his entire possessions in 1649 were valued at £12 and a horse. Fined £2. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 29/30).
- Major [] Marshal: Cited by Tullie as a Reformado from York in 1644. (Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9).

- Major George Mountain: Of Westow, Yorkshire, nephew of the Archbishop of York, and first of three sons of Isaak Mountain who died in 1648. Isaak (or Isaac) sent horses to the royal army. Thomas Fairfax wrote an open letter for George: "I am informed this gent. carried himself verie civillie and unchargeable to the Countrie in the late war and his wife is one to whom I am n^r alyed and could wish that for her sake all lawful favour and respect be afforded to him". In Wentworth's division in the defence of Pontefract 1644/5. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 79. Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, passim).
- Major [] / Newnham: Or Newman. Governor of Bridlington on February 10th 1644, see Vol. 1. (Vicars, II, p. 154).
- Major [] / Powley: Cited by Tullie as a Reformado from York, 1644. (Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9).
- Major Daniel Purvey: Such a man reported killed defending Preston, February 1643. A man of the same name was buried at York, June 19th 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 73. Wenham, Siege of York, p. 139).
- Major [] / Suibson: Cited by Tullie as a Reformado from York, 1644. Possibly 'Gibson'. (Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9).
- Major [] / Ward: Cited in Ramsden's division, defence of Pontefract 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5).
- Captain John Ambrose: Of Plumpton, Lancashire. Captain of the 'Clubmen' 1642/3 (does this mean a regular commission? See Captain Holt, below). (Beamont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 28).
- Captain John Atherton: Possibly a commissioner of array in Lancashire, 1642. Prisoner of war at Ormskirk in 1644, dead by 1646. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 21. Harland, Lancashire Lieutenancy, p. 280 f.n. 23).
- Captain [] / Alker: Cited in Westmorland, in the Musgrave Mss., on March 26th 1644.
- Captain [] / Aglionby: Contributed to the defence of Carlisle in May 1645. Edward Aglionby sat on the council of war there in 1644. A Julian Aglionby was also a delinquent. (Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 63. Tullie's Carlisle, p. 40. CCC, p. 1668).
- Captain Thurstan Anderton: (Lancashire?) Catholic, killed in action. (Catalogue).
- Captain [] / Britton: Or Bretton (see Wentworth's Foot, Appendix 2). Buried in York April 22nd 1644. (Young, Marston Moor, p. 180).
- Captain [] / Browne: Killed in defence of Carlisle, January 21st 1645. (Tullie's Carlisle, p. 9).
- Captain Richard Butler: Captured in Liverpool, November 1644. Died at Manchester of ill usage. Catholic. Eldest son of Henry Butler of Rawcliff, Lancashire. (Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, p. 260).
- Captain John Brockholes: Claimed in the List (col. 149), of horse, Gentleman. (Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 24, pp. 245/6).

- Captain Christopher Bacon: Claimed in the List from Yorkshire, cavalry. Perhaps the same as (or a relative of) Charles Bacon of Feresby, Gentleman, delinquent. (List col. 149. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 14).
- Captain Sir John Cary: Alluded to in the composition papers of his cornet John Audsley, a Yorkshireman. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 148).
- Captain [] Chadwick: Cited in Pontefract defence 1644/5, Wentworth's division. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5).
- Captain Robert Charnock: Of Astley, Lancashire, in the defence of Lathom 1644/5. Present at Manchester, September 1642. (Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, p. 25).
- Captain John Clifton: Killed in the defence of Shelford House in October 1645. (Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, I, p. 56. Burke, Commoners, II, p. 56).
- Captain [] Corsfield: Prisoner at Hunslet, March 1644 (see Vol. 1). Such a man of Strickland Roger, Westmorland, took the Covenant in 1644. (Vicars, II, p. 160. CCC, p. 1658).
- Captain John Cape: In the defence of Pontefract, and claimed in the List as of foot. Unclassified. Such a man is mentioned in Carlisle in September 1644 but cannot be the same. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. List, col. 154. Musgrave Mss. Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 58).
- Captain Thomas Charnock: Killed in action. Catholic Recusant, of Leyland Lancashire, Gentleman. He was with the army in Oxford (possibly Molyneux's or Tyldesley's Horse) and was in Lancashire in the spring of 1643 to recruit. He was in Ireland in 1650/1 and may have been killed there. (Catalogue. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 29/33.).
- Captain [] Dent: Wounded in the defence of Pontefract on May 1st 1645. Perhaps Robert Dent of Biker, delinquent, dead by 1652 when his property was inserted in the third Treason Act. Cited in the Musgrave Mss. on March 26th 1644. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 33. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 182/3).
- Captain George Dykes: Briefly referred to in the Musgrave Mss., in an undated document probably of 1643, as having been arrested and to stand trial.
- Captain Henry Errington: Catholic, cavalry officer, of Byfron, Northumberland, Gentleman. It was charged in 1646 that he "rode armed in the enemy's quarters in Hexhamshire and was to have been a captain; that he entertained two gentlemen from beyond seas to ride in his Troop". Out in the 1648 war with Montrose. His property in the third Treason Act of 1652. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxii, 190/2).
- Captain Francis Errington: Of Denton, Northumberland, killed in arms near Rotherham (in 1643?). (Catalogue).

- Captain Robert Frank: Of Spenn, Yorkshire, gentleman. Commissioned by Newcastle in 1643 to raise a company of foot, but he laid down his arms in 1644. Not worth £200. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 94).
- Captain Richard Fox: Infantry, claimed in the List from Lancashire (col. 152).
- Captain Anthony Gerlington: Killed at Lancaster, 1643, a Catholic. (Beaumont, Discourse of the Warr, p. 91 f.n. 8. Catalogue).
- Captain Thomas Gerlington: Killed in arms at Lancaster 1643, a Catholic. (Catalogue).
- Captain George Gilpin: Of Kentmere, cited at Kendal on May 20th 1644. (Musgrave Mss. Clay, Hunter's Minorum Gentium, III, p. 1099).
- Captain John Hothersal: Killed in the defence of Greenhalgh Castle, Lancashire, c. 1644/5. (Catalogue).
- Captain Richard Holt: Styled as captain of the (irregular) Lancashire Freeholders' band in 1642/3, precursors of the Clubmen employed by Derby. Of Ashworth, Gentleman, in the defence of Lathom from which he returned home in 1645 dangerously ill. Present at Manchester September 1642. The son of Richard Holt of the same. (List, col. 152. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 29, p. 255. Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 51. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, p. 148).
- Captain Anthony Hammerton: Killed at Manchester, 1642, a Catholic. (Catalogue).
- Captain William Ireland: Cavalry, the son of Sir Francis Ireland of Nostell Priory, himself styled of Ripon and Cropton. (Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 364. Hunter, South Yorkshire, II, p. 215).
- Captain [] Johnson: In the defence of Carlisle May 13th 1645, perhaps a Scot. (Nanson, Siege of Carlisle, p. 62).
- Captain [] Lonsdale: Governor of Cawood 1644, but probably the Captain Lumsdall in the defence of Pontefract, Grey's division. A Captain Lumbsdaine escaped from Newark and joined the Scots in 1646, perhaps a Scot himself. (LJ, VIII, p. 349. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5).
- Captain Gerard Lowther: Cavalry, he is dealt with in Vol. 1. Perhaps our only clue to his father's, Colonel Richard Lowther, arm of service. Came in at Newark, he claimed he had acted out of filial duty. Styled a field commander in the List which must imply a promotion, in Newark. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, passim. List, col. 88. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 156/7).
- Captain Abraham Laughton: Killed at Ormskirk, probably a Lancashire man. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204).
- Captain Nicholas Lyme: Cavalry, claimed in the List (col. 149) from Lancashire where the name is rare.
- Captain Hugh Mat(t)hews: Infantry, cited in the List (col. 153) by a Lancashire claimant.

- Captain John Nuttall: Captured at Wakefield in May 1643, where he was wounded. Probably of Rockliffe, Gentleman (if so, perhaps connected with the Foot regiment of Colonel Sir John Ramsden, q.v., Appendix 2). A fine of £320 was levied in 1646. (Rushworth III, II, p. 271. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp.27/9)
- Captain []] Newstead: Prisoner at Hunslet, March 1644. (Vicars, II, p. 160).
- Captain []] Owsman: Possibly Houseman, one of his soldiers was buried in York on June 28th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 134).
- Captain William Paulden: Officer in Sandal Castle in 1645, he appears in the List claiming as a cavalry officer. Of Wakefield, Chapman, he was in arms in 1648 as well with his brother Thomas. (M.A., 16.8.45, p. 1707. List, col. 151. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 15).
- Captain []] Ramsden: Given by Drake in his study of Pontefract, Wentworth's division.
- Captain []] Rueston: Prisoner at Wakefield, May 1643. Possibly William Rudston of Swanland, near Hull, Gentleman, fined £45 in 1649. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 271. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 201).
- Captain []] Rich: Buried in York on February 23rd 1644. (Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 8).
- Captain []] Snell: Killed in the attack on Manchester, September 27th 1642. Noted for two expensive rings he was then wearing. (Broxap, Civil War in Lancashire, p. 47).
- Captain Francis Spatchurst: Infantry, of Hamon Head, Yorkshire, he "inconsiderately raised a Coy. of men which he kept and commanded under him for about 3 months and then disbanded them, dyed nowe about a yeere and a half sithence". (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, I, pp. 38/42).
- Captain Thomas Stanhope: Killed on Marston Moor and buried in York on July 3rd. Probably fifth son of Sir Edward Stanhope of Grimston, Yorkshire, and a brother in law of Lt. Colonel Henry Constable, Viscount Dunbar (q.v., E. Widdrington's Horse, Appendix 1). (Skaife, York Minster Burials, p. 10. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 294).
- Captain Zachary Stewart: Governor of Mulgrave Castle which he surrendered to the Scots on June 17th 1644. Born in 1608, styled of Lofthouse, Gentleman. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 182/3. Kendall, H.P., The History of the Old Castle of Mulgrave, pp. 93/4).
- Captain []] Stanly: Captured at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Captain []] Seaton: Cited in Pontefract garrison 1644/5, probably the Seathum in Grey's Division, although described there as a Scot. A Zachary Seaton of Skinningrove, Gentleman, delinquent, died in 1647. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 3. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 224).
- Captain Stephen Tempest: Catholic. Rank given in the pedigree, a younger son of Sir Stephen Tempest of Roundhay, who was himself a delinquent. (Foster, Yorkshire County Pedigrees. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, pp. 133/5).

- Captain [] Tulley: In Pontefract garrison, he left for Newark with 140 Horse on January 8th 1645. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 7).
- Captain [] Thurwell: Captured at Leeds, January 23rd (see Vol. 1). Possibly George Thirlwall of Rothbury whose property was inserted in the 1652 Treason Act. (Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. xxxiii, 358).
- Captain Robert Vavasour: Cavalry, claimed in the List, under Garard Lowther (q.v., above). (List, col. 88).
- Captain Cuthbert Wade: Cavalry, eldest son of Christopher Wade of Kilnsay who died in 1665. Cuthbert laid down his arms in November 1645 and claimed that he had been led into his action by the earl of Cumberland. Fined £222. He was re-sequestered in 1651 for failing to pay, but was discharged in 1652. (Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 32. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 152/3).
- Captain Francis Ward: Buried in York February 16th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 136).
- Captain James Washington: Died in the defence of Pontefract, son and heir of Darcy Washington of Ardwick, Yorkshire, Esquire. Wentworth's division. Possibly a prisoner at Selby April 1644 (see Vol. 1). (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 181).
- Captain Darcy Washington: Brother of the above, died in defence of Pontefract in 1645. (Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 273).
- Captain Christopher Wray: Catholic, killed at Bradford in December 1642. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Catalogue).
- Captain [] Winters: In September 1642 he led three troops of horse and 500 foot from Northumberland to Yorkshire. (T.T. E 240 (11) A Perfect Diurnall No. 15).
- Lieutenant Alan Austwick: Cavalry, styled of Pontefract, in arms both wars. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 101).
- Lieutenant [] Antrobus: Cited in Hutton's division, defence of Pontefract 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5).
- Lieutenant [] Brathet: Of Braithwaite, in Carlisle defence 1644/5. (Tullie's Carlisle, p. 22).
- Lieutenant John Beronye: Buried in York, June 9th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 138).
- Lieutenant Thomas Babot: Infantry, claimed in the List (col. 153) from Lancashire, under Capt Hugh Mathew (above).
- Lieutenant Walter Chamberlain: Prisoner at Ormskirk, possibly from Cumberland or Westmorland. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts p. 204).
- Lieutenant George Collingwood: Catholic, commissioned 1642. Killed at Newbury 1643. Under-Sheriff of Durham in

1642. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 50. Young, Marston Moor, p. 171. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 18, 35).

Lieutenant George Carter: Captured at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant Anthony Collinson: Of Wistow, Gentleman, he surrendered in Pontefract in 1645 and had been in York garrison. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 62).

Lieutenant [] Cape: In the defence of Pontefract 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 4).

Lieutenant Nicholas Crow: Captured at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant Thomas Clarkson: Claimed in the List from Lancashire, as of horse. Probably of Heysham, in arms in 1648 also. (List, col. 150. Stanning, Lancashire Royalist Composition, Vol. 26, pp. 42/3).

Lieutenant John Clayton: Claimed in the List (col. 158) as officer of Pioneers, from Lancashire.

Lieutenant John de Hunt: Taken at Ormskirk, 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204).

Lieutenant Randolph Evans: Cavalry, captured at Selby April 1644 (see Vol. 1). Perhaps the Evens of Kesteven, Gentleman, undischarged delinquent in 1652. (Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, p. 66).

Lieutenant Michael Fitley: Captured at Selby April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant William Fowler: Captured at Selby April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant [] Gibson: Captured at Wakefield, May 1643. Possibly also in Pontefract garrison. (Rushworth III, II, p. 271. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 4).

Lieutenant Ferdinand Greenwood: Sixth of the six sons of Robert Greenwood of West Ardsley, killed at Newark. (Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 246).

Lieutenant William Gerlington: Catholic, killed in arms. (Catalogue).

Lieutenant Francis Grice: Taken at Selby April 1644. Of Sandal, Gentleman, in arms until October 1644 and then gaoled in Hull. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, p. 105).

Lieutenant Patrick Grey: Captured at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant Stephen Geere: Captured at Selby, April 1644, (see Vol. 1).

Lieutenant George Hothersal: Catholic, killed defending Liverpool 1644. (Catalogue).

Lieutenant [] Ho(u)lt: In Pontefract garrison 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 4).

Lieutenant Edward Halsall: Infantry, claimed in the List (col. 151) from Lancashire.

- Lieutenant [] Mollet: Killed in the defence of Pontefract on February 26th 1645. Perhaps the Morrit captured at Selby April 1644. A David Morrit is cited in Ramsden's division. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, pp. 3, 5, 6, 13).
- Lieutenant George Nelson: Buried in York June 18th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 139).
- Lieutenant [] Norton: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Lieutenant Robert Olivers: Infantry, claimed in the List (col. 153) from Lancashire.
- Lieutenant [] Pearcey: Cited in Pontefract garrison 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 4).
- Lieutenant [] Perry: Cited in Pontefract garrison 1644/5. He "dis-mounted one of their scouts on Baghill runne him twice into the body, but his comrad failed him and so he lost both horse and man". (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, pp. 5, 22, 24).
- Lieutenant Roger Rawe: Buried in York, June 16th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 139).
- Lieutenant Henry Redman: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Lieutenant William Singleton: Lancashire Catholic, killed on Marston Moor. (Catalogue).
- Lieutenant [] Skadlocke: Buried in York June 29th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 138).
- Lieutenant William Stables: Eldest son of Richard Stables of Tanshelf, Yorkshire. Born in 1621. Styled of Pontefract, Gentleman, in arms both wars. Fined £12. (Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, III, p. 20. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 11).
- Lieutenant [] Sturbane: Captured at Ormskirk, 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204).
- Lieutenant George Thwaites: Of Long Marston near York, gaoled in 1684/5 for refusing the Oath of Allegiance as a Catholic. He served with the infantry. (Raine, Depositions from York Castle, p. 270).
- Lieutenant John Vincent: Taken at Selby, April 1644, (see Vol. 1).
- Lieutenant [] Ward: Cited in Pontefract garrison, May 1645. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 40).
- Lieutenant [] Wray: Cited in Carlisle defence, termed a "blockhead" by Tullie. (Tullies Carlisle, p. 34).
- Lieutenant [] Wainman: Taken at Selby, April 1644, (see Vol. 1).
- Lieutenant Robert Wright: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Cornet [] Andesay: Anderson? Cited in Pontefract defence 1644/5. Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 6).

- Cornet []] Adcherman: Cited in Hutton's division, Pontefract garrison 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 4).
- Cornet []] Bamford: Cited in Hutton's division, siege of Pontefract, 1644/5. Possibly Lionel Bamford of Pule Hill in Yorkshire, Gentleman. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5. Clay, Yorkshire Royalist Composition, II, pp. 70/1).
- Cornet []] Blockley: Killed in defence of Pontefract on May 18th 1645, (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 40).
- Cornet []] Dickers: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Cornet Arthur Dyke: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (same as Cornet Dickers?).
- Cornet Henry Gillibrand: Taken at Ormskirk, August 1644. Probably of the Gillibrands of Chorley, Lancashire, and perhaps an error for Thomas, son of Peter, who died in 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, II, pp. 120/2).
- Cornet Charles Greenwood: Fourth of the six sons of Robert Greenwood of West Ardlsey, brother to Lieutenant Ferdinand Greenwood, q.v., above. (Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 246).
- Cornet []] Grimes: Taken at Ribble Bridge, August 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, pp. 204/5).
- Cornet []] Harrington: Grey's division, defence of Pontefract 1644/5. (Longstaffe, Drake's Siege of Pontefract, p. 5).
- Cornet William Johnson: Taken at Ormskirk, 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204).
- Cornet Cornelius Lee: Died in 1701, the son of Robert Lee of Hatfield. (Clay, Yorkshire Gentry, p. 365).
- Cornet John Leafe: Captured at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Cornet George Lynne: Claimed in the List (col. 151) from Northumberland.
- Cornet []] Mathewman: Cited in Pontefract garrison, Hutton's division. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 5).
- Cornet []] Speight: Cited in Pontefract garrison. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 25).
- Cornet Edward Stanl(e)y: Taken at Ormskirk, 1644. Possibly eldest of the three sons of Peter Stanley of Moor Hall, Lancashire. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204. Raine, Dugdale's Lancashire Visitation, III, p. 227).
- Cornet Thomas Smith: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Cornet []] Spurrier: Taken at Selby April 1644, see Vol. 1.
- Cornet John Usher: Buried in York, March 4th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 136).
- Ensign []] Baldwinson: Taken at Wakefield, May 1643. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 271).

- Ensign William Bacon: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign John Bell: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign Thomas Conyers: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign Paul Errington: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign [] Halliburton: Taken at Wakefield, May 1643. (Rushworth, III, II, p. 271).
- Ensign [] Hewith: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign John Jackson: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign Bareth Middleton: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign [] North: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign [] Ottoway: In Pontefract garrison May 1645. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 39).
- Ensign John Parker: Buried in York June 2nd 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 139).
- Ensign Robert Pollard: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Ensign Thomas Rudd: Claimed in the List (col. 154) from Cumberland, under Captain Cape (see above).
- Ensign [] Smelt: Taken at Wakefield. Possibly one of the sons of Leonard Smelt of Kirby Fleetham who died in 1627. A Thomas Smelt of Etherley, died in 1643 after having laid down his arms. (Rushworth III, II, p. 271. Davies, Dugdale's Yorkshire Visitation, p. 104. Welford, Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland, pp. 343/4).
- Ensign William Wilkinson: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Quartermaster James Brown: Taken at Ormskirk, 1644. (Ormerod, Lancashire Tracts, p. 204).
- Quartermaster [] Burton: Taken at Selby, April 1644 (see Vol. 1).
- Quartermaster [] Dawson: Killed in action defending Pontefract, Easter Day 1645. (Longstaffe, Drake's Pontefract, p. 22).
- Quartermaster Thomas Ramsey: Buried in York June 13th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 136).
- Quartermaster Thomas Swanne: Buried in York, June 17th 1644. (Wenham, Siege of York, p. 134).
- Quartermaster [] Wadmouth: Taken at Selby April 1644 (see Vol. 1).

BRITISH LIBRARY ADD. MS. 33590

Names of Indigent Royal Military Officers in
England and Wales as they were certified in
the Star Chamber before their printing of
their names or inspection.

My thesis was virtually completed when this manuscript was brought to my attention. As can be seen from the title, it is a draft of the printed List which came into the possession of Peter Le Neve, Rouge Croix, in 1695, and passed in time into the hands of the Constable family at Burton Constable in Yorkshire who sold it at the close of the 19th century. It adds very little to the information in the List and has not caused me to revise any of my views. The only significant distinction between the two is that the manuscript is compiled alphabetically, by county, rather than by field officer as in the case of the List. Folios 1 to 75 consist of officers of horse and foot listed simply by name without their field commanders. Folios 75B to 89 are entitled 'The Names of the Persons Inspected, As Farr as L[ondon and Westminster] and part thereof'. Folios 89B following, consist of 'Respective Warrants for payment of officers', but contain nothing of direct relevance to regimental history or officer biography. I am of opinion that this manuscript is an incomplete copy of a lengthier (lost?) original, for the number of names seems, on a simple calculation, to fall far short of those included in the published List. There is also a noticeable failure to clearly denote rank, and it can be said that had the published List not existed, and had this manuscript been the sole remaining source concerning indigent officers, it would not have been possible to write a regimental study of any part of the Northern army, or, indeed, of the Royalist army as a whole.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

In compiling this bibliography, whilst observing the usual distinction between primary and secondary materials, it was necessary for me to consider carefully the distinction between primary works as such, and reference works which might be considered primary. For example, the compiled indices of wills and the heralds' visitations of the northern, and other, counties. I concluded that in both of these instances, where I have been dealing more or less with lists of names, they properly belong in the reference work section of the bibliography. Similarly, certain secondary works contain lengthy and verbatim transcripts of primary materials, and whilst such books are included in the secondary source section, they are denoted by an asterisk (*) preceding the name of the author or editor of the work in question.

The place of publication of printed works is London unless otherwise stated.

PRIMARY SOURCES

Manuscripts.

Alnwick Castle Mss., Services Performed by Sir John Mayne of Linton in the County of Kent, Kn^t and Bart.

British Library, Additional Mss. 19678 Returns of Traitors' Estates

5494 Accounts and Papers Relating to Sequestered Estates 1642-8, Vol. 1.

5508 Accounts and Papers Relating to Sequestered Estates 1642-8, Vol. 2.

24023 Miscellaneous Autograph Letters 15944
1844.

30305)
30306) Fairfax Correspondence

33590 Names of Indigent Royal Military Officers

Harleian Mss. 986 Richard Symonds Notebook

6804 Papers Relating to Affairs in the latter years of the reign of King Charles I.

6851)
6852) Papers of Sir Edward Walker

Cumbria Record Office, Musgrave Mss.

Durham Cathedral Chapter Library, Sharpe Ms. 110

Hunter Mss.

Durham University Library, Mickleton and Spearman Mss.

Durham University, Dept. of Palaeography, The Weardale Chest.

Huddersfield City Library, Whitley Beaumont Mss.

Lancashire Record Office, Towneley of Towneley Mss.

Weld (Shireburne) of Stonyhurst Papers

De Hoghton of Hoghton Mss.

Molyneux, Earls of Sefton, Mss.

Leeds City Library, Vyner Mss.

Temple Newsam Mss.

Northamptonshire Record Office, Finch Hatton Ms. 133, Dugdale's List of Commissioners of Array.

North Yorkshire Record Office, Hutton of Marske Mss.

Sheffield City Library, Wharncliffe Muniments.

Spencer-Stanhope Muniments.

University of Hull, Brynmor Jones Library, Hotham of South Dalton Mss.

University of Leeds, Brotherton Library, Wentworth-Woolley Hall Mss.

Wilson Mss.

York Archaeological Society, Mss. Collection, DD 56 L3 Sir Henry Slingsby's Commission.

York City Library, City of York House Book 1636/7, B. 36.

Civil War Tracts and Manuscripts, M. 63 - 69.

PRINTED

A Catalogue of the Lords, Knights and Gentlemen (of the Catholick Religion) that were Slain in the late Warr in Defence of their King and Country, 1663.

A List of Officers Claiming to the Sixty Thousand Pounds, &c., Granted by His Sacred Majesty for the Relief of His Truly-Loyal and Indigent Party, 1663.

Atkinson, J.C., ed: Quarter Sessions Records, The North Riding Record Society, Vols. I, II, 1884 : III, 1885 : IV, 1886 : V, 1887 : VI, 1888 : VII, 1889.

Baildon, W.P., ed: Compositions for not taking Knighthood at the Coronation of Charles I, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LXI, Miscellanea I, 1920.

Beamont, W., ed: A Discourse of the Warr in Lancashire, Chetham Society, Old Series, Vol. LXII, 1864.

Bell, R., ed: Memorials of the Civil War: comprising the Correspondence of the Fairfax Family with the Most Distinguished Personages Engaged in that Memorable Contest, 2 Vols., 1849.

Birch, T., ed: A Collection of the State Papers of John Thurloe Esquire, Vols. I to IV, 1742.

Black, W.H., ed: Docquets of Letters Patent 1642-6, 1837 (Public Record Office xerox copy).

Blundell, M., ed: Cavalier: Letters of William Blundell to his friends 1620-98, 1933.

British Library, Thomason Tracts.

Bruce, J., ed: Verney Papers. Notes of Proceedings in the Long Parliament, Camden Society, Vol. XXXI, 1845.

Bulstrode, Sir Richard, Memoirs and Reflections Upon the Reign and Government of King Charles I and II, 1721.

- Burton, G., Life of Sir Philip Musgrave, Kendal, 1840.
- Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, 1640 - 65.
- Carte, T., ed: A Collection of Original Letters and Papers Concerning the Affairs of England from the year 1641 to 1660, 2 Vols., 1739.
- Cholmeley, Sir Hugh, The Memoirs of Sir Hugh Cholmeley, in which he gives some account of his family and the distresses they underwent in the Civil Wars, 1787.
- Clarendon, Edward Hyde, earl of, The History of the Rebellion and Civil Wars in England....also his Life written by Himself, A New edition from the original Manuscript, Oxford, 1843.
- Clay, J.W., ed: Yorkshire Royalist Composition Papers or the Proceedings of the Committee for Compounding with Delinquents During the Commonwealth, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, 3 Parts, Vol. XV, 1893 : Vol. XVIII, 1895 : Vol. XX, 1896.
- Coate, M., ed: The Letter-book of John Viscount Mordaunt 1658-60, Camden Society, 3rd Series, Vol. LXXIX, 1945.
- Coates, W.H., ed: The Journal of Sir Simond D'Ewes from the First Recess of the Long Parliament to the Withdrawal of King Charles from London, 1970.
- Commons Journals.
- Day, W.A., ed: The Pythouse Papers, 1879.
- Dendy, F.W., ed: Extracts from the Records of the Merchant Adventurers of Newcastle upon Tyne, Vol. 1, Surtees Society, Vol. XCIII, 1894.
- Exchequer Commissions and Depositions relating to Northumberland, Archaeologia Aeliana, 3rd Series, Vol. IV, 1908.
- Duckett, Sir George, ed: Civil War Proceedings in Yorkshire, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal, Vol. VII, 1881/2.
- Fairfax, Thomas, Short Memorials of the Civil War, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal, Vol. VIII, 1884.
- ffarington, S.N., ed: The Farington Papers, Chetham Society, Vol. XXXIX, 1856.
- Firth, C.H., ed: Memoirs of William Cavendish Duke of Newcastle and Margaret His Wife, 1906.
- The Journal of Prince Rupert's Marches 5th September 1642 to 4 July 1646, English Historical Review, Vol. 13, 1898.
- Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Narrative of the Siege of Scarborough, English Historical Review, Vol. 32, 1917.
- Sir Hugh Cholmeley's Memorials Touching the Battle of York, English Historical Review, Vol. 5, 1890.
- Memoirs of the Life of Colonel Hutchinson Governor of Nottingham by his Widow Lucy, new edition 1906.
- Gibson, T.E., ed: Crosby Records : A Cavalier's Notebook, 1880.
- Green, M.A.E., ed: Calendar of the Proceedings of the Committee for Advance of Money, 3 Vols., 1888.
- Calendar of the Proceedings of the Committee for Compounding 5 Vols., 1889/92.
- Letters of Queen Henrietta Maria, 1857.
- Hall, J., ed: Thomas Malbon's Memorials of the Civil War in Cheshire and Burghall's Providence Improved, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Vol. 19, 1889.

- Hamilton, C.L., ed: Gervase Markham's 'The Muster Master', Camden Society Miscellanea Vol. XXVI, 4th Series, Vol. 14, 1975.
- Hamilton, A.H.A., ed: Notebook of Sir John Northcote, 1877.
- Harland, J., ed: Lancashire Lieutenancy under the Tudors and Stuarts, Chetham Society, 2 Parts, Vols. XLIX, XL, 1859.
- Heywood, T., ed: The Moore Rental, Chetham Society, Vol. XII, 1847.
Letter from Sir John Seton Manchester y^e 25th March 1643, Chetham Society, Vol. LVII, 1857.
- Historical Manuscripts Commission, Third Report, 1872.
Fourth Report, 1874.
Fifth Report, 1876.
Sixth Report, 1877.
Seventh Report, 1879.
Eighth Report, 1881.
Ninth Report, 1883.
Tenth Report, 1885.
12th Report, Beaufort Mss., 1891.
13th Report, Portland Mss., 1891.
Mss. of F.W. Leyborne Popham, Norwich 1899.
Mss. in Various Collections, II, 1903.
Mss. in Various Collections, VIII, 1913.
Ancaster Mss., Dublin, 1907.
- Hodgson, Captain John, Memoirs, Bradford Antiquary, New Series, Pt. XII, 1908.
- Hodgson, J., ed: 'The Journal of John Aston 1639', North Country Diaries II, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXIV, 1914.
'Correspondence of Miles Stapleton', Northumbrian Documents of the 17th and 18th Centuries, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXXI, 1918.
- Jackson, C., ed: The Autobiography of Mrs. Alice Thornton of East Newton, Co. York, Surtees Society, Vol. LXII, 1873.
Life of John Shaw, Surtees Society, Vol. LXV, 1875.
- James, M.E., ed: Estate Accounts of the Earls of Northumberland 1586-1637, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXIII, 1948.
- Jefferson, S., ed: Isaac Tullie's History of the Siege of Carlisle, 1840.
- Johnson, G.W., ed: The Fairfax Correspondence. Memoirs of the Reign of Charles the First, 2 Vols., 1848.
- Kirby, D.A., ed: Parliamentary Surveys of the Bishopric of Durham, Vol. I, Surtees Society, Vol. CLXXXIII (Pt. 1) 1971, CLXXXV (Pt. 2) 1972.
- Lewis, T.T., ed: Letters of the Lady Brilliana Harley, Camden Society, Vol. 58, 1854.
- Lister, J., ed: West Riding Sessions Records, Vol. II, Orders 1611-42, Indictments 1637-42, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LIII, 1915.
- Long, C.E., ed: Diary of the Marches of the Royal Army During the Great Civil War kept by Richard Symonds, Camden Society, 1859.

Longstaffe, W.H.D., ed: Memoirs of the Life of Ambrose Barnes, Surtees Society, Vol. L, 1867.

The Acts of the High Commission Court within the Diocese of Durham, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXIV, 1857.

Nathan Drake's Journal of the First and Second Sieges of Pontefract Castle 1644-5, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXVII, Pt. 1, 1861.

Lords Journals.

Lumb, G.D., ed: Manuscripts Written or Possessed by Ralph Thoresby F.R.S., Thoresby Society, Miscellanea, Vol. XXVIII, 1928.

MaCray, W.D., ed: Beaumont Papers. Letters Relating to the Family of Beaumont of Whitley, Yorkshire, from the fifteenth to the seventeenth Centuries, Roxburgh Club, Vol. 107, 1884.

Mahaffy, R.P., ed: Calendar of State Papers Relating to Ireland 1633-47, 1901.

Maseres, F., ed: Selected Tracts Relating to the Civil Wars in England, 2 Vols. 1815.

Meikle, H.W., ed: Correspondence of the Scottish Commissioners in London 1644-6, Edinburgh 1917.

Mercurius Aulicus, facsimile in 4 Vols. The English Revolution III, Newsbooks I, Oxford Royalist, 1971.

Mercurius Politicus, facsimile in 19 Vols. The English Revolution III, Newsbooks 5, 1971.

Moone, J., A Brief Relation of the Life and Memoirs of John Lord Belasyse, Historical Manuscript Commission, Ormond Mss., New Series, II, 1903.

Murdoch, A.D., & Simpson, H.F.M., eds: George Wishart's Memoirs of James Marquis of Montrose, 1893.

Nalson, T., An Impartial Collection of the Great Affairs of State from the Beginning of the Scotch Rebellion to the Murther of King Charles I, Vol. 1, 1682.

Nanson, W., ed: Carlisle During the Siege of 1644-5, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Vol. VII, 1884.

Ormerod, G., ed: Tracts Relating to Military Proceedings in Lancashire During the Great Civil War, Chetham Society, Vol. II, 1844.

Parsons, D., ed: The Diary of Sir Henry Slingsby of Scriven, Bart., 1836.

Peacock, E., ed: The Army Lists of the Roundheads and Cavaliers, Containing the names of the officers in the Royal and Parliamentary Armies of 1642, 1863.

The Monckton Papers, Philobiblon Society, 1884.

Peacock, M.G.W., ed: An Index of the Names of the Royalists Whose Estates Were Confiscated During the Commonwealth, Index Society, 1878.

Pennington, D.H., & Roots, I., eds: The Committee at Stafford 1643-5, Manchester 1957.

Philip, I.G., ed: Journal of Sir Samuel Luke, Oxfordshire Record Society, 3 Pts. 1947-53.

Powell, J.R., & Timings, E.K., eds: Documents Relating to the Civil War 1642-8, Navy Records Society, Vol. CV, 1963.

Raine, J., ed: Depositions from the Castle of York, Surtees Society, Vol. XL, Part II for 1861.

Ricraft, J., A Survey of England's Champions, 1647.

Rushworth, J., Historical Collections....1618-49, 7 Vols., 1659-1701.

- Roy, I., ed: The Royalist Ordnance Papers 1642-46, Oxfordshire Record Society, Pt. 1, 1963/4 : Pt. 2, 1975.
- Rylands, J.P., ed: Lancashire Inquisitions Stuart Period, Pt. 1, 1 to 11 James I, Pt. 2, 12 to 19 James I, Pt. 3, 20 to 23 James I, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire Vols. III, 1879 : XVI, 1887, XVII, 1888.
- Schofield, B., ed: The Knyvett Letters 1620-44, Norfolk Record Society, Vol. XX, 1949.
- Scott, W., ed: Somers' Collection of Tracts, Vols. IV, V, VI, 1810.
- Shaw, W.A., ed: Minutes of the Committee for the Relief of Plundered Ministers and of the Trustees for the Maintenance of Ministers Relating to Lancashire and Cheshire, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Pt. 1 Vol. XXVIII : Pt. 2, Vol. XXIX, 1896.
- Spalding, John, Memorials of the Trubles in Scotland and England 1624-45, 2 Vols Edinburgh, 1828.
- Sprigge, J., Anglia Rediviva, Oxford, 1854.
- Stanley Papers, Chetham Society, Old Series, Vols. LXVI, LXVII.
- Stanning, J.H., & Brownlow, J., eds: The Royalist Composition Papers...insofar as they relate to the County of Lancaster, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Vols. 24 (1891) : 26 (1892) : 29 (1894) : 36 (1898) : 72 (1916) : 95 (1941) : 96 (1942).
- Stephens, T., ed: Seven Civil War Tracts, Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle upon Tyne, 3rd Series, Vol. II 1907.
- Terry, C.S., ed: Papers Relating to the Army of the Solemn League and Covenant 1643-7, 2 Vols., Scottish History Society, 2nd Series, Vols. 16 and 17, Edinburgh 1917.
- Tibbutt, H.G., ed: The Letter Books 1644-45 of Sir Samuel Luke, 1963.
- Toynbee, M., ed: The Papers of Capt. Henry Stevens, Waggon-Master General to King Charles I, Oxfordshire Record Society, 1962.
- Vicars, J., Parliamentary Chronicles, 3 Vols. 1644.
- Walker, Sir Edward, Historical Discourses upon Several Occasions, 1705.
- Warburton, E., ed: Memoirs of Prince Rupert and the Cavaliers, 3 Vols. 1849.
- Warwick, Sir Philip, Memoires of the Reign of King Charles the First, 1701.
- Welford, R., ed: Royalist Composition in Durham and Northumberland 1643-60, Surtees Society, Vol. CXI, 1905.
- Whitelock, Bulstrode, Memorials of the English Affairs, 1682.
- Wood, A.C., ed: Gervase Holles's Memoirs of the Holles Family 1493-1656, Camden Society, 3rd Series, Vol. LV, 1937.
- Wood, H.M., ed: Wills and Inventories from the Registry at Durham, IV, Surtees Society, Vol. CXLII, 1929.
- Wright, T., ed: Autobiography of Joseph Lister of Bradford 1627-1709, 1842.
- Young, P., & Tucker, N., eds: Military Memoirs of Richard Atkyns and John Gwyn, 1967.

SECONDARY WORKS

Books.

- Abell, H .F., Kent and the Great Civil War, 1901.

- Ackley, F.G., A History of the Parish of Mitton in the West Riding of Yorkshire, Aberdeen 1947.
- * Adair, J., Cheriton 1644 The Campaign and the Battle, Kineton, 1973.
- * Anon, A Description of the Memorable Sieges and Battles in the North of England, Bolton 1786.
- Aveling, J.H., Catholic Recusancy in the City of York 1558-1791, Catholic Record Society, Monograph 2, 1970.
Post-Reformation Catholicism in East Yorkshire 1558-1790, York 1960.
Northern Catholics, 1558-1790, 1966.
The Catholic Recusants of the West Riding of Yorkshire 1558-1790, Leeds Philosophical Society, 1963.
- Aylmer, G.E., The Kings Servants. The Civil Service of Charles I 1625-42, Revised Edn., 1974.
- Baines, T., History of the Commerce and Town of Liverpool, 1852.
- Bean, H.W., The Parliamentary Representation of the Six Northern Counties, Hull 1890.
- Boothroyd, B., The History of the Ancient Borough of Pontefract, Pontefract 1807.
- Bossy, J., The English Catholic Community 1570-1850, 1975.
- Boynton, L., The Elizabethan Militia 1558-1638, 1967.
- Brayshaw, T., & Robinson, R.M., A History of the Ancient Parish of Giggleswick, 1932.
- Broxap, E., The Great Civil War in Lancashire 1642-51, Manchester University Historical Publications No. 10, Manchester 1910.
- Brunton, D., & Pennington, D.H., Members of the Long Parliament, 1954.
- Buchan, J., Montrose, 1928.
- Burne, A.H., & Young, P., The Great Civil War. A Military History of the First Civil War 1642-6, 1959.
- Butler, C., Historical Memoirs Respecting the English, Irish and Scottish Catholics from the Reformation to the Present Time, 2 Vols. 1819.
- Carlisle, N., An Inquiry into the Place and Quality of the Gentlemen of His Majesties Most Honourable Privy Chamber, 1829.
- Chetwynd-Stapleton, H.E., The Stapletons of Yorkshire, 1897.
- Childs, J., The Army of Charles II, 1976.
- Clay, J.W., The Extinct and Dormant Peerages of the Northern Counties of England, 1913.
- Cliffe, J.T., The Yorkshire Gentry from the Reformation to the Civil War, 1969.
- Coate, M., Cornwall in the Great Civil War and Interregnum 1642-60, reprint edn., Truro 1963.
- * Collins, A., Historical Collections of the Nobles Families of Cavendish, Holles, Harley and Ogle, 1752.
- Colman, F.S., A History of the Parish of Barwick in Elmet in the County of York, Thoresby Society, Vol. XVII, 1908.
- Cradock, H.C., A History of the Ancient Parish of Birstall, Yorkshire, 1933.
- Craik, Sir Henry, Life of Edward earl of Clarendon, 2 Vols., 1911.
- Curwen, J.F., Castles and Towers of Cumberland and Westmorland, Kendal, 1913.
- Dawson, W.H., A History of Skipton, 1882.

- Dickinson, W.H., History and Antiquities of Newark, 1876.
- Dore, R.N., The Civil Wars in Cheshire, Chester 1966.
- Drake, F., Eboracum, 1736.
- Eastwood, J., History of the Parish of Ecclesfield, 1862.
- Everitt, A., The Community of Kent and the Great Rebellion 1640-60, Leicester 1966.
- Farrer, W., & Brownbill, J., The Victoria County History of the County of Lancaster, 8 Vols., 1906.
- Ferguson, R.S., ed: John Denton's 'An Accompt of the most considerable Estates and Families in the County of Cumberland, Kendal 1887.
Edmund Sandford's 'A Cursory Relation of all the Antiquities and Familyes in Cumberland, 1675, Kendal 1890.
- Fishwick, H., The History of the Parish of Kirkham, Chetham Society, Vol. XCII, 1874.
The History of the Parish of Poulton le Fylde, Chetham Society, Vol. VIII, 1885, New Series.
The History of the Parish of Bispham, Chetham Society, Vol. X, 1887, New Series.
- * Ford, J.R., & Fuller Maitland, J.A., eds: John Lucas's History of Wharton Parish, Kendal, 1951.
- Fortescue, J.W., A History of the British Army, 2nd Edn., Vol. I, 1910.
- Foxcroft, H.C., The Life and Letters of Sir George Saville Bart., First Marquis of Halifax, 2 Vols., 1898.
- Gardiner, S.R., ed: Letters and Papers Illustrating the Relations between Charles I and Scotland, Edinburgh 1894.
History of the Great Civil War 1642-9, 4 Vols., 1901.
- * Gatty, A., ed: Joseph Hunter's Hallamshire. The History and Topography of the Parish of Sheffield in the County of York, 1869.
- Gent, Thomas, The Antient and Modern History of the Loyal Town of Rippon, 1733.
- Gibb, M.A., The Lord General. A Life of Thomas Fairfax, 1938.
- Gooder, A., The Parliamentary Representation of the County of York 1258-1832, Pt. II, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. XCVI, 1937.
- Grainge, W., The Vale of Mowbray. A Historical and Topographical Account of Thirsk and its Neighbourhood, 1859.
- Godwin, G.N., The Civil War in Hampshire 1642-45, 1904.
- Green, Lady, The Old Hall at Heath, Wakefield, 1889.
- Greenwood, W., The Redmans of Leven and Harewood, Kendal, 1905.
- Hall, J.G., A History of South Cave, Hull, 1892.
- Hardacre, R.H., The Royalists During the Puritan Revolution, The Hague, 1956.
- Hargrove, E., The History of the Castle, Town and Forest of Knaresborough, 1789.
- Harland, J., ed: Baines' History of the County Palatine and Duchy of Lancaster, 2 Vols., 1868.
- Hasted, E., The History and Topographical Survey of the County of Kent, 10 Vols. Canterbury, 1798.
- Hedley, W.P., Northumberland Families, 2 Vols., Newcastle, 1968.
- Holland, J., A History of Worksop, Sheffield, 1826.

- * Holmes, R., The Sieges of Pontefract Castle 1644/5, 1648, Pontefract, 1887.
- Hornyold, H., Genealogical Memoirs of the Family of Strickland of Sizergh, Kendal, 1928.
- Horsfall, J.T., The History of Brighouse, Raistrick and Hipperholme, Bingley 1893.
Ancient Bingley, Bingley 1897.
- Howell, R., Newcastle upon Tyne and the Puritan Revolution, Oxford, 1967.
- Hunter, J., South Yorkshire. The History and Topography of the Deanery of Doncaster, 2 Vols., 1828.
- Hunter Blair, C.H., The Mayors and Lord Mayors of Newcastle upon Tyne 1216-1940 and the Sheriffs of the County of Newcastle upon Tyne 1399-1940, Archaeologia Aeliana, 4th Series, Extra Vol., Vol. XVIII, 1940.
- Hutchinson, W., History and Antiquities of the County Palatine of Durham, 3 Vols., 1823.
- Ingledeu, C.D., The History and Antiquities of Northallerton, 1848.
- Jackson, R., The History of the Town and Township of Barnsley, 1858.
- James, J., The History and Topography of Bradford, 1841.
- James, M., Family, Lineage and Civil Society, Oxford, 1974.
- Jefferson, S., The History and Antiquities of Cumberland, 2 Vols., Carlisle 1840
- Keeler, M.F., The Long Parliament 1640-1, A Biographical Study of Its Members, Philadelphia, 1954.
- Legard, J.D., The Legards of Anlaby and Ganton: Their Neighbours and Neighbourhood, 1926.
- Leys, M.D.R., Catholics in England 1559-1829, 1961.
- Longstaffe, W.H.D., The History and Antiquities of Darlington, Darlington 1854.
- Lucas, J., Historical Genealogy of the family of Bayne of Nidderdale, Ripon, 1896.
- Lucas Phillips, C.E., Cromwell's Captains, 1938.
- Magee, B., The English Recusants, 1938.
- Markham, C.R., A Life of the Great Lord Fairfax, 1870.
- Mason, J., The History and Antiquities of Thorne, 2nd Revised edn., Thorne 1869.
- M'Call, H.B., The Family of Wandesforde of Kirklington and Castlecomer, 1904.
- Miller, N.J., Winestead and its Lords, Hull, 1932.
- Morant, A.W., ed: Whitaker's History and Antiquities of the Deanery of Craven, 3rd edn., 1878.
- Morrah, P., Prince Rupert of the Rhine, 1976.
- Nicholas, D., Mr. Secretary Nicholas, 1955.
- Nicolson, J., and Burn, R., The History and Antiquities of the Counties of Cumberland and Westmorland, 2 Vols., 1777.
- *Northumberland County History Committee, History of Northumberland, 15 Vols., 1893-1940.
- Oliver, G., The History and Antiquities of the Town and Minster of Beverley, Beverley, 1829.
- Ord, J.W., The History and Antiquities of Cleveland, 1808.
- Padgett, L., Memorials of Old Pontefract, Pontefract, 1905.
- Park, G.R., Parliamentary Representation of Yorkshire, Hull, 1886.

- Peck, F., Desiderata Curiosa, 2 Vols., 1779.
- Plantagenet Harrison, Major General, The History of Yorkshire. Wapentake of Gilling West, 1879.
- Pobjoy, H.N., A History of Emley, Emley 1970.
- Poulson, G., The History and Antiquities of the Seignory of Holderness, 2 Vols., Hull 1840.
- Raine, J., ed: Thomas Burton's History and Antiquities of the Parish of Heming Borough in the County of York, York, 1888.
The History and Antiquities of North Durham, 1852.
- Ridsdill-Smith, G., Without Touch of Dishonour. The Life and Death of Sir Henry Slingsby 1602-58, Kineton 1968.
- Rogers, H.C.B., Battles and Generals of the Civil Wars 1642-51, 1968.
- * Roland Phillips, J., Memoirs of the Civil War in Wales and the Marches, 1642-9, 2 Vols., 1874.
- Roper, W.O., Materials for the History of Lancaster, Ghetham Society, New Series, Vol. 62, 1907.
- Ross, F., Contributions Towards a History of Driffield, Driffield 1898.
- Rowell, M.A., The Life-Story of Charlotte de la Tremoille, Countess of Derby, 1905.
- Royal Commission on Historical Monuments, Newark, The Civil War Siege Works, 1964.
- Sanderson, Sir William, A Compleat History of the Life and Raigne of King Charles, 1658.
- Saywell, J.L., The Parochial History of Ackworth, Yorkshire, 1894.
- Schwoerer, L., No Standing Armies! The Anti-Army Ideology in 17th Century England, 1974.
- * Secomb, J., The History of the House of Stanley, Preston, 1793.
- Sheard, M., ed: Records of the Parish of Batley, Worksop, 1894.
- Sherwood, R.E., Civil Strife in the Midlands, 1974.
- Skaife, R.H., The Register of Burials in York Minster, York, 1870.
- * Sunderland, F.H., Marmaduke Lord Langdale of Holme on Spalding Moor and Some Events of His Times 1598-1661, 1926.
- Surtees, R., History and Antiquities of the County of Durham, 4 Vols., Sunderland, 1908.
- Taylor, R.V., Biographia Leodiensis, Leeds, 1865.
- Tomlinson, J., Doncaster from the Roman Occupation to the Present Time, Doncaster 1887.
- Torr, James, The Antiquities of York City, 1719.
- Townshend, D., George Digby 2nd Earl of Bristol, 1924.
- Toynbee, M., & Young, P., Strangers in Oxford, 1973.
- Turberville, A.S., A History of Welbeck Abbey and its Owners, Vol. I, 1539-1755, 1938.
- Turton, R.B., The Alum Farm, Whitby, 1938.
- Underdown, D., Royalist Conspiracy in England 1649-60, Yale, 1960.
- Walker, J.W., Wakefield, Its History and People, 2 Vols., 3rd edn., Wakefield 1967.
- Wardell, J.W., A History of Yarm, Sunderland 1957.

- Watson, J., The History and Antiquities of the Parish of Halifax, 1775.
- Watts, S.J., & Watts, S.J., From Border to Middle Shire, Northumberland 1586-1625, Leicester 1975.
- Webb, J., Memorials of the Civil War as it Affected Herefordshire and the Adjacent Counties, 2 Vols., 1879.
- Weeks, W.S., Clitheroe in the 17th Century, Clitheroe, no date.
- *Wenham, L.P., The Great and Close Siege of York 1644, Kineton, 1970.
- Wheater, W., The History of Sherburn and Cawood, 1882.
- Whitaker, T.D., An History of the Original Parish of Whalley and Honor of Clitheroe, 1818.
- Wilkinson, J., Worsborough, its Historical Associations, 1872.
- Willis Bund, J.W., The Civil War in Worcestershire 1642-6, 1905.
- Wood, A.C., Nottinghamshire in the Civil War, Oxford 1937.
- Worsfold, J.N., History of Haddlesey, 1894.
- Young, P., & Holmes, M., The English Civil War, a Military History, 1974.
- Young, P., & Toynbee, M., Cropredy Bridge 1644, Kineton, 1969.
- *Young, P., Edgehill 1642 the Campaign and the Battle, Kineton 1967.
- *Marston Moor 1644, the Campaign and the Battle, Kineton, 1970.

ARTICLES

- Adamson, H.A., Tynemouth Castle, The Eve of the Commonwealth, Archaeologia Aeliana, New Series, Vol. XV.
- Aveling, J.C.H., Catholic Recusancy of the Yorkshire Fairfaxes, Recusant History Vol. 4, 1957.
- Bellasis, E., Strickland of Sizergh, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Transactions, Vol. VIII, 1889.
- Brown, W., Royalist Clergy in Yorkshire 1642-5, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LXI, Miscellanea I, 1920.
- Broxap, E., The Sieges of Hull During the Great Civil War, English Historical Review, Vol. XX, 1905.
- Clay, C.T., The Family of Jackson of Wooldale in the County of York, The Genealogist, New Series, Vol. XXXVII, 1920.
- Comber, J., The Mawdes of Riddlesden and Ilkley, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal, Vol. XXIV, 1916.
- Cowper, H.S., Millom Castle and the Huddlestons, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Transactions, New Series, Vol. XXIV, 1924.
- Davies, G., The Battle of Edgehill, English Historical Review, Vol. 36, 1921.
- Empsall, T.T., Joseph Lister, The Historian of the Siege of Bradford, Bradford Antiquary, Pt. X, 1895.
- Local Royalists, Bradford Antiquary, Pts. IV, V, 1886, 1888.
- Ferguson, R.S., The Siege of Carlisle in 1644/5, General Leslie's Works, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Transactions, Vol. XI, 1890.
- Fetherston, Mrs., & Haswell, F., The College of Kirkoswald and the Family of Featherstonehaugh, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Transactions, Vol. XIV, 1893.

- *Firth, C.H., Marston Moor, Transactions of the Royal Historical Society, New Series, Vol. XII, 1898.
- Forster, A., & Walsh, E., Recusancy of the Brandlings, Recusant History, Vol. 10, 1970.
- Gaskin, R.T., The Cholmeleys of Whitby, Bradford Antiquary, New Series, Part IX, 1904.
- Harrison, W., ed: Illiam Dhone and the Manx Rebellion 1651, Manx Society, Vol. 26, 1877.
- Haswell, F., The Family of Dalston, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Vol. X, 1910.
- Hedley, W.P., The Ridleys of Ridley and Williemoteswick, Archaeologia Aeliana, 4th Series, Vol. XXXII, 1954.
- The Herons of Chipchase - Additional Notes, Archaeologia Aeliana, 4th Series, Vol. XXXV, 1957.
- Hodgson, J.C., Barmoor and the Muschamps, Berwickshire Naturalists Club, Vol. XXII.
- Holiday, P.G., Land Sales and Repurchases in Yorkshire after the Civil War 1650-70, Northern History, V, 1970.
- Hunter Blair, C.H., Members of Parliament for Northumberland and Newcastle upon Tyne 1559-1831, Archaeologia Aeliana, 4th Series, Vol. XXIII, 1945.
- Members of Parliament for Berwick upon Tweed and Morpeth 1558-1832, Archaeologia Aeliana, 4th Series, Vol. XXIV, 1946.
- Durham Armorial of the Seventeenth Century, Archaeologia Aeliana, Vol. XV, 1938.
- Hope Dodds, M., Gilbert Swinhoe, Northumbrian Dramatist, Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Newcastle upon Tyne, 4th Series, Vol. 10, 1942-6.
- Jackson Howard, J., ed: Genealogy of the Heskaythes of Rufford in Lancashire, Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica, Pt. XII, 1869.
- Cholmeley Pedigree Extracted from Records of the College of Arms, Miscellanea Genealogica et Heraldica, Pt. XIII, 1870.
- Lindley, K., The Part Played by the Catholics, in Manning, B., ed: Politics Religion and the Civil War, 1973.
- Moore, C., The Crackenthorpes of Newbiggin, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Transactions, Vol. XXIII, 1933.
- Pailey Baildon, W., The Mawds of Ilkley, Hollinghall, Brandon, Helthwaite Hall, Thoresby Society, Miscellanea Vol. XXIV, 1919.
- Phillips, C.B., County Committees and Local Government in Cumberland and Westmorland 1642-60, Northern History, V, 1970.
- Ross, G.W., Military Engineering During the Civil War 1642-9, Professional Papers of the Corps of Royal Engineers, Occasional Papers Vol. XIII, Chatham 1887.
- Ross, W.A., The Battle of Naseby, English Historical Review, Vol. 3, 1888.
- Terry, C.S., The Visits of Charles I to Newcastle in 1633, 1639, 1646-7, Archaeologia Aeliana, New Series, Vol. XXI, 1899.
- *The Scottish Campaign in Northumberland and Durham between January and June 1644, Archaeologia Aeliana, Vol. XXI, 1899.
- *The Siege of Newcastle by the Scots in 1644, Archaeologia Aeliana Vol. XXI, 1899.

- Walker, J.W., The Watertons of Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal, Vol. XXX, 1931.
The Manor and Church of Wolley, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal
 Vol. XXVII, 1923.
- Wentworth, C.E., A History of the Wentworths of Woolley, Yorkshire Archaeological Journal, Vol. XII, 1893.
- Young, P., The Northern Horse at Naseby, Journal of the Society for Army Historical Research, Vol. 34, 1954.

WORKS OF REFERENCE, INDICES & PEDIGREES.

- Abram, W., ed: The Rolls of Burgesses at the Guilds Merchant of the Borough of Preston, Co. Lancaster, 1397-1682, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Vol. IX, 1884.
- Ainsworth, J., ed: Index to Administrations in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Vol. 1, 1649-54, British Record Society, 1944.
- Anstruther, G., The Seminary Priests, Vol. II, The Early Stuarts 1603-59, Great Wickering, 1975.
- Armitage, G.J., & Rylands, W.H., eds: Gregory King's Staffordshire Pedigrees, Based on the Visitation of that county made by William Dugdale 1663-4, Harleian Society, Vol. 53, 1912.
- Blagg, T.M., ed: Index of Wills Proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, Vol. VIII, 1657-60, British Record Society, 1936.
- Brockett, J.T., ed: A List of Freeholders of Northumberland in 1628 and 1638/9, Archaeologia Aeliana, Old Series II, 1832.
- Burke, Sir Bernard, Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Landed Gentry, 1937 edn.
- Burke, J., & Burke, J.B., The Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies of England, 1838.
- Burke, J., History of the Commoners of Great Britain and Ireland, 4 Vols., 1836.
- Burke, B., A Genealogical History of the Dormant, Abeyant, Forfeited and Extinct Peerages of the British Empire, 1883.
- Clay, J.W., ed: Dugdale's Visitation of Yorkshire with Additions, Exeter 1894-1917.
Joseph Hunter's Familiae Minorum Gentium, 4 Pts., Harleian Society, 1894-6.
- Collins, F., ed: Wills in the York Registry 1636-52, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. IV, 1888.
- Crossley, E.W., ed: Index of the Original Documents of the Consistory Court of York 1427-1658, and also of the Probate and Administration Acts in the Court of the Dean of York, 1604-1722, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LXXIII, 1928.
Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry 1660-65, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. XLIX, 1913.
Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry 1673-80, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LXVIII, 1926.
Index of Wills, Administrations and Probate Acts in the York Registry 1681-88, Yorkshire Archaeological Society Record Series, Vol. LXXXIX, 1934.

- Davies, R., ed: William Dugdale's Visitation of the Counte of York, Surtees Society, Vol. XXXVI, 1859.
- Faraday, M.A., ed: The Westmorland Protestation Returns 1641/2, Cumberland and Westmorland Archaeological Society, Tract Series, No. XVII, 1971.
- Farrow, M.A., & Barton, T.F., eds: Index of Wills Proved in the Consistory Court of Norwich...1604-86, Norfolk Record Society, Vol. XXVIII, 1958.
- Fetherston, J., Richard St. George's Visitation of the County of Cumberland 1615, Harleian Society, Vol. 7, 1872.
- Fishwick, H., ed: A List of the Lancashire Wills Proved within the Archdeaconry of Richmond 1457-1680, Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Vol. 10, 1884.
- Forster, A.M.C., ed: Durham Entries on the Recusants Roll 1636-7, Surtees Society, Miscellanea III, Vol. CLXXV, 1960.
- Fortescue, G.K., Catalogue of...the Thomason Tracts, Vol. I, 1908.
- Foster, J., The County Families of Yorkshire, 3 Vols., 1874.
 ed: The Visitation of Yorkshire made in the Years 1584/5 by Robert Glover, Somerset Herald, to which is added, the subsequent Visitation made in 1612 by Richard St. George, Norroy King of Arms, 1875.
Pedigrees Recorded at the Visitations of the County Palatine of Durham, 1575, 1615, 1666, 1887.
Pedigrees Recorded at the Heralds' Visitations of the County of Northumberland, 1615 and 1666, Newcastle 1891.
Pedigrees Recorded at the Heralds' Visitations of the Counties of Cumberland and Westmorland, 1615 and 1666, Carlisle 1891.
The County Families of Lancashire, 1873.
- Foster, J., ed: Alumni Oxonienses: The Members of the University of Oxford 1500-1714, 2 Vols., Klaus Reprint 1968.
- Foster, C.W., ed: Calendar of Administrations in the Consistory Court of Lincoln 1540-1659, British Record Society, 1921.
- France, R.S., Guide to the Lancashire Record Office, Preston 1962.
- Hughes Clark, A.W., & Campling, A., eds: The Visitation of Norfolk A.D. 1664 made by Sir Edward Bysshe, 2 Vols., Harleian Society, Vol. 85, 1933.
- Lumb, G.D., The Registers of the Parish Church of Leeds, 1639-67, Thoresby Society, Vol. VII, 1897.
- Lumby, J.H., ed: A Calendar of the Deeds and Papers in the possession of Sir James de Houghton, Bart., Record Society of Lancashire and Cheshire, Vol. LXXXVIII, 1936.
- Maddison, A.R., ed: Lincolnshire Pedigrees, 4 Pts., Harleian Society, Vol. 50 (1902) : Vol. 51 (1903) : Vol. 52 (1904) : Vol. 54 (1906).
- Marshal, G.W., ed: Le Neve's Pedigrees of the Knights, Harleian Society, Vol. 8, 1873.
The Genealogists Guide to Printed Pedigrees, Revised edn. 1904.
- Martin, M.T., Index to Northumberland Entries in the Recusancy Rolls in the Public Record Office, typescript, Newcastle City Library.
- Metcalf, W.C., A Book of Knights 1426 - 1660, 1885.

- Mullins, E.L.C., Texts and Calendars. An Analytical Guide to Serial Publications, 1958.
- Ogle, O., & Buss, W.H., eds: Calendar of the Clarendon State Papers in the Bodleian Library, 1623-49, Oxford 1872.
- Parker, M.B., ed: The Registers of Bishop Middleham, Durham, Publications of the Northumberland and Durham Parish Registers Society, Vol. XIII, 1906.
- Peacock, E., ed: A List of Roman Catholics in the County of York in 1604, 1872.
- Plomer, H.R., ed: Index of Wills and Administrations in the Probate Registry at Canterbury 1398-1558 and 1640-50, British Record Society, 1920.
- Public Record Office, State Paper 16/495, A List of Recusants 1639.
- Raines, F.R., ed: William Dugdale's Visitation of the County Palatine of Lancaster, Chetham Society, 3 Pts., Vols. 84, 85, 88, 1872/3.
- Registers of the Parish Church of Bolton, Lancashire Parish Register Society, Vol. 50, 1913.
- Ridge, C.H., ed: Index to Administrations in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1655-60, British Record Society, 3 Pts., 1949, 1952, 1953.
- Index to Wills Proved in the Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 1676-85, British Record Society, 1948.
- Rylands, W.H., Grantees of Arms Named in Docquets and Letters Patent to the End of the Seventeenth Century, Harleian Society, Vol. 66, 1915.
- Shaw, W.A., The Knights of England, 2 Vols., 1906.
- Talbot, C., ed: Northern Book of Compositions 1629-32, Catholic Record Society Miscellanea, Vol. LIII, 1960.
- Train, K.S.S., ed: Nottinghamshire Visitations 1662-4, Thoroton Society, Record Series, Vol. XIII, 1950.
- Venn, J., & Venn, J.A., eds: Alumni Cantabrigienses, Part 1 to 1751, 4 Vols., Cambridge 1922.
- Walker, J.W., ed: Hunter's Pedigrees, A Continuation of Familiae Minorum, Harleian Society, Vol. 88, 1936.
- Yorkshire Pedigrees, 3 Pts., Harleian Society, Vols. 94, 95, 96 for 1942-4.
- Welford, R., Newcastle Householdors in 1665 : Assessment of Hearth or Chimney Tax, Archaeologia Aeliana, 3rd Series, Vol. VII, 1911.
- Whitmore, J.B., A Genealogical Guide, 1953.
- Wing, D.C., Short Title Catalogue 1641-1700, 3 Vols., 1943-51.
- Wood, H.H., ed: Durham Protestations 1641/2, Surtees Society, Vol. CXXXV, 1922.
- Wotton, Thomas, The English Baronets, 3 Vols., 1727.

UNPUBLISHED THESES

- Hilton, J.A., Catholic Recusancy in Co. Durham 1559-1625, Leeds. M. Phil thesis.
- Holiday, P.G., Royalist Composition Fines and Land Sales in Yorkshire 1645-1665, Leeds Ph.D. thesis.
- Roy, I., The Royalist Army in the First Civil War, Oxford D. Phil thesis.